



# MMORPG: REBIRTH OF THE LEGENDARY GUARDIAN

BOOK 04

*Flying Alone*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian

(Wǎngyóu zhī zhàn yù tiānxià)

(网游之战御天下)

by

**Flying Alone**

(孤单地飞)

# Synopsis

---

The phoenix is a creature of legends, a wonder of the world, an imagery of life and destruction. This fabled creature signifies the rise of a hero in a virtual world where battles occur for the sake of honor and glory!

Zhang Yang was a professional gamer in the first and most fantastic game that revolutionized the world: God's Miracle. A game where traditional knowledge in RPGs did not matter anymore, players would have to manually target and evade attacks, giving rise to a significant gap in skill between a professional and an amateur gamer.

Zhang Yang's downfall came a little too soon. His girlfriend was snatched, his guild was harassed and disbanded, and he was even driven to commit suicide! Jumping off the top floor of a hotel, Zhang Yang seemed as though he was soaring like a phoenix. Little did he know that the end of his life also signified his rise from the ashes!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301: Monster Siege Again!

---

"Icy, let's go, it's time to leave!" After getting his hands on the [Monster Attack Order], Zhang Yang naturally felt contented.

"You go on ahead, I am going to slaughter some more Japanese pigs!"

Looking at her excited eyes, Zhang Yang could not help but to feel riled up, and he suggested, "Fine! Let's go kill some more of them piggies! Just let me activate this [Monster Attack Order] first!"

With a gentle tap on the [Monster Attack Order], a three-dimensional projection of a map appeared right in front of his eyes. On the left hand side of the map were the names of the eight main regions while the right hand side of the map was empty.

‘Ding! You have used the [Monster Attack Order]. First, please confirm the region!’

Zhang Yang reached out his finger and gently touched the ‘China region’ on the map, then, the projection on the right side instantly began to shift and a complete map of the China region appeared! Within the map, the Thunderstorm Castle and the Imperial Castle were both highlighted.

‘Ding! You have selected the ‘China Region’. In this region, there are two territories available for attacking, known as Thunderstorm Castle and Imperial Castle. Please select your specific target!’

Zhang Yang revealed a wicked grin on his face and gave a gentle, steady tap on 'Imperial Castle'.

'Ding! You have selected your target as China Region, Imperial Castle! The [Monster Attack Order] can only be used once. Once it is used, you cannot recover it anymore, proceed?'

Poof! The [Monster Attack Order] instantly turned into a piece of scrap, breaking up in Zhang Yang's palm and dispersing into the air.

"Let's go! Time to slay some shorty Japs!"

Zhang Yang summoned his regular [Mount] and rode for the valley together with Sun Xin Yu.

Not long after they departed, Zhang Yang received a private message from a fuming mad One Sword Stroke, "Zhan Yu, you ruthless son of the beach!"

Zhang Yang shook his head without any pause and said, "Hey you, you used the [Monster Attack Order] on my territory back then. I didn't make much fuss about it then! What, I'm not allowed to do the same back to you? How shameless!"

"... You just wait, I'm definitely not going to let this go! I'm decreasing the fare for my territory teleportation fees! Even if it means I'm not earning anymore, I'll deprive you of your income!"



"Ha, by all means, if you succeed in keeping your territory! Oh right, I'm very busy right now, no time to chat now, bye!"

After ending the conversation with One Sword Stroke, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu began their 'conquest' on hunting down the players in the Japan and Korea regions. When they came across a large number of enemies, they would stay hidden and not engage. When they came across a small number of enemies, they would simply engage and slaughter them all! Since the Level 60 maps are all so large, all they had to do was to hide, and the enemies would never find them unless they dispatched tens of thousands of players to sniff them out!

At that moment, the players in Korea and Japan regions were throwing all sorts of curses. Other than the parties of at least 20 or 30 players, any other small parties would not dare to set foot on the leveling grounds of Kalojar Highlands.

Both of them continued sweeping the area clean, day and night, however, as the real world time was already close to dawn, and Sun Xin Yu needed to go to work, both of them tore their own [Teleportation Scrolls] and made their way straight back to Thunderstorm Castle. Some well-informed news 'transporters' were posting the news about their deeds on the game forums.

'Slaughtering within the land of Shorty Japan and Gaoli bangzi, boosting the morale of Republic of China!'. This person used an exaggerated title which instantly attracted a large number of clicks and replies. At first, many players thought that he was simply trolling, but later on, a bunch of players from Japan and China

regions started replying furiously on the thread. They were calling them bullies, and challenging them to face the professional players from their own region!

Looks like it wasn't fake news afterall!

In just a short moment, the reputation of Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were escalated high up into the sky, even being called 'heroes of the race'! Zhang Yang could not help but frown, he only intended to get the [Monster Attack Order], those players were simply collateral.

The enemies of the Lone Desert Smoke such as Imperial Sky and The Dominators also revealed themselves one after another on the forum page, trying to defame Zhang Yang by saying that he was only asking for attention! However, they ended up being drowned in the saliva of the '[Online Water Army](#)' to the point where they started being insulted instead --- it was an act that boosted the morale of the entirety of China, so do it yourselves if you are capable of doing it, if not, just drown yourselves by the drains at the side!

5th January, 7 pm!

The moment where the monsters would attack the Imperial Castle was finally here!

Zhang Yang and the gang abandoned the thoughts of grinding their levels, and instead, they went to the Meadow Flatlands. Although they could not join the battle Imperial Castle, but they



could still at least watch the scene from afar! It was not a bad idea at all!

A few days back when they were defending their own territory, they were always hoping that the monsters were weak! But now, they could only hope that the monsters were all stronger than average bosses! It would be ideal if the first wave of the assault can level down Imperial Castle!

Apparently, Lone Desert Smoke weren't the only ones who came by to enjoy the scene, guildmasters of the other large guilds such as Crimson Rage, Sky High, Sunset Amber, Radiance and others, along their own core players were showing up one after another to enjoy the scene as well!

First wave, second wave, third wave...

The main gate of the Imperial Castle was already been broken through! The battle was invading into the inner side of the territory!

Boom!

A flash of white light passed, the Magic Cannons had been fired!

"They have already activated their Magic Cannon in the forth wave!" Lone Desert Smoke could not help themselves but to compare their own experience, as they only activated their Magic Cannon on the fifth wave!

"The monsters who spawn starting from the second half of the forth wave are all elite grade, it was indeed very challenging to handle!" Zhang Yang was happily retelling his experience to the other guild leaders.

Snow Seeker revealed a smile on her face and said, "From the looks of it, looks like Imperial Sky won't make it through the day!"

Indeed, the Lone Desert Smoke had relied on Zhang Yang's [Friendship Jade] to survive the assault, and even so, their territory was almost destroyed by the end of the assault!

After defending against the assault of the forth wave, the monsters of the fifth wave began to arrive!

The Magic Cannons on the upside of the wall were emitting out a series of blinding white blasts, wiping the invasive monsters away. However, as the those cannons had limited shots, they were quickly used up!

A large number of elite monsters gushed into the Imperial Castle. The spectators from afar could not see the events that were happening within the castle, but all they could see were wave after wave of monsters gushing, in like water going through a ruptured dam!

The boss of the fifth wave finally appeared! It was that farting boy Moriarty the Wind Surfer! His appearance was the last straw that broke the camel's back!

‘Server Announcement: The territory: Imperial Castle was destroyed by the monsters!’

"Oh yea!" Fatty Han and the other spectators were cheering and clapping, celebrating! Meanwhile, the people from Sunset Amber, Radiance were smiling from the bottom of their hearts. Previously, they were sabotaged by the Imperial Sky during the Soaring Sword Competition. Since then, they had bore deep grudges towards Imperial Sky! Nothing pleased them more than to witness the loss of their territory!

Zhang Yang was also receiving a tons of cursing and scoldings from the members of Imperial Sky through private messages. One Sword Stroke knew that there was no point in any of it, so he chose to let Zhang Yang walk away with a smile, without saying a word.

Setting the status to not accepting private message from strangers, Zhang Yang found his tranquility without trouble.

After logging out from the game, Zhang Yang confirmed with Sun Xin Yu on their dinner with her before he began to prepare to go out.

Walking beside a pretty police officer whose militaristic uniform did nothing to hide her voluptuous body, brought lots of envious looks from the street! After having dinner, he forcefully brought Sun Xin Yu to a movie, {Heart of the Knight}, which was shot in the {God’s Miracle}.

This movie was in high demand, and a lot of people were watching it, making the tickets hard to purchase. However, the movie itself was not that good, the story line was a little dull and old-fashioned, but the special effects, on the other hand, were off the charts.

However, Rome was not built in one day, to melt the ice frost of Sun Xin Yu and see her blooming with with joy and laughter wasn't going to be easy, the amount of effort to do so must be tremendous!

After the movie, Zhang Yang escorted Sun Xin Yu back to her house before taking a cab back to his own apartment.

When he went online, Zhang Yang received a message sent by Sun Xin Yu, saying "Thank you!".

He could not help but smile, then he began to sweet talk, "Am I not your 'boyfriend'? It's my obligation to do so!"

"... Don't think I had no idea about it. You were only saying it to save yourself from getting shot in the face!"

"Then, why didn't you call me out?"

"Did you really want to die so badly?"

"No, not at all!"

"So let's stop playing pretend now, I officially declare that I am dumping you!"

Although he had previously been trying to rid himself of that 'Boyfriend' title, now that his dream had come true, Zhang Yang suddenly felt a little heavy-hearted...

Sun Xin Yu may be icy cold and all, but she was a beauty nevertheless. Her body was out of this world! Pui! Zhang Yang could not imagine who would be picking away such delicate flower in the future!

As the Imperial Castle had been destroyed by the monsters' assault, there was once again, only one territory in the whole of the China region. Players who had linked their [Teleportation scrolls] to Imperial Castle would have to rush all the way to Thunderstorm Castle to link [Teleportation scrolls] there.

Players who knew about the story from the beginning to the end could not help themselves but to laugh at the Imperial Sky for writing their own death sentence! Initially, they were planning to use the Monster Assault on the castle to get rid of Lone Desert Smoke's Thunderstorm Castle. Not only did Lone Desert Smoke manage to defend themselves, they had replied with a [Monster Attack Order] of their own! Unable to hold out against the exact, same assault, they had lost their own Imperial Castle instead!

Lifting a rock up only to drop it on their own feet!

In the modern age of the internet, secrets no longer existed! The Imperial Sky had become the public joke, pushing them to go low profile ever since, rarely even appearing on the forums.

Since the Level 70 Dungeon, 'Vestibule of Stones' was for a party of five, Zhang Yang waited for the four ladies; Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er to reach Level 70 for starters. Only then did he make his move to acquired the first clear of the dungeon.

Currently, only the party who won the Soaring Sword Competition championship had crossed over the threshold of Level 70. Therefore, there was no stress at all for Zhang Yang and his party in acquiring the First Clear of the dungeon. All of them easily acquired one skill point for themselves!

"Guildmaster, guildmaster! There are two shorty Japs calling out for you and Ms. Sun Xin Yu on the official forums!"

Zhang Yang was looking for good stuff in the Auction house when he received a private message from a member of his own guild. He could not help but to smile, and he replied, "If they want to challenge us, why not! Just let them come over here if they are capable of doing so!"

"But they mentioned saying that they want a match on the 'Hovering Amphitheatre'! Guildmaster, what is a 'Hovering Amphitheatre'?"

Zhang Yang was shocked for a moment. That's right! He knew



very well what a 'Hovering Amphitheatre' was!

Hovering Amphitheatre was some sort of an arena which exist for players to challenge each other. But to activate the Hovering Amphitheatre, a player must pay a large sum of gold pieces first. Once the Hovering Amphitheatre is activated, the player can simply challenge another player to battle. No restriction on regions. However, the challenged player can choose to accept the challenge or decline the challenge.

The battle mode on Hovering Amphitheatre had the Level-Drop Penalty! There was a total of 3 grades. In a C-grade challenge, the loser will lose 1 level; in B-grade challenge, the loser will lose 2 levels; and finally in the A-grade challenge, the loser will lose 3 levels!

Online Water Army: a group of Internet ghostwriters paid by either enterprises or companies to post online comments with particular content that affects the flow of the situations.

## Chapter 302: Hovering Amphitheatre

---

The Japanese players were trying to wash away their humiliation, and they were really putting in a lot of effort and money into doing so! It was actually unbelievable that they actually managed to dig out something such as this Hovering Amphitheatre!

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and replied, "Since they are willing to spend money to buy more humiliation, then I shall grant them their 'wish'!" He quit the game and looked up the official forum page where the Japanese posted their challenge invitation. By looking at it, he found out that the post was already been replied over tens of thousands of times. Some were summoning Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu to stand out and accept their challenge, while some other were cursing and scolding these two Japanese players for not knowing their own boundaries.

However, someone exposed that these two challengers actually belonged to the runner-up party of the Soaring Sword Competition held in the Japan and Korea regions, one being a tanker and the other being a thief. They definitely shouldn't be underestimated --- but why didn't they get the first place in the competition then? It was unfortunate, that they shared the same server as Korea, and Korea had always been a strong force in the world of online games. Naturally, they had a powerful presence in {God's Miracle} as well, constantly oppressing the players from Japan.

Zhang Yang used his ID that had already been verified by the officials to comment, and he accepted the challenge of the two shorty Japs.

In just a short period of time, the two Japanese players replied. The duel matches were set to happen on the next day on 7th of January by 9 pm. It will be Tanker VS Tanker and Thief VS Thief, and the duels would answer all questions! The two Japanese players were shouting out like mad men, claiming that they would give a good beat down on Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu until they were on their knees, begging for mercy!

Faced with the provocation from the Japanese players, the players in China region were also agitated. One by one, they were posting their supports for Zhang Yang and SunXin Yu.

Before the real duel had even begun, the battle of words had already reached the peak!

The officials of the game even took the opportunity to sell tickets for the duel matches, and whoever wished to watch the matches must pay for it! And it's not expensive too, just two gold pieces! But think about it, how many players are there in China and Japan, that amount of profit...

One day had passed quickly, and the time to duel had come!

"Noob tank, you better not lose!" Wei Yan Er stared up at them as if she was the one in charge.

Han Ying Xue threw a flirty wink and said, "Silly Yu, I shall give you a sweet kiss as the reward of winning the match!"

Zhang Yang felt a shiver down his spine for one brief moment and said, "Are you trying to make things hard for me? I have to consider whether to win or not now!"

"Don't worry, I shall solve your problem and accept the kiss on behalf of you!" Fatty Han thumped his chest and said.

"Sister Sun, do your best! We are rooting for you!" Wei Yan Er also cheered for Sun Xin Yu.

"Zhan Yu, now that you are representing the entire China region into this battle, if you dare to lose this to these shorty Japs, I shall slaughter you with my own bare hands!" Greensleeves Prince of Sunset Amber said.

"Zhan Yu, if you win against those shorty Japs, I will stay with you for a night!" that was from Perfumed Water.

‘Ding! Player Kigetsu Zan (Japan-Korea Server) has sent you an A-rank Hovering Amphitheatre Challenge, accept or decline?’

Zhang Yang heard a voice notification from the system right by his ears, and almost at the same instant, Sun Xin Yu had also received a A-rank Hovering Amphitheatre Challenge from Player Kichiku Michi as well.

Accept!

Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu both vanished in an instant and they were teleported into a virtual arena.

‘Ding! The duel will commence in 5 minutes, please make preparations for it!’

Meanwhile, the players from both China and Japan-Korea were tossing in their gold pieces to enter the spectator area, and the number of the audience was increasing rapidly as time passes. Unfortunately, the two matches were held at the same time, so everyone had to choose!

Zhang Yang did not summon his Whitey out, and on the contrary, he took off every single piece of his equipment and only kept the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and the [Titan Wall] on him!

If he was on a battlefield, he would do anything necessary to kill all his enemies! But this was a highly prolific match, and it involved the name of their countries, their races! So, he had to win, and he had to leave the opponent with no excuses for it!

Seeing Zhang Yang taking off almost everything, most of the audiences were puzzled by his act. What is going on? Was Zhang Yang trying to let go of the winning chance of this match?

But those who knew Zhang Yang well, began to smile.

Fatty Han cheered, "Little Yang is about to get real! Those Japs are going to drop their pants to the ground, and then they'll have

to bow down and sniff them!"

"These shorty Japs really need to be taught a good lesson!" Lost Dream was tossing his fists around and said, "Unfortunately I can't go to the Japan-Korea server, or else I will kill them myself!"

"Guildmaster, do your best! Go go go!" The entire guild cheered for him.

‘Ding! The match of Zhang Yang VS Kigetsu Zan will commence in 10 seconds!’

10, 9, 8... 3, 2, 1!

Zhang Yang raised up his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and [Titan Wall] and walked towards his opponent slowly.

Two opposition sides ---

Zhang Yang

HP: 9,520

Attack: 1,178 - 1,378

Defense: 800



Damage absorb Attribute: 300

Level: 71

Kigetsu Zan

HP: 19,840

Attack: 1,576 - 1,776

Defense: 730

Damage absorb Attribute: 820

Level: 69

Judging from the attributes from both sides, the regular attack of Zhang Yang could not even penetrate the defense of Kigetsu Zan, not at all! So how would this carry out then?

Kigetsu Zan stared at Zhang Yang, full of rage and said, "Are you trying to humiliate me?"

Zhang Yang shrugged and said, "Don't get me wrong, now that we are evenly matched with this current situation, people won't say anything about me picking on you!"

"You mother of... Argh!" Kigetsu Zan pulled out his battle axe with murderous intent and said, "I shall make you regret your actions!"

The two dashed towards each other and used {Charge}!

As the two of them clashed into each other, both of them were stunned almost at the same instant. But why 'almost'? Zhang Yang had initiated his Charge by just a few fractions of a second earlier!

That had cause him to recover from stun a tiny bit earlier than his oponent!

It was enough to determine the results of the battle!

Zhang Yang swiftly circled to the back of Kigetsu Zan and activated his {Blood Rage}, instantly boosting his rage points up to 42 points, and he swung his sword at his opponent.

‘-136!’

The damage was so low that the audience went ‘awww’, and the rage points accumulated from that hit was just 5 points.

Kigetsu Zan had also recovered from stun, and he turned around trying to face Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang had predicted his movement by observing all the micro movements of his body, and with a swift slip again, he stayed on the back of his opponent for about 3 seconds, and he gave another hit that inflicted about '-73' points of damage.

Poor Kigetsu Zan continued to make attempts to face himself towards Zhang Yang, trying his very best to shake Zhang Yang off his back, but he never succeeded. All he could ever do was to let Zhang Yang continued to poke his ass from his back! His health points was around 20,000 points, to kill him by inflicting these small amount of damages that Zhang Yang is doing to him right now requires at least 3 minutes, enough for his {Berserker's Heal} to cool down!

But the main point was the indignity! This time around, it was them who invited Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang for this match to stand up for the dignity and the pride of their Imperial Japan, isn't it? Allowing Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu to travel into their lands just like that was already an insult!

Things were worse now! The fact that a near-naked player could toy with him like that! This... nobody would be able to swallow in this kind of humiliation!

{Destructive Smash}!

Zhang Yang had finally accumulated enough rage points, with a flash from his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], he finally inflicted Kigetsu Zan with more decent damage!

‘-1,340!’

Kigetsu Zan was moving left and right trying to turn around, and as he began to realize that he could not shake off Zhang Yang, he began to run forward in a straight line.

--- Zhang Yang almost had no equipment on him, so his agility attribute must be very low now, his movement speed would definitely be no match to Kigetsu Zan's!

After Kigetsu Zan ran forward for some distance, he turned his head around, only to get even more enraged! Apparently, Zhang Yang was resting his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] on his shoulder while staring at him nonchalantly! He had not even tried to pursue Kigetsu Zan!

"Bastard! Bastard!" Kigetsu Zan had lost it and began to curse continuously. He ran all the way back to Zhang Yang. Swinging his axe up into the sky, he tried to cleave Zhang Yang's head.

Approach, activate skill!

Zhang Yang dodged the slash from Kigetsu Zan without much effort, and then he raised his shield up to engage, and used his {Block} to block the following {Wave Blast} from his opponent. With another swift glide, he went right to the back of Kigetsu Zan once again!

‘-204!’

As the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] struck by, another damage value appeared right on Kigetsu Zan.

The battle progressed with Zhang Yang continuously staying behind Kigetsu Zan and poking Kigetsu Zan’s ass with his sword, and every time when Zhang Yang’s {Block} was completely cooled down, he would create a chance for Kigetsu Zan to attack him, accumulating 30 rage point with his skill {Block}. The rest of the time, he would just focus staying on behind Kigetsu Zan to poke his ass with his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], and activate {Destructive Smash} whenever he had enough rage points, to reduce the healing effects on Kigetsu Zan.

The battle was absolutely one-sided, took a lot of time, but within two minutes, Kigetsu Zan was already close to death! But what humiliated him the most was that he was not even be able to touch his opponent yet!

Kigetsu Zan was drowned with his shame. He was running forwards, attempting to gain distance between himself and Zhang Yang while waiting for the reduction effect on his healing effects to fade, planning to use {Berserker’s Heal} to heal himself back to his full health!

But Zhang Yang had already predicted his moves, and with a stomp on the ground, he activated {Thunder Strike} and reduced the movement speed of Kigetsu Zan!

Kigetsu Zan quickly used his {Thunder Strike} as well, leaving both of them moving slowly, at least he had the higher agility value still!

The logic was right! Initially the agility attribute of both parties were different, the agility attribute of Kigetsu Zan was 110 points, which was 10 points higher than Zhang Yang's 100 points of agility attribute. But after the speed reduction was applied on both of them, the difference between the two agility attribute points was shortened! It became a situation where the agility attribute of Kigetsu Zan became only 55 points, which was only 5 points higher than Zhang Yang's 50 points of agility! As the movement speed was reduced, the difference between their speed was shortened quite much! Both of them were moving like snails!

‘-229!’

‘-1420!’

Zhang Yang was still poking Kigetsu Zan's ass with his [Dark Enigmatic Sword]!

Left with no choice, Kigetsu Zan grit his teeth and activated his {Berserker's Heal}.

‘+4960!’

It was a pitiful healing value, because of the 75% reduction on healing effect by {Destructive Smash}, the {Berserker's Heal} could



only heal Kigetsu Zan not more than 5000 health points! It was a tragedy, a tragedy that was too cruel to even look at!

Kigetsu Zan was tearing up. What a menace! To actually toy with people to this point!

Having activated his {Shield Wall}, his other life saving skills, and his {Berserker's Heal}, Kigetsu Zan had nothing left to defend himself in the arena!

Time to slaughter!

‘-3022!’

Zhang Yang had finally emptied out Kigetsu Zan's last drop of health points with a fatal blow using his sword.

It was a total torture and slaughter! Kigetsu did not only suffer the loss physically and mentally, he also received the penalty of the A-Grade Challenge, being ‘downgraded’ by 3 levels! He was definitely going to be cursed upon after this, a tragedy that he will never forget in this life!

Everyone on the audience area was speechless with what they had just witnessed! Previously, they thought that the ‘Butterfly Steps’ that Zhang Yang invented during the Soaring Sword competition was already the best creation in the world of Player VS Player! But no one had thought that Zhang Yang would pull off a performance that far transcended that!

Quite a large number of people were stunned to see that it was actually not that difficult to bring a Guardian down to the ground. After witnessing Zhang Yang taking off almost all of his equipment and defeating the fully equipped Kigetsu Kan, it seemed that the officials were right all along! No profession was stronger than the other, only players!

Meanwhile, somewhere in a corner, One Sword Stroke could only frown! He knew that Zhang Yang was a skillful player, but he had considered himself close to that level as well. But he knew, that he would never have been able to defeat Kigetsu Zan after taking off his equipment like Zhang Yang did. And Zhang Yang had not taken a single damage from it!

That would require skills that go far beyond one's imagination! One must also have an incredible motor nerve system, and also a very sensitive feeling towards the situation of battles! These all 3 criteria are a must for a player to be so good!

But as Zhang Yang grew stronger, One Sword Stroke only grew more determined! It would be a true achievement to defeat Zhang Yang at his top form! He couldn't wait for the Professional League Championship to begin. He was very eager to have a battle of the century with Zhang Yang in the arena!

...

After Zhang Yang was teleported out from the arena, Sun Xin Yu was already waiting outside. The real battle between her and her

opponent merely took 17 seconds, the rest of the time was spent on playing 'hide and seek' in the arena. In the end, Sun Xin Yu was far more superior in term of skills! She successfully caught her opponent, which sealed her victory!

"Little Yang, good job! You've tortured that Jap well enough to entertain me! I feel so much happier now!" Fatty Han was smiling very happily, "Let's go, we shall go and have a good drink together!"

Zhang Yang reequipped himself and replied, "No go! Not unless it's on you. You always leave the bill to me!"

Han Ying Xue and the rest of his gang had rounded up on him. One by one, they congratulated him, and after some idle chatter, they finally left.

"Time to grind for experience points!" Zhang Yang recruited Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream into his party, and they departed to the Level 70 map, the Kingdom of Oz.

The five of them rode on their [Mounts].

The [Crimson Red Mythical Tyrannosaurus] that Sun Xin Yu was riding had leveled up to Level 63. It had grown up from a mini tyrannosaurus to a 3-meter tall tyrannosaurus! It's body is completely covered in crimson red skin, it was very attractive! From afar, it looked like a gigantic ruby!

Han Ying Xue was envious of it, so she said, "Silly Yu, you really are biased! I don't care, you must take the responsibility and find me a [Pet Mount] too, and it should at least be a Yellow-Gold grade!"

"I want it too! Me too!" Wei Yan Er quickly took the opportunity to beg as well, raising her hands high up to the sky.

"Sigh!" Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and said, "You two should be more like Daffodil Daydream! Look at her, when did she ever demand for anything like this before?"

"Daffodil Daydream, you can't be like this forever. It is the fate of a mistress to demand for everything from her man!" Han Ying Xue continued with a straight face, "Furthermore, even if you become the main wife, you'll have to throw more tantrums. You need to keep him in check! Sooner or later, you will be replaced by another mistress out there!"

Zhang Yang dripped cold sweat all over his head, and he said, "What the heck are you talking about?"

"Oh yea, the 23rd of January is upon us, I'm about to become an adult, and finally, I will be claiming the company back!" Wei Yan Er did a fist pump.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to laugh, "What an ungrateful daughter you are, to actually want to kick your dad off the company so urgently!"

"What choice do I have, if dad does not step down, those bloodthirsty relatives of mine shall suck the company dry! By then, it will be too late to chase them out of the company! If I leave the company to them, they will definitely taint everything that my mother and my aunt worked on, for so many years!" For once, Wei Yan Er was dead serious.

# Chapter 303: The Ravine Of Coyotes

---

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and then he said, "You two young ladies should be more careful about this. They may be your relatives, but you will be taking a load of money off their hands. Who knows what may happen!"

In his previous life, he had not heard about Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, was it because they had an accident before he knew about them? Some people would kill for tens of thousand dollars. Silky Soft Holdings was a large-scale company, worth tens of millions! That kind of profit would drive people into the madness of greed and kill for it!

The Kingdom of Oz was just located by the north side of the Forest of Tanila, being the nearest map from Thunderstorm Castle among the six Level 70 maps. Of course, it would naturally become their first choice to grind their levels.

After rushing for a distance, they arrived at a narrow valley. Looking at the valley side, the place was crawling with demons. There were small-sized demons with Crimson red bodies, there were also blue apparitions, and also a bunch of scantily clad succubi.

"Let's begin our work here!" Zhang Yang tapped on the head of Whitey, Whitey immediately let out a roar and began to charge into the valley.

The five of them were so powerful that they quickly wiped out

the monsters, providing Zhang Yang and his party a sea of experience points. After grinding for more than three hours, Zhang Yang had finally achieved a level up, reaching Level 72, bringing him one step closer to equipping the [Titan Armor Set].

The five of them were slaughtering their way through, forcing their way through to the other end of the valley. Before them was a small camping site with only ten tents being set up there. The surroundings were set up with defensive fences, built with sharpened woods. There were also two heavily armored soldiers guarding, by the entrance of the camp site.

The armors on the two soldiers were heavily weathered, and they were stained in aquamarine blood. It seemed that they did not even have the time to fix their equipment, or even wipe them clean!

[Ravines of Coyotes - Soldier] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 74

HP: 74,000

Defense: 400

The information of these NPCs were shown in green words, it also meant that this entire camp site was a friendly station. To find

a camp in such a desolated place, Zhang Yang was 90% sure that such places would have quests to complete!

"Hold it right there, who are you people?" The two soldiers instantly drew their swords after catching sight of Zhang Yang's party. They did not sound friendly at all.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "We are adventurers!"

"Adventurers? God damn it, I knew it! That god damn state of Empire abandoned us and left us for dead! Alright, fellow adventurers, you may enter our camp site. Maybe our chief will give you some small errands to run!" One of the soldier informed them.

As the five of them entered the camp site, they saw a pergola, set right in the middle of the entire camp site. There was an officer with the name 'Captain Kang Na' shown right above his head, standing right in front of a table, revealing a worried frown on his face. Beside Kang Na, there was a warrior equipped in a full body of armor, with a name 'Quartermaster Patna' right on top of his head.

[Captain Kang Na] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 75

HP: 3,750,000



Defense: 800

[Quartermaster Patna] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 73

HP: 3,650,000

Defense: 800

D\*mn, a captain and a quartermaster --- Gray-Silver bosses! Ever since they entered the high level maps, Gray-Silver bosses had been all over the places, meaning that they were certainly losing their prestige over time!

"Adventurer?" Kang Na raised his head up and glanced Zhang Yang and his party, before scowling, "Just the five of you? What can you do?"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "If the five of us were able to clear a path and arrive at your camp site, does that not speak for our strength?"

Kang Na blinked in surprise and said, "That is true, this valley is crawled with demons in all corners. You making it here should mean that you really have some skills! However, our camp is now

facing a crisis that cannot be solved with skills alone!"

He then stared at the five of them and said, "Alright, rookies, I shall give you a chance! Our camp is seriously lacking of supplies, and our soldiers are required to stay and guard this camp site. So, you rookies go ahead and get us something to eat! Hmm, preferably meat, large pieces of meat! We have not been eating fresh meat for weeks!"

‘Ding! Captain Kang Na has given you a quest: Supply for the Camp, accept or decline?’

Accepted.

Zhang Yang approached the Quartermaster Patna and asked, "Quartermaster, anything here for sale?"

Patna gave a good laugh and said, "Adventurer, you have good intuition, knowing that I have some here! Here, feast your eyes upon them!" the NPC reveal his interface for sales.

Holy god, there were really plenty of good stuffs in there! Alchemist recipes, a variety of blueprints for different professions such as Blacksmiths, and also a variety of [Skill Books] for different professions. However, these items could not be bought with gold pieces, but a type of item called the [Demonic Stone].

These so-called [Demonic Stones] can be bought from the NPC, but the price is 1,000 pieces of [Demonic Stone Shards] for each

stone. Zhang Yang tapped on the description of the [Demonic Stone] with his finger and immediately, the information popped right out: You must be equipped with the [Soldier's Badge] to be eligible to collect [Demonic Stones] or [Demonic Stone Shards] from the dead bodies of the demonic monsters within the Ravines of Coyotes. The higher the grade of the demon, the higher the rate of dropping a [Demonic Stone]!

Zhang Yang was curious, so he asked, "Quartermaster, how do we get [Soldier's Badges] then?"

"Only brave warriors who have earned our approval will be eligible to wear the [Soldier's Badge]! So, rookies, get the quests done well and you might gain the captain's approval!" Patnar explained.

"Silly Yu, are the stuffs here good?" Han Ying Xue asked.

The descriptions of [Skill Books] and [Recipes] were not visible to people who have not learned them yet. Therefore, the four ladies on his party could only stare at the names of those [Skill Books] and [Recipes] dumbly.

Zhang Yang nodded and told them, "It's worth the shot!"

The warrior profession [Skill Book] was named {Heroic Leap}! In his previous life, he did not acquire this [Skill Book] through any quests in this location, but he had acquired it through slaying a boss. This skill allowed a warrior to leap from one place to another, the effect was basically similar to {Charge}, but the only

difference was that {Charge} could not travel through obstacles, while {Leap} could!

Of course, the obstacle must not be too tall.

"Let's go and get these NPCs some food to eat!" Zhang Yang flipped on his [mount].

Although each [Skill Book] was sold at only one piece of [Demonic Stone], but judging from the fact that 1000 [Demonic Stone Shards] were required to exchange for only one [Demonic Stone], Zhang Yang knew that it was not going to be easy at all, and they had no clue on the drop rates of those [Demonic Stone Shards]!

Han Ying Xue and the girls once again summoned their [mounts] as well and rode out of the camp site with Zhang Yang.

[Supply for the Camp] (Difficulty: D-rank)

Description: The captain of the Ravine of Coyotes - Kang Na would like you to collect 200 pieces of Iron Back Rhinoceros leg meat! "Humph, it's been so long since we have tasted good meat, the thought of it is making us drool!" You can find Iron Back Rhinoceroses by the Swan Lake in the Ravine of Coyotes.

Completion: Collect the thigh meat of Iron Back Rhinoceros  
0/200

As the five of them came out from the valley, they arrived at the Swan Lake. Along the lake, there were many white rhinoceros chewing on the grass and drinking from the lake. Although their numbers weren't small, they were scattered across the entire area, making it difficult to round them up.

"The quest says that each of us must collect 200 pieces of thigh meats of the rhinoceros, I think it's best we split up!"

So they went out into the area in four different directions. Han Ying Xue, as always, tagged along with Wei Yan Er.

Although the Iron Back Rhinoceroses were quite large in size, but they were just regular Level 73 monsters, posing no threat at all to Zhang Yang. But as the number of monsters around was low, the effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] could not be triggered often. It could only function as a regular Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon!

Although the number of monsters in the area were abundant, the drop rate of the quest item was not high at all. It took about an hour for Zhang Yang to complete collecting all 200 pieces of thigh meat of the Iron Back Rhinoceros! On the other hand, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream were almost done with the quest as well, but Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue still had a certain number to collect in order for them to catch up.

Zhang Yang went on to help the two ladies finish up, and after

another 20 minutes, everyone in the party had finally collected all 200 pieces of the meat. Then they headed back to the camp site ready to turn their quests.

"Very good, you are more capable than I thought, after all! But don't get ahead of yourselves, you people are just a tiny bit better than those rookies! Compared to my soldiers, you are still far behind!" Captain Kang Na had a holier-than-thou look on his face.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Supplies for the Camp, obtained 200,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have acquired an item [Soldier's Badge]!’

[Soldier's Badge] (Accessory, White)

Equip: allows you to collect [Demonic Stone Shards] and [Demonic Stone] from the demons you slay within the Ravine of Coyotes.

Level required: 70

"Rookies, you have completed one simple quest! Now, here's another! The reason remains unknown for the sudden increase of these foul demons around this area. Go and investigate!"

Captain Kang Na still had that arrogant look pasted on his face,

ordering Zhang Yang and the others around with his loud, annoying voice.

‘Ding! Captain Kang Na has given you a quest: Investigate the Demon’s Territory, accept or decline?’

Wei Yan Er began to complain, "This NPC is so full of himself! I really want to beat the crap out of him!"

"It’s just an NPC, it’s all part of the script. If you want to beat someone, beat the designers from Dream Technology!"

[Investigate the Demon’s Territory] (Difficulty: B-rank)

Description: The Captain Kang Na of the Ravine of Coyotes wants you to investigate the Demon’s Territory, and find out the reason behind the increasing number of demons lurking around. The Demon’s Territory is located approximately 20 kilometers from the Ravine of Coyotes.

Completion: Investigate any anomaly within the Demon’s Territory 0/1

The five of them rode out on their own [mounts] towards the west. After traveling through a forest, a large camp site was spotted right in front of them. The camp site was about seven to eight kilometers in radius. The previous campsite was more like a

hut compared to this!

Around the campsite, there was a large number of demons wandering around. Succubi prowled around the outside, showcasing their scantily clad, seductive bodies, with nothing but a piece of leather around their ample chests and tight spats that barely covered their butt cheeks. At their lower spines, devilish tails sprouted out. More importantly, compared to the previous succubi that they encountered before, these succubi were all elite monsters!

[Succubus] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 75

HP: 75,000

Defense: 400



# Chapter 304: Investigation In The Demon's Territory

---

"Why aren't there any male succubi?" Wei Yan Er asked.

"..."

"Are they even called male succubi to begin with?"

"I think they are called incubuses..." Daffodil Daydream whispered to herself quietly.

"Hmm...In that case, could they just give birth to male succubus?" Persistent till the end, Wei Yan Er refused to let the topic die off without getting a satisfied answer.

Zhang Yang rustled his hair furiously. If he did not answer her question, it would only be hell for him as she will continue bugging the party with more and more stupid questions. He gave it serious thought and finally came up with a suitable answer. "I believe that this race is a peculiar, special one. I think that if the succubi gave birth to male offspring, they will inherit the father's race. The female offspring will be succubi by default!"

"Woah..." Wei Yan Er eyes glinted with joy at the newly acquired knowledge. However, she cocked her head and asked, "Why is that?"

"...How the hell would I know? What do I look like? The father of all succubi? Ask the game developers yourself!" Zhang Yang snapped impatiently.

Han Ying Xue patted Zhang Yang's shoulder and said, "Ah...my sweet stupid Yu, now you know my pain!"

Zhang Yang pondered for a brief second and realized what she meant. She must have had to endure Wei Yan Er's insanely huge curiosity for several years! Zhang Yang smiled weakly as he understood her! Perhaps, the reason that Han Ying Xue went to England for her studies was not all because of Luo Yang Ming, could it be, that she was also running away from her precious, demonic little cousin sister?!

Zhang Yang clapped his hands together and cried out. "Alright guys! Let's start the fight!" He then patted the white bear's head in a light, yet decisive manner.

The party now had a total of three battle mounts. Their total battle power had increased to a whole other level, especially with the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and [Crimson Red Mythical Tyrannosaurus]. Both of the battle mounts were Yellow-Gold tier! Their battle power were about the same as similarly leveled players with Gray-Silver equipment!

"Mmmm~ Human male! Play with me!" One of the succubus immediately engaged with the party and lashed the whip in her hand. She licked her red lips seductively, moaning at the same time as she gyrated her hips.

Whoo PISHH!

The whipped landed on Zhang Yang head, even though he thought that he actually dodged it.

"You sly minx! Taste my axe!" Wei Yan Er leaped forward and swung the giant axe in her hand.

With the combined attack from five players and three battle mounts, the succubus only fought for a few minutes before moaning in a great, loud ecstatic cry as she collapsed. Just as she fell defeated, a few [Silk Cloth] and copper coins burst out! There was even a piece of [Demonic Stone Fragment] which was swiftly looted by Wei Yan Er by her lightning speed snatching!

"Sigh! You girls don't know how to take care of your own image. At least make an effort to do so!" Zhang Yang sighed heavily and laughed. "I knew it, women are the brutal ones!"

"ahem Excuse me! I'm not a woman! I'm still a girl!" said Wei Yan Er as she stuck her tongue out.

Han Ying Xue, on the other hand, blew a kiss at Zhang Yang and winked. "I'm not a girl, but I'm not yet a woman. A maiden, I would say at best!"

A cold sweat dripped down from Zhang Yang forehead. What a woman! If the little girl does not what she's saying, it's best to

leave it that way! Why can't you just keep your lecherous mouth shut for just a good d\*mn minute!?

There were many monsters in the camp. As the party proceeded in deeper, they had killed so many monsters that they had already lost count of them. After a while, they finally arrived at a small castle. This was the central point of the entire Demon Territory. Instead of a regular, medieval like castle structure, this was more of a gigantic round pillar. With only one floor, it was not all that tall in height. Outside the entrance of the castle were four large flags that represented various demonic races. Under the flags were eight elite tiered Flame Hell's Devil.

[Flame Hell's Devil] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 600

These stone-like beings were naturally high in defense. The average Level 70+ Elite tier monster would have only roughly 400 Defense! Yet, they had 50% more than that! In addition to that, these devils had the {Burning Aura}, dealing 1000 Fire damage to every target within 40 meters of their vicinity. Luckily, the same aura effect would not stack upon each other!

"I think, that's where we're supposed to investigate!" said Zhang Yang.

Han Ying Xue cast a {Holy Shield} on Zhang Yang and winked at him. "Go on!" said Han Ying Xue with the expression that says "Go, be the meat shield!".

Reading the expression on her face like a book, Zhang Yang rolled his eyes and said, "You're already so brutal to me as a maiden. I wonder how orc-like you'll become when you become someone's woman!" As soon as he said that, he rode off to the monsters, leaving Han Ying Xue behind, sulking.

"KIIIII KIII!" One after the other, the monster reacted violently as Zhang Yang entered their aggro. Zhang Yang had only engaged one of them, but the other seven of them were also triggered. Stomping their stone feet into the ground, they fired flaming green-emerald projectiles at Zhang Yang. If Zhang Yang were to fight these monsters alone, like he always did, he would have evaded the attacks with a quick sidestep. However, now that he had brought the devilish Little Snow along, he would not let her have it her way, knowing that the woman was lazy and would definitely slack if given the opportunity. With that thought in mind, he took the hit head on, without dodging it.

{Burning Aura} could have only done minuscule damage to him. Even though the monsters had 1,400 physical attack damage, all eight of them combined would only damage Zhang Yang by around 10,000 damage. At most, if Han Ying Xue could not keep up the healing, he would only need to activate {Berserker's Heal} since it had only two minutes of cool down time. Might as well use it, or it

will be wasted there in his hotkeys, collecting dust!

"As expected of Zhan Yu! Only the guild master could do something as brave as tanking all eight monsters at the same time! I believe that no other tanks could stand up to those monsters like the way Zhan Yu did!" Daffodil Daydream praised Zhang Yang.

Hearing what she said, Han Ying Xue budged in and laughed manically. "Oh, please. If you have a crush on our precious dummy there, just say it! We're all practically family now! You don't have to act all shy and bashful! Be straight! Be firm! Say it to his face!"

"N-N-No! I-I I er..." Stopping her attacks, Daffodil Daydream crouched down and hid her vermillion colored cheeks.

Zhang Yang frowned. "Woman! Control your words! Would it kill you to not be a jack-\*ss for just one day?"

"Why? Feeling heartbroken?" Han Ying Xue provoked Zhang Yang.

"Oh! Sister! You're such a thug! Thug life!" cried Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang let out a loud sigh and turned back to focus on engaging the monster. After a brief moment of silence, Zhang Yang spoke. "You know, when we were fighting the rhinoceros back there, I heard a male and female rhinoceros chatting about something. It went like this. The male rhinoceros said, "My love! Run away! The devilish snow has arrived!" and then the female

rhinoceros said, "Who the hell does she think she is!? I will stab her myself!" and before the female rhinoceros could do anything, the male rhinoceros quickly said, "No! You must run! That devilish snow loves to 'blow the horns'. Hearing that, the female rhinoceros ran away."

Before Zhang Yang could continue on, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream were already snickering away. Wei Yan Er looked at Zhang Yang with her dumbfounded expression on her face. "Why did the female rhinoceros ran away?"

"Dummy! Shut up! Don't you dare..." said Han Ying Xue as she shook her fist at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang put up a smug and said, "Well, after the female rhinoceros ran for a while, she turned back only to see that the male rhinoceros from before had caught up with the female rhinoceros. Surprised, she asked the male rhinoceros, "Dearest, why did you ran away?" The male rhinoceros stared at the female rhinoceros with wide, unblinking eyes and said, "Not only does she love to 'blow horns', she also loves to 'squish the eggs'!"

Finish with his joke, Zhang Yang could not help but started laughing manically. It was a joke that he had read in the forums from a few days before.

Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream could not stop snickering madly, as they fought to hold back their laughter. Han Ying Xue on the other hand, was all flushed with anger. Only Wei Yan Er was the only person who had no reaction whatsoever. She only stared with a poker face at everyone else, wondering what Zhang Yang

meant by 'blowing the horns' and 'squishing the eggs'.

At a monstrous speed, the party cleared all eight of the Flame Hell's Devil and proceeded to enter the weird, pillar-shaped castle. Once they entered, they were greeted with two dividing pathways. One led to the right, and the other to the left. There was no direct path that led ahead.

"So...which one?"

Zhang Yang answered nonchalantly. "It's just a round shaped pathway. I'm sure we'll be heading to the exit at the end of the pathway. So...guys to the left, girls to the right. Let's go to the left, then!"

"RIGHT!" said all the girls at the same time. Just when they realized that. "Jinx!" and a laughter broke out.

Going by the majority, Zhang Yang followed the ladies and took the right pathway. Regardless, the pathway was not as clear as he thought it would be. Every 20 to 30 meters, there will always be a blue, round, and fat Floating Apparition. Well, there was nothing else that could be done besides killing it!

"Nyehehehe! That blue bum bum is cute! I want one!" said Wei Yan Er excitedly.

BOOM!



Just as the last drop of HP was drained from the blue Floating Apparition, it exploded and dealt 10,000 Shadow damage to everyone around.

Wiping away his sweat, Zhang Yang turned over and cocked his head.

"Still think it's cute?"

"...no." Wei Yan Er sulked.

Following the pathway, the party killed each and every single Floating Apparition and collected a large number [Demonic Stone Fragments].

However, the monsters here did not have a 100% chance of dropping the stone. The fragments had only a 10% drop rate from elite monsters! It was expected, as the normal monster only had less than a 1% [Demonic Stone Fragment] drop rate. On the side note, the complete [Demonic Stone] was nowhere to be seen. Zhang Yang guessed that only the bosses would drop that.

After following the parthway, the party arrived at a narrow, straight, and short pathway that was only 10 meters long. After the narrow pathway ended, the party came up to another dividing pathway.

It was like there was another circle leading to another smaller circle . With no choice but to move down the semi-spherical

pathway, the party hacked their way through and arrived at the end of the second pathway, only to find another pathway.

Wei Yan Er sulked and said, "I'm betting that after this route, there will be another circular pathway!". She guessed right. After walking for 10 meters, they had arrived at yet another circular pathway. The circular pathway got smaller and shorter after every end, and the party was getting impatient. After repeating the same path for seven times, they had finally arrived at a hall! On each of the walls in the rectangular hall had lit torches that illuminated the entire hall.

The place was extremely clean and spotless. On the floor, there was a gigantic magic circle and radiated with black rays in the shape of a hexagon. The light converged together and formed a black colored portal which spawned one elite tier monster and 10 normal tier monsters.

At the other end from where Zhang Yang and the party were standing, there was a humanoid creature that seemed to be made of a dark, gaseous substance. Though it was slightly dark, Zhang Yang could easily see that the aforementioned monster did not have any legs and was floating in the air, a few centimeters from the ground. Every time monsters walked out of the portal, the creature reached out with its right arm and engulfed the group of monsters in a black gas. The clump of cloud, carrying the monsters inside, floated away and flew out of the hall, from a hole in the ceiling.

[Dream Demon, Knightmare] (Yellow-Gold, Demon)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Han Ying Xue gritted her teeth angrily and screamed. "Here we are, walking around in circles for the entire day, and yet the monsters could just fly out of here that easily!?"

The actual distance from the entrance to the center was only a few hundred meters. But by circling around endlessly, Zhang Yang and the party had traveled for at least 1.5 kilometers!

‘Ding! Quest: Investigate the Demon’s Territory has been completed. Please head back to Captain Kang Na to report your findings!’

The five of them exchanged a look after receiving the system notification.

"Should we...I don’t know...try to whack the boss for a bit?" said Wei Yan Er.

"Hmm. It might be a little tricky since there will be monsters spawning continuously!" said Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and said, "I think we should give it a try anyways. Alright, when the monsters spawn, clear all of them! You guys take on the elite monster. I'll kill all of the normal tier. I can easily wipe them all with {Horizontal Sweep}, if my Dark Enigmatic Sword triggers."

"Let's go!"

# Chapter 305: Summoned Soldiers

---

Zhang Yang rushed to the front and entered the boss' attack range. The moment the boss reacted in a hostile manner, the battle started promptly.

With nothing with his bare fist, Knightmare thrust's his massive knuckles towards Zhang Yang. The massive fist cast a huge shadow that enveloped Zhang Yang. He quickly used {Block}.

As per the usual battle strategy, Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu went behind the boss and attacked from there. Daffodil Daydream and Han Ying Xue stood behind Zhang Yang, attacking with fire spells and healing.

Knightmare shared the standard attack interval of around 2 seconds. After the first strike, the second attack came 2 seconds later. This time, Zhang Yang could not use {Block}, and he could not evade the lightning speed fist coming at him. Zhang Yang had to take the fist, fully undefended.

‘-7,812!’

A massive, painful attack landed, taking away a significant amount of HP and leaving a debuff on him at the same time;

[Shadow Radiation]: Cause 1,000 Shadow damage to all targets 10 meters around. Last for 10 seconds.

Zhang Yang screamed. "Get away from me! At least 10 meters!"

Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu immediately kept their distance from him. During their escape, Wei Yan Er had slipped in an insult, calling Zhang Yang something that meant swine king, leaving Zhang Yang madly infuriated.

Although Zhang Yang had responded fairly quick, and Wei Yan Er and Sun Yin Xue had escape swiftly, they had still sustained two damage ticks from the {Shadow Radiation}. Daffodil Daydream and Han Ying Xue only needed to step back a little and were still able to attack and heal. As for Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er, unless they were willing to take on the damage of {Shadow Radiation}, they would have to wait until the debuff on Zhang Yang expires. Nevertheless, the damage from {Shadow Radiation} was quite painful.

Zhang Yang felt something was odd, and checked the battle log.

Knightmare's physical damage had dealt 7,812 Shadow damage to you. (2,201 damage reduced, 994 damage absorbed)

The moment a physical attack deals Shadow damage instead of the usual physical damage, Zhang Yang's ultra-high Defense would lose its meaning! The boss' attack was similar to Knight class players. Knight class players would always deal holy damage!

That was why Zhang Yang felt that the boss' attack was odd. It would be wrong to say that it was a magic attack since it could be "blocked". However, it could not be considered a physical attack

either since it had Shadow damage! That aside, Zhang Yang could not spend too long dwelling on this ridiculous mental argument. 2 seconds later, Knightmare punched Zhang Yang again, the {Shadow Radiation} on Zhang Yang had been refreshed to 10 seconds again!

With him constantly radiating shadow damage, there was literally nothing that Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er could do!

"Hey! Noobie tank! We can't fight like this!" Wei Yan Er complained bitterly.

"Then sit down and grow a tree or whatsoever! Didn't you learn {Spear of Obliteration}? Start using that to attack then!" Zhang Yang scolded.

Sulking, Wei Yan Er quietly complied, and started hurling spears, 10 seconds at a time.

7 to 8 seconds into the battle, the magic circle on the floor glowed brightly and a magic portal appeared. A group of demons walked out of the portal. The strongest monster from the group of demons was the Level 76, elite tier Flame Hell's Devil. The other weaker ones were just 10 normal demons such as imps, Floating Apparition, and even Succubi. Right this time, Knightmare should be casting a bubble to transport the demons outside of the hall. However, since the boss was engaging Zhang Yang and his party, the demons were immediately sent into battle with Zhang Yang. The problem was, Han Ying Xue was currently generating the second largest aggro value as she was healing vigorously, prompting the demons to target her first.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

Since the beginning, Zhang Yang had reserved {Horizontal Sweep} for the sole purpose to dealing with the group of demons. With a good swing of the Dark Enigmatic Sword, the blade shone brightly and dealt more than 4,000 damage to all. SHIING! The sword's effect was triggered and another blast of {Horizontal Sweep} was cast, killing all the normal tiered demons, leaving the elite Flame Hell's Devil alone standing.

With the huge aggro value generated by Zhang Yang, the Hell's Devil shifted its target from Han Ying Xue to Zhang Yang. Stomping violently, the Flame Hell's Devil thrust its stone fist at Zhang Yang. With burning flame enveloping the fist, the heat of it was felt even before it touched Zhang Yang.

"Ice! Brat! Get the Devil! Daffy! Deal with the boss!" Zhang Yang cried out.

Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er nodded their heads and did what Zhang Yang has asked. Ignoring the damage from Zhang Yang's {Shadow Radiation}, they took the damage and attacked the Hell's Devil. Instantly, the stress on Han Ying Xue sky rocketed to a point where she was swiveling from side to side so quickly that her boobs were slapping against themselves! She was moaning as if she was both in pain and ecstasy. Zhang Yang sighed to himself. This woman was a treasure. One of a kind. There's no one else like her.

Her moans were so loud, and indecent. She sounded like she was



climaxing all the way, in both pain and pleasure. Zhang Yang was trying his utmost best to keep his shaft from standing at attention, while Daffodil Daydream and Sun Xin Yu were blushing so furiously that both their heads looked like oversized peaches. The only person not reacting to Han Ying Xue's moans was the innocent Wei Yan Er. At most, she had stopped to look at her sister, cocking her head like a curious dog. After a micro second, she went back to cleaving the Devil, having lost interest in her cousin sister.

The fact that Han Ying Xue continued moaning without pause, finally blew off what remained of Zhang Yang's patience. He roared, "Hey! B\*tchy Snow! Shut your mouth for just a second!"

Han Ying Xue grinned. "OooooOOoooOohhhh~  
AAaaaAAaaaAHHhhh~~"

Zhang Yang facepalmed himself and finally sent fire against fire. "One more moan, and I'll personally put my pokey in your hokey!"

Zhang Yang's funny euphemism worked like charm, which instantly silenced Han Ying Xue as she rolled her eyes at him .

With only around 150,000 HP, the Flame Hell's Devil was unable to endure the focus fire from Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er. After 20 seconds, it was defeated. Promptly after killing the Devil, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er leaped away from Zhang Yang to reduce the pressure on Han Ying Xue.

The calm did not last for long. Since the portal will summon

another wave of demons in just 30 seconds, the peace only lasted for just 7 to 8 seconds before another wave spawned. Zhang Yang resorted to the same tactic as before. Zhang Yang used {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave} to clear the weaker monsters, while Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er dealt with the Devil. Though it may seem effective, Han Ying Xue was the only one who seemed to be having the short end of the stick. Without a break, she had jiggled her mounds here and there in order to cast all sorts of healing spells just to keep the team alive. In the end, her efforts had caused her to moan again. The team was forced to deal with her constant moaning.

Overall, the battle was extremely tough. Luckily, Han Ying Xue had good equipment, along with unparalleled management of her skills. Even though she had been constantly healing several members at once, her MP was far from dropping!

On the side, Daffodil Daydream was having a tough time dealing with the boss. Alone, she was slowly pricking the boss with her spells.

By the time the boss' HP reached 80%, the summoned group of demons had been upgraded. From just one, the summoned group of demon had two elite tiered monsters now!

The party could handle one elite monster in 30 seconds. But with two of them at the same time, thing might be turn sour for the party.

Every time they killed one elite, the portal would send out another wave, leaving them with an extra elite to deal with! They

would eventually be overwhelmed!

Without second thoughts, Zhang Yang spoke up.

"I'll kite all the monsters. All of you, take this chance to use the [Teleportation Scroll]! That portal is ridiculous. We're not here to kill the boss. The boss is here to kill us!"

"But what about you!?" everyone asked.

Well, it was good to know that they cared about him. Zhang Yang smiled and explained. "I have the {Shadow of the Void}. After you guys teleport away to safety, I'll activate the skill and escape as well!"

"Okay!" Everyone nodded and prepared their [Teleportation Scroll].

Zhang Yang swiftly used {Shield Wall} to buy some time for the girls to teleport away. After everyone had vanished from the battle field, Zhang Yang activated {Shadow of the Void} and escaped as well. 20 seconds of invisibility gave him time to run to absolute safety. There, he used his own [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to Thunderstorm Castle.

"How are we gonna kill the boss with the portal there!?" cried Wei Yan Er bitterly.

"Hm...Looks like the only way for us to kill the boss is to rely on

the quest. Perhaps, there is a way..." said Zhang Yang. The poor white bear had sacrificed itself in the battle field. He could only summon his old skeletal horse and rode with the girls through Oz and into the Ravine of Coyotes. Within the hour, the party stood in front of Captain Kang Na.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Investigate the Demon’s Territory Obtained 200,000 Experience points!’

"Haha! Greenhorns! You did well! The demon territory is a dreadful place! Not a single one from my troops was able to handle the quest at such speed! Well done indeed! You’re strength is worth acknowledging! Adventurer! You now have the qualifications to be one of us!" said Captain Kang Na with a warm smile on his face.

Zhang Yang gave an adventurer salute and said, "Respected Captain! We will put our bodies and souls to protect the future of humanity!"

Han Ying Xue cringed. "Dummy. That was too corny!"

"Yeah! That lame-\*ss speech is so cringey!" said Wei Yan Er as she dramatically flailed around, as if her whole body was itching.

Though that sort of speech was indeed a little too inappropriate in the real world, Captain Kang Na was greatly moved by Zhang Yang. "That’s the kind of response I wanted to hear great warrior! You have the heart of a true fighter, brave and full of justice! Alright, based on the information you have collected, that magic circle has to be the transportation mechanism that the demons had

constructed! No wonder the number of monsters will never go down! They would keep replenishing their numbers!"

The captain wavered a little. "This would be too dangerous. The situation has escalated to a whole other level. If the demons had set their base here, they could easily transport a large army and plunge Oz into a never-ending chaos! We have to move out now! We have to destroy the portal!"

‘Ding! Captain Kang Na has a quest for you: Sortie. Will you accept it?’

Without a second thought, Zhang Yang and his fellow members accepted the quest. They were all left dissatisfied, however, not being able to kill the boss.

[Sortie] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Assist Captain Kang Na in destroying the demon’s portal! Time waits for no man. The longer you wait, the stronger the demons will be! You have to make haste!

Progress: Destroy the Demon’s Teleportation Circle 0/1

Quest Reward: Summoned Soldier

[Summoned Soldier] (Usable)

Use: Summons 1 Elite Soldier of the Ravine of Cayote to assist you in battle! Last for 10 minutes. Cost 1,000 gold piece for every summon.

Charges left: 3/3

Level Requirement: 70

Bound upon acquire.

No wonder they could not defeat the boss earlier! Nightmare was the guardian of the magic circle! It was a quest-based boss! If the boss could be killed without accepting the quest, there would have been no point making a quest all around it!

Captain Kang Na lead four foot soldiers out of the camp and call out to Zhang Yang and his party. "Adventurer! It's now or never!"

He then summoned a grey horse for himself. The other foot soldiers followed and summoned their own horses. When his followers were ready, Captain Kang Na gave a 'hiyah!' and rode off. Zhang Yang and his party did the same and followed Captain Kang Na with their own specific mounts. The party rode for 20 minutes and arrived at the demon's territory. Unlike Zhang Yang, Captain Kang Na did not choose to hide himself and had barged into the large encampment. With his huge battle axe in hand, the

captain went on a killing spree like a true war general.

D\*mn! This Gray-Silver NPC is so violent!

The party did not stop for even a second. With haste, the party had arrived at the center point of the camp and proceeded into the pillar-like castle. Since it had not been 5 hours, all the elite monster inside the castle had not yet respawned, providing the party a free flow to the center of the castle and to the stone hall with the magic circle.

Captain Kang Na stopped the party from proceeding, and spoke to Zhang Yang. "Adventurer, I need your help in dealing with the demons. My soldiers and I will need some time to destroy the magic circle!"

"Roger. Leave the demons to us!" Zhang Yang thumped his chest.

"Let's go!" Zhang Yang led the four ladies to face Knightmare for the second time.

Without wasting a second, Captain Kang Na and his soldier went around the magic circle to do something that Zhang Yang had no clue about. His only wish was that they could, at the very least, stop the monsters from appearing from the portal.

Zhang Yang turned to Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er. "I need the both of you to fight together. Don't waste time, leave that snow b\*tch to the healing!"

Han Ying Xue immediately rolled her eyes and sighed heavily. "Dummy! Do you really want to work me to death?"

In truth, it was not too difficult for Han Ying Xue to heal two more players in the same time. Priests always excelled at mass healing. Still, it was a troublesome situation.

On the other side of the battle, Captain Kang Na and his soldier had seemed to stop the portal from summoning monsters. It helped them wonders!

90%...80%... with everyone chipping in their strength, the boss HP was dropping down at a tremendous speed.

In the heat of battle, Zhang Yang had received a sudden call from Hundred Shots. "Zhan Yu! There's a problem with the Mining Cave!"

"What's wrong?" Zhang Yang asked. The Mining Cave was one of the guild's "gold mine". With a large number of excavation going on in these few days, the amount of mineral mined from the Mining Cave was able to accommodate the guild members request, and had increased the Territory Defense Level to Level 2! There was so much surplus that it was all placed in the Little Merchandize Shop to be sold! The profits were never as lucrative as the Territory itself, as it required players to constantly mine the minerals in the cave. However, it couldn't be dismissed, since they could at least farm close to 1,000,000 gold coins worth of mining every day! That was the reason why Zhang Yang had paid close



attention to Mining Caves.

"There's this guy who claims to be Yan Er's cousin brother! He said that he deserves to mine in the cave and wants to send some players in!" said Hundred Shots, with great uncertainty.

Zhang Yang was stunned. "Is that guy's IGN iLuvHanYingXue?"

"That's right!"

What a loser! That f\*cking \*sshole actually dared to show his face at the Mining Cave! If his face could get any thicker, he would be asking for a share in the Thunderstorm Castle!

"Ignore that wanker! If he dares to do anything, kill his sorry \*ss!"

"Understood!" said Hundred Shots without any objection. He sounded eager. Perhaps, Luo Yang Ming had went overboard with his arrogance and had pissed off Hundred Shots. Since he had claimed to be someone from Wei Yan Er family tree, Hundred Shots had been holding back. However, now that he had gained the approval from Zhang Yang himself, Hundred Shots could unleash his arrows!

## Chapter 306: Heroic Leap

---

The battle between Knightmare continued on. This time however, the party stayed strong, while the boss was close to death!

10%!

"SHI MA LE SHI TU!" The boss suddenly cried out in a loud screech. Its body suddenly expanded out like a balloon.

‘Ding! Knightmare has entered Berserk state. All damage increased by 50%!’

"The boss has gone berserk! Kill it quick!"

Upon entering the Berserk state, Knightmare had gained immeasurable strength. With a single punch, Knightmare could deal more than 12,000 damage on Zhang Yang. Not even Han Ying Xue, the super healer could balance out the damage! As a resort, Zhang Yang had to unleash all his ultimate skills. {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, {Rearm}, Clear Lotus's {Substitute}, and the set-equipment set effect were all used and only then, Zhang Yang was able to survive and kill Knightmare. By then, Captain Kang Na and his soldier had just finished with the portal. It looked like, the quest's secret completion requirement was to kill the boss!

CRACK!

With a thundering crack, the magic circle on the ground shattered into millions of particles and dispersed into the air.

"Well done adventurers! You have performed splendidly!" said Captain Kang Na as he clapped his hands to congratulate the party.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Sortie. Obtained 500,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained the reward: Summoned Soldier!’

"Adventurers! Though the magic circle may have been destroyed, this place still remains dangerous! I urge you all to leave this place immediately!" said Captain Kang Na. He then turned around and left Zhang Yang all by themselves.

"Hmph! What a useless NPC! Look at how he left us here after completing the quest!" said Zhang Yang with a laugh.

"Let's take a look at the loots! Loots!" said Wei Yan Er as she went on to pick up the battle loots.

[Poison Flame Chest Plate] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +235

Strength: +94

Dexterity: +217

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 70

"Hey Ice Cube, you want this? It doesn't have any set-equipment effect, at least it's better than the one you're wearing now!" said Zhang Yang.

"No!" said Sun Xin Yu coldly without glancing at him.

"Noob tank! What are you planning to buy for me as a birthday present?" said Wei Yan Er out of the blue.

"Hmm?" Zhang Yang pointedly turned away.

"Present! Birthday! Present!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Ah...that. Well, it's a present after all. If I tell you what it is, it would not be a present anymore! It should always be a mystery until you receive it!"

Wei Yan Er clicked her tongue disgruntledly. "Tch. Well then, what sort of mystery would it be?"

Zhang Yang kept quiet and sighed heavily.

[Energy Crystal] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +59

Strength: +24

{Unidentified}

Equip-Effect: Absorbs 46 damage on attack.

Equip-Effect: Creates a 1% chance to cast an {Energy Shield} when an attack is received. {Energy Shield} will disappear after 30 seconds, or after absorbing 5,000 damage.

Level Requirement: 70

"This sh\*t is good. Finally, I can change my hundred-year-old necklace!" Zhang Yang helped himself and kept the necklace for himself.

[Boots of the Crimson Gem] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +118

Intelligence: +108

Spirit: +47

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 70

Both Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream insisted on maintaining their set-effects, so the boots would be placed for sale in the Little Merchandize Shop. So far, the shop had been supplying 60% of all Yellow-Gold equipment in the market. In other words, almost 60% of every player's Yellow-Gold equipment had come from Zhang Yang and his guild members! In a way, it was an extremely efficient way of building a good reputation in the market and obtaining a good, long term profit.

After clearing all three Yellow-Gold equipment, the rest of the remaining equipment were Gray-Silver, which were all ignored by the party and went in straight into Zhang Yang's inventory. What remained were two other items that were not equipment. They were two solid, black, glowing stones. The complete [Demonic

Stones]!

In total, they had two completed [Demonic Stones] and 1,892 [Demonic Stone Fragments]. With that amount, they could only purchase three skill books.

With no intention of purchasing the skill books just yet, Zhang Yang said, "We should now head out of this place and grind at the camp area. No matter what, we should farm at least 3,000 [Demonic Stone Fragment] to allow everyone here to get themselves a skill book!"

"Ok!"

The five of them then went their separate ways and took 3 hours to farm a total of 3,000 [Demonic Stone Fragment]. After trading them for 3 completed [Demonic Stone], they went back to the Ravine of Coyote to purchase five skill books for everyone.

[Heroic Leap]: Leap far and high into the air, across all obstacles and towards the distant enemy! With great force, you can land on the ground and stun the target, and everyone 5 meters around it for 3 seconds.

Attack Range: 20 meters.

Cost: 50 Rage.

Cool Down Time: 2 minutes.

Compared to {Charge}, {Heroic Leap} could not only stunned the target for a longer duration, but was an AoE skill! The only disadvantage was that the skill would cost a large amount of Rage instead of generating it!

Wei Yan Er had also selected {Heroic Leap} as well. Everyone was extremely pleased after purchasing their respective class skills.

Just when Zhang Yang wanted to asked the ladies to farm for more [Demonic Stone] to purchase a few more recipes, he received a distress call from Hundred Shots.

"Zhan Yu! That guy, "iLuvHanYingXue" brought his own people to raid the Mining Cave!"

At first, Zhang Yang was stunned. But then, he started laughing. Did he really think that it would be a great idea to raise his sword against Lone Desert Smoke? He shook his head and said, "Kill them all. Leave no survivors!"

"Will do!"

"Hey dummy, what's going on?" asked Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang thought about it, and decided to inform Han Ying Xue about the situation in the Mining Cave. "Your precious Luo



Yang Ming wants a share of our Mining Cave!"

This time, Wei Yan Er frowned. Annoyed and disgruntled, she broke out into a rant. "What a greedy bastard! Just when I thought he was already taking up too much of the company, he also wanted to sully his hands in 'God's Miracle'! I cannot let him continue any longer! I will personally go back and give him a piece of my mind!"

Without waiting for any response, Wei Yan Er tore a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] and went away. With her gone, the party had no interest to continue grinding and followed her back to Thunderstorm Castle.

The Mining Cave was located at the west of Tanilla Forest. It would take roughly 30 minutes by mount. By the time Zhang Yang had arrived to the location, the area outside the Mining Cave was filled with dead bodies of random players. Hundred Shots and a few more Lone Desert Smoke players' name tag were dyed in red. So [red](#), that they would already be winning the lottery!

Red – According to Chinese culture. The color red signifies prosperity and good luck.

"Ah! You had finally came, my beloved cousin sister!" Just when Wei Yan Er showed herself in the Mining Cave, Luo Yang Ming had appeared out of nowhere and approached Wei Yan Er with an enraged, infuriated expression on his face. He pointed at Hundred Shots angrily and yelled, "Yan Er! Expel that wanker out of the guild! Just who does he thinks he is?! Doesn't he knows that I'm your cousin brother? How dare he raise his voice at me! He even stopped me from going into the Mining Cave to mine some minerals! Pui! (sound of spitting), just which dog pound did he

crawl out from!? How dared he did not recognize a man from the same house!?"

Instead of explaining, Wei Yan Er puffed her cheeks angrily and screamed at Luo Yang Ming from the top of her lungs. "You're the one who crawled out from the dog pound! I have told you a gazillion times! Zhan Yu is the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke now! Not me! Don't ever use my name to justify your nefarious actions!"

"Hmm? Cousin sister?" Luo Yang Ming was genuinely surprised, though only for a second. He then smiled, or rather grinned evilly and said, "Don't coy with me! I know that Lone Desert Smoke is being sponsored by us, the Silky Soft Holdings, and you were the guild master before that anyway, no? I know that you're only using Zhan Yu as a puppet! Honestly, you're just using him! The real master mind behind all of this is you! You control everything from behind the scenes! Am I right?!"

Even a pig would be smarter than this idiotic swine! No, calling him one would be a disgrace to all swine in the world! It does not take a rocket scientist to correctly figure out how lucrative the profits from a Territory were! In truth, Zhang Yang was holding to a mother hen that would only lay golden, no! Platinum-Golden eggs! However, how much was it worth, exactly? No one had clearly calculated. It was one of the uncertainties that a Territory had. Other factors like an attack from other guild, a raid from a wave of monsters, or perhaps the shutting down of 'God's Miracle itself, could affect it! However, as long as Zhang Yang possessed a Territory in his hands, the profit will be on par, or higher than a multi-million dollar company!

Unable to hold down his anger, Zhang Yang rode his white bear and went forward. "To the man named Luo, your mother is summoning you back for dinner!"

"Oh please, my mother—" Luo Yang Ming turned around and bit his tongue. He wanted to return the insult until he saw it was Zhang Yang. He opened his eyes wide and glare at Zhang Yang. "You rotting, stinking barbarian! This is not a place for you to talk! Know your place, peasant! F\*ck off!"

He then turned to Wei Yan Er and switched to a politer tone to talk to her. "Yan Er, we are cousins! Relatives! That guy? He's nothing but a stranger! How could you let a stranger manage something important like a Territory!? This brother does not fear hardship! Just let Zhan Yu transfer all the ownership of all the Territories to me! I'll personally handle all the management! Only blood-relatives can be trusted!"

Other than Zhang Yang, almost everyone present at the scene were frowning furiously. This man's face was so thick that no digger in the world could get to his epidermis layer in a lifetime! His narcissistic, self-praising, arrogant, shameless, and egoistical behavior was off the charts! It was already beyond human comprehension and could be framed as a work of art! A talent worthy to be recorded in the Guinness World Book of Records!

"I ain't got time for you! Hmph!" With such level of greed and egoism, Wei Yan Er had nothing to say to him and turned to Hundred Shots. "Uncle Hundred! Next time you see this douche bag! Feel free to kill him! Do not mind me! You do not have to worried about me!" With that, she turned away and got some

distance between the two of them.

"Wait! W-Wait!" cried Luo Yang Ming. He then turned to Han Ying Xue and beg for her help. "Please, little snow, help me get some sense into little Yan Er's head!"

Without even responding to his plea, Han Ying Xue dragged Zhang Yang and said, "Let's go! Let's go grind some levels!"

Zhang Yang nodded and the whole party went away. Luo Yang Ming started to give chase, but Hundred Shots shot a volley of arrows and killed the man. By the time he revived and came back, Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and the rest of them were already long gone.

His expression gradually turned sour. He knew that Wei Yan Er's 18th birthday was just around the corner. This little brat was always threatening that she would reset the main company's accountings after inheriting the company at her coming of age. No doubt, she would wipe these parasites off the board! Luo Yang Ming was not as stupid as played out to be. At the very least, he knew that when judgement day comes, his own family's little factory will be forced to close down!

After so long, Luo Ming Yang had already gotten used to the high life. It would cost him his entire integrity to go back to where he crawled from. He had always mingled along with his foxy minx and bastardic b\*tches, and each and every one of them had been addressing him as the boss. Without the factory backing him, how could he continue living the same lifestyle?

He would never allow such things to happen to him! NEVER!

## Chapter 307: At Her Doorstep

---

A few days went by, and Fatty Han and Lost Dream had managed to get themselves to Level 70. Zhang Yang then proceed to recruit them into his small team to make nine men and ventured throughout Oz to search for every available quest. The problem, was that they could not find any quests that rewarded them handsomely. Most of the quests they found were the repetitive types that required them to kill monsters and submit items. A few days went by like this and by January the 16th, Zhang Yang was the first to reach Level 73!

As expected, no matter how fast his killing speed was, it would take him roughly 8 days to gain a level! To get to Level 80 would take another 2 months! By then, the Professional League would already have started!

For the past two days, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were not acting as themselves. After enduring the urge to ask, Zhang Yang finally caved in and broke the ice.

"Hey! What's with the two of you!? Usually you're all so noisy and chirpy like a broken piano! What's gotten into you two?" Zhang Yang asked.

"It's nothing! Just, not feeling too happy!" said Wei Yan Er lazily.

"Why are you feeling down?" Fatty Han start to stick his nose.

"You wanna know?"

"Yeah!"

"You really wanna know?"

"Yeah! Yeah!"

"...Not telling!"

Fatty Han facepalmed himself. Fatty Han tried his best to coax Wei Yan Er to reveal the reason. She did eventually, only after she had her fun messing with Fatty Han. After sulking for a long time, she finally smiled a little. She smiled sadly and said, "Lately, there this problem going on with the Silky Soft Holdings. Rumors were spreading about the quality of the material that we use for our products. The rumors went on about how we have no quality control and so on! They are basically saying that we are cutting corners and cheating on our customers!"

"So, how do you, as the capitalist of the company, justify yourself?" said Lost Dream as he posed like a person leading a revolution.

"Hmph. Please, we do not need to justify ourselves. Without us, people would already be losing their jobs!" snorted Wei Yan Er, disgruntled.

Zhang Yang interjected. "What's the damage?"

"Bad." Said Han Ying Xue. "There were simultaneous reports stating defects in the products from all over the places! Either we really do have problems, or someone is out there trying to slander our company!"

"What will all of this lead to?" asked Fatty Han.

Han Ying Xue raised a finger and said, "Firstly, once there are too many negative rumors spreading out in the public, markets, retailers, direct sales, and distributors will reject our product and will refuse to sell our product in the market! Once there are too many stagnant sales, the company will suffer from a great loss, since we could not reach the product turnover sales! All of these will probably stop us from getting financial support from the banks!"

She then raised a second finger. "Second! When the sales goes south, our company stock will plummet. If the numbers go down too much, parties will be trying to get their hands on our company! Without the help from the banks, the company ownership might fall to others!"

"Is there a counter measure for this?" asked Zhang Yang.

"The office is already cracking their heads trying to solve this. GRAHHH! It's so frustrating!" said Wei Yan Er as she ruffled her long hair. "Dammit! I was about to take over the company and all these problems are popping up! Dammit it all!"

If the topic was anything about the gaming world, all of them,



except for Fatty Han would definitely have something up their sleeves. However, when it's about business in the real world, none of them had any clue. Terms and jargon like revenue, turnover rate would definitely be confusing to them! Even with nine brains in the party, there was nothing that they could do to help solve the problem. In the end, they had to push this matter to the back of their heads and continue on grinding.

The team split up, having completed the quests. It was much more efficient, this way. Just when Zhang Yang started grinding monsters alone, he received a call from Yu Li.

"Zhang Yang, please come over to my house tonight. Ah...right. I found myself a new home. Everything will be moved over in just two more days!"

"Hey! Why didn't you tell me sooner! I could always come over and help out!"

"There's no need for you to work up a sweat. There are always people to hire for this kind of job. Oh, and one more thing. My mother wants to meet you!"

Zhang Yang gulped. "...Does your mother know about us?"

"Yeah...it's my fault. I misplaced the pills and my mother found them. You know what!? It's your fault to begin with! Why can't you just use rubbers like everyone else?!"

"Oh come on! Teacher! Using a rubber would only get in between the two of us! There's a third party getting in between us! No! Trojan can find himself another b\*tch to get inside. I ain't wearing one!"

"...Oh please, you just love it raw don't you. And you love to finish it inside. Inside! Hmph!"

"Nyehehe. Jokes aside, what time do you want me to come over?"

"Hmm...7pm in the evening should be fine! Come earlier if you can! We'll be waiting for you to start dinner together. Get a pen and write down my new address. Don't end up at the old house!"

"Okay!"

Zhang Yang continued to game until it was 5pm before logging off. Usually, Zhang Yang and Yu Li would always do it in a hotel. He had never has the chance to meet and greet her mother in person. Since this was going to be his first time stepping up to her front door to meet her mother, he started to grow anxious and nervous, wondering if he was just meeting Yu Li's mother...or his future mother-in-law!

Before heading to Yu Li's new home, Zhang Yang took some time to buy some expensive healthcare products as a gift.

Taking the chance, Yu Li had not spared any expenses in buying a new home. She had found herself a good neighborhood in the

uptown. There, the security of the new estate was tight. They did not allow taxis to enter the premises and Zhang Yang has to reveal Yu Li's home address and the security had to make a call to Yu Li herself to confirm his identity, before allowing Zhang Yang to enter.

As expected of the higher end apartments, even the elevators were all pimped out, with music and fancy decoration going all out! After enjoying the ride up to the highest, 19th floor, Zhang Yang walked for a little before ringing Yu Li's doorbell.

The person welcoming him in was Yu Li herself. Curiously staring after seeing the bags that Zhang Yang carried, she giggled and asked, "What's with those?"

"Hmm. More gifts, better impression!"

Yu Li laughed at his logic and pulled him in. She then closed the door behind Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was already impressed by the apartment itself, but he was even more impressed to see her new home. Compared to her old home, this was a huge upgrade from the small trailer size home, to a massive palace! Her house was 180 square meters! The apartment had 3 bed rooms and two toilets. Compared to her old home, this was a luxurious mansion! A true home for a princess! Still, the emptiness of the home had given the illusion that the place was gigantic, since they had just moved in and had not brought in the furniture.

After getting himself ready, he entered the house and saw a middle-aged woman leaving a room. When she saw Zhang Yang, she immediately scowled, gazing at him up and down.

Zhang Yang did not respond much, since it was a typical response of a mother seeing a man taking the hands of her daughter. He then proceeded to address her in a polite manner. However, to his surprise, Yu Li's mother did not acknowledge him. During dinner, she only had a plain, sulky face. After only five minutes into dinner, she pushed her chair away and went to her bed room, leaving Zhang Yang in an extremely awkward situation.

Yu Li entered her own room and came out and sat beside Zhang Yang. Annoyed, Zhang Yang asked, "What's wrong with your mother? Why was she so cold towards me?"

Yu Li laughed and scooted closer to Zhang Yang. In an extremely seductive voice, she said, "If you knew that your own daughter was under the care of a sugar daddy, what would you think of the man?"

Zhang Yang's heart sank. "You even told you mother about that?!"

"Hey, think about it. With that expensive medical cost and this house, how could I make up an excuse like that? Before my mother found out about the pills, I actually lied that it was all sponsored by the university." said Yu Li as she gave him a certain condescending look.

Zhang Yang could not help but dripped cold sweat. If he knew any bastard would actually take in his own daughter like that, he would take up the kitchen knife and fight with him to the death.

Zhang Yang scratch his hair and cocked his head. "Well...you have a point there. At least I got off lightly, since your mother didn't kick me out of the house!"

"Hmph. At least you're smart enough to know that."

Yu Li pushed herself close to Zhang Yang and picked at his ear lobe. "I've yet to mention that you were once my student! I bet that she'll be raging on if she knew about it!"

Aroused, Zhang Yang had to push Yu Li aside and said, "Hey, stop it. Don't go too far. It's not just me who would be in trouble. This is your own house!"

"Relax. My mom has been having trouble sleeping lately and will always take sleeping pills before going to bed. Don't worry. I made sure she had taken her pills just now."

Sneaky as a snake, Yu Li's other hand had slithered under the table and had made its way to Zhang Yang's pants. There, with a gentle caress, she unzipped his pants, pulled down his underpants and let loose his "rattlesnake". A mature woman always had her ways. After the two of them have experienced their world rocking, heaven thundering moments, Yu Li had fully embraced her nature and was behaving like a true, passionate lover. With a naughty expression on her face, she placed both her hands and played with his hardening shaft in her soft, gentle hands.

"Hehehe! Looks like little Zhang Yang is being more honest than Zhang Yang himself!" Yu Li teased.

Zhang Yang had to suck in a deep breath. Her movements were so gentle yet, they had lit a vigorous flame in his heart and had stolen his breath. The woman beside him was truly breath-taking. Her red, burning lips looked like they crave for his. Her eyes, expressed the loneliness she felt when Zhang Yang was not with her. As her body burned with the desire for his touch, Zhang Yang could no longer tame the fire in him and reached out with his arms around Yu Li. He then pulled her closer to him and said, "Teacher...You will always belong to me!"

"I...Will always be yours!"

Yu Li bent down. She pulled her hair back and lowered her head, taking his member into her supple lips, playfully toying with her tongue.

Zhang Yang pulled his head back at the sheer impulse that hit him. With a forceful push, Zhang Yang cupped her head closer to him, and watched as his prideful organ disappeared between her lips. After a passionate lick, Yu Li pushed herself away and looked into Zhang Yang eyes. Zhang Yang helped her to her feet and he planted his lips onto her burning lips. Satisfied, Zhang Yang was ready to take this loving action to the next stage. However, Yu Li stopped him.

"Shower!" said Yu Li as she stopped him from unbuckling her own pants. With a hand around the hilt of his 'sword', she pulled him to the bathroom like a dog by its leash.

Zhang Yang kicked open the bathroom door and the two of them started to kiss each other frantically as if they were long lost lovers. In an instant, the two of them rushed to help each other remove any fabric that remained on them. Clothes, pants, undergarments were flying everywhere and until the last two pieces of clothing were removed, the two lovers embraced each other tightly. Zhang Yang struggled, but eventually manage to turned the shower on with a foot.

Shush...

"Ohh..."

As the warm water ran down their bare backs, mixing with their bodily fluids, both Zhang Yang and Yu Li gave out the most satisfied moans, as they embraced. Hugging her from behind, he placed his large hand on her chin and pulled Yu Li to face him. Like a puppy that had finally saw her master, there was the burning desire flaming in her eyes. Zhang Yang planted a kiss and stroked her wet hair over her ears.

After ravaging each other for some time, they heard a loud thump of the door and the figure of a person entering the toilet. While running, she was struggling to remove her jeans and said, "Hmm? Li Li, why would you take a shower before finishing your dinner? Why, today, I—"

The person that had just barged into the bathroom was none other than Yan Fei Fei. Before she could finished her sentence, she had already caught sight of the other two, who were locked together in the shower room, firmly connected at the hips.

Stunned and abash, she quickly stood up from the toilet seat and rushed to pick up her jeans. She quickly realized it was a bad idea, so Yan Fei Fei tried her utmost best to remain calm as she squeezed her thick thighs back into the extremely slim-fitting jeans. All three of them were completely silent. Neither one of them had anything to say. Abashed and ashamed, Zhang Yang was flushed red. Yu Li, on the other hand, had sneakily, silently, pulled herself out of Zhang Yang, and had turned around to hide her face in Zhang Yang's chest.

After what seemed to be an eternity, Yan Fei Fei had successfully pulled her pants up and had scurried out of the bathroom as if it was on fire.

Still, having her leaving the room, Zhang Yang regained his composure and the mood to continue. Being a man, it was not big of a deal if he was seen in the act. It's not like he would lose anything else! He lifted her face up and whispered. "Teacher, I think she has left the bathroom, let's continue!"

"Continue? Are you daft?!" Yu Li rolled her eyes. She quickly turned off the shower and left the room to wipe herself dry. Still wet, Zhang Yang laughed. "Hey! It was you who wanted to do it in the first place! I wanted to have dinner and you wanted to have Zhang Yang Junior!"

Picking up the clothes on the floor, Yu Li ignored Zhang Yang and continued to put on her own clothes.

"Hm. Why is she here?" said Zhang Yang curiously. Yan Fei Fei did lived together with Yu Li previously, but what was the reason



for her to also live with Yu Li here?

"Oh. That. Well, I had an extra room. Might as well let her stay in it. Fei Fei is a good girl. I can't have her staying alone!"

"Did she know about us?"

"Well, she does now."

## Chapter 308: Something Is Amiss?

---

"What on earth are the both of you..." Yan Fei Fei shook her head in disappointment and disgust.

"You just can't keep it in your pants, could you!" said Yan Fei Fei to Zhang Yang. He shrugged.

"And you! Some dry spell, huh! You'll literally impale yourself on any guy you see! I couldn't...just...you should be ashamed of yourself! I, am ashamed for you! Get it together, girl!"

"Hey. You came in without knocking! I should be the one going off on you!" said Yu Li refusing to back down.

Zhang Yang wanted no part of this. He was feeling famished. He left the scene and went to the dinner table to help himself.

"Fei Fei, I remember you saying that you're going to shoot a video or something. Why are you back so early?" asked Yu Li.

"Tch." Yan Fei Fei clicked her tongue disgruntledly. "Well, sorry for disturbing you two love-birds in your precious moments!"

"Video?" Zhang Yang grinned playfully. "You aren't doing those, cheap, amateur kind of...hmm...how do I put this delicately, French style, adult, action romance video?"

"Well, not the way you said it. At least you got one part right. It's definitely not for kids." Yan Fei Fei nodded.

"Sigh..." Yu Li sighed and quickly spoke up before Zhang Yang got misled. "Fei Fei is currently working for an undergarment company. She's the model for their latest products."

"Oh..." said Zhang Yang. But as he thought of it, Yan Fei Fei did have an excellent body of a woman. She was definitely more than qualified to be a model for an undergarment company. Her voluptuous body would showcase the fabric wholesomely. Naturally, if it was Yu Li dressed in a black, laced bra, coupled with tiny thongs, she would be looking badahonkas! He could already picture her, walking down the runway in high heels, jiggling her semi-nude body all around! It would definitely be a super erotic scene that would send every man covering their bleeding noses with tissues!

In truth, Zhang Yang had already seen her in it! It was back when they were having a role-playing session in the hotel room!

Putting the blissful memory aside, Zhang Yang had a sudden realization. "Didn't you use to work in a bank? Why did you run off to be an underwear model? Is the pay better, there?"

"Sigh..." Yan Fei Fei let out a long and tiresome sigh. "It was all because of that d\*mned robbery case back then! After that incident, my colleagues had been giving me strange looks! They thought that I was already violated by that robber. They think that I am a used woman. An old abalone, a spoiled oyster!"

"We get what you mean..." said Yu Li.

"It's a rich area so...ANYWAY! Since they thought I was...that kind of woman, men were actually trying to get a little "something, something" from me!" said Yan Fei Fei as she gestured furiously at her groin. "There's this time when the bank manager himself asked me for a quickie! What the hell! If I didn't reject him forcefully, I would really be a rotten fish, a broken doll, a---"

"Oh! Come on!" Yu Li stopped her again.

"So, here I am now. I just couldn't take all the harassment in the bank. I left no sooner after the manager himself rejected my application to be reassigned to another branch."

Zhang Yang understood immediately. Perhaps, the time she quit the job was when Yan Fei Fei came back late at night when she encountered them in the bedroom, putting pussy in the playpen.

"You still haven't explained why did you came back so early." Yu Li came back to the topic.

"Oh. There was a problem in the company. The shooting was postponed and I had to call it early!" Yan Fei Fei facepalmed herself. "Aiyaya...I'll be d\*mned if [my eyes grow something](#). I am both shock and disgust! Just today alone, I had witnessed two unwanted scene! The first one was really, disgustingly, shocking!"

Eye growth: In Chinese culture, there was a taboo for anyone

who witness, spy, either intentionally or unintentionally, the naked body of another person without the party's consent. The growth would be similar to a small acne growing at the corner of the eyes.

"You little minx! Are you begging to be smacked!"

Zhang Yang was curious about that and asked. "Hmm? What, or whom did you saw? What's so surprising about going twenty-toes with someone?"

"Earlier today, when I received the notice about the shooting's cancellation, I went to the dressing room, and was ready to pack up and leave! Who knew, when I was halfway changing, I heard the moans of a pervert! What could I do? The only thing I could do there was to hide in the locker!" said Yan Fei Fei excitedly.

"Hmm? Let me guess, was it the same guy that you have been complaining about peeping at you with that perverted glare?" asked Yu Li.

"Bingo!" Yan Fei Fei snapped her fingers. "That Luo guy, was someone remotely related to the company's boss, and he's been treating the place like his own home! That S.O.B is always hiding at some corner, seizing every chance to disturb us models! And I kid you not, there are so many gullible ones, like you said Zhang Yang, putting their pussies in the playpen."

There was a sudden tick in his brain. Undergarment company, relative of the boss, Luo?

Zhang Yang could not just dive into the pool. He tried to test it out before going all cannon ball with it.

"Could you, perhaps be, and I'm just speculating here, working for a company called Silky Soft Holdings?"

"Yes! Oh my god. You didn't strike me as the man who would know about Silky Soft! Well aren't you a swell guy, you must be taking my girl Yu Li to shop for high-quality bras!" said Yan Fei Fei, both curiously and surprised.

It was a bull's eye. She was talking about Luo Yang Ming!

Yan Fei Fei continued her story. "That Luo guy was always bugging me as well. I really can't stand him. That's why I hid in the locker. In the end, I saw something that I shouldn't have seen. The man had his arms around the manager herself. And my god, the two of them were so close and passionate. I had to look away! I was so shocked that I couldn't say a word!"

Zhang Yang snickered under his breath. "That's perfectly normal. You said it yourself! That man is a huge, raging pervert!"

"That's not the main point! Do you know who was the manager?" Yan Fei Fei rolled her eyes before continuing. "She was also a relative of the boss! They don't share the same surname, she's Liu and he's Luo. Even though they were not from the same family, they are still cousins!"

Both Zhang Yang and Yu Li were shocked. Yu Li gasped and Zhang Yang twitched a little. Zhang Yang had never expected Luo Yang Ming to be so ruthless that he would lay hands on his own cousin sister!

"Those two cousins were kissing and hugging so passionately and then I overheard something that I shouldn't. This is so much like those dramas on TV. They were saying something about splitting the property when the boss passes away! I was so afraid that my knees went weak! I couldn't even breathe properly then. I had to cover my mouth. I was so scared that they might do something to keep me silent if they found out I overheard it all!" said Yan Fei Fei. Zhang Yang immediately noticed that she was trembling.

"Correct me if I'm wrong. But you're saying that they were planning to seize the family property?"

"From the tone of their conversation, I'd say, yes!"

Zhang Yang was highly intrigued. "What exactly did they say?"

"I'm sorry. They were too busy talking about it that I couldn't hear much from their conversation. Those guy were doing it so hard that the slut, I mean...that Liu girl was already crying for the lord's name that even he was getting annoyed by it. How could I bear to continue listening after that?"

Zhang Yang was already busy thinking about this sudden news. Were the recent rumors about Silky Soft Holdings all, Luo Yang

Ming's doing? But...Luo Yang Ming's ultimate goal was to seize Silky Soft Holdings, so why would he cause it to lose its stock value? It did not make any sense!

After thinking of many ways to make the connections, he got lazy and decided to relay the news to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er and remind them to be extra cautious about that Luo Yang Ming.

Coincidentally, Yan Fei Fei had not had her dinner and the three of them grabbed more plates and cutlery. After filling their tummies with food and alcohol, Zhang Yang prepared to leave, but was quickly tugged on by Yu Li to stay over.

"Hey...Mr. Zhang, could you have me as your lover as well? Hick" Yan Fei Fei was already drunk. Her face was flustered red and her eyes were unfocused.

Zhang Yang not paying attention to Yan Fei Fei. However, he felt a sudden pain in his wrist. It was sudden and painful since she was digging in with her nails. He quickly replied, "Calm down woman, how could you blatantly steal someone's husband right in the face of your own sister!"

"Hick Li Li is your second roomie, I could be your third!" Yan Fei Fei was so intoxicated that she ignored the killing glare of Yu Li and continued. "Do you know why during ancient times, they called their wives by their room numbers instead? That's because, one wife, one room, geddit?!"

"Yeah I get that. My answer is no. I may not be the prime



example of a man, but when I want a woman, I want, a woman. Uno. At least, if I wanted more, it has to be someone I really like. That, or she would just be like someone from the red-light district." Zhang Yang waved his hands a big no, as if signaling to a plane that it was a no-landing zone, and dragged Yu Li into her bedroom and locked the door. Who knows, when they were asleep, some other woman might crawl in, or perhaps, slither into the room and make things a whole lot worse!

"Hmph!" Yu Li smirked. But behind that fake smile, lay an authentic joyful smile. "At least you're a good man. To reward you for your loyalty, I shall see what I can do about this!"

Zhang Yang smiled like a baby and tackled Yu Li onto the bed. "You may not know the inside of my head. But you can go ahead and enjoy yourself as I wrestle with a man's instinct."

It did not take long, for the room to be filled with the cries and moans of Yu Li.

...

The next morning, when Zhang Yang was about to leave Yu Li's house, he saw Yu Li's mother in the living room. The moment he stepped out, she was staring, or rather, glaring at him as if she was wishing him death. It was as if he was an abomination, the worse crock of the entire nation.

After hastily returning to his home, Zhang Yang immediately logged into the game and was immediately bombarded with a

gazillion of question to why did he not log into the game yesterday night.

He simply could not. After wrestling in Yu Li's bed for a good time, he was too tired to do anything else and went straight to chase after Peter Pan, let alone log into the game! After dodging questions and getting a scolding from the gang, the party went on to grind their levels. Mostly all the quest in Oz had been cleared, and the team then proceeded on to a new map and came to a place known as the Black Moss Wilderness.

Unlike the Kingdom of Oz, which was filled with harmless citizens, Black Moss Wilderness was how you would describe a place that had yet to receive the touch of society. The place was covered with wild beasts. It was eerie, and gloomy. Even during the daytime, the place was covered in thick mist and dark clouds, giving them poor visibility, even during daytime.

Zhang Yang had vaguely recalled that a group of Elves that had set up a camp in this map. Since he could not remember their precise location, Zhang Yang was blindly groping about. However, it did not take long before they encountered an overly large encampment.

The camping grounds were so huge. There were camps and tents that were set up, with flags soaring high in the sky. Zhang Yang frowned. According to his memories, he did not remember this camp being so huge! In the past, when he reached this place, the camp was only located under the cover of a hill, with only seven to eight camps! Yet, here there were hundreds, even thousands of camps, being set up in this massive flatland.

Within the camp grounds, there were hundreds of female Elven warriors sparring with each other. Elves were famous for their prowess in archery. However, those female warriors carried both a bow and a sword, making them capable of engaging in both ranged and melee fights.

Wei Yan Er asked, "Why can't we equip a bow?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "You can. Go and get yourself a "God of Bow" Inheritance!"

When the female warrior noticed the arrival of Zhang Yang's party, they got into their combat stances and were on guard. The frontmost female warriors unsheathed their swords while the female warriors behind them drew their bows, ready to let their arrows fly.

Zhang Yang swiftly jumped down from the white bear and did an adventurer salutation to them. "We are adventurers from White Jade Castle! We mean you no harm!"

"Adventurer?" A voice ranged loudly as a female Elven priestess stepped out from among them.

It was quite obvious that this NPC was a prominent one among the NPCs here. When she walked over, the warrior opened a pathway for her. The warriors bowed respectfully to her.

[Priestess Priestess Thea - Moon Glory] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 75

HP: 3,750,000

Defense: 800

Thea gaze at everyone and observed the mark of the White Jade Castle on their chest. "By the Moon Gods, for he had guided me in my dreams! These guests will help us to rescue the Priestess of the Moon! Bless the gods, bless us all! You came! You have fulfilled the prophecy!"

The priestess gestured and the warriors lowered their weapons.

Bingo, a quest!

Zhang Yang spoke, "To serve the proud Elven race would be our honor!"

Thea nodded and gracefully spoke, "Dear adventurers, we face an imminent threat! Our beloved Priestess of the Moon has been kidnaped by the Red-Skinned Beastman of the Blood Moon Castle! We must to rescue the Priestess of the Moon as soon as we can! That said, the Blood Moon Castle defenses were too strong! At our

current strength, we can never breach their castle wall!"

Zhang Yang responded, "Oh respected Priestess, how may we assist you?"

"I can use my Alchemy and Smithing skills to forge a Teleportation Device that could transport troops to inside the castle itself! However, the Teleportation Device requires many materials and ingredients. I will require your assistance to gather said materials and ingredients," said Thea. "But first, the one item I need most would be a large quantity of the Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger."

‘Ding! Thea – Moon Glory has a quest for you: Collecting the Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger. Would you accept it?’

It was a necessary quest for the party to enter the castle to rescue the Priestess of the Moon. Be it S or A ranked, it would only be a collection quest. Though it might be a little annoying, it was necessary to proceed with the quest!

[Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Thea – Moon Glory has instructed you to collect 200 counts of the Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger. You can find the monster at the Valley of the Ent, west of Black Moss Wilderness.

Progress: Collect Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger 0/200

The party took the quest and rode to the designated destination.

"Hey! Did you guys notice that there were no males in the entire camp?" said Fatty Han suddenly.

"Elves in this game are more like amazons. Their culture and beliefs are in the Moon Goddess, and their leader will always be a Priestess of the Moon. No male has ever taken that position. That is why, I think, the males are at home, nursing the kids or something," said Zhang Yang.

Endless Starlight eye's glinted. "If I could live in such a world, that would be just great!"

Zhang Yang snickered. "Elven races would actually support polygamy, meaning, one woman could have many husbands! You better think again."

Both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight kept their mouths shut.

"Oh right! Snow b\*tch, little brat, I advise you to stay clear of that Luo guy. I'm guessing that that bastard will be incredibly jealous of the little brat for taking over the company and will do something nasty about that," said Zhang Yang.

"Him? He's all teddy bears and cotton candies inside, how could someone like him come up with anything?" said Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang turned to Wei Yan Er and said, "Do you have a cousin name Liu?"

"EH!? How did you know about that?" Wei Yan Er widen her eyes. She puffed her cheeks and grinned evilly. "Hehe, could it be that you have eyes on her? You sneaky little bastard. You shouldn't be looking at other women besides my cousin sister!"

"Please, cut the crap. I got hold of some bad news about her. That Luo guy and your cousin Liu are secretly planning to take over Silky Soft Holdings behind your back!"

Wei Yan Er scratched her head. "Liu Shu Yan might be a little sneaky sometimes. But if she ever wanted to take over Silky Soft Holdings, she wouldn't be able to! As long as sister Han and me are in the company, there is no way anyone could take over. Not even my father could stop me, legally."

Zhang Yang frowned. Worriedly, he said, "But, what if something happens to you guys?"

"What do you mean by that?"

"I mean, say, both of you had encountered a bad accident and went missing?"

"Hey! Touch wood! You nasty noob tank! You dare to curse me and my cousin sister! I'll summoned the great power of the super Saiyans and pull every single strand of hair on your head!" said Wei Yan Er fiercely.

On one side, Han Ying Xue was already seriously thinking about it. "So, you're saying, someone is out there trying to do something to me and Yan Er?"

"There is that possibility."

Han Ying Xue remained quiet for a while, "If something happens to me, the company ownership will automatically be given to Yan Er. But, if something happened to the both of us...That will be bad. The entire company's property will fall into the hands of that bunch of leeches!"



# Chapter 309: Collecting The Dragon Crystals

---

The crowd arrived to the Valley of the Ent and was greeted by a mountain full of ancient trees that soared up to the sky. In the mountain, there were many of those fore mentioned Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger roaming freely. As their names suggested, they had wings sticking out of their backs, and razor-sharp fangs that could pierce even the toughest armor.

[Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 73

HP: 7,300

Defense: 70

"Let's split up!" To have the team farm a total of 200 teeth would be troublesome. It would be for the best to have them split up and farm for their own parts. Han Ying Xue had quietly remained by Zhang Yang's side as they started going their own paths. Naturally, Zhang Yang had to farm her parts too since she was a priest with low attacking power.

"Dummy. Did you really mean it, when you said that the Liu and Luo couple were planning to harm Yan Er and me?" said Han Ying

Xue. No wonder she was so serious.

Zhang Yang shrugged. "I'm not too sure about that either. But, at least, now you know about it, and you can take some precautions."

With the bear under him, Zhang Yang kited 20 to 30 monster in one shot and killed them all. Though they may have wings sticking out from their backs, they could not fly. They could only hover in the air after running at great speed and attack Zhang Yang like levitating bulls.

Han Ying Xue bashfully asked. "I heard from that perverted fatty that you could fight, like, in real life?"

"But of course!" Zhang Yang thumped his chest and proudly gloated. "While I can't possibly fight a hundred at a time, I could at least take on more than 10 men at the same time."

Han Ying Xue turned away and glared somewhere else. "Then... you should be our bodyguard!"

"...Woman, I'm sure there are plenty of such services out there. You could at least do yourself a favor and hire the professionals."

"I don't trust strangers!"

Zhang Yang heart fluttered a little. Han Ying Xue had her full faith in him. Zhang Yang still shook his head. "That Luo might have some hidden plans that might exceed my calculations. I'm

one man. If I were to be your bodyguard, that would mean that I would have to stay by your side for a good deal of time! We would probably end up annoying the shit out of each other, me before you!"

"You silly dummy! This lady here is a wonder of the world! If you were to take a picture of me, that picture would be a masterpiece! Why are you complaining when I'm allowing you to remain by my side!"

"Just shut up and do your job, will you?"

It was always harder to complete a collection quest. Unlike the regular killing quest, these quests required luck, since the drops were determine by random number generator! People like Sun Xin Yu were so lucky that she had collected 200 teeth on her own in just 30 minutes. On the far end of the scale, Lost Dream had rotten luck. He had already spent close to one hour and had yet to finish collecting. When everyone had already finished with their quests, they had to go assist him.

The luckiest of them all was Daffodil Daydream. She had managed to capture herself a Gray-Silver battle mount. It was a Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger Cub. Her capture had brought the total number of battle mounts in the party to four.

Zhang Yang said, "As the difficulty of the map gets higher, so will the rate of appearance of battle mounts. However, the higher tiered battle mounts will get even harder to capture. Take the current standards as example. When players were carrying Yellow-Gold equipments, the Yellow-Gold mounts will be rare. Until

players reach the point where Violet-Platinum equipment becomes a norm, they will try to make Violet-Platinum tier battle mounts the bare minimum, snuffing out the Gray-Silvers."

"That means, we don't really have to rush for battle mounts at this stage?'

Zhang Yang nodded. "You are correct!"

The party returned to the elven camp and submitted their quests, one at a time.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Collect Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger. Obtained 100,000 Experience Points!’

"Wonderful! Now, I trust you to collect the second ingredient!" said Thea to her free laborers. "The next ingredient that I require, would be the [Burning Amber] of the Ash Wonderer. Please make haste dear adventurers!"

Endless Starlight started to complaint, "D\*mn. I haven't even caught my breath yet and yet we have to run off again!"

"Stop whining and start running!"

[Burning Amber] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Thea – Moon Glory requires you to collect 200 counts of [Burning Amber]. You can find Ash Wonderers at the Lava Pits, west of the Black Moss Wilderness.

Progress: Collect [Burning Amber] 0/200

The team took 20 minutes to reach the new farming ground and started killing their way to complete the quest.

The monsters called Ash Wonderers were just a new kind of Fire Elementals. All of them carried the {Burning Aura} even when they were only normal tier monsters. Still, the damage was unbelievably low. The problem was not the difficulty in killing the monsters, like all of other collection quest, the problem lay in their drop rates. The team spent a long time completing the quest. After returning to the camp ground and submitting the quest, they were only rewarded with a measly 300,000 Experience points.

"One last thing now! We are almost there!' said Thea happily. "The last ingredient that I require to complete the Teleportation Device is the Dragon Crystal. I need you to visit the Dragon's Slumber Temple and collect a Dragon Crystal!"

[Collect Dragon Crystal] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Thea – Moon Glory had request you to collect a piece of [Dragon Crystal]. You may collect the [Dragon Crystal] from the corpse of a dragon in the Dragon's Slumber

Temple, north of the Black Moss Wilderness. Be caution, there are hidden dangers lurking on the area.

Progress: Collect Dragon Crystal: 0/1

No choice. They would have to run around again! The party made their way through the Black Moss Wilderness and towards the Dragon's Slumber Temple. Half an hour later, they could already see their destination from a long distance. Standing there was an emerald blue tower, so huge, and it had actually scraped the dark, grayish sky. The team rode on and on. The tower made no sign of getting closer. It was like traveling in a car, and not seeing the moon and mountains moving even after traveling a distance. The team had actually traveled for another 30 minutes before actually reaching their destination.

From afar, the building looked like a tower, however, when they stood at the bottom of the tower, it looked more like a huge stadium. The entire construct was oval in shape, with a diameter of more than 1,000 meters. Due to the mega towering structure and the weight it seemed to bear, its base somehow looked fragile in comparison. The temple had an entrance at every four points of the tower base floor. There were a total of 30 floors to the top, with each floor sharing the exact same design. Each floor measured at least hundreds of meters tall. The problem, was that the structure was extremely puzzling. There was a huge gap between them with no visible stairs or pathway to get to the next floor. That said, it would seem like players would have to have flying mounts to get across each floor.

Without delay, the party rode their mounts and the others

walked, all into the towering, mega structure's first floor. Inside, there were nothing but gigantic corpses laying around. Each corpse was so huge that Zhang Yang's group were like ants to a huge elephants.

"Didn't they say that dragons were extremely rare? Look at this place! It's filled with dragon bones! It looked like someone had a huge \*ss party with dragon ribs!" Fatty Han joked.

"Isn't this quest A-classed? Why aren't there any monsters for us to kill?" said Lost Dream suspiciously.

"Just be careful. Let's not split up for now. Stick together and search for the dragon"

Wei Yan Er lazily scanned the area and said, "Where are you... Dragon Crystal..."

"Dragon Crystal huh...I think it mean something like the essence of a dragon. Perhaps it would be at somewhere the heart would be." Lost Dream tried to explain.

Fatty Han snickered. "Essence? That would be at the heart, it should be somewhere...for a dragon? 3 meters below their waist!"

Endless Starlight claps his hand and praised. "D\*mn bro! Well said! [They say that the essence of a man lies deep within one's manhood](#)! Fatty Han, you're a genius!"

The original joke was not that. It was 晶字乃是三个日字组成,

which explains the formation of the word 晶 and Endless Starlight made fun of that. It made sense in mandarin but it does not carry the meaning in English. I took the liberty to create a new joke.

Almost everyone else beside the two perverts rolled their eyes as they started to initiate their dirty talk.

"The quest item should be glowing. It be easy to spot it. Take your time, and be careful!" said Zhang Yang. The party took their time to search around each corpse but found nothing. The area didn't even seem to have any hostile monsters. The only thing was the deafening silence.

"Huh...It's taking too long. Let's split up!"

Everyone nodded. They were all getting annoyed. Each of them took a direction and followed it till the end and came back to the center to regroup.

After 20 minutes, the party regrouped, empty handed.

"We have searched everything!"

At the center of the Temple, there was a huge skeleton that measured approximately 200 meters in length. Hoping that they would find the quest item, the party proceeded to search from the tail, and slowly move up the torso. After just a few seconds, Fatty Han's loud voice was heard howling. "Ooi! Come to me!"



Everyone came around and gathered to where Fatty Han was and saw the huge, football size ruby-red crystal, glowing violently as if there was a raging fire inside.

Smiling from ear to ear, Fatty Han bellowed. "I knew that it would be somewhere below the waist!"

Fatty Han actually was standing at the pelvic region of the skeleton.

"Such a big crystal...I think it should be enough for everyone if I break it up!" said Wei Yan Er as she picked it up.

THOOM!

Just as Wei Yan Er picked the Dragon Crystal up, the loud, cracking sound of the wind blew up, sending a howling gale through the vicinity.

"What's happening?" Wei Yan Er was shocked.

"This is an A class quest. Do you really think that it was going to be so easy?" Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and said, "Get ready to fight!"

During their conversation, shadows of dragons were emerging out from the skeletons. Red, black, green, blue, and even copper colored shadows flying around! The different types of dragon merged together, turning into something menacing, and even

worse, solid.

[Ancient Dragon Soul] (Yellow-Gold, Summoned)

Level: 75

HP: 7,500,000

Defense: 1,400

BOOM!

This dragon that was formed from many other the different dragons had a multi-colored outer shell, and stood a few hundred meters tall, stomped the ground. It growled angrily, "Cursed intruders! You have tainted the grounds of Dragon's Slumber Temple! Your sins will be forgiven only by your death!"

Zhang Yang quickly turn around and screamed at the little brat. "Hey! Take the crystal and keep it!"

"I can't! There's this system notification telling me that it cannot be looted!"

"F\*ck it! That means we'll have to kill this boss first!"

BOOM! BOOM! BAM!

The earth exploded with each step the dragon took.

Zhang Yang did not waste even a second and rushed towards the dragon with {Charge}. Zhang Yang sliced the dragon for 1,683 damage and quickly stack up as much {Cripple Defense}. The rest of the party immediately moved into action. Each of them got into position and started to attack. After a while, a bright blue light glowed around the dragon, only to blast out in all directions. The light blast radius was so wide that it had even manage to hit ranged players such as Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Hundred Shots.

‘Ding! You have received the effect {The Blue Dragon’s Curse}. Dexterity has been reduced by 20%. Last for 1 minute!’

Everyone received the debuff.

# Chapter 310: The Ancient Dragon Soul

---

Once the skill effect was released, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, Lost Dream started whining. Also affected as Sun Xin Yu, as classes that highly depended on Dexterity were the ones that were effected the most.

After 15 seconds, there was a green hue glowed brightly and everyone received another debuff.

‘Ding! You have received {Curse of the Green Dragon}. Vitality has been reduced by 20%!’

Hundred Shots immediately cried out to exclaim. "I think there were Green, Blue, Red, Black, and also Copper colored dragons merging into that big dragon. I think the boss dragon will have five types of curses!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Hey, little brat. That dragon's much better at cursing than you ever will be!"

"Hmph! So what? That thing is still going down, either way!" said Wei Yan Er.

Following the predictions, every 15 seconds, there would be a blast of light, followed with a curse. The Black dragon curse would reduce 20% Strength. The Red dragon would reduce 20% Intelligence, the Copper dragon curse would reduce 20% Spirit. Although the curse would wear off after 15 seconds, the boss would always be right on time to renew its effects with another one.

{Warrior's Will}, {Ice Barrier}, and {Holy Shield} could dispel the curse. However, they had much longer cooldowns. The rate at which the boss would cast the curse was just too quick. Having had their main attributes reduced, the party's total attack power had suffered a massive reduction. Luckily, the boss's curse did not include a Defense reduction, and even though Zhang Yang had suffered a 20% HP reduction, his attack power did not suffer much.

"Fus Ra Duh!" the dragon spoke in a twisted dragon tongue and stomped the ground with its massive foot. Everyone was instantly afflicted with a curse that had made their body to move involuntary. They gripped their heads tightly and cowered down.

'Ding! You have received {Dragon's Intimidation}. You have fall into the state of {Fear} for 10 seconds!'

The boss flung its massive claw and sliced Zhang Yang.

'-7,790!'

Being in the {Fear} state, Zhang Yang was unable to control his body and had to take the hit. Unfortunately, the attack landed on his back and had bypassed his shield defense value. With them vulnerable, the boss moved forward to chase after and attack them with a clean sweep.

10 seconds felt like an eternity. With an average attack speed of 2 seconds, the boss had already dealt more than five attacks! With no healing, and completely exposed, it would be enough to kill Zhang

Yang! Sensing that danger was imminent, Zhang Yang quickly used {Warrior's Will} and removed the state of {Fear}. He activated {Block} to shield himself from an attack and consumed a bottle of [Level 3 Healing Potion].

There was a problem. The boss's [Dragon's Intimidation] was a little complex. Just after 1 minute after the initial cast, the boss had once again placed everyone into the same state.

This time, Zhang Yang countered the skill with a {Shield Wall}. The third cast, he had summoned Clear Lotus and used {Substitute} to remove the debuff. {Rearm} was used immediately to reset all the cool down time for all his skills. The fourth cast was removed by {Warrior's Will}. The fifth cast was countered with {Shield Wall}. At this point, the boss had still over 3,000,000 HP. The party would have to endure another three casts of {Dragon's Intimidation} to finish off the boss. That said, all of Zhang Yang life preserving skill had been used. How would he survive another three counts of {Dragon Intimidation}?

Zhang Yang speedily opened the aggro list. If Endless Starlight could position himself as the second aggro target, he could use {Shadow of the Void} to escape from the area and allow Endless Starlight to tank the boss. A Defender has {Sacred Protection} and {Sacred Healing} that could prolong his survival. That could at least, hold the boss off for another two castings of {Dragon's Intimidation}!

On the side note, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Lost Dream, were attacking like madmen, pushing their aggro beyond the capabilities of any other skilled tank. Still, Hunters and Thieves had skills that

could remove their aggro value on them. Zhang Yang himself could use {Shadow of the Void} to leave the battle field. The only one who would be in real danger would be Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream!

Zhang Yang braced himself and cast {Provoke} on the boss. Hoping that the skill was effective on the boss, it should make things easier.

Immune!

Disappointed, but not unexpected. If {Provoke} worked on the boss, it wouldn't be much of a Yellow-Gold.

"Ice Cube, Old Dream, get ready to use {Vanish}, Fatty, Hundred Shots, get ready to use {Fake Death}. The moment before the boss uses {Dragon's Intimidation}, I'll activate {Shadow of the Void} to leave the battle field. Let Endless Starlight take on the boss," said Zhang Yang.

Wei Yan Er suddenly realized that she had no role in Zhang Yang's improvised plan. Her eyes widened, and she said, "Hey, noob tank, what about me?"

"You...hmm...Prepare to erhm...take one for the team? Die a glorious death?"

"Waaa...Why you...little ungrateful tank! How dare you not take responsibility!?" cried Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang wiped away a cold drop sweat. "Little brat. I think you should dial back a little on the television dramas. They would do you more harm than good."

"Hmph!"

Zhang Yang calculated the timing and when there was only 2 seconds left before the boss activated {Dragon's Intimidation}, Zhang Yang yelled. "{Vanish} now! {Fake Death} now! I'll use {Shadow of the Void}!"

Poof! Poof!

Two smoke puff burst out from where Lost Dream and Sun Xin Yu were standing, as the two of them disappeared from the battle field. Fatty Han and Hundred Shots had triggered their own skill and were laying perfectly still on the ground. Only when Zhang Yang had made sure that the four of them had cleared all their aggro, only did he activate {Shadow of the Void} and enter the other realm, removing himself from the battle field.

1 second...2 second...!

Just then, the boss activated {Dragon's Intimidation}. He prematurely ended {Shadow of the Void} and returned to the battle field. The boss was already chasing after Wei Yan Er and had killed her in just two strikes. After dealing with her, the Ancient Dragon Soul turned around and had set Daffodil Daydream as its next target.



{Ice Barrier}!

It was a shame that that skill would only provide a small window of invincibility and not clear the character's aggro. Still, it was still able to draw the boss' attention and she could last for a short duration of 10 seconds, buying Endless Starlight more time. However, as the {Ice Barrier} ended, Daffodil Daydream too, succumbed to the boss in just two hits. This time, the boss had set Endless Starlight as its next target.

Frantically, Zhang Yang went all Rambo on the boss, rebuilding his aggro so that the boss wouldn't target Han Ying Xue when Endless Starlight goes down.

"...Wuuu" Wei Yan Er cried. "Noob tank, why I can't release my soul from the body?" she whined.

Zhang Yang turned to Daffodil Daydream and asked. "What's going on?"

"The system has prevented us from releasing our souls. It says: Unable to release the soul during a battle!"

"Hm...I think it's just for this occasion. It must be because of the boss fight. You guys go ahead and rest while we wrap this up."

The battle continued on, as the firepower had only affected a little since only Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were out of the

fight.

3 minutes into the battle and Endless Starlight had used up all of his survival skills. After the third {Dragon's Intimidation}, Endless Starlight was crushed to death. Fortunately, Zhang Yang had managed to overtake Han Ying Xue in the aggro table and was in control once again.

When the boss had over 1,200,000 HP left, Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will} was ready once again. So far, the skill was already raised to Level 8, having only 3 minutes of cool down time. {Shield Wall}, on the other hand still had a 30 second cool down time, allowing him to stand his ground for another two more {Dragon's Intimidations}.

1,000,000! 800,000! 400,000! 100,000!

Full Rage! {Killing Cleave}!

‘-9,016!’

It was just enough to finish the boss. Upon its death, the boss wailed and cursed the party, saying, "Sinners! You have tainted the sacred Temple of the Dragons! You're hereby cursed to face the full wrath of all Dragons!"

BOOM!

The humongous dragon burst open, scattering all the merged

souls into the air and disperse into the corner of the Temple, leaving no bodies behind. With no bodies, there were no battle loots!

Fatty Han frowned furiously. "What a !@#!@#\$ system! What the actual f\*ck! We just busted our butts killing this sorry piece of sh\*t and it didn't give us anything?!"

Zhang Yang laughed and pointed at the spot where the red crystal was supposed to be. "Look there!"

A golden treasure chest sat right there, waiting for the party to open it.

"WOAH! Sis! Quick, revive me! I want to open that chest!" Wei Yan Er urged.

Han Ying Xue nodded and revived Wei Yan Er and without saying anything, the little girl dashed over to the chest, without bothering to recover her health. The greedy little girl was practically molesting the chest, while the rest of the party was highly amused at her comical acts.

Finally satisfied with her groping, Wei Yan Er proceeded to open the chest. At that moment, a black puff of smoke spewed out from the chest and damaged the little girl for 10,000 damage, instantly killing her.

"Wuuuu....What kind of idiot would place a trap in a treasure

box? D\*mn you, dragons!" cried Wei Yan Er.

"That's on you. Who told you to run off like a monkey without restoring your HP?" Zhang Yang teased.

"Sis! Revive me!"

"{Revive} would have to wait for 5 minutes. Sit tight and wait if you don't wanna run!"

Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight had already left the place and were already running back to their bodies. With no choice, Wei Yan Er obediently released her soul and ran back to her body from the graveyard.

Being good sports, the party had waited for the little girl to come back and let her to open the chest. There were a total of three counts of Yellow-Gold equipment, seven counts of Gray-Silver, and one quest item, the {Dragon Crystal}. There was only one, but everyone's quest had been fulfilled.

The three Yellow-Gold equipment were a Leather Armor glove, a Cloth Armor boots, and a defensive ring. Since everyone wanted to preserve their set equipment effects, none of them wanted the glove and the boots. Eventually, the equipment was placed in Zhang Yang possession to be sold off in the Little Merchandize Shop. The ring however, was taken by Zhang Yang.

After completing the quest, Zhang yang used a [Teleportation

Scroll] to go back to Thunderstorm Castle, and back to White Jade Castle to have the ring Identified.

[Undying Hero's Ring] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +84

Strength: +34

Equip Effect: Absorbs 66 Damage upon being attacked.

Equip Effect: Grants a 1% chance to summon the {Undying Hero} to deal 1,000 Shadow damage to a target on every attack.

Level Requirement: 70

So far, Zhang Yang had two Level 50 Yellow Gold rings. Merlinda's Appreciation Ring, and the Ring of Raging Blaze. After consideration, Zhang Yang decided to keep the Merlinda's Appreciation Ring. Even now, healing 10,000 HP every 3 minutes was still rather OP, far stronger and better than a 50 damage absorption skill. Zhang Yang put on the new ring and teleported back to the party via the Lover's Charm.

# Chapter 311: Rescuing The Priestess Of The Moon

---

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Collect the Dragon Crystal. Obtained 500,000 Experience Points!’

After submitting the [Dragon Crystal], everyone obtained only a little experience. It was only about the same as killing monsters. After the Level 70 threshold, the amount of experience points required to gain another level was a headache.

"This is wonderful! Now, I can create a Teleportation Device!" Thea the Priestess took out a bunch of Tiger Teeth, and Burning Ambers from somewhere on the back of her body. She then placed the ingredients on the ground and the Dragon Crystal on top of the pile. She then proceed to pour vials of potion-like stuff on the pile.

"Say, Little Yang. Where you do you think that this lady kept all the Tiger Tooth?" said Fatty Han as he stared pointedly at Thea's voluptuous butt. His question was completely rhetorical.

Zhang Yang kept quiet for a while and finally facepalmed when Fatty Han would not stop staring at Thea's butt. "Fatty...How dry are you? Are you so desperate for some, that you would stare at a virtual character's rear? Please find yourself another girlfriend to help you solve your loneliness at night!"

Fatty Han laughed. "Oh please, Little Yang. Don't be saying stuff like that. Don't tell me that all the people in the movies and television were fake, and you can't hug, touched, or even take

them to bed?"

"That...That's a whole other story! At least you know that the person behind the camera is a real human!"

"Ah! You cannot deny the fact that those characters were also the products of fiction! The only difference between the one in front of us and the one in the movies is that one was an image captured by a camera while the other has been created by data! How could you guarantee that this lovely lady right here was not created based off a real female model? Artists are not magician who could create something out of nothing. Technically, they draw inspiration from their real life experiences!"

Zhang Yang gasped. "Woah! Fatty! Since when did you become so wise? You must have created such a viewpoint on life after all those hardships and heartbreaks from the ladies!"

"Hey!" Fatty Han started to put up airs like a philosopher that was lost in his thoughts. "We are the sum of all our past experiences. I am but a sword hidden in a sheath. For someone to discover the real me, one would need to dig deep into my soul and discover a youthful man of artistic sense!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "I have known you for close to 20 years and just only managed to discover this part of you now!"

Everyone grinned, some were almost at the point of laughing out loud. Endless Starlight snickered and said, "Fatty Bro, what the big boss had just said, what...buahahaha, was too true!"

"Oh...f\*ck off you little prick. Little Yan and I have a friendship as strong as the steel that was forged from the brutal fights in the streets! The kind of bond we have could withstand anything you throw at us! We drank beer together, broke bread together, found the same girls in the clubs..."

"F\*ck you Fatty, who would want to go to the club with you! Please do not tarnish my name here!"

As the crowd laughed and joked, Thea was finally ready to craft the Teleportation Device. With a sudden blast of light ray, a weird, awfully similar gadget appeared in her hand. It was black, but it look awfully similar to that of a hair dryer!

Lost Dream frowned. "I think the designing department of Dream Tech was too lazy. Look at that bloody contraption! It's hideous!"

"Adventurers, I, have but one last request of you." Said Thea with a stoic expression. "The next candidate of the Priestess of the Moon is being held at the Blood Moon Castle! You have to make haste in order to save her! You have proved your strength to us and show us that no one other than you are perfect for this mission. On behalf of the Moon Elf race, I beg of you! Please head towards the Blood Moon Castle and rescue our Priestess!"

"Candidate for the Priestess of the Moon?" Zhang Yang repeated, seemingly coming to an epiphany.

The Priestess of the Moon is the highest rank, and served as the



leader of the Elven race. Theoretically, she would be at least the same rank as the King of the White Jade Kingdom. An Ascended tier boss! However, how could such a boss be trapped in a Level 70 map? Either that, or she was in a similar circumstance as Princess Serena! Now that Thea had explained the situation, the Priestess that was kidnapped had yet to inherit the throne. It was only natural that someone like her would be targeted.

"That's right. There's hasn't been a Priestess of the Moon guiding the Moon Elves for at least 300 years! Bless the Moon God for she had not forsaken us! For she had even elected a successor for our race!" said Thea. "Please. Adventurer! I beg of you!"

‘Ding! Thea – Moon Glory has a quest for you: Rescue the Priestess of the Moon. Will you accept it? This quest will be linked to a part of the main story quest. Complete the quest for a luxurious reward!’

A main story quest!

Everyone exchanged a look, nodded their heads in unison and accepted the quest without saying a word.

[Rescue the Priestess of the Moon] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: The Priestess of the Moon of the Elven race has been kidnapped by the Red-Skinned Orcs of the Blood Moon Castle! You have to rescue her as soon as possible! The Elven race requires a new leader! Godspeed! Who knows what

the Orcs will do to the Priestess of the Moon! Blood Moon Castle is located at the East of the Black Moss Wilderness.

Progress: Rescue Priestess of the Moon 0/1

"Please take this with you!" Thea passed the "hair-dryer" to Zhang Yang and said, "This device can only be activated when you're 500 meters away from the Blood Moon Castle. It can directly transport you into the castle. However, since I forged the device in a hurry, the device can only be used once!"

[Carelessly made Teleportation Device] (Quest Item)

Use: Teleports you and your team mates into the Blood Moon Castle. Can only be used within 500 meters away from the Blood Moon Castle. Transports a maximum of 10 persons.

"Let's go! Let's save the world. Again!" said Zhang Yang as he summoned his white bear.

The party rode like the wind towards the west. They reached their destination about 30 minutes later. Unlike the topography of the Thunderstorm Castle, the Blood Moon Castle was built on a flatland. The castle was fully exposed and surrounded by a vast empty field and could be attack from all directions. That being said, the castle was impregnable. With thick castle walls and an uncountable number of magical cannons. The defense of the castle

was astonishing!

Zhang Yang took out the "hair-dryer" and said, "Let's fly!"

However, when Zhang Yang clicked on the machine, it responded with a message. 'Ding! You can only use this device within 500 meters from Blood Moon Castle!'

"What's wrong?"

"...My bad. We have to walk a little up front."

The party had to move a little further. As they moved, the device did not prompt anything but shone brightly, enclosing the party in a large light cage. With a loud crack, the party disappeared. When vision returned to their eyes, they had found out that they had indeed been teleported into the castle. Judging from the surroundings, they were in the kitchen. The nine of them were unfortunately trapped behind a stone oven and an invisible chain fastened them to the wall, rendering them immobile.

"Hey! I can't move! How bout you guys?"

"I can't move either!"

"Me too!"

"What the hell is going on?"

The party channel was instantly rowdy.

"Tesmo, you'd better be puttin' some effort in yer back eh. Our great lord Pilo is going to marry that Elven babe. He ordered us to make 'em good meal. If we screw this up. We be losing our heads!" During the commotion, two red-skinned orcs entered the kitchen. One was tall, and the other was much shorter. It was the shorter one that had just spoke.

The taller orc said, "I'd say Piji, but our Lord Pilo has the purest blood flowing in his veins. I'm curious at the fact that he would marry to a female Elf? I must say that those puny little minxes are too skinny for us orcs. My word, how could they bear to give birth to great warriors in the future? What say you my good orc?"

"Yer moron!" the shorter orc shook his head. "Heard from Lord Shalin, dem Elf babe was a saint. She be the Priestess of the Moon! Think of it, if she be bearin' me kids, it surely be a godly kid innit? He be carryin' some of dem godly powers eh?"

"I comprehend your speculation, my dear friend."

"What yer yapping like that for eh? Put em plates out now!"

As the shorter one finished with their conversation, the two of them exited the kitchen. Just then, Zhang Yang and the team regained their mobility and were surprised by a sudden notification.

‘Ding! You have obtained a sudden news. The red skinned orc leader Pilo wants to marry the Priestess of the Moon! You have to move faster to save the Priestess of the Moon!’

‘Ding! Main Quest: Rescue the Priestess of the Moon! A time limit has been added. You now have 10 hours to rescue the Priestess of the Moon. The quest shall be permanently terminated upon failure.’

The normal quest could be re-taken again if the party fails to meet a certain criteria of the quest by visiting the NPC and start over again. However, main story and hidden quests were different. With only once chance, its either win it, or pack it!

"Comrades! Let's hurry! We must save that Priestess of the Moon!" Fatty Han cried.

"Could you be more civilized, pervy fatty?"

"What are you talking about? I'm merely stating the obvious!" Fatty Han raised an eye brow.

"Enough. Let's work!" Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and headed to the exit of the kitchen.

"Did you guys feel that the tall orc was very polite?"

"And that shorter one was savage as f\*ck!"

"Would you guys please focus!?"

Just when the party left the kitchen, a pair of orc guards spotted them and charged at them.

"Intruder!"

They swung their weapons in the air like lassos and aimed to bash the living hell out of Zhang Yang.

[Red Skinned Berserk Soldier] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 400

"Aren't all orc green in color? Why are they all red here?" asked not by Wei Yan Er, surprisingly, but Daffodil Daydream.

Since it was Daffodil Daydream instead of the annoying little brat, Zhang Yang had no qualms explaining. "These red skinned

orcs were once a faction of the main orc race. Their ancestors were tempted by the demons and had succumbed to the demonic force. Their bodies were infected with the demonic power, turning them into a blood red color."

Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight each engaged one orc and with the party laying waste to them, the elite monsters were kill in matter of seconds. The obtainable loots were just a few pieces of Silk and coins. Coins were to be expected but the quantity of the Silks was just too scarce. Be it Tailoring or First Aid, player would need a large volume of these Silks. Even though they are relatively cheap in the auction house, the supply in the market is always on shortage. Players would have to farm on their own to supply themselves.

As the party continued venturing into the deeper parts of the castle, they had encountered and killed a number of red skinned orcs. After 30 minutes, the party came into a large hall. At the entrance of the hall were two humongous red skinned orcs! With its top half naked, and a small loin cloth covering its lower half, the muscular body of the orc was greatly emphasized, bringing out their destructive power and intimidation. They were both carrying huge morning stars made of wolf fangs. Imaging getting your head bashed in with those spiky balls...

[Red Skinned Crusher] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 76

HP: 760,000

Defense: 600

They were also elite tier, but these two brothers had 10 times more HP than the regular monsters around. They even had 50% more Defense! With these types of stats, they could be the equivalent as a Gray-Silver boss!

Endless Starlight felt a sudden rush of goosebumps when he saw their weapons. "Hey, Fatty bro, how would it feel if you were pricked in the \*ss by those weapons?"

"Hehehe. I'm telling you. These two monsters are actually called The Butt Crackers!"

Zhang Yang slid towards Endless Starlight and lightly kicked his butt. "In that case, you should try and solo tank the boss this time! Try and let the monster rip you a new one!"

"WAA. Mama mia! No!" cried Endless Starlight, covering his butt with his hands. However, he went on forward and tossed his shield from afar, triggering the fight.

"Intruders? Such brilliant timing! I was just lacking a cup! I shall make do with your skull and fashion it into my drinking cup!" said one of the orc as they charged towards Endless Starlight.

Wham! Bam!



10 seconds into the battle, one of the Red Skinned Crusher's morning star glowed as it smashed Endless Starlight. He was then immediately sent lying on the floor motionless. Unable to get up, he was stunned for 6 seconds and was beaten like a flat pancake by the two orcs!

‘-10,524!’

‘-10,248!’

The two devastating damages had nearly killed him off when Endless Starlight frantically activated {Sacred Protection}.

"Why did the damage suddenly spike up!?"

Endless Starlight answered hurriedly while attacking, "The stun carried another effect that will increase all received damage by 100%!"

"NYAHAHAH! Now that what I call as Butt Cracker!"

Zhang Yang effortlessly activated {Provoke} to draw one of the Red Skinned Crusher to lessen the burden on Endless Starlight.

No wonder the monsters were named Crusher. Their stunning capability was heightened to a point that it could even cause additional damage to their target. Luckily, both Zhang Yang and

Endless Starlight were well-equipped. Though the battle was slightly nerve-wrecking, the party managed to take down the two monsters without any casualties.

"Phew! If all the monsters from now on are as strong as these Crushers, I'd better prepare myself!" wailed Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang reached out with his hands and uncovered the loots.

[Bloodied Staff] (Green-Copper, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 446 – 646

Equip Effect: Increase 1% Critical rate.

Level Requirement: 70

Note: There were weird blood stains on the tip of the staff. Wonder where did that come from?

Noticing the equipment description, both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight started to grin evilly.

The entrance of the hall was shut tight but was easily pushed open by the combined force of everyone in the party. Inside, there was a huge empty space. Deep inside, there was a huge,

approximately 3 meters tall red skinned orc lying motionless. At his side, there was a 5 meters long battle axe with fresh blood still dripping at the blade.

[Dilloca the Butcher] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 76

HP: 3,800,000

Defense: 800

"Just a Gray-Silver? What a letdown!"

"It's better this way. The easier the boss, the faster we can complete the main story quest!" said Daffodil Daydream with her chest held up high.

"Endless Starlight, go and tank it. I'll be the attacker this round!" Zhang Yang unequip his shield to reduce the extra generated aggro.

Endless Starlight nodded and wielded his battle hammer and shield and charge to the boss. Within 30 meters, he tossed out his shield and started the fight.

Once triggered, the boss bellowed. "MUAHAHAHAHA! Another bunch of rats for me to kill!"

## Chapter 312: A Sneaky Business

---

Gray-Silver? It be had nothing on Zhang Yang. Dilloca the Butcher was immediately flattened like a pan cake.

That being said, how could a pan cake fill your stomach when you break fasting? The equipment that the boss dropped was nothing but scraps. All the Gray-Silver and Green-Copper equipment were swept into Zhang Yang inventory, ready to be sold in the shop. Right now, the current market value of Green-Copper equipment was worth peanuts, on the other hand, Gray-Silvers proved to be slightly better and were worth a couple of beer, with some snacks on the side. That being said, Yellow-Gold bosses were still as rare as the blue moon.

The end of the hall was another large door which led to a long winding stairway that led to the second floor. Almost all of the monsters in the second floor were the same Berserk Soldiers. The group went on a killing spree and obtained a large quantity of [Silk]. 30 minutes into the second floor, the party came to another large hall, and another Red Skinned Crusher, with the same morning star similarly made from wolf fangs.

This turn, Endless Starlight was not brave enough to go on alone. Instead, the battle started with both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight each taking on one. After killing the door guards, the party entered the hall of the second floor. Deep inside the hall, there was an orc, draped in full fashionable accessories, with gold and silver blings hanging all over his body. He looked like a walking a chandelier. He did look like an orc, neither did he really resemble a human. With a face that read money, business, and trade, his eyes went up and down the surroundings, as if he was

frantically trying to find something, or someone.

[The "Honest" Florick] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Note: The one and only, world's most honest being alive!

This boss had a yellow name tag on him, which meant that he will not promptly attack anyone.

"Hmm? Where did you guys sneak in from?" said Florick when he had noticed Zhang Yang from afar. Without any visible change in stance, he did not have any hostility towards them and gestured the party to approach him. "Could it be, that you have heard about the famous Florick and decided to pay him a visit?"

He quickly laid down a large sack and opened it to show the party a bag full of colorful shiny equipment. "Count yourselves lucky. This batch of stock had only arrived today. If you want to buy, make it quick. I'm about to leave to meet with an old client.

Everyone was immediately weirded out, for since when, could a boss turn into a merchant? However, when Florick took out the equipment and displayed it to them, they were immediately entranced by the gleaming luster. Like cats drawn to light, the party swarmed around the weapons only to find themselves gasping for air. They were all Celestial tiered weapons! All of them!

The Sword of the Sky! The Heaven's Helm! The Opal Chest Plate! The Hands of the God of War! The Sky Scraping Heavenly Pillar!

Everyone started to drool like deranged gods. What was going on? Could a Celestial weapon be sold off? If this fate?!

"N-N-Noobie tank! Look at the battle axe!" said Wei Yan Er, stuttering. She lifted the gigantic axe and showed it to Zhang Yang.

[Nova Breaker, Agulos' Heavenly Axe] (Celestial, Two Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 98,038 – 118,038

Attack Interval: 3.8 Seconds

DPS: 28,431

{Level 10 Socket 1}

{Level 10 Socket 2}

Equip Effect: Grants a chance to summon the great Agulos' soul, giving the attack a fixed chance to cause a Critical strike.

Level Requirement: 0

"Am I going blind? Do all of these Celestial weapon cost only 1,000 gold?" said Endless Starlight.

"I think I'm going blind as well, because I'm sure that they are sold for only 1,000 gold!"

"J-J-Jackpot!"

Zhang Yang sensed that something was incredibly off. How could a Celestial weapon be sold? Furthermore, there was no Level Requirement and they only cost 1,000 gold coins each. That meant that a character could equip this Celestial equipment from head to toe! If that was the case, how would the game be balanced? Besides, he had not heard anyone from his past life owning a Celestial tier equipment!

Zhang Yang hurriedly tried to stop the party. "Don't buy them. Something has got to be off!"

"Dude! I'm already wearing them! Look at me!" said Fatty Han as he pat his chest proudly. He then spun around to show everyone



how fabulous he was, wearing a complete set of equipment from top to bottom.

Tempted, the rest of the party started buying equipment as well. It was a euphoric feeling, as if you had just stepped up from a 1986 Toyota Sprinter Trueno (AE86) to the latest model of the Mitsubishi Evos series. The feeling of owning a bad\*ss weapon was surreal.

Slim and Handsome, HP 2150.

Lost Dream, HP 2850.

... ..

Those who were wearing complete "Celestial" tier equipment had only over than 3,000 HP! They were basically naked!

Technically, to wear a full set of Celestial equipment, your HP should have been boosted to close to a million. However, their HPs were less than 10,000! They were all fakes!

"What the..."

"KYAAA!"

Both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er shrieked in horror. "We've been had!"

There was a hidden note under the properties of the equipment description that stated : (1) This is a product of imitation. (2) Item will disappear after 15 minutes. Those two sentences were so small to begin with, and they were only visible after a player had made the purchase!

Everyone frantically swapped back to their original equipment and glared at Florick. Especially the two girls, who were basically misers. The two of them grabbed Florick by the collar and screamed in his face. "You cheater! Give me back my money!"

"Sorry. Goods sold are not refundable!" said Florick with a straight face.

"What goods? They're all fakes!"

"That's preposterous! I am Florick! The one and only, the world's most honest merchant! You shall not slander me, women! Or, I will sue you in court!" said Florick, as he hurriedly packed up his wares and made ready to leave. "I have another client to meet. Please leave!"

"You cheater! You refuse to return my money?!" said Wei Yan Er with a pain in her voice. Wei Yan Er had spent more than 10,000 gold coins just to purchase a full set of "Celestial" equipment. How was she going to let the man go?

"You want your money back? Well then, I shall see to it! Defeat me if you can!" Florick growled and took out a large axe. He then

took out four weird looking sticks and struck the ground with it at four corners around him. The sticks were round on the top and had slim shafts, like pins. Florick's name tag had changed from yellow to red, indicating that he was a hostile target.

With a flash, Zhang Yang scrape the floor with {Charge} to rush towards Florick, while Endless Starlight tossed his shield.

"Stupid boss! Give me back my hard-earned money!" Wei Yan Er gritted her teeth as she cleaved the boss over and over again, her fury off the charts. Until the moment Wei Yan Er gets her money back, she would probably never sleep again.

Fuum!

One of the pins on the ground had blasted a wave of fire and dealt around 2,000 damage to the party. 2 seconds later, it released another wave of fire.

"What sort of plaything is this?" Everyone was intrigued by the pins and checked on its properties.

[Flame Totem]: HP: 1,000, Defense: 0. Deal 2,000 Fire damage every 2 seconds, to all targets within a 10 meters radius.

[Squall Totem]: HP: 1,000, Defense: 0. Increases 10% Dexterity to all ally within 30 meters of the totem.

[Great Earth Totem]: HP: 1,000, Defense: 0. Grants ally the ability to absorb 20% incoming damage on attack.

[Vitality Totem]: HP: 1,000, Defense: 0. Restore 1,000 HP every 3 seconds to all allies within 30 meters of the totem.

"Dummy, what class is this boss supposed to be? How, and why did he stab that many sticks into the ground?" Han Ying Xue asked.

"Hm. That is called a Poke Poke Master!" said Zhang Yang with a straight face.

"Please..."

Zhang Yang laughed. "Alright. The boss' class is called a Totem Master. This class plays with the natural elements of Fire, Wind, Earth, and Water! That being said, they are pretty good in melee combat as well! In the future, whoever who gets to become a Totem Master after the Inheritance patch would have strong DPS power, and also a strong supporting capability! Sill, the totems are rather fragile and can be easily destroyed. However they can only be struck by targeted skills, not AoE."

"In my opinion, that's pretty useless. I mean, just look at the

totem's HP. People will simply wipe them out!" said Wei Yan Er.

"It's not that simple. You can place four totems at the same time, while others can only destroy them one at a time. Think of it this way, while others spend some time being delayed by the shared cool down to destroy one totem, you have already summoned four. You still have the advantage!" said Zhang Yang. That being said, unlike the Aura skill, the totems were immobile and had a limited range, whereas the Aura skill is basically permanent and always moved with the player!

The party destroyed the four totems and proceeded to target the boss. Once the totems were destroyed, the boss' attack and defense were no different compared to a regular Yellow-Gold tier boss. He posed no threat to the party, but when all the totems were destroyed, the boss would always immediately summoned them again. It was getting annoying.

"Cheater! Liar! Give me back my money!" Wei Yan Er cried endlessly.

"A bunch of gullible pricks! I will kill you all and take all your money!" said Florick, displaying the same manner of greed as Wei Yan Er.

Wham!

The boss cleaved Zhang Yang for 6,974 damage. Suddenly, a dark gust of wind blasted out of the back of the axe, propelling it further and causing more damage.

‘-7,021!’

As the second damage text popped, Zhang Yang quickly referred to the battle log to get a better understanding on what just happened.

‘Florick used {Force Strike} and dealt 6,974 damage (3,000 damage reduced, 1,026 damage absorbed).’

‘Florick’s {Force Strike} had triggered an echo effect and dealt 7,201 damage (3,000 damage reduced, 1,026 damage absorbed).’

What a complicated attack pattern! What was more important was that the boss could actually use a Warrior’s {Force Strike}.

After the axe cleaved through Zhang Yang, the boss pulled back the axe and waved his hands. A blot of white lightning blasted out and struck Zhang Yang. The bolt of lightning leaped off and struck Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Lost Dream. All of the melee attackers had suffered close to 10,000 damage except for Zhang Yang. He had only taken 6,974 damage.

# Chapter 313: The Darkness

---

According to the battle record, it was Florick's {Chain Lightning} skill. After striking the current target, it would jump to the next target for a total of three times. Each strike caused 10,000 Nature Damage.

"Damn it, is this boss a physical-type or a Spellcaster? Why does it know all kinds of skill?!" Lost Dream complained.

Florick's {Chain Lightning} undoubtedly increased the workload for Han Ying Xue. This time, the bewitching queen did not have time to joke around and tease them with any of her obscene moans, but instead shouted in desperation, "Hurry up, kill the boss, I'm exhausted!"

"HAHA! Your money is mine! Is mine!" Florick laughed cynically.

Zhang Yang could not help it, but laughed and said, "B\*tchy Snow, I think this boss, Florick and you make a good match! If both of your greediness were combined, nothing can possibly match up to it!"

"En, exactly, cousin is very greedy!" Wei Yan Er nodded her head again and again.

"Yan Er, do you want to experience what it's like being homeless tonight?" Han Ying Xue threatened Wei Yan Er.

Wei Yan Er immediately changed her tone and spoke seriously to Zhang Yang, "Noob tank, how could you insult my lovely cousin?! My cousin is so smart, generous, beautiful, honest, kind and cute... Wu wu wu, I can't take this anymore! I'm done! I'm telling the world's biggest lie, I will be going to hell in the future!"

"Sh\*tty brat!" Han Ying Xue snapped.

In spite of Florick's wide array of skills, Zhang Yang was still able to get a good grip on the boss' aggro. Han Ying Xue may be complaining, but it was mostly because she was lazy. Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the team had strong attacking power, thus, Florick was quickly overwhelmed. He fell within seven to eight minutes.

"I'm going to whack you to death!" Wei Yan Er attacks got faster and wilder in the heat of the moment.

"No! I still have so many treasures and I haven't used up all of them yet! I need to raise my 37 wives and children!" Florick uttered a despairing cry. Little brat used {Killing Cleave} to wipe out Florick's last drop of HP. Florick fell defeated and a copper coin rolled out of his hand. Desperately, he reached out and tried to catch the copper coin, however, his body lost strength as his arm stretched out halfway.

"My money..." Florick breathed his last.

Florick dropped two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, eight pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, a few pieces of cloth, some coins and ETC.



Wei Yan Er was disappointed and asked, "Where did Florick hide the money he stole from us?"

Zhang Yang picked up a bag under the ETC category and threw it to Wei Yan Er and then grinned, "Will you be greedy next time?!"

[Florick's Money Bag]: All of Frolick's fraudulent claims are hidden in this bag, you are going to be rich!

Wei Yan Er suddenly burst out with laughter and quickly opened up the money bag. There was actually around 100,000 gold coins in the money bag and it was divided up nicely for the players. However, Zhang Yang did not buy any fake equipment from Florick, so he actually earned an extra 10,000 gold coins or so!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I like this boss!"

"Not us!" the rest of the people disagreed in unison.

"Quickly, distribute the equipment, this is a time limited quest!"

Hundred Shots was always the cautious one.

[Forsaken Sting] (Yellow-Gold, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 464-664

Attack Interval: 1.8 seconds

DPS: 314

<Unidentified>

Equipment: When the target is struck, there is 1% chance of interrupting target's spell casting.

Level Requirement: 70

"Although it is even faster than the 1.9 second interval you usually see, it's too small to make a difference. While, the main point is this is Level 70 Yellow-Gold weapon," Zhang Yang turned to the two Thieves in the party, "It is definitely better than you current main attack weapon!"

Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream rolled. [Fortuna](#) had blessed Lost Dream and he won the [Forsaken Sting]. Before the dagger is identified, its attributes would worse than a Level 60 weapon. So, Lost Dream just kept the dagger in his inventory first.

Fortuna (Latin: Fortūna, equivalent to the Greek goddess Tyche) was the goddess of fortune and personification of luck in Roman religion.

[Boots of Sorrow] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +235

Strength: +94

Dexterity: +217

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 70

Because of the existence of set equipment, they wouldn't spare any such equipment a second glance unless they were Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment. Therefore, the boots were directly thrown into Zhang Yang's inventory, fated to be sold in Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop.

A Gray-Silver Servant!

[Servant: Codger Florick] (Gray-Silver)

Use: Summons Codger Florick as your servant in battle. Lasts for 5 minutes. You can only summon one Servant at a time. Summoning any Servant will cause all other Servants to be in

cooldown. Cool down time: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 70

Binds on obtain.

"This one isn't bad, let's request together. Whoever rolls the highest points will get this!" Zhang Yang said.

After rolling the dice, Han Ying Xue won the Servant. Conveniently, this would help offset her low attack power.

Han Ying Xue immediately summoned the Servant. It was a red-skinned Beastman, which looked like Florick, only smaller in size. It held a big broadaxe in both of its hands. However, one wouldn't feel threatened by him, but rather feel that he's just a sneaky little urchin whose up to no good.

Han Ying Xue laughed and posted her Servant's skill description in party channel.

{Stealing}: Steals from the target. There is 1% chance of stealing 1% of the target's total number of gold coins. Skill range: 3 meters. Cool down time: 5 minutes.

Everyone was speechless. Florick had turned from a con man to

thief!

After passing through this hall, there was still a corridor, and then a staircase that was connected directly to the third floor.

"No monsters?" everyone came to the castle's third floor but did not see any appearance of monster. All of them were surprised.

"That's not possible. I'm sure there are Bandit-types in stealth mode!" Zhang Yang said, "Starlight, you walk in front!"

"Sigh, am I fated to be the bait each time?" Endless Starlight groaned, but otherwise obediently did as he was told.

After they walked forwards for a few steps, a red-skinned Beastman suddenly emerged from the dark and smacked the back of Endless Starlight's head with the hilt of its sword. Endless Starlight was stunned. The red-skinned Beastman wielded its two swords and madly slashed at Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang quickly used {Charge} and dashed towards the red-skinned Beastman without using {Provoke}. Zhang Yang was able to take over the red-skinned Beastman's aggro by just slashing once.

[Red-Skinned Lurker] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

Bandit-type monsters were at their most dangerous during the first 10 seconds when emerging from stealth mode. Even so, they were poorly matched against tank! Zhang Yang pulled the monster, and all of them piled up and wiped the monster out.

The massacre proceeded. Because they needed to deal with stealth-type monsters, their progress was slowed down. After about 40 minutes, they reached the hall on the third floor.

There were two Red-Skinned Crushers at the doorway. After some thrilling but safe battles, both of the monsters crumpled to the ground.

They opened up the two heavy doors, and everyone went into the hall.

It was all dark in the hall!

It was pitch dark in the hall!

It was a room that measured to at least thousands of square meters. Other than the light coming out from the doorway, the

hall was completely dark! It was completely silent, other than the footsteps!

And when they stopped moving, their breathes and heartbeats took over the dead silence!

Endless Starlight said, "It's really dark..."

"Oh my god!"

"You scared me!"

"Shut your mouth! You scared us!"

The moment Endless Starlight started to talk, everyone had jumped, like dropping a stone into a calm lake.

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, "Starlight, you're trying to say that it's so dark that the boss could easily get the jump on us and we won't be able to see a single thing, right?"

"Yes! Exactly!" Endless Starlight nodded his head again and again. But no one saw it, as it was too dark in the hall.

"Even if the boss standing in front of us, we wouldn't know any better!" Hundred Shots agreed.

Shush!

At this moment, a mass of phosphorescent light suddenly floated across their head. The emerald flame gave them highly limited visibility. The flame was not bright, but it was a like light bulb in this absolutely dark environment.

The flame went off once every 10 seconds, flashing on and off, and everyone moved forward by using this weak glowing flame.

"Wait a minute!" Zhang Yang suddenly stood still and turned around. Han Ying Xue, who was walking behind him, was not prepared and suddenly bumped into Zhang Yang's arms.

"Stupid Yu, you are such a jerk!" Han Ying Xue scolded in embarrassment.

"My bad! My bad!" Zhang Yang immediately said, "It should be nine of us, right?"

"Noob tank, have you just graduated from primary school? You don't even know how to count?!"

"...You guys, quick, headcount, now?!"

"1, 2, 3... 7, 8, 9!"

By using the light of floating emerald flame, everyone started to



count up.

"Yes, yes, there are nine of us, stop being a soccer mom, silly Yu!"

"...Little brat, did you include yourself?"

"Of course... not!"

Everyone shivered in fear, ten of us?

"The boss is among us!" Zhang Yang said.

Shush!

The will-o'-the-wisp flashed right then, revealing the ferocious and horrible face of a complete stranger!

Zhang Yang shouted in surprised, and slashed at the boss.

‘-1,433!’

"Urgh!" a strange sound was uttered and they heard a low and hoarse voice saying, "Damn it, that hurts! I'm not going to play around anymore! I will kill all of you!"

‘-3,774!’

‘-3,824!’

Damage texts floated across Zhang Yang’s head. Although the single damage was low, boss’ attacks were quite frequent and it attacked at almost each second, what a relentless rate of attack!

# Chapter 314: Sightless Slayer Hazel

---

Shush!

Another flash of light floated across them, and this time, they finally read the monster's information.

[Sightless Slayer Hazel] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Everybody started to attack the boss.

However, the hall was too dark. Besides, the doors had automatically closed when they started the battle, so they could see anything in the limitless and eternal darkness, let alone know which way they were facing!

The emerald flame flashed again for a brief moment, before the hall became completely dark again. The melee attackers could still slash blindly, as long as the boss was not moving around. However, blind rangers were as good as no rangers!

Hunters could still fire randomly in the dark and hope they hit something. However most of the Spellcasters' attack spells required casting time, and in such a dark hall, if the boss disappears from Daffodil Daydream's sight, the spell casting bar would be interrupted!

"How do we fight against this boss? We don't even know where the boss' position is!" the three ranged attackers complained.

Zhang Yang was groping in the dark, and when he felt the boss' weapon collide with his body, he immediately retaliated. Luckily, the boss did not move around constantly like players would. After Zhang Yang got hold of the boss' aggro, the boss wielded its two sharp swords and slashed at Zhang Yang nonstop. If the boss had been controlled by a player, the party would have been wiped out hundreds of times!

Shush!

The light flashed once again, and Hundred Shots and the other two ranged attackers quickly launched attacks without wasting the opportunity. Fire arrows and fire balls were randomly launched.

Annoyingly, the light would flash for about three to four seconds only, so everybody had to be blindly attacking most of the time! Luckily, they were in Party Attack mode so they did not have to worry about accidentally hurting their own team members.

Although the dark environment had weakened the team's attack

power, as long as they had a strong tank and a healer, they still could slowly defeat the boss! It so happened that both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were the strongest tank and healer in the server, respectively!

After about a minute, Zhang Yang found himself slashing air! He was shocked and yelled, "He disappeared!"

The party stopped attacking. Everyone was stumped. In total darkness, none dared move, fearing that they would step into a trap, or fall down the abyss if there was a sudden chasm.

Zhang Yang immediately said, "Everyone, come closer to me, hurry up!"

With their full faith in their longtime leader, everyone rallied to the sound of his voice.

"The boss is Bandit-type monster, it must have used {Vanish} just now! Do you guys still remember the Bandit-type bosses we've all fought against? Every time they emerge from {Vanish}, they will reset their aggro list! Later on, if any of you receive a sudden attack, do not fight back, let me pull the boss first!" Zhang Yang commanded.

About five to six seconds later, Han Ying Xue suddenly shouted, "Ah!" and they could see the Party column, Han Ying Xue's HP was reducing dramatically!

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang was never trained to fight in the dark, it was too difficult for him to rely on his hearing to identify the boss' position! But {Thunder Strike} was an AoE skill, as long as the enemy was within the skill range, it would receive damage. This was the reason why Zhang Yang had told everybody to come closer to him!

-756!

Although they could not see the boss' shadow, a damage text appeared in the dark!

"Urgh! Damn! Damn you all! I just wanted to play hide and seek with you guys, why you guys are hurting me?! Why?!" Hazel roared angrily, dashed towards Zhang Yang and slashed at Zhang Yang wildly.

"Hunters step 3 meters back for your minimum range. Daffodil Daydream, please sticks with the melee attackers so that we can change positions together. Everybody, try to surround him!" Zhang Yang assigned tasks as he tanked the boss.

Shush! Shush! Shush!

The light flashed across them on occasion, but otherwise, their efficiency was greatly reduced when fighting in such a dark environment. Besides that, the boss used {Vanish} at random

intervals, and attack indiscriminately whenever it revealed itself. Fortunately, Zhang Yang always caught hold of it before it could deal serious damage. Besides, everyone had good equipment, so they wouldn't be killed off easily.

It wasn't a particularly powerful boss, but it was surely a difficult battle.

‘Ding! Hazel has launched {Fan of Blades}!’

A system notification echoed out, Hazel's body suddenly burst out with countless flying sword of lights, which flew towards everyone's directions.

Many ‘-7,000’ damage texts floated across everyone's head. Some of them even got hit twice, but with 17,000HP being the lowest maximum HP value of the party, none of them were killed.

Hazel disappeared once again!

Han Ying Xue quickly cast all sorts of healing spells such as {Healing Shower}, {Healing Bond} and {Holy Shield}.

After fighting for so long, Zhang Yang had actually figured out Hazel's battle pattern. Hazel would emerge from {Vanish} each time, within three to eight seconds!

1, 2!

Zhang Yang was counting in his mind, and activated {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier without hesitation!

After the skill adjustment, the current {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier acted like an Aura which sets Zhang yang as the center and radiates by a 3 meters radius. Everyone's HP was very low, even with Han Ying Xue's strong healing, it was not possible for her to heal everyone's HP up within such a short time. The boss could most likely kill its next target!

Slash!

Another three seconds later, Hazel emerged from the shadow, and used {Ambush} on Hundred Shots.

‘-703!’

‘-718!’

Zhang Yang stomped on the ground and activated {Thunder Strike}, which caused damage to Hazel and immediately pulled back its aggro.

Hundred Shots let out a sigh of relief and said, "Good thinking Zhan Yu! I wouldn't have survived that!"

Endless Starlight quickly said, "Uncle Hundred Shots, don't



forget about me! I'm a strong tank as well!"

"Starlight, you are only slightly less perfect than Zhan Yu!" Hundred Shots quickly said.

"How am I not Zhan Yu's equal?"

"..."

Endless Starlight was definitely a competent tank, whenever the boss disappeared, Endless Starlight would cast {Devotion} among the crowd as the boss would receive damage whenever it appears nearby. At the same time, Endless Starlight could also pull the boss' aggro immediately. Although {Devotion}'s total damage was high and it could last for 10 seconds, it was no match for {Thunder Strike}, so Zhang Yang always successfully pulled over the boss' aggro.

Zhang Yang said, "My gut feeling is that Endless Starlight would be on the list if there is any China's Top 10 Tanks or a Top 10 List of Godly Magicians in the future!"

Endless Starlight immediately laughed happily.

"Then I must be the king of Top 10 Berserkers!" Wei Yan Er was being boastful.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little brat, I'm not sure whether will you listed in Top 10 Berserkers but someone among

us must be the queen of Top 10 healers!"

"Stupid Yu!" Han Ying Xue was flustered.

Luckily, Endless Starlight had also learnt {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier, and Zhang Yang's {Rearm} would reset all his skills' cool down times, so they would be able to use three count of {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier within a short period time. On the other hand, Hazel launched {Fan of Blades} at each 20% of HP loss. When Hazel was left with 20% of HP, it finally killed a player with the combo of {Fan of Blades}, {Vanish} and {Ambush}.

However, Hazel was fated to indecently assault afterwards!

14 Minutes later, Hazel uttered a horrible scream and fell defeated.

"You guys are too fierce, I just wanted to play hide and seek with you guys!" Hazel breathed its last.

The dark hall suddenly brightened after Hazel died. It seemed that he was the source of the darkness.

"We finally defeated the boss!"

Everybody let out a sigh of relief, while Han Ying Xue used {Redemption} spell on the unlucky Fatty Han to save him.

"How many floors are there?"

Zhang Yang thought for a while and answered, "I think there are four levels, we should be on the second last floor already!"

"Let's distribute the equipment!"

Looting from the boss' corpse was still the most exciting part of a boss fight.

Wei Yan Er immediately ran to the corpse to pick up the loot.

[Immortal Necklace] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +59

Strength: +30

Dexterity: +30

Equipment: Increases chance of Critical by 1%.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 70

"This is good!" Zhang Yang nodded and immediately gave up his roll, as this necklace was more suitable for physical-type attackers.

The team threw their dices. Fatty Han won the necklace with highest points.

[Stinger Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +118

Strength: +47

Dexterity: +109

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 70

Although this was a Level 70 Yellow-Gold equipment, it was definitely the best leather armor for Level 70 players. However,

the Thieves and Hunters in the team were unwilling to part with their set equipment effects. Thus, this glove was fated to be sold in Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop.

Zhang Yang nodded, and thought to himself, "No wonder set equipment in the future would get so scarce! The effects were too strong." for example, this Level 60 Yellow-Gold set equipment is actually able to support players up to Level 80. Even then, Level 80 set effects aren't that much better!

As a result, level 70 equipment would be most likely skipped over.

"By the way, let's go out tomorrow!" Fatty Han suddenly sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

"Why?"

"Speed dating!"

Zhang Yang almost fell over and asked, "Are you really seeking for a spouse?"

"He he, I just registered on the website, and coincidentally, there is a big speed dating event. Let's have a look tomorrow!"

"Why ask me then?"

"I feel embarrassed, going alone!"

Zhang Yang scratched his head and said, "You are so thick-skinned, but you are actually scared of going on a speed dating event? I'm really speechless!"

"Damn, we are brothers for life. Are you helping me or not?!"

"Alright, alright. Pick me up tomorrow!"

"Tomorrow, 7.00 pm, wait for your Highness to drop by!"

"Get lost!"

Hazel did not drop any great equipment, despite being a Yellow-Gold boss. However, Hazel was merely a mini-boss in Blood Moon Castle. The great equipment should be dropped by the final boss, Red-Skinned Beastman Lord Pilo!

Everybody continued moving forward and reached the fourth floor in castle.

The type of minions had changed to guards which carried shield. Under the team's strong attack power, the shields hardly made any difference and they were torn apart in no time.

There was an iron cage in the middle of the hall in which a female elf with white dress was held prisoner. The female elf had a

graceful, slender body shape but had a massive rack, and her soft and silky long hair went straight down to her buttocks.

Zhang Yang took a look at the profile on top of the head of female elf, and he nearly burst out laughing!

This female elf was Merlinda - Song of the Forest!

She was a captive in Underground Tower and Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal. Here she is now, captive in Blood Moon Castle!

This NPC had a knack of getting caught, somehow! She's a specialist!

"You guys... Zhan Yu! Praise the Moon God, she sent a warrior to save me!" Merlinda saw everyone, especially after she saw Zhang Yang, and she instantly revealed an extremely relieved expression.

The crowd was surprised. Although all of them communicated with NPCs every day, low grade NPCs did not have "memories", and they could only communicate with the players by the preprogrammed script. However, advanced NPCs had such advanced AI that it was difficult to distinguish them from players.

Zhang Yang moved forwards and asked, "Merlinda, why are you here?"

"I have found the Elves' Staff of Treasury Prophecy and assigned my people to deliver it back to Holy Land of the Elf Athuran in

Chaos Realm. Who knew that our Elder unexpectedly believed that I'm the next Priestess of the Moon appointed by Moon God and told me to go back to Holy Land of the Elf to inherit the position itself! But when I was passing here, I was captured by this bunch of Red-Skinned Beastmen!" Merlinda looked at Zhang Yang and said, "My warrior, you must save me!"

"Tsk, stupid Yu, this pretty girl NPC seems to be interested in you!" Han Ying Xue seemed to be slightly unhappy.

"...You're jealous of an NPC?"

"Whose jealous?! Hmph!"

This pitiful Merlinda, anyhow she should already be upgraded to a Yellow-Gold boss, why is she still getting captured by others?

Zhang Yang nodded as he said, "Do not worry, we will get you out of here!"

Merlinda trusted Zhang Yang and nodded confidently as she said, "The key to unlocking this cage is with Beastman Lord Pilo. You guys must defeat him to get the key!"

‘Ding! Your relationship with Merlinda is now improved!’

Inexplicably, Zhang Yang received a system notification.



# Chapter 315: Beastman Lord

---

Besides Merlinda, there were no other NPCs. Zhang Yang and the gang looked at each other and focused their sight on the grille at the end of the hall.

"Let's go!"

There was a long corridor which was connected to staircase after they opened up the grille. Everybody followed the staircase and reached the top of the castle.

It was an outdoor environment and the wind was violent. The entire ground on this floor was all flat, and the area was larger than a football field. The nine of them stood there like insignificant ants.

A Red-Skinned Beastman stood magnificently not far from them. Its height was three meters tall with ripped abs. Its muscular arms were much thicker than an ordinary people's thighs! The Red-Skinned Beastman was holding a giant axe, where it puffed its chest out in an imposing fashion!

[Red-Skinned Beastman Lord Pilo] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 2,400

It was a Violet-Platinum boss!

Everybody was astonished, as this was the third Violet-Platinum boss they met. The first Violet-Platinum boss was defeated by Smaug's phantom, the second Violet-Platinum boss was killed by the power of the entirety of Lone Desert Smoke!

Now there were only nine of them, could they defeat this boss?

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Let's try this once, if it's clearly impossible, I will summon Smaug's phantom as a last resort!"

"Wait a minute!" when Zhang Yang wanted to move forwards, but Wei Yan Er stopped him suddenly. Wei Yan Er suddenly summoned her [Fire Chocobo Chick] and smiled. "We are able to use mounts here!"

Everyone was speechless. No genius would have seen this coming. It was only because the little girl simply felt like peeking at her pet mount at that moment!

Still, this meant that four of them could use their battle mounts now, it would really make a huge difference to their combat

effectiveness! Although Zhang Yang had the {Beast Taming} skill and he could use his mount as a battle pet at any place, a combination of their hitpoints would do wonders for him!

"Let's fight!" Zhang Yang got atop his Whitey, lifted his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], and at his command, the great bear let out a roar and charged at the boss.

Those who had pet mounts also followed him closely.

"Bold intruders, how dare you step into my domain!" Pilo suddenly shouted and it lifted its axe, "How did you guys come in? My domain is impregnable and indestructible, how could these stinking little pests come in? Are you guys colluding with spies in this castle? Hmph, who is so bold to actually betray me, I'm going to slash that spy into pieces and behead that spy's entire bloodline! Could it be Slane, the bastard who wants to overthrow my throne? Damn it, all of you are fools, after this, I'm going to kill Slane, that traitor!"

This boss was a paranoid one. Zhang Yang and the rest had not uttered a word but the boss was already coming up with all sorts of presumptions!

Slash!

The boss swung its axe and Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield and used {Block}.

Dang!

Zhang Yang and Whitey were knocked three steps back!

"En, this boss is very strong! Just like me in real life!" Fatty Han said.

Wei Yan Er quickly stuck her tongue out and said, "Pervy fatty, the boss' arms are much thicker than your thighs, stop bragging!"

Fatty Han said serious, "I never brag! If I started bragging, the Earth would go upside down, the Moon would be out of its orbit! Do you know how did [Chang'e](#) escape to the Moon? I blew her up to the Moon with a single breath!"

Chang'e or Chang-o, originally known as Heng'e, is the Chinese goddess of the Moon. She is the subject of several legends in Chinese mythology.

Everyone was speechless. Even Endless Starlight also said, "Brother Fatty, too much bro, too much. I wanted to help at first, but I don't even know how to carry on!"

‘-10,174!’

Pilo started the second attack with its axe. Zhang Yang had to take the damage head on!

"Ha ha, let's have some fun!" the boss turned its giant axe the

other way round and struck the ground with it, as if he was using a sledgehammer!

Suddenly, a countless amount of sharpened spears popped out from the ground!

However, the spears did not strike all corners of the map, but instead struck different spots at a time. There were two variations, and they were divided by squares, it was as if all the white squares on a chessboard were lighting up, before the black squares followed.

Everyone was spread out, so only some of the party members were hit. However, those who were unlucky, got hit for ‘-5000’ damage.

The sudden, unpredictable attack startled everyone.

Fortunately, everyone’s HP was almost 20,000 points. Even if they received another spear attack, they would not be killed!

Three seconds later, the sharpen spears struck out from the ground once again and the "Qiang Qiang Qiang" sound was made as the spears skewered the air.

The spears were alternating between the ‘white’ squares and ‘black’ squares.

These people were not stupid. In fact, all of them were

professional. They immediately understood the spears' attack pattern and started moving accordingly.

The battle was started and it was totally different compared to their boss fights. This battle required everyone to constantly change position. Otherwise, '-5,000' of damage texts would appear continuously. Han Ying Xue had to cast healing mainly on Zhang Yang, so she did not have enough time to take care of the rest. At most, she could only throw {Regeneration} on them whenever she managed to find the time!

Qiang! Qiang! Qiang!

This battle scene was very spectacular, countless of sharp spears struck towards the sky time and again!

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were so busy counting the timing of the spears and changing position that they did not even have the time to talk nonsense. Otherwise, they would definitely have started a joke about getting their asses impaled or something.

Pilo caused about 10,000 points of damage on Zhang Yang for each attack and Pilo attacked every two seconds. Zhang Yang could use {Block} every six seconds, resulting in him taking 3,000 damage per second. This was close to Han Ying Xue's limit.

However, Pilo's defense value was too high, even if Zhang Yang weakened Pilo's defense value by 50%, Pilo still had about 1,200 defense values. Also, as the team had to constantly run about, their damage output had decreased significantly.

Like emptying the tank of an oil tanker, one drip at a time, they slowly worked on the boss.

Seven minutes later, Pilo's HP was down to 80%

"Hah, I never thought you guys would last this long! Ha ha, I will let you guys try something else more powerful now!" Pilo laughed madly.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Flames were rapidly spewed out from the left and right, and instantly, the entire ground turned into a sheet of flames. Each flame was three meters wide and nearly took up the entire 'square' that the spears sprouted out from. Luckily, there were three meter wide gaps between each flame, which were the safe zones for the players.

'-8,000' damage text appeared above the heads of those who got scorched!

"F\*ck, did this boss come from circus, what's with all these stage effects?!" Lost Dream could not help but yelled.

"Stop complaining, quickly figure out how these flames work!"

The flames activated every three seconds, but with the boss and

the spears, they couldn't figure it out. If it was anyone other than the peerless healer, Han Ying Xue keeping them alive, they would have been wiped out already!

After running about in panic, they finally caught the pattern. But everyone's HP had already been drastically reduced at this point. Han Ying Xue could only cast {Regeneration} when she was able.

77%, 74%, 71%... After they were able to stabilize the battle, Pilo's HP resumed with its slow but steady descent.

"You fools, why you guys are not dead yet?!" Pilo swung its axe at Zhang Yang's head. Fortunately, due to all the gimmicks from the stage, this boss did not have any powerful skills, other than {Dividing Slash}. As long as they did not stand in front of this boss, they would not receive damage from {Dividing Slash}.

"Stinky boss, you are the one who should die!" Wei Yan Er shot back.

"Little brat, you are indulging in online games all day long. If you were born 20 years earlier and met '[Professor Yang and Professor Tao](#)' then you would have been the one suffering!"

'Professor Yang and professor Tao' started the treatments of online gaming addiction by using traditional Chinese medicine, Western medicine and even electric shock at China in the year of 2004.

"Who are 'professor Yang and professor Tao'?"



Another six to seven minutes later, Pilo's HP had been reduced to 60%!

"Damn it, these stinking little pests actually have some skills! It seems like I really need to be very serious this time!" Pilo howled loudly, "My courtiers and people, it is the time for all of you to serve your King!"

‘Ding! Pilo has released [Summoned Guards]!’

"Grr..." suddenly, nine fully armed Red-Skinned Beastmans spawned hundred meters away from the crowd and uttered a crazy howl before rushed towards Zhang Yang and the gang, swinging various weapons.

[Pilo's Guard] (Elite, Summon)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

It seemed like the number of the guard boss summoned was based on the number of the players in the battle! This was where a

small party would shine. Otherwise, hundreds of thousands of monsters would have spawned and overwhelmed the team. For a small group of elite players however, it was a different story!

"Starlight, start kiting the minions and call for us once you have them all. The rest of you, clear them up, then come back to me!" Zhang Yang commanded. He paused for a while and looked at surrounding to make sure that there were no more surprises like spears and flames, and then he said, "Also use the [Summoned Soldier] to show the boss that not only it can summon minions!"

"Noob tank, 1,000 gold coins are required for each summon!"

"... Alright, you can apply for reimbursement!"

"That's great!" Wei Yan Er happily used [Summoned Soldier].

Pa! Pa! Pa!

More and more human soldiers popped out. As Fatty Han and the rest had also completed the quests of the Coyotes camp and obtained [Summoned Soldier], they too started summoning.

[Veteran of Coyotes Camp] (Elite, Summon)

Level: 70

HP: 70,000

Defense: 400

Although the Veterans of Coyotes Camp were slightly weaker than the Red-Skinned Beastmans summoned by the boss, they were still very strong!

Endless Starlight dashed towards the nine guards and started to pull the monsters, using {Devotion}. The summoned Veterans of Coyotes Camp charged at the Red-Skinned Beastmen.

# Chapter 316: The Third Violet-Platinum Boss

---

At first, it was a nine versus one fight. Now, it became an all-out chaotic skirmish!

In terms of strength, the guards summoned by Pilo were much more powerful, but Endless Starlight was also a top tank with the best equipment, good intuition and control. Thus, he easily pulled five monsters and left another four monsters to the Summoned Soldiers to deal with.

Although the Summoned Soldiers had weaker attack power than players, they had vastly more HP. They would serve as good tanks!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest tentatively switched their targets and attacked the elite guards. With their strong attack power, the elite guards were killed, one after another.

The nine elite guards all fell defeated in less than three minutes. Because the guards were summoned, as a result, their corpses quickly disappeared without any loots! While at Zhang Yang's side, the nine Veterans of Coyotes Camp had lost most of their HP, but none of them had killed. Besides, Han Ying Xue simply threw {Regeneration} on them and their HP started to increase!

"Unfortunately, these veterans cannot gain levels. How nice if they could gain level up to Level 80 or 90!" Hundred Shots lamented.

"Only three charges remaining, it would be pointless even if they could!" Lost Dream shook his head and ran towards Pilo.

Zhang Yang commanded, "Veteran, attack this Red-Skinned savage!"

"Yes, sir!" Zhang Yang's summoned soldier immediately saluted Zhang Yang and rushed towards Pilo, brandishing his spear.

"Wow, very impressive!" Wei Yan Er's eyes shone brightly and pointed at her summoned soldier and then commanded, "Veteran, sing a song!"

"Yes, sir!" Wei Yan Er's summoned soldier raised his chest up and sang, "Sister doesn't open her mouth, sister is not talking, what is sister thinking..."

Everybody gaped at the soldier!

Zhang Yang felt like fainting on the spot and groaned, "Little brat, stop playing around. Quickly, hit the boss!"

"Sigh, I see everybody fighting so hard. I thought I could make my veteran sing you guys a song as a morale boost!" Wei Yan Er shrugged her shoulders and raised her hands then continued,

"Veteran, although I wanted to give you a 'Yes', I have no choice

as the rest of the people do not agree! Do not worry, true gold will always shine anywhere, someone out there would appreciate your talents!"

"This is... talent show?"

"Little brat changed her favorite genre again!"

After the nine veterans had joined them, the team's attack power increased significantly. In addition to that, the map no longer spat out spears or flames. As a result, they attacked Pilo with ease.

50%!

"My fellow courtiers and people, quickly, show yourselves, and fight for your King!" the boss yelled loudly once again.

Shush, shush, shush!

Nine elite guards spawned hundreds of meters away from the crowd once again. Nine elite guards shouted loudly and rushed towards Zhang Yang and the gang.

Endless Starlight had already lifted his hammer and shield and had dashed towards the elite guards without Zhang Yang's command. The crowd also sent their veteran NPCs towards the elite guards. The veteran NPCs' HP bars were already full with {Regeneration}!

Zhang Yang did not waste any opportunity to fling {Spear of Obliterations} at the distant elite guards. Every little bit of help would count. Wei Yan Er also followed suit. Her melee attack was up to about 4,800, so the damage caused was quite significant!

After clearing the second wave of minions, all of them turned around and continued attacking the boss.

40%!

For the third time, Pilo summoned the nine elite guards.

Everyone thought that the boss would change its attack pattern at every 20% reduction of its HP, but there was no change this time! They had already adapted to these elite guards, and the third wave was taken out even sooner!

Pa! Pa! Pa!

Their bodies hit the ground uneventfully.

30%!

"Stinking little pests, I may have underestimated you guys!" Pilo stared them with bloody red eyes then howled, "More! More minions! Crush all these silly intruders!"

Shush!

18 Elite guards appeared!

This time, everyone was slightly nervous. If all 18 of these elite monsters surrounded and fought against a player, even Zhang Yang himself would succumb after two or three rounds of attacks!

"Send the veterans ahead. Starlight, don't be a hero and just do what you can!" Zhang Yang immediately commanded, "If the veterans die, summon them again. They have no cooldown periods! Just another 1,000 coins!"

"Noob tank, I..."

"Apply for reimbursement! Apply for reimbursement!" Zhang Yang did not wait for Wei Yan Er to finish her words.

The Veterans may be lower in level, but it did not really matter! In 'God's Miracle', levels had a hard bracket at every 10 levels. For example, a level 79 monster would be slightly stronger than a level 70 monster, but they would be outrightly outclassed by level 80 monsters!

The disadvantage of Zhang Yang's team was they were outnumbered. Although Endless Starlight had pulled six monsters, the other nine players still had to fight twelve monsters at once. Suddenly, the battle became a lot harder!



Luckily, they could use [Summoned Soldiers] three times without waiting for a cool down period. Therefore, they could immediately summon the Veteran again when the Veterans fell!

After seven Veterans were killed, they finally cleared all the 18 elite guards! Still, the veterans had a 10 minute duration. The remaining ones would disappear too, in time to come!

20%!

Another 18 elite guards had been spawned again!

"Ha ha ha, stinking little pests, I have the best soldiers and the strongest war horses, my soldiers are going to kill all of you!" Pilo shouted, and the eighteen Arhats rapidly rushed towards Zhang Yang's gang.

"Oh my god, why is it not over yet?!"

Zhang Yang was frowning as he said, "Perhaps the boss would summon 27 to 36 elite monsters when its HP drops to 10%. That would really be trouble!"

"No time to worry about that, hurry up and clear all these minions first!" Han Ying Xue cried. She was already pushing past her limit. Any more pressure, and she might slip up, and someone may die, leading to a cascade failure.

Having learned slightly from the previous wave, they only lost 4

veterans this time.

10%!

Boss' body started to turn into bloody red and its damage output instantly skyrocketed as it roared wildly!

'Ding! Pilo has entered Berserk state, damage output increased by 20%!'

At first, Han Ying Xue could scarcely heal Zhang Yang's HP, but now she could only panic and and stare helplessly as the boss turned into a Berserk state!

Zhang Yang quickly activated [Merlinda's Ring of Grateful], drank health recovery potion and tried to reduce Han Ying Xue's healing pressure. Zhang Yang kept {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} for last!

5%!

"Warriors of Blood Moon Castle, come and fight for your King!" Pilo shouted as it lifted its axe!

36 Elite guards appeared hundred meters away!

It was not just the normal 36 normal monsters, but the genuine elite monsters!

Everyone was instantly astounded!

"Let's use the Veterans to fight the elite monsters, try to hold up against them as long as possible, and we will focus on defeating the boss! Regardless of whether the minions disappear after the boss is killed, at least we complete the quest requirement!" Zhang Yang said as he commanded his Veteran to rush towards the terrifying wave of elite guards.

The rest of the people also sent out their Veterans as they attacked the boss without wasting any second.

The nine Veterans were able to hold up eighteen elite guards for a long time, but these nine Veterans collapsed was faster when they faced the 36 elite guards. Horrible shrieks and bodies fell every 10 seconds!

The corresponding players quickly summoned other new Veterans to replenish their numbers. In total, they had used their [Summoned Soldiers] 16 times. After another 11 summons, they ran out of uses!

During this time, the boss was left with less than 3% HP, which was a total of 220,000 HP!

"I will activate {Vanguard's Aggression} protective barrier!" Endless Starlight shouted, immediately lifted his shining blue armor and shrouding all the people within the protection barrier. At the same time, Endless Starlight also used both {Strong

Hammer} and {Devotion} to pull the six elite guards.

Endless Starlight waited until the last moment before multiple weapons struck him, and activated {Sacred Protection}, granting him invincibility!

Endless Starlight used the five seconds of invincibility to its fullest!

3, 2, 1!

The moment the effect was over, he took one wave of attacks which almost emptied out his 20,000 HP entirely! He quickly activated {Sacred Protection} and recovered his HP! However, that would only buy him a second or two at most!

At this time, Zhang Yang had activated {Vanguard's Aggression's} protective barrier while also activating {Shield Wall} at the same time! Endless Starlight's {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier was already fading.

"Quickly, kill the boss!"

Everyone let out their warcries!

140,000! 110,000! 90,000! 70,000!

{Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier's duration ended!

Zhang Yang quickly used {Rearm} to end all skills' cool down, and then activated {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier once again!

50,000! 30,000! 10,000!

"No..." when Pilo was left with only 10,000 HP, it actually turned tail and started fleeing!

"F\*ck, what kind of boss is this? It actually wants to escape!"

Caught off-guard by the boss' sudden move, the gang stood rooted to their spots for a moment, before coming to their senses and giving chase. If they dragged the fight any long, they would definitely be overwhelmed by the elite monsters in no time.

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er threw {Spear of Obliterations} toward the boss which caused a total of about 6,000 damage. Daffodil Daydream also quickly used {Fire Blast}, and a '-2,812' damage text appeared above Pilo's head.

Just a little bit more!

Luckily, they had Hunters in the team. When the boss ran out of the 3-meter minimum range, the Hunters launched their arrows!

‘-3,012!’

‘-3,362!’

"Argh..." Pilo got shot in the back of its knees, the final bit of his HP bar fading away. Pilo fell on his face and tried to crawl forward, "I'm the Lord of Red-Skinned Beastman, I could have ruled the entire Beastman, conquer the whole continent, but I got an arrow to my knee.."

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Pilo. Obtained 888,938 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

# Chapter 317: Alchemist's Intuition

---

The instant when Pilo died, the 36 elite guards vanished in a puff of smoke at the same instant, and the assaults were put to an end, leaving everyone with great relief.

"Quickly, let's see what the boss dropped for us!"

Anyone would be crazy about the loots of a Violet-Platinum boss, so everyone was a little excited about it. They circled around the dead body of the boss. Poor boss, not only he was shot in the knee, but he also had to bear the humiliation of being studied like a exhibition showpiece after his death!

The first thing they managed to recover from the loots was a dark key, known to be used to open up shackles that were specially designed to special characters such as Merlinda.

The second trophy they recovered from their victory was a piece of [recipe] for a specific profession.

[Recipe: Alchemist's Intuition]

Usage: Teaches you Alchemist;s Intuition.

Require: Professional Alchemy.

Bound upon picking up.

"Why is it bound upon picking up!" Zhang Yang could not help but to grind his teeth, because if not, he could have given this recipe to Yu Li for her to learn the skill. But now, only one of his party members could claim it now!

And among the entire party, he was the only one that is a Professional Alchemist!

Only he would gain something out of it.

"Silly Yu, is that good?" Han Ying Xue was asking him while blinking her large eyes.

Zhang Yang patted the recipe on his chest and acquired the skill, and then he posted the description of the recipe onto the party channel.

[Alchemist's Intuition]: Every time when you craft a potion, there is a certain rate that the crafted potion will transmute, adding a new effect upon it's initial effect. There are 10 levels of transmutation in total, the higher the level of the transmutation, the better the additional effect will be, ranging from 10% to 100%.



"Wow! This skill is awesome!" Everyone was caught by surprise!

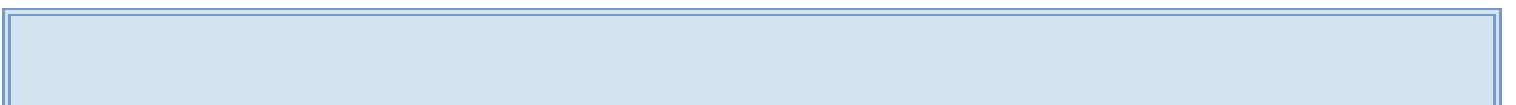
But Zhang Yang was smiling bitterly, because he initially intended to delete Alchemy profession and pick another profession that would be more suitable for PvP. This sudden acquisition got him good, forcing him to abandon his initial thoughts! He shook his head again and again and complained, "Looks like I'm forced to craft some potions now and then now, huh?"

"Haha, generosity will always be rewarded!"

"Holy god, you guys are just going to sit there, waiting to get free potions from me, right?!" Zhang Yang gave out a breath of sigh. After he masters [Alchemist's Intuition], he would instantly become a god-like being in his profession, not only could he no longer delete his current profession, he would also need [Herbalism] to enhance his profession further!

Players who were focused on [Herbalism] tended to be lower leveled, but high-level potions required high-level herbs, so he could only rely on himself!

He should just give up on [Smithing] then, since he picked that profession only for the [Shield Blueprint] in the Level 10 dungeon in order to be able to earn an initial amount of gold in the beginning of the game! Now that his earnings from his territory and the Little Merchandize Shop are on track, he no longer needed it.



[Boots of Brutality] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +282

Strength: +189

Agility: +81

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"Little girl, you just struck jackpot!" Zhang Yang threw the pair of boots to Wei Yan Er.

But Wei Yan Er was shaking her head about and said, "I want [Armor Set]!"

"Armor Set, your head!" Zhang Yang flicked his finger against the shiny forehead of Wei Yan Er and said, "Do you think [Armor Sets] come raining from the skies? Don't be so d\*mn greedy. Plus, these boots are not bound upon equipping, just take it for now and use it first. When you get your new [Armor Set] later, you can sell these boots for money!"

Wei Yan Er gave some thoughts about it for a while, and did as he said, with a joyous smile.

"I know all of you are waiting for [Armor Sets], but don't get your hopes up too high, after level 80, [Armor Sets] come as rare as they go! Violet-Platinum grade is one level higher than Yellow-Gold grade. One piece alone would already surpass the [Armor Set] of your Yellow-Gold stuff!" Zhang Yang spoke straight to the point, "When we start exploring level 80 maps, you'll find that your level 60 Yellow-Gold sets would be good up till Yellow-Gold bosses, but once we meet a Violet-Platinum boss, it would be doom, for us all! The battle with Polo just now was just an appetizer! The defense of the boss was as high as 2,400, so what can those baby Yellow-Gold equipment do to it?"

The gang nodded in realization. Things had been going too well for them these days, and they had been steamrolling through bosses without a hitch, giving them a sense of misguided invincibility, thinking that they could reach the sky with a single bound and switch all their Level 60 Yellow-Gold [Armor Set] to all Level 80 Violet-Platinum [Armor Set] equipment!

[Spiky Helmet] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Agility: +378

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

This time, the two thieves and the two hunters were tossing for points to compete for the equipment, and by the end of it, Hundred Shots won, with 91 points.

[Ring of Beastman's Ancestor] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +141

Use: Releases the soul of the Beastman's ancestors, inflicting massive damage to the enemies, lasts for 10 seconds. Cool down: 24 hours. When equipped with this ring, the player will be cursed by the soul of Beastman's ancestor, and cannot remove the ring for 24 hours.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

After coming across the ring, everyone was looking into each others faces. Although the description stated that it could inflict massive damage to enemies, that value was not specified. Other than having the attribute of vitality, there were no other attributes on the ring. Also, the cool down of the item effect is as long as 24 hours! What's even more unacceptable was that the cooldown and the binding shared the same duration - 24 hours! After the 24-hour cool down, are you going to take it off or use it again?

Dilemma!

Lost Dream said, "It better be powerful, or else it's a shitty deal to have it stuck on you for 24 hours!"

"Let's toss for points to decide who has it!"

Zhang Yang outrolled them all with a total of 89, successfully keeping the ring. As it is, rings that only add vitality points were far more useful for tankers to have.

[Gaunlets of Peaceful Soul] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +282

Intelligence: +189

Spirit: +81

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

Daffodil Daydream and Han Ying Xue tossed the dice. However, Han Ying Xue was out of luck this time and the item was taken by Daffodil Daydream.

The boss dropping a total of 4 pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment in one shot. It was considered to be a highly generous act already! Other than that, there were also other nine peices of Yellow-Gold equipment, and all of the equipment were distributed among them all one by one. The remaining equipment pieces that were not wanted by anyone of them were tossed at the Little Merchandize for sales. Out of it all, Zhang Yang obtained a pair of boots.

[Blazing Defensive Boots] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +134

Strength: +54

Agility: +27

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"Let's go, off to rescue the lady priestess!"

The gang went back to the forth floor of the castle, when Merlinda was pleased to see the return of Zhang Yang, her face lighting up. "Zhan Yu, are you holding up fine?"

"What a bias NPC, we had also fought so hard, but she only concern for Zhang Yang alone!" Fatty Han was pouring out his grievance.

It was all because Zhang Yang was the one who triggered Merlinda's dialogue in the first place, so she would only have eyes for him!

Zhang Yang smiled lightly and said, "I'm alright, and we can actually get you out of here, right now!"

He took out the key and unlocked the prison door, and Merlinda immediately walked right out from the prison chamber with her

white dress that looks bright and clear, and she looked just like a goddess of the moon, her beauty unmatched in the entire world.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Rescue the Priestess of Moon, acquired 1,000,000 experience points! Quest duration: 4 hours 36 minutes 58 seconds, quest appraisal: Perfect! The result has been added into the appraisal of the Main Story Linking Quest!’ Everyone received the voice notification from the system, but they did not receive any rewards immediately after, obviously they had not completed the final part of the quest yet.

"Now, let us take leave of this forsaken place!" Merlinda told the gang.

{Hair Dryer} could only be used once, furthermore, it can only teleport players into castle, not out of the castle. So the gang could only fight their way towards the exit of the place. It was actually a good thing since they could actually harvest more experience points on their way out. After another three or four hours, they arrived at the outside of the castle.

But it did not mean that they had escaped yet!

The Blood Moon Castle is surrounded by a tall castle wall all around, and there were many Magic Cannons placed right on the wall. Therefore, one cannot simply climb to the top of the wall and jump over, the fall would kill them!

--- they had to locate the main gate before getting themselves out of there!



"Zhan Yu, we must destroy every single one of the Magic Cannon if we plan to get out of here in one piece! Or else, these Magic Cannons will blow us to smithereens!" Merlinda turned over to Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Merlinda has given you a quest: Destroy the Magic Cannons, accept or decline? This quest is linked to the Main Story Linking Quest, complete the Main Story Linking Quest to acquire luxurious rewards!"

What else to think about it? Of course they’re accepting it!

[Destroy the Magic Cannons] (Quest difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Destroy 32 Magic Cannons on the wall of Blood Moon Castle, create conditions for a safe escape from Blood Moon Castle!

Completion: Destroyed Magic Cannon 0/32

Going up along the stairs to the top of the castle wall, the gang began to sweep through the monsters in the clockwise direction. They also hacked the Magical Cannons to pieces that they encountered along the way.

The number of the monsters on castle wall was far more higher

than the number of monsters within the castle, and all of them were elite-grade, brutal and deadly! But at the same time, they also had the super healer Merlinda at their side, who healed 5% of their health every second! That was totally unbelievable!

Furthermore, the {Higher Regeneration} of the NPC affected multiple targets at the same time like an AOE effect. With just a gentle lift of her hands up, everyone was buffed with a {Higher Regeneration}, healing once in every 30 seconds, and players with higher health points were having the time of their lives, being healed by percentages!

"Witchy Snow, seems like you need to get a boob job! She's outhealing you, outboobing you too!" Zhang Yang teased her.

Wei Yan Er immediately took the opportunity to tease Han Ying Xue as well, "That's right! It's not like yours are really that much bigger than everyone else, so stop feeling happy about yourself all day and night!"

Han Ying Xue obviously took great pride in her perfect pair, so she glared at both Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er and said, "You two are just saying that the grapes are sour because you can't have it, just envy on! I'm not going to fall for it!"

With the healing support of {Higher Regeneration} from Merlinda, Zhang Yang had no fear at all! With a few gentle pats on the Whitey's head, he charged right into the horde and began to slash like crazy! {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave} were activated one after another, activating the special effect of his [Dark Enigmatic Sword]!

Now that he mounted onto his [Mount], boosting his health points to exceed 60,000, and the {Higher Regeneration} healed him by 3,000 health points every time, and with the addition of Han Ying Xue's healing, he had become truly undefeatable! As he basically steamrolled over the monsters, the gang arrived at the position of the first Magic Cannon without much effort. From there, they began to destroy the Cannon!

Endless Starlight looked upon Zhang Yang with envious eyes and he said, "I must get a [Mount] for myself as well!"

For a tanker, the damage boost from having a [Mount] was not that important, the real uttermost importance was the massive boost in health points, giving tankers a massive boost on their survival ability!

[First Level Magic Cannon] (Item)

Level: 1

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 1000

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er joined hands and stacked their {Cripple Defense} onto the cannon to bring down the defense of the

Magic Cannon down to 500 points. Then, the gang laid waste to it! The 1,000,000 health points of the cannon was no match at all with the assaults of the gang. In just a few moments, the Magic Cannon was turned into a pile of scrap metal!

Zhang Yang could not help but to think, "If only these Magic Cannons could be brought back to the Thunderstorm Castle, they would have been a great addition to the territory's defense!" There are only three Magic Cannons on the walls of Thunderstorm Castle, they'll quickly be overrun by a force large enough. If it weren't for Zhang Yang's [Friendship Jade] back then, Thunderstorm Castle would have been completely leveled down to the ground!

"Hehe, never thought that you would be so sensitive towards money and gold!" Wei Yan Er patted Zhang Yang's shoulder.

It was actually called putting material resources to good use, and the little hypocrite was actually calling him out for something she was known for herself! Zhang Yang shook his head again and again, and finally said, "Let's keep moving forward!"

Although there were numerous elite monsters appearing along their way, however, under the terrifying advance of the gang, every single one of the monsters quickly fell! One Magic Cannon, two Magic Cannons, three Magic Cannons... 30 Magic Cannons, 31 Magic Cannons!

At last, they had arrived in front of the final Magic Cannon on the wall. They got to work.

"Intruders, stop it right there! Now!" a thunderous roar was heard, and they saw was a large dragon flying over them, a shadow suddenly jumped from the back of the two-legged dragon, ascending down from the sky. The blazing light behind the shadow was so blinding as if the light was coming out from a raging sun. The party was forced to shield their eyes.

Boom!

The shadow descended with a loud bang, and a red-skinned, imposing, giant of a beastman appeared right by the upside of the Magic Cannon. The beastman had a shield in its left hand and a long spear in its right, with a set of metallic heavy armor on the entire body, which rattled, due to the aftershock of its violent landing.

[Soldier Captain Slane] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 1,500

"Who are you people? How bold of you to trespass into the territory of the Blood Moon Castle and have your way there?"

Slane was shouting in rage. And when his sight was set upon Merlinda, he frowned and asked, "How did you get out of there? Pilo that imbecile, he just wouldn't listen, insisting on having some sort of wedding! What a joke! If it were up to me, I would have simply ended you on the spot and be done with it! All the cubs are born the same!"

The boss spoke in a very barbaric manner, and the pretty ladies were all blushing in embarrassment. Meanwhile, Fatty Han was left with his jaw slack, and he muttered, "Well, damn! That's what I call an idol to be looked up upon! Straight to the point, I like it!"

"You barbaric beastman, today you shall pay for all your insolent acts!" Merlinda pointed at Slane while talking in a huffed manner.

Although she had not yet officially become the Priestess of the Moon, but she definitely had the stature of being one soon, standing tall and regal!

"Hahaha, since you have escaped, that would only mean that imbecile Pilo is already dead!" Slane held up his spear with a firm grip and let out a big laugh, "Very well, from now on, I am the new King of the Red-Skinned Beastmen! I declare, that you intruders must all die! As for you, my noble priestess, you shall become my woman and give birth to a child of god, for me!"

# Chapter 318: Dance Of Heaven And Earth

---

After a bunch of crap talk, the battle was triggered immediately.

It wasn't that Zhang Yang and his gang did not want to initiate the battle, but it was because the game had entered a cutscene, and they could only speak at that point!

Shoof! Zhang Yang initiated the battle with a {Charge}.

Although Slane was only a Yellow-Gold boss, his attacks were extremely brutal, and he constantly activated {Tornado Cleave}, inflicting high damage to any players around him. Regrettably for the boss, now that Zhang Yang and the gang had Merlinda on their side, her constant healing had turned the tables!

Even without Merlinda on their side, Zhang Yang and the gang could just carry out some tactics and bring down Slane --- afterall, they managed to slay a Violet-Plantinum boss all by themselves, what could a slightly above average Yellow-Gold boss do to them? Now that Merlinda was supporting them, the battle had become a cakewalk for them! They only remained where they were, ignoring the attacks of the boss, because they could!

In the case of Wei Yan Er, where she has to carefully manage the rage points that she has on hand, she simply embraced the damage inflicted upon her, now! With basically infinite rage points, she could just activate her skills at will, as long they were already cooled down!

With all the crazy skills and attacks thrown on him, Slane was slaughtered alive within 8 minutes!

"Sigh, he could be the king of the beastmen, and he chose to stand his ground and die by our hands! This is called committing suicide, even the gods and fairies wouldn't be able to save him!" Fatty Han put his palms against each other and made a posture of praying to the buddha, "Farewell, my respected idol!"

"He left behind a number of Yellow-Gold equipment, at least!" Wei Yan Er went up with joy to pick up the loots that were left on the ground by the boss.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The rest of the gang destroyed the last Magic Cannon with their joint attacks.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Destroy the Magic Cannons, acquired 1,000,000 experience points!'

Slane dropped a total of four pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, six pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, all of them being Level 80 equipment. The gang were no longer expecting a huge transition to a Violet-Platinum set anymore, so the four Yellow-Gold equipment were distributed among them. Of course, they did not spare any of the Gray-Silver equipment a second glance, so the rest of all equipment would be taken back to the Little Merchandize for sales.



Merlinda gazed into the distance and said, "Zhan Yu, all Magic Cannons have been destroyed, we can leave now!"

‘Ding! Merlinda has given you a quest: Escape from the Blood Moon Castle, accept or decline? This quest is linked to the Main Story Linking Quest, complete the Main Story Linking Quest to acquire luxurious rewards!’

Of course they accepted it!

[Escape from the Blood Moon Castle] (Difficulty: C-rank)

Description: You have successfully destroyed the defense of Blood Moon Castle, grab the opportunity to escape now!

Completion: Escape from the Blood Moon Castle 0/1

This quest is only ranked as C-rank, obviously it was a simple one. The gang gave a breath of relief as they stepped out of the walls.

No longer in battle, those who were without a [Battle Mount] were summoning their [Mounts] one after another. Merlinda had also summoned a white tiger.

Wei Yan Er’s eyes sparkled and she said, "Aww, what a cute, massive cat!"

"... Little girl, if you are to go to the zoo full of wild animals, I'm sure the tigers would appreciate your attention!"

The gang headed towards the elvish camp site.

"Master Thea!" Merlinda immediately jumped down from her [Mount] and walked towards Thea, "I could never imagine that you would personally come forth! Your noble presence puts me to shame, I am not worthy of it!"

"Merlinda, you are the new Priestess of the Moon, soon after, you complete the ritual back in the sacred land of ours, and you will become the leader of the Moon Elves! Your stature shall be even far greater than mine!" Thea smiled gently and turned to Zhang Yang and the gang to thank them, "Adventurers, you have completed the quest, I would like to express my gratitude on behalf of the entire race of the Moon Elves!"

She bowed gently at Zhang Yang and the gang, and the elvish warriors behind her, knelt down on one knee. It was a bone-chilling scene!

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Escape from the Blood Moon Castle, acquired 200,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have completed the Main Story Linking Quest: Hope to the Race of Elves! Appraisal: Perfect!’

‘Ding! You have acquired Luck Attribute +1!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a skill book {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!’

[Skill Book: Dance of the Heaven and Earth ]

Use: Teach you the skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}.

Required profession: None

Required Level: 70

Bound upon pick up.

This skill can actually be learned by any profession!

The gang all found that they had all been rewarded with the same [Skill Book: Dance of the Heaven and Earth].

"... We'll only talk about this after learning it!" Everyone tapped the skill books on themselves and learned the skill. Since the skill books are bound to the players who picked them up, they could only learn the skill for themselves.

[Dance of the Heaven and Earth]: Activates a devastating assault upon the enemy, inflicting Chaos Damage of 10,000 for every second! Lasts for 10 seconds. Range: 30 meters. Cool down: 24 hours.

That would mean a total damage of 100,000 points in one single activation! Furthermore, chaos attribute damage ignores defense and magic resistance, which meant that 100,000 damage would always be inflicted!

Everyone drew a collective breath --- this amount of damage is just brutal! Even if Zhang Yang mounted on his [Battle Mount], he would not survive that!

The gang was overjoyed except for Zhang Yang, he was the only one who sighed lightly at aside. This {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} is the best skill for the current stage of the game, but the weakness of this skill was that it would soon be phased out in the later stages of the game. It could not be upgraded, and would still deal the same amount of damage upon players reaching Level 200!

If a tanker stacked up on more damage reduction passives, they could still turn themselves completely immune to the attack! Furthermore, with the improvement of equipment over time, the health points of the players will increase as well. So, this {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} was only a temporary gimmick, and even then, it could only be used as a final resort in a battle, as it had a long cool down of 24 hours.

"In the upcoming Professional League Championship in few days time, let's just throw our {Dance of Heaven and Earth} at all of our

opponents at the same time, then we shall become the champions!" Fatty Han was excited, as his PvP abilities were lacking, but it shouldn't be too difficult to activate one skill, was it?

Everyone nodded to express their agreement! If the number of players who learned this skill increased, PvP matches will become meaningless. It would turn into a cowboy match of seeing who pulls the trigger first, and who had more health points to outlast their opponent!

In the future, the arena would forbid the use of powerful skills that had a cool down time of more than 10 minutes!

Zhang Yang could only keep this to himself. Afterall, even the beta players will never be able to foresee this kind of future development, and he cannot leak the future to anyone, so he could only bury this fact deep down in his heart until it happens.

"Fellow adventurers, please stay for the night and have a good rest. Tomorrow, we shall depart for the sacred land of Chaos Realm! We shall wait until you are strong enough to step into the Chaos Realm. By then, you must not forget to make yourself guests in Arthulan. We, Moon Elves are forever indebted to you!" Thea said.

Everyone nodded.

Of course, they could not possibly waste one night there, so they mumbled a simple excuse and left the camp site, marking the beginning of their new journey.

After earning a large amount of fortune, none of them were up for any other quests. So they just slayed some monsters around the wild to maintain their lead in the leveling board. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang headed back to the White Jade Castle to stock up the Little Merchandize with their newly acquired loot. From the looks of it, this batch of equipment is bound to generate a large sum of fortune for them.

After that, he got rid of his 'Smithing' and approached Herbalist Mentor to learn a series of new profession-based skills.

'Ding! You have chosen to forget your Smithing Skills. Once forgotten, even if you relearn the art of Smithing, the recipes and skills you once learned will not exist anymore, accept or decline?'

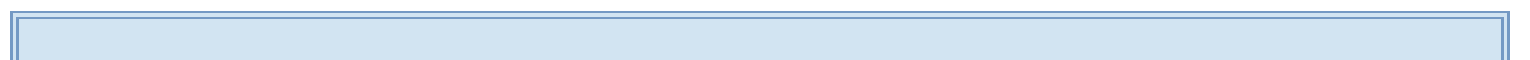
Accept.

'Ding! You have forgotten Smithing, now you can learn a new profession skill.'

'Ding! You have chosen the Herbalism as your second profession skill!'

'Ding! You have acquired a new skill: Herb Search!'

'Ding! You have acquired a new skill: Pick and Pluck!'



[Herb Search]: The navigation map will show the location of available herbs around the area.

[Gather]: Allows you to collect herbs in good condition.

Unfortunately, the newly learned Herbalism skill was still at Level 1! Left with no choice, Zhang Yang could only summon his Whitey and dashed forward over to the Level 10 Leveling area. He could only travel to the lowest level map to begin his training on his Herbalism skill, because he still cannot gather high-level herbs yet. Attempting to harvest them would only damage the herbs, and garner him no experience points!

‘Ding! You have acquired a new skill: Blood of Life!’

When the Herbalism level of Zhang Yang has reached middle-class level, he automatically obtained a new skill, and this is actually a ‘free gift’ for all players who practiced the art of Herbalism.

[Blood of Life] (Level 1): Recovers 100 health points within 10 seconds. Cool down: 2 minutes.

It was really a fortunate thing that they adjusted the ratio of the in-game time and the reality time, plus the leveling up of the herbalism skills took little effort. It took him two days and two nights to level up his Herbalism skills before he achieved the

Professional grade! The skill {Blood of Life} will level up automatically based on the level of the player's Herbalism. So when Zhang Yang had elevated his Herbalism skill up to professional grade, the {Blood of Life} had been leveled up to Level 3 as well.

[Blood of Life] (Level 3): Recovers 2000 health points within 10 seconds. Cool down: 2 minutes.

This skill {Blood of Life} was actually quite a handful skill, similar to a regular bottle of red potion. The only weakness was that the cool down time was a little lengthy, and the healing amount did not come all in one shot. But, what else could you hope for, it is already a good skill that would save you a few bottle of potions in a battle. After all, this is just a free skill that anyone can obtain.

It was already almost 6.p.m the next day when he logged out of the game. Actually, he intended to rank up his profession skills to the Specialist grade, but Fatty Han came over to forcefully drag him out on a speed date.

"Fatty, are you sure you are going on a speed date?" Zhang Yang felt that it made no sense whatsoever.

"Let's just go! Fermenting yourself in your little apartment room everyday is not healthy for your both mental and physical state! Little Yang, you must not always live in the virtual world, plus, you are not some kind of isolated hermit!" Fatty Han replied seriously for once.



Zhang Yang burst into laughter and said, "Alright, just because you say so, I'll tag along this time, good gentleman!"

"It's accompanying me, brother fatty, not gentleman! What's in it for a gentleman, just strings and limitation that binds one person into the mold of an obedient 'gentleman', there's no fun at all. I'm a man without strings and limitations!" Fatty Han pulled open his car door.

"Hey fatty, haven't you been picking up many pretty girls by driving your sport car around? Why are you attending this sort of speed date then?"

"Hehe, I fell in love with one of those pretty girl upon first sight!"

"Entering into a relationship without the aim of marrying her is kind of disrespect towards the lady, an act of indecency, you know?"

"... I'm being serious this time, if she is willing to, I am willing to take her over to the Civil Affairs Bureau to register!"

## Chapter 319: Luo Xin Yan

---

Fatty Han drove Zhang Yang over to a hotel's conference hall. A banner hung over the entrance of the hall: Best Century Major Speed Date Assembly.

However, entry was not free, men were required to pay a sum of 100 dolar to enter, while women could simply walk in. Although Zhang Yang and Fatty Han did not care for that small sum of 100 dollars, they were still sighing over the fact that men and women will never be equal, despite all the protests, and slogans, and speeches about true equality.

The two of them searched around for a table to sit, and leisurely ate the melon fruits that were served on the table. These melon fruits were free of charge, but if anyone wanted a refill, it would cost some money. Of course, they could order some other food, but they would all cost some money.

"Don't you have a photo of your beloved lady? Take it out and show me, let me see the charm that actually got you to keep your balls in check!" Zhang Yang was munching on some orange slices to keep his hunger at bay. Thanks to Fatty saying that there would be dinner for him here, he had not yet eaten. Now, he was so hungry that he was beginning to see stars!

"Of course I do! Have a look! Look!" Fatty Han took out his phone and presented it to Zhang Yang as if he was presenting a precious item.

It is a pure, sweet looking girl, she wasn't really that pretty, but she gave people a fresh kind of feeling, and she looked to be about 18 or 19 years old.

"Not bad at all!" Zhang Yang nodded to express his approval. Well, finding a wife is totally different compared to finding a boyfriend or a girlfriend, and a pure looking girl is far more reliable than a sexy-ass woman.

"Of course, when have I ever shown a lapse in judgment?" Fatty Han was blatantly boasting at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang burst into laughter and said, "Then how does she feel towards you?"

"Well, we just had two conversations, and I haven't had the chance to ask! Today's the day I find out more, and also, she's a local! So I came all the way here! She should feel quite alright with me, I guess!"

"So after all we have been through, only now you are telling me that it's just your own wishful thinking and feelings!"

"Well I am not bad on the outside, and as long as she spends some time together with me, she is definitely going to dig me!" Fatty Han confidently told Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang passed the phone back to Fatty Han and said, "She is just about to begin her university life and here you are, rushing her

into things now?"

"This is called fate!"

More people were arriving as the time passes, but the lady that Fatty Han had his eyes on had not shown up yet. A little while later, a man, seemingly the official person-in-charge, went up on stage and gave a few words to the crowd. After that, he announced that the Speed Date Assembly had officially begun and everyone can look for their dates freely.

"Let's go, it seems that she had stood you up!" Zhang Yang had already eaten up all the melon fruits that were available on the table, leaving the plates spotless.

"Just a little longer ---" Fatty Han was not willing to give up, his eyes fixed to the entrance of the hall. Suddenly, he widened his eyes and said, "There she is!"

They could only see two pretty, young ladies walking in from the entrance, both of them were in their late teens. The lady on the left was slightly shorter than the other one, and she had that pure sweetness around her, looking just like the photo that Fatty Han showed Zhang Yang.

The other lady was about 170 cm tall, with a tall and thin body, small waist, well-shaped buttocks, with long hair flowing over her shoulders, she was very pretty. The outer corners of her bewitching eyes tilted upwards like a feline, and her lips were thin and red, charming several men at first glance.

However, Zhang Yang was startled!

Luo Xin Yan! The woman who toyed with his feelings for half a year! In the end, it turned out that she was a mistress sent by Liu Wei to suck the warehouse of Clear Water dry, she was a woman who had almost succeeded in bringing him down to his knees!

He immediately raised his alertness level from his head to toe! If 'history' was repeating itself, Luo Xin Yan should only appear in his life two years after. But as he sailed across the sky to be reborn, many events had been altered from the original timeline. It was perfectly possible that Liu Wei had sent her to string him up like a puppet!

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head again and again. He only happened to be here by coincidence, only a god could predict things this far!

He buried down all his restless thoughts deep and calmly remained in his seat.

On the other side, Luo Xin Yan and the pure lady had spotted Fatty Han thanks to his obvious mass, and were already approaching them.

"Fatty---" Luo Xin Yan snapped, "So you are the one pursuing our Xiao Wei?"

Fatty Han is lustful, but he was no fool who would have weak legs whenever gazing upon a pretty woman in front of him. Instead, he immediately took offense and fired back, "What's it got to do with you!"

"Humph! Xiao Wei is my roommate, of course I must watch out for her, to prevent her from being played around like a doll!"

Her tone struck Fatty Han deep down in the gut. He furiously growled, "Hey! Don't you dare make things up off the top of your head!"

"Xin Yan!" Xiao Wei pulled the sleeve of Luo Xin Yan and gently said, "Fatty Han is a decent person!"

"Pfff---" Zhang Yang could not hold it, the milk that he just drank came back gushing right out of his mouth. It was fortunate that his head was laying low and the milk had not struck anyone else. As he coughed repeatedly, he wondered how did Fatty Han manage to butter up that pure lady into believing him so much. She had so much faith in him that she would call him a 'decent' person! It was like calling a tiger a vegan!

"You have no quality at all!" Luo XinYan suddenly turned her 'firepower' towards Zhang Yang and began to fire away, "Xiao Wei, people say that the same type of feathers flock together! Looking at the company he keeps, he can't possibly be a nice person! Tonight is the last time you're seeing him!"

"Xin Yan!" Xiao Wei pulled Luo Xin Yan's sleeve again, blushing

in embarrassment.

Zhang Yang stood up and pulled Luo Xin Yan into his seat which was right beside Fatty Han.

"What are you ---" Luo Xin Yan was about to reach out to pull Xiao Wei up from her seat.

However, right before she could even finish her words and reach Xiao Wei, Zhang Yang had forced her into his seat, and then he sat right on top of her, grabbing her hands to prevent her from getting up.

"You hoodlum! Let me go!" Luo Xin Yan screamed.

Zhang Yang smiled gently and said, "One would damage ten temples rather than destroying a marriage! Do you understand?" So be quiet, and just sit there, and watch!"

Luo Xin Yan had lit up like a firecracker, snarling at him furiously! As she struggled to get up from the seat, Zhang Yang overpowered her with his mighty strength and kept her pinned down.

"You f\*cking hoodlum, let go of me!"

Zhang Yang turned to Fatty Han and Xiao Wei and he said, "You two, take your time and enjoy your evening, we are not going to interrupt you!" then he turned back at Luo Xin Yan and aimed his

lips at her red lips, and it went in for the kill! He kissed her!

"Mmm---" Luo Xin Yan's eyes widened as she uttered something inaudible.

Fatty Han and Xiao Wei were left with their eyes wide open and their jaws hanging wide. Who knew that Zhang Yang would be so bold as to do such extreme actions in public! Fatty Han was giving him a thumbs up behind his back. He thought that Zhang Yang was truly his brother in arm, bold enough to strike on the spot like that!

At first, Luo Xin Yan still tried to struggle, but under the forceful kiss of Zhang Yang, her strength began to fade and by the end of it, her feline-like eyes grew hazy, and she seemed to sink into the moment. Her nostrils were flared, as she moaned a little.

After all, Zhang Yang was most familiar with Luo Xin Yan, even if compared to the experiences of this life! In his previous life, Zhang Yang had shared the same roof with her for about half a year, and he knew what exactly turned her on!

Only after a long while, Luo Xin Yan only managed to recover from the 'attack'. She could not help but to feel ashamed of herself for actually beginning to enjoy the forceful kiss performed by a man that she had never met before!

The more Luo Xin Yan thought about it, the worse she felt about herself. How could she possibly stay here any longer? So she stood up quickly and tried to leave. However, her legs were already



weak, and as she stood up in a swift manner, she almost fell down flat on her face! But as she quickly braced herself against a chair, she met Xiao Wei's curious gaze. Knowing that her face was telling a very strange story, she covered her face and quickly walked out of the hall.

"Xin Yan---" Xiao Wei stood up.

"Don't worry, I shall help you escort her back, you and Fatty Han can take your time and chat!" Zhang Yang smiled, and then he stood up and followed Xin Yan.

After walking out of the hotel, Zhang Yang did not go after Luo Xin Yan, because he did not have the mood to do so!

In the previous life, Luo Xin Yan had really done a number to him, not just by breaking his heart, but also sucking dry the entire warehouse of Clear Water guild, costing a loss of more than tens of millions of dollars! What she left behind for Zhang Yang, was a short clip of her, confessing that she only got together with him because she had taken Liu Wei's money and had been told to do so! Everything she had with Zhang Yang was just a lie, a farce!

Zhang Yang gazed at the back of Luo Xin Yan slowly fading into the street, as he sneered in satisfaction.

After taking a cab back to his apartment, Zhang Yang thought to himself, that maybe it was time to give himself a new place to live.

Logging onto the game, Zhang Yang summoned his Whitey and went straight to the Black Moss Wilderness. Then, he picked a spot with fewer people and began to grind for experience points by slaying monsters, while collecting herbs to improve his Herbalism skills.

‘Ding! You have used {Gather} on the [Corrupted Grass], your Herbalism dexterity has increased by 1 point!’

‘Ding! You have obtained [Corrupted Grass] X 2!’

...

‘Ding! You have used {Gather} on the [Black Leaf Lotus], your Herbalism dexterity has increased by 1 point!’

‘Ding! You have obtained [Black Leaf Lotus] X 3!’

...

Because in the current stage of the game, the number of players who had managed to reach Level 70 and above were so small that they may be counted in one hand, so Zhang Yang had no pressure at all. He claimed all of the herbs on the entire map, and wherever he went, he would just use {Gather} to pick up herbs at his will!

The night had arrived, and Zhang Yang had succeeded in elevating his Herbalism to the Specialist grade, and his {Blood of

Life} had been elevated up to Level 4 as well, giving him a healing effect of 8000 health points within 10 seconds, which was not bad at all.

The latest update version of the game helmet had an additional function of a 'wake-up call', so Zhang Yang had set the alarm at 7a.m. At seven in the morning, the helmet brought his brain out of sleep, and automatically logged him out of the game.<sup>1</sup>

After a series of serious training, Zhang Yang once gain logged into the game and began to craft potions at the Alchemist shop in the White Jade Castle.

As he just bought a new recipe - {{Enrage Potion}}, the use of it was to instantly increase 100 rage points. Because these [Enrage Potions] were not highly in demand, Zhang Yang had kept the recipe to himself instead of passing it over to Yu Li.

'Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4!'

...

'Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4!'

...

'Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4! Because of your {Alchemist's Intuition}, the [Furious Potion] acquired a transmutation!'

### [Furious Potion (Transmutation 3)] (Consumable)

Use: Instantly gain 100 rage points, while increasing your attack by 30%, lasts for 10 seconds! Cool down: 1 minute. Use of any potions will cause other potions to enter a state of cool down as well.

Level required: 60

{Alchemist's Intuition} gave potions additional effects other than just their initial effects, and the potions would transmute based on the rate ranging from 10% to 100%. If this 'Transmutation 3' gives an additional effect of a 30% increase in attack, then a 'Transmutation 10' should be able to give an additional effect of a 100% increase in attack!

Awesome!

Zhang Yang was motivated to continue brewing more potions!

## Chapter 320: Dividing The Power

---

‘Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4!’

...

‘Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4! Because of your {Alchemist’s Intuition}, the [Furious Potion] have acquired a transmutation!’

...

Zhang Yang had crafted thousands of [Enrage Potion] in a single breath. But unfortunately, the rate of {Alchemist’s Intuition} kicking in was extremely low, and less than 100 bottles of potions had acquired transmutation. Furthermore, most of them only acquired grade 1 to grade 3 transmutations. Naturally, the higher the grade, the harder they are to occur! For instance, the number of potions that had undergone grade 7 transmutation or above were only 7 bottles. 3 of them had undergone grade 7 transmutation, 2 of them had undergone grade 8 transmutation, one of them had undergone a grade 9 transmutation while the last bottle undergone a grade 10 transmutation.

Even then, most of it was due to his extremely high luck attribute!

He then deposited all the non-transmuted potions into the guild’s warehouse, waiting for the correct moment to distribute them to the members when necessary. These non-transmuted

potions will still have their uses in battle. For example, tankers will not be able to kite monsters if they had no rage points left in them, they could use these potions to gain more aggro!

As for those [Enrage Potions] that had undergone transmutation, he kept them into his own backpack. One frustrating fact was that if the potions had different grades of transmutations, they would be categorized as an entirely different item, and they would no longer stack up together. Although there were only 97 transmuted [Enrage Potions], these potions had solidly occupied 10 of his backpack slots!

Awhile later, Fatty Han came online as well.

Zhang Yang could not hold his smile and he sent a voice message over and said, "Someone did not even log into the game last night, is it because someone has been shakalakaboombooming with someone else?"

"Sigh, little Yang, why must your brain always filled with those thoughts? Can't you be a little decent for once?"

Zhang Yang almost fell flat on the ground, to be criticized in such manner by a legendary pervert! He did not know whether to cry or to laugh!

"Oh, so, you two were just holding hands, leaning against each others shoulders while looking at the stars in the sky for the whole night?"

"Hehe, I'm just going to keep that to myself, it's a secret!"

Fatty Han paused for awhile and said, "Oh yea, you were really savage last night! To kiss that b\*tch by force, that really left me stunned! Worthy of being my brother! Even when you're acting all gangster on her, you look awesome! Xiao Wei said she had never seen that b\*tch run away, all flustered like that before!"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "You sure about this 'real' love?"

"Yes, yes, and yes, unless it's Xiao Wei, I'm not getting married, ever! To show my determination, I have decided to deposit all the educational discs of Ms.Aoi and Ms.Matsushima over at your place, and I will turn over a new leaf!"

"... you can just throw them away!"

"Well, they have been with me for so many years, they do hold a special place in my heart, you know!" Fatty Han was feeling regrettable and said, "All these years, you have no idea how much I have sacrificed as offerings to them, all the sweat, all the jiz---"

"Stop stop stop! Hold it right there, I haven't had my lunch yet!" Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine as his mind automatically started picturing how Fatty Han would juice himself out, in front of the computer while doing it. It was just too much for Zhang Yang to bear, and he was feeling ill, just thinking of it!

After more idle chatter, Fatty Han set out to grind for experience points. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had realized that his herbs had almost been used up, so he too, set foot in the Black Moss Wilderness. He kept going back there, because despite not having much minerals and ores, the entire land was rich with herbs!

Just as he was sunken into the joy of collecting herbs, suddenly, Zhang Yang received a voice message from Hundred Shots.

"Zhan Yu, the number of players applying to join our guild is getting out of hand, and many of them are actually highly skilled! But we have reached the population cap for Level 2 guild. We'll be missing out on some good recruits! I would like to suggest that you elevate our guild to Level 3 guild with a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order]!"

Ever since Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had made a mess in the Japan-Korea server, and the incident of the two Japanese players challenging them, Lone Desert Smoke was becoming even more famous, turning their guild into a national symbol! Other guilds were struggling to recruit players, while Lone Desert Smoke was having a shortage of space!

All bosses that are higher than Level 80 had the possibility of dropping a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order], but unfortunately, for Zhang Yang and gang, there was no sign of a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] even after they had slain a few Violet-Platinum bosses!

However, when players have attained Level 80 and above, the chance of encountering a Level 80+ boss would increase, as would the rate of getting a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order]! After all, Zhang



Yang and all his gang members were currently around Level 70+, so they could only wander around the map of Level 70. Therefore, it would be really difficult for them to encounter a Level 80 boss!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "It is really difficult to suddenly obtain a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order], how about we establish a Sub-Guild then?"

"Sub-Guild?" Hundred Shots frowned vaguely. They discussed about this before, but because they were really worried about juggling the standards between the two guilds and the inconvenience that it would cause, they had not implemented it until now. Furthermore, if the Sub-Guild is not being managed well enough, discord might be sowed among the members, with the Guildmaster himself being dragged into the mud in a worst case scenario!

If the Sub-Guild was managed too poorly, some ambitious players would try to take over, and cause them shame in public!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "[If Heaven wishes it to rain or your mother to remarry, there is no way in stopping them.](#) If there really are people who would try to make a scene, the Guildmaster will cause an even bigger scene!"

A Chinese culture saying: If Heaven wishes it to rain or your mother to remarry, there is no way in stopping them - an inevitable occurrence

"Then, who shall manage the Sub-Guild then?"

"Let Fatty Han and Endless Starlight go over to manage it. With them both there managing and supporting, the progression in Dungeon of the Sub-Guild should be able to keep up, they won't look too awkward."

"Alright."

Establishing a Sub-Guild was a very short process which required only a short period of time. Firstly, Fatty Han and the appointed members would leave the guild, and then they would register a new guild, with a new name at the reception of Guild-Establishment. When there were 30 players responding to this establishment, then 'Lone Desert Smoke First Sub-Guild' would be established.

Zhang Yang broadcasted the announcements in White Jade Castle, informing everyone about this new development. Those players who wished to join Lone Desert Smoke will be placed in the Sub-Guild for a certain amount of time. If they performed outstandingly, then they will be promoted to the main guild.

Fatty Han went over to the Sub-Guild in great delight, shamelessly asking for the Guildmaster spot. His main aim was to be a fox, assuming the majesty of the tiger, to experience the joy of barking orders left and right for his own pleasure. Meanwhile, Endless Starlight was hugging onto the leg of Zhang Yang while bawling madly, giving everyone the impression that he could not bear the sorrow of leaving Lone Desert Smoke.

But, at the end of it, Zhang Yang solved the situation with only one sentence, "The Sub-Guild is full of pretty ladies!" The little brat

actually bought it and disappeared in just a second. Everyone only found out that Endless Starlight was actually unwilling to leave the pretty ladies in Lone Desert Smoke, not Lone Desert Smoke itself!

Zhang Yang then summoned all the higher ranking players in the guild for a discussion, where they temporarily came up with a few guidelines.

1. Members in the Sub-Guild who perform well are eligible to be promoted to join the main guild. While members in the Main Guild who under-performs will be demoted to the Sub-Guild for further observation.

2. Although there are differences in the names of Main Guild and Sub-Guild, everyone should be considered as full-fledged members of Lone Desert Smoke, like a family. The Sub-Guild must be treated as equals by all means!

3. The resources of the Main Guild and the Sub-Guild would be shared equally, as would the loots and earnings. Therefore, the points accumulated in the Sub-Guild can be spent in the Main Guild.

At that moment, the reputation of Lone Desert Smoke was reflected. After only 3 hours, the number of applications to join the newly founded Sub-Guild had already reached the maximum capacity of Level 1 guild. Although the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] was not that difficult to come by these days, elevating a Level 1 guild to Level 2 guild required the accumulation of experience points, other than just the [Guild Upgrade Order].

They'll have to take it in stride!

Zhang Yang irresponsibly threw all the responsibilities to Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream, and then he went on to collect herbs and grinding on his own.

After going offline to have his dinner, Zhang Yang logged back into the game and managed to secure a new alchemy recipe :{{Level 4 Intelligent Potion}}.

[Level 4 Intelligent Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Increase 100 intelligent points, last for 1 hour.

Required level: 60

Coincidentally, he had a few hundreds sets of the materials for crafting this potion, so he got to crafting.

‘Ding! You have crafted [Level 4 Intelligent Potion] X 4!’

...

‘Ding! You have crafted [Level 4 Intelligent Potion] X 4! Because of your {Alchemist’s Intuition}, the [Level 4 Intelligent Potion]

acquired a transmutation!’

[Level 4 Intelligent Potion (Transmutation 2)] (Consumable)

Use: increase 100 intelligent points, magic attack increased by 20 points, last for 1 hour.

Required Level: 60

After 5 to 6 minutes, all of the materials had been crafted into [Level 4 Intelligent Potion], but only 19 of the potions were transmuted potions, and there was no sign of potions that had undergone grade 7 transmutation, not even one!

Even his 10 points of luck did not seem to be near enough. Only if he could reach 30 to 40 of luck attribute points, he should have a 10% rate of transmutation!

"Daffodil, come back to White Jade Castle, I'm passing you some potions!" Zhang Yang sent a private message over to Daffodil Daydream.

"Alright, coming."

Traveling back to White Jade Castle was easy, and within just a couple of minutes, Daffodil Daydream had arrived back at the castle, riding on her [Mount]. Although her [Mount] was only a

Gray-Silver grade, it looked magnificently appealing. It's pair of dual wings allowed it to glide in the air, looking significantly stunning!

It was the image of a pretty lady riding on her [Mount]. Along her way, Daffodil Daydream had attracted the attention of countless players from below.

"Guildmaster ---" Daffodil Daydream jumped down from her [Mount] and realized that only Zhang Yang was there. Her oval, olive-skinned face instantly turned a little red, as she fidgeted around with her sleeves in her fingers and asked, "You call me over for something?"

"Yea, I just crafted some potions, here are some for you!" Zhang Yang traded a bunch of [Intelligent Potions] over to Daffodil Daydream, and among those potions were some good stuff like grade 4 and grade 5 transmuted potions!

Daffodil Daydream immediately widened her bright eyes and said, "You're too good, guildmaster!"

Is she treating him more than a friend? It was getting awkward.

Zhang Yang was feeling uneasy about the situation, so he let out a sudden "Oh!" and asked, "Oh yea, I haven't seen Witch Snow and that little girl online yet, have you seen them?"

Daffodil Daydream thought for a while and said, "Yea, I haven't

seen them for awhile now, either."

Zhang Yang felt puzzled, if Wei Yan Er did not come online during the day, it might be because she had gone for school, but she had never ever missed a night before, what could be the reason?

Daffodil Daydream went on to grind again. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang went on to the mailbox and sent a portion of the potions that he had crafted to the second-party including Fantasy Sweetheart. A portion of the potions were reserved for Han Ying Xue. However, the entire night passed without them logging in.

On the next morning, Zhang Yang could not beat it anymore, so he gave Han Ying Xue a call.

Tut... Tut... The phone rang for awhile before it was being picked up.

"Hello---" it was a weak voice coming from Han Ying Xue.

"I'm Zhang Yang. Anything happened to you and Wei Yan Er?" Zhang Yang was worried.

"... Wei Yan Er's father ran into an accident and passed away yesterday." Han Ying Xue only replied Zhang Yang after a pause.

Zhang Yang was shocked, then he asked, "How did it happen?"

"Her father left a suicide note, saying that he would want to take responsibility for all the negative news about the company, and he apologized to Yan Er's mother. So he decided to end his life to make up for it!" the voice of Han Ying Xue indicated her tiredness, it was probably because she did not have a good rest at all.

"How is little girl holding up?"

"She cried for the whole night, and she just fell asleep just now."

Zhang Yang thought to himself for awhile and said, "I'm coming over right now!"

"... Alright. We are at her place, just take down the address."

After taking down the address, Zhang Yang immediately departed out and took a cab to the destination.

Wei Yan Er's house was located at a high-class villa area. After going through a security check by the guards, he finally arrived at the doorstep of Wei Yan Er's house. It was a three-storey high house, with a large garden by the entrance, and also a series of facilities like a swimming pool, a tennis court and the likes of it.

Han Ying Xue personally came out to invite him into the house. The body of Wei Yan Er's father had not yet been recovered from the Police. After all, the deceased was the CEO of a multi-billionaire company, a thorough autopsy was required to ensure that there



was no foul play. There were a number of people gathered in the middle hall of the house, and the only person that Zhang Yang recognized was Luo Yang Ming, so all of them were probably relatives.

After seeing Zhang Yang, Luo Yang Ming immediately jumped over and asked, "Little Snow, who is he? Is he qualified to be here at all?"

"Oh, buzz off!" Han Ying Xue spoke to him coldly and dragged Zhang Yang up to the second floor.

Luo Ming Yang was so furious that he tightened his grips on both hands, but when a pretty-faced, frivolous girl tapped his shoulder gently, he was back at ease, a cold grin on his lips.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue entered a study room, and both of them sat down facing at each other.

"Did the little girl's father really commit suicide?" Zhang Yang began to ask.

Han Ying Xue shook her head and said, "Who knows! I don't know! We just received an email. His so called 'Death Wish Note' was sent from his email address. So in theory, only he himself could have access to the account, but ---"

She did not have to finish her words for Zhang Yang to understand, no matter how good the firewall of the company was

designed to prevent hackers, according to Wei Yan Er, her dad was a flirtatious person, god only knows if there were any 'Secretaries' under his 'care' as he logged into his email.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and said, "I am genuinely worried for your safety, for both of you!"

Han Ying Xue set her sight upon the floor, and it was as if she was gazing through the floor at the people downstairs, and she asked vaguely, "Can people really be that ruthless when it comes to money?"

Zhang Yang solemnly said, "The numerous negative news about Silky Soft Holdings back in the days could have been staged for this, I guess! Setting up a good reason for Yan Er's father's death! They could just say Yan Er's father could not bear the enormous stress from the company, and to prevent himself from seeing his own company fall, he committed suicide!"

"How much could a fallen company get them? 2,000,000,000, or only 1,000,000,000, in fact! There are so many of them, each of them can only get, at most, 100,000,000 to 200,000,000!" Han Ying Xue was muttered dejected.

Zhang Yang said, "Even if it is only one or two hundred million, it is definitely better than not getting anything at all! Furthermore, maybe one to two hundred million isn't much to you, but for regular folk, this amount of money is no small matter for them! People die for money, birds die for food, the ancient idioms used to say that!"

"Zhang Yang, I need your help!" Han Ying Xue stood up and looked at him with renewed hope!

## Chapter 321: Beat Down

---

The Han Ying Xue at that moment, seemed very weak, her lovely and gentle eyes were lost in despair.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I will do my best!"

"Thank you." Han Ying Xue frowned and said, "I do not know who to trust anymore! If Yan Er's father has been murdered, then their fangs must have found their way into the inner circle of the company's management, no one in the entire company can be trusted!"

Too much thought had been put into this already!

Luo Ming Yang had a simple thought, and that was to make sure Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Wei Yan Er's Father stay dead, then the entire Silky Soft Holdings will become theirs to claim! They did not care how bad will the company becomes in the future, as long as they could get their hands on the profit, they were already satisfied!

Wei Yan Er slept all the way until 3 p.m before she woke up. When she saw that Zhang Yang was present, she tried to pout at him like she always did, but quickly broke down into tears again. Then, she sobbed, "My dad is gone!"

Zhang Yang sighed gently and patted her shoulder, and he said, "Everything will pass! You still have your cousin sister, and you still have us, your friends! You are not alone!"

Of course, Wei Yan Er did not stay in her own house after that, instead, she went to stay with Han Ying Xue at her warm house. Zhang Yang insisted on becoming their driver to send them both back to their place safe and sound.

"Silly Yu, you are welcome to stay here for the next few days." Han Ying Xue suggested. She glanced at Wei Yan Er's house which had been flooded by those 'animals' and said, "I'm very worried that Luo Yang Ming and his goons will knock on our door to make a scene!"

Her worries were not based on nothing, and Zhang Yang had always wondered why he had never heard of Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er before, in his previous life!

Anyone could see that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were extremely good looking, and they were highly skilled. They also had the heart and grit to match up to everything else! So according to all these facts right in front of him, there is no doubt that these two girls should have become famous players in the game, like Snow Seeker! But somehow, he had never heard of them in his past life, and the most suitable explanation was that they had already quit the game before the Professional League Championship had even begun!

If Zhang Yang had not intervened, they would just believed that Wei Yan Er's father died of car accident, and they would definitely have let their guards down. By then, it would be possible that they would also suffer similar 'accidents', and their names would just disappear from society for good!

Zhang Yang felt a chill from head to toe, and he knew, no matter what, he must not let that kind of thing happen to these two ladies!

"Alright, I will be your personal bodyguard for these few days!"

"You can use Yan Er's game helmet to log in, and I will order a new one. Also, I don't think she will log into the game for these few days." Han Ying Xue said mournfully.

Han Ying Xue's house had 3 rooms, two living rooms and two bathrooms. So the three of them could have their own personal rooms. As for the use of bathrooms, they had to be strict in the sharing part, so Zhang Yang would only use the one on the west side while the two ladies would be sharing the one on the east side of the house.

"Silly Yu, you are not going to release your foul beastly attitude and go gangster on me and Wei Yan Er in the middle of the night, are you?" If Han Ying Xue could say such things, it only meant that she was getting back to her usual self.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head again and again, and said, "No worries, I will never take opportunity on others!"

"You better be, and I am telling you now, I have a tazer, a pepper spray and all other sort of stuffs that can prevent perverts, all lying there in my room! It would only mean death for you if you try something funny!" Han Ying Xue warned Zhang Yang.

"Fine! Fine!" Zhang Yang took the game helmet over from Han Ying Xue, then he walked into the guest room and began to log in to the game.

He then informed Fatty Han and the rest of the gang about the horrible things that had happened to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. Everyone felt so sorry to hear about it. Fatty Han said that he would go visit them, while Daffodil Daydream and the rest who were living afar expressed that they were going to fly over to Zhou Su City to attend the funeral of Wei Yan Er's father.

On the next day, Fatty Han and Sun Xin Yu came by to Han Ying Xue's house.

"Little Yang, you stayed overnight over here?" Fatty Han asked Zhang Yang pointedly.

"What are you thinking?"

"Well, there are two pretty ladies in there, and they're nicely spread over multiple preferences of men, if you get what I mean. One mature, one young, and they are both feeling hurt, being in a state of 'void'. It is extremely easy for you go, you know, 'get in'! Little Yang, I approve and give my utmost support on you having a 'double kill'!" Fatty Han patted Zhang Yang's shoulder gently, expressing an expression that said 'I know, you know'.

"Shut up!" Zhang Yang then turned towards Sun Xin Yu and asked, "Anything suspicious?"

Sun Xin Yu gave Zhang Yang an intense stare before she began to speak, "After the investigation, it appears that Mr. Wei ingested some alcohol before he drove. However, the amount of alcohol in his blood stream wasn't high. However, there were also traces of high dosages of sleeping pills inside his system, which caused him to be disoriented while driving. As a result, he died in a crash!"

Zhang Yang felt uneasy under her intense gaze, and he was shocked to hear about the result as well. He paused for awhile and said, "No suspicion at all?"

"If, let's say that the 'Death Wish' email from Mr. Wei is real, then his suicide is most likely true! But if the email was forged by someone else, then the police will take in account, on the possibility that someone was drugging him on purpose!" Sun Xin Yu explained coldly.

"Doesn't Mr. Wei have his own personal driver?" Zhang Yang was curious, a big boss of a large-scale company like Mr. Wei wouldn't drive by himself. Plus, he was not some youngster, so he wouldn't simply race around for the thrill of it!

Han Ying Xue smiled coldly and said, "I guess he was on his way to meet his mistress, his driver could not know."

Although she treated Wei Yan Er like her real sister, but she obviously did not share the same respect towards Mr. Wei.

"Icy, didn't I tell you that the biggest suspect is that annoying guy



Luo Yang Ming? Why didn't you guys bring him in for questioning yet? That guy is definitely the spineless type. A few good scares will definitely crack him up!" Zhang Yang told Sun Xin Yu.

"Police work requires solid evidence!" Sun Xin Yu was still speaking coldly to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could only smile and he turned to Fatty Han, "Fatty, let's go and have a chat with that guy."

Sun Xin Yu frowned her pretty looking eyebrows and asked, "What do you guys intend to do?"

"Did you say police work requires solid evidence? We are gangsters, hoodlums! As long as we suspect someone, it's enough reason to shake them up!" Zhang Yang replied.

"Personal torture to extract confession is illegal!"

"Then arrest me!" Zhang Yang put out both of his hands, "Or just pretend you know nothing about this!"

Sun Xin Yu was enraged, but she only turned her head away after giving some murderous glares at Zhang Yang.

"Move out!"

Zhang Yang requested for the contact number of Luo Yang Ming

from Han Ying Xue and he dialed the number. After just awhile, he heard a man's voice over the phone saying, "Hello? Who are you? How did you get my number?"

"You with the sir name Luo, if you did nothing wrong, what are you so afraid of!"

"You're insane! I'm hanging up if you're not telling me who you are!"

"Hehe, hang up then! Because if you hang up the phone right now, I shall let lose the recording of the conversation between you and Liu Shu Yan, discussing about your conspiracy!" Zhang Yang took a wild guess, hoping to strike gold. Zhang Yang assumed that if they really had something to do with the death of Mr. Wei, these two siblings must have had more than one conversation about it.

Instantly, the sound of Luo Yang Ming breathing rapidly was heard over the phone, and after quite awhile, Luo Yang Ming finally began to talk, "So what do you really want?"

"Of course it's money!" Zhang Yang gave a few sinister laughs and said, "Meet us alone, drive alone! We shall negotiate the amount of money that you need to pay us to get back the recording! I will only wait for half an hour! Any later, do dress up nicely for the cops, yeah?"

Luo Yang Ming immediately panicked and said, "Please don't! Please calm down! I'm coming right now! Please don't go to the police station!"

"Fine, then go to this address!" Zhang Yang gave Luo Yang Ming an address.

After hanging up the phone, Zhang Yang let Fatty Han drove him over to the address he gave to that guy.

Luo Yang Ming was really a coward, to cave in so easily. An idiot like him, can they really get the proof on his conspiracy?

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to have doubts in his plan.

Having the sport car parked at the dark corner side of the bridge, Zhang Yang got down from the car and said, "If that guy shows up alone, just ring the phone once, if he brings some muscles along with him, ring the phone twice!"

"You can count on me! Just relax!" Fatty Han pounded his chest and told Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang walked down from the bridge alone. It was alright, because the weather was quite cold that day, and there was no sign of hobos around the area. He quietly waited for awhile, and then his phone began to ring! And it only rang once before it was cut off.

In just awhile, a shadow of man was visible within his sight, and under the pale moonlight, he could see that the shadow was indeed that rich bastard, the son of the rich, selfish family!

"Hello --- I'm here, where are you?" Luo Ming Yang was beginning to feel anxious and began to call out. Although the security in Zhou Su City was not bad, there were still cases related to guns and murders happening around the city. It would take a lot for the coward to have come out alone by himself.

Zhang Yang was standing by the shadow of the bridge, and under the cover of darkness, he began to talk, "You who carries the surname Luo, you really are a bogey, you attempted to rape your cousin, and then you killed your own uncle! Any other dirty things that you haven't done yet?"

"What can I really offer you to stop all this?" Luo Ming Yang was indeed an idiot. He had not denied anything once, and had already admitted that he indeed was involved in the 'accident'.

"How much money do you want, you just say it!"

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again, and then he walked out of the shadow into the light, and the moonlight instantly shined on his face.

"You... You are the guy that went to Wei Yan Er's house yesterday!" Luo Ming Yang lost his voice while attempting to shout.

Zhang Yang was shocked for a while there before he could react. His face is different from his avatar's face in the game, no wonder Luo Yang Ming could not recognize him!

Luo Yang Ming was sensing that something was not right, so he began to back up slowly!

Zhang Yang dashed forward, and it was like an eagle grabbing a chick, with only one hand, he grabbed hold of the back collar of Luo Yang Ming and lifted that coward up into the air.

Although Luo Yang Ming was an idiot, he knew at once that he was outmatched and outclassed! Instantly he stopped struggling and said, "Boss, anything can be settled, just say the price, please don't hurt me!"

Zhang Yang took out his phone and called Fatty Han, "Hey fatty, come over here for some exercise! Move your bones and muscles for a little bit!"

The instance Luo Yang Ming heard what Zhang Yang said over the phone, his face turned pale immediately and said, "wha... what are you guys going to do?"

Crunch!

Zhang Yang swung his fist, at the same instant, he let go of the collar and Luo Ming Yang staggered back, clutching his jaw. He then spat out some blood and broken teeth from his mouth!

Luo Yang Ming was given a beat down to the point that he could not understand! Anything could be settled with words right? They

could have discussed over it and have a happy ending. But why would he be beaten up without even having the chance to negotiate at all!

Crunch!

Zhang Yang swung another powerful punch and Luo Yang Ming let out a horrible and terrified scream. More teeth flew out of his mouth.

Fatty Han had also arrived at the scene, and seeing that Zhang Yang was having a hell of a good time beating up that coward, he too rushed forward and said, "Allow me to enjoy for a bit!"

Zhang Yang took a few steps back while Fatty Han cut in and began to do some weird stuff to that guy. Fatty Han let out a few sinister laughs, and pressed Luo Ming Yang face down into the ground, and shoof! Fatty Han took off Luo Ming Yang's pants!

The man was barely conscious, but was instantly shaken out of his stupor! He began making muffled groans, thinking that he was about to be violated by that fat man! The horrific screams coming from Luo Ming Yang broke through the night, and his tears were dripping down, like there was no tomorrow.

# Chapter 322: The Confession

---

Fatty Han's hands were fast and deft. With a few seconds, he had unbuckled the rather thick jeans and had pulled the pants down, revealing a pair of floral, Hawaiian style boxers.

"Erhm...Fatty. Are you...erhm...are you planning to give him the experience of a woman?" said Zhang Yang with a shiver.

"Please. Boobies are the only pair I'll take. That and nice, curvy buttocks." Said Fatty Han. "This is what I call a real life "Cripple Defense"."

Zhang Yang let out a long sigh of relief. Even Luo Yang Ming who had been pinned down was screaming at one point, thinking that his anus was truly in danger. After hearing Fatty Han's explanation, he relaxed and stopped struggling violently.

Fatty Han then removed Luo Yang Ming's leather, hard sole shoes and smacked his unprotected butt with the hard end.

"Owiie!" Luo Yang Ming screamed like a woman. His entire body stiffen up like a solid wood, trying his best to struggle. His sudden buckle even shoved off someone as heavy as Fatty Han!

"Hahaha! That was fun!" said Fatty Han, laughing like a hyena. Fatty Han turned Luo Yang Ming face down and sat on him again. This time, he sat on his lower back and made sure that Luo Yang Ming could not move again when he continue "spanking" his butt with the shoe until it was all red and swollen.

Zhang Yang groaned. "I've never known that you would be into BDSM."

"Please. I haven't beaten up anyone for such a long time, I'm starting to get a little crazy! Bear with me a little, yeah!"

"Please stop! Please! Have mercy!" cried Luo Yang Ming. "I'll give you anything you want! Just, please stop hitting me! It hurts!"

"Hmph! Fatty, don't stop. Smack some testosterone into him! This sissy needs some manliness smacked into him!"

"Will do!" Being large, Fatty Han had heavy hands. The sheer momentum of his arms, coupled with the hard, rough surface of the shoe's sole, had caused the poor Luo Yang Ming to faint from the pain and was awoken again and again from the same sensation. Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han knew that the death of Wei Yan Er's father had something to do with Luo Yang Ming. That was why they were relentless in punishing him for over 30 minutes!

It was winter. It was so cold that you can practically freeze a bucket of water in just 10 minutes. Yet, Luo Yang Ming was smacked to the point where he was drenched in his own sweat. With pools of sweat underneath, him, it was clear that the pain he suffered was tremendous. After having their suppressed rage released, Zhang Yang nudged Fatty Han aside and moved in to and slap Luo Yang Ming's face.

"Alright, speak up! Was it you who caused your own uncle's



death?"

If Zhang Yang had started off with that question, Luo Yang Ming would surely have denied it. Now that Zhang Yang had given him a good spanking, the only thought in Luo Yang Ming's mind was to not piss off the two attackers any further.

Obediently, Luo Yang Ming answered. "We have always known that at every Saturday, he will sometimes drive himself to visit his lover and his son. That's why, we spiked his wine with a large dose of sleeping medication."

"Hmm. Did Liu Shu Yan put you up to this?"

"Hm. Liu Shu Yan was the master mind behind all of these. I was the one that carried it out. It's true! I'm no one! I'm just a little guy! Please, let me go! Please!" Luo Yang Ming started to cry like a little girl.

"Hmph! I believe you!. Only because a little pea bag like you couldn't have the intelligence to come up with such a plan!" Zhang Yang boldly proclaimed. "So? What's next in your grand master plan? Do you actually plan to do something to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er?! I know that after killing off Wei Zhang Tao, you guys would not inherit the family property!"

"The plan was to wait after uncle's funeral. After that we will plan another accident to have her killed."

Zhang Yang slapped him again. "Right now, with the problems surrounding Silky Soft Holdings, you plan to use them as a good reason for them to suicide, right!? Not bad. Not bad at all! Were all the negative rumors about Silky Soft Holdings spread by you?"

"Yes..." said Luo Yang Ming having lost all resistance. "Those years where we had taken money out of the company, no one, not even uncle, knew about it. Uncle was a klutz. The only thing in his mind was to play with women! However, Little Xue played quite a role in office management as well. If she ever found out of the discrepancies, we would be the ones in trouble! I would rather have her die before me!"

The last sentence took Zhang Yang over the edge. His face hardened up, and he spat on the ground beside the man's face.

"What a shameless prick!" said Fatty Han as he spat directly on Luo Yang Ming's face.

"Let's go. We got what we needed," said Zhang Yang as he turned off the phone. His entire confession had been recorded.

"Hey! Give me the recorder! Please! I'll pay you! I'll pay you a fortune!" said Luo Yang Ming as he started struggling frantically.

Zhang Yang scoffed and kicked him in the face before turning away. "I don't need your money. Use that pathetic money of yours to visit the doctor...while you still can!"

The two of them got into the car and left Luo Yang Ming in the dirt.

Back at Han Ying Xue's house, Sun Xin Yu was still there waiting. Zhang Yang did not even bother to clean himself up and directly dropped the phone into Sun Xin Yu fair hands. "Take this. It has everything you'll need to prosecute that bastard!"

"You guys...what did you—"

"You don't want to know!"

"...You. I see. Let's just say an anonymous citizen handed this over!"

"You're absolutely right. The police and the citizen should help each other out during hard times!"

With the confession in hand, the Public Security Bureau had everything the needed. The "suicide" news was brought up to light and had cause major uproar in the media around Zhou Su City. There were headlines about this investigation all over, in the newspapers, for the next few days! After a thorough investigation, the Bureau had managed to uncovered more than 10 suspects that were involved in his homicide case, however, the main culprit, Liu Shu Yan had manage to slip out of trouble! Since the only mouth that was tying her to the case was Luo Yang Ming's. However, there were no proper evidence that stated her involvement in this case! Furthermore, she was backed up with a very efficient lawyer!

This sly fox was very good. She was the mastermind, but her hands had never been sullied. Luo Yang Ming did all the heavy work. Since the two of them had never recorded their conversations, Luo Yang Ming would only appear to be falsely accusing her. The case was dismissed, and she got off the hook under the premise of false allegations.

Zhang Yang and the rest of them were waiting outside the station when Liu Shu Yan walked out of the station, free from all charges. When the woman entered her car, she stared coldly at Han Ying Xue. Zhang Yang could have sworn that he saw the woman was smiling.

"What a completely retard! Why didn't he keep any sort of evidence that he could have used as leverage?! What a loser, now he's taking all the heat!" said Fatty Han disgruntledly.

"This woman would not rest until she gets what she wants." said Zhang Yang. Deep down, his instincts were screaming when he saw the smile. It contained such a killing intent, faint, yet so powerful that Zhang Yang would not ever get a good night's sleep.

"That's why, noobie tank should continue on protecting me and cousin sister!" Wei Yan Er had regained her spirit.

Zhang Yang was slightly relieved. In truth, he did not want anything to happen to them. He frowned and said, "I'll say, what you really want is to have me to make you more dishes! Isn't that right, you little brat!" said Zhang Yang, as he rubbed the little girl's head.

"Nyehehehe!" Both Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue grinned happily.

Zhang Yang had lost his parents when he was only a little boy. Since childhood, he had learned to cook on his own and had manage to raise his culinary skills to a certain extent. During his stay in her house, Zhang Yang was the one who had been cooking all the meals for Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. With his level of cooking, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had completely fallen for his cooking.

Fatty Han shot him a thumbs up, flashing a wink that practically says, "We are a good team!"

Sun Xin Yu was starting to get agitated. "With only Zhang Yang staying over, it would be extremely inappropriate for the both of you! From here on out, I shall take over the role and protect you both!"

Wei Yan Er walked up to Sun Xin Yu and cocked her head cutely. "...Sister Sun? Can you cook?" she asked like an innocent little girl.

"I...I-I-I'll order takeout!" said Sun Xin Yu coldly as she stuttered. Apparently she had zero cooking abilities.

"No.NO.NO.NO!" said Wei Yan Er as she turned her head left and right at a high speed. "Takeouts are not as nice as the one that noobie tank cooks!"

Sun Xin Yu sighed. Helplessly, she blushed with a great deal and walked over to Zhang Yang. "Don't you dare agree to them!"

"Huh? Why?"

"There's no why! Just don't!" said Sun Xin Yu.

Zhang Yang cocked his head as well and pretended to gasped. "Oh! You're jealous!"

Sun Xin Yu slid across the floor and went up straight closer to Zhang Yang. "GRAH! W-W-Who's j-j-j-jealous!? Hmph! I'm leaving!"

Although she said she was leaving, but Sun Xin Yu turned around to walk into the station instead.

Since Wei Zhang Tao, Wei Yan Er's father had just passed away, Wei Yan Er was not in the mood to hold a party for her birthday. In the end, she had only called for Han Ying Xue, Fatty Han, Zhang Yang, and Sun Xin Yu to have the traditional [Longevity Noodle](#). Two days after the court order, Wei Yan Er was so busy cleaning up the mess in Silky Soft Holdings, and other related matters. After the dinner, made specially by Zhang Yang, everyone took a stroll outside before logging into the game.

Longevity Noodle: People from China or those who practice the Chinese culture usually eat long yellow noodles that represents the longevity of one's health. They say that if the noodles are lifted up

high from the bowl, they would signify a long and prosperous life.

Since it had been a while since they had logged in, many guild members had missed them. The moment the notification rang, announcing their logins, members started to bombard the girls with greetings. Zhang Yang invited them into his party and took Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue to take up some quest and kill monsters for experience points.

"Grah! Annoying!" cried Wei Yan Er. "These days, I finally gone through the accounting. Those parasites have already eaten up a large empty hole inside the company accounts! My god! Even cheese rolls have lesser holes than this!"

Han Ying Xue was also frowning. "The company will be announcing the past year records in just a few days. I have no idea how this issue will affect the stock value. Furthermore, the suppliers will want us to settle the accounts with them as well! I have no idea how to solve this huge gap!"

"Couldn't you just ask for a loan from the bank?"

"After reading the company financial report, I could swear that no bank will be willing to offer us a loan!" said Han Ying Xue as she shook her head disappointingly. "We might need to lay off a few large departments, tuck in, and hope for the worst to past by before we can relax!"

"I had never known that those little parasites could really spend that much! No wonder that worm would resort to attempting to

kill me and cousin sister off! The amount of money that has been taken out of the company would be enough to have them shot in the head! More than once!" cried Wei Yan Er furiously.

"Enough with the bad news. There will be a bridge and we'll cross it when we get to it. Until then, let's just focus what's now!" Zhang Yang transferred a large number of [Intelligence Potions] to Han Ying Xue and said, "You guys have been inactive for some time now. You'll need to speed things up a notch and get back on track!"

That being said, Zhang Yang himself had not been training for the past days. Still, he was at Level 74 with 51% experience points, while Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were still at Level 71.

After arriving at the usual grinding site, Zhang Yang and the party killed one wave of monster when a figure was seen from afar galloping towards them. Initially, the trio thought they were players, however, when the figure got closer, it was a soldier, fully clad in armor, on a handsome horse.

[Leanger, the Messenger] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 80,000

Defense: 450



Leanger stopped the horse when he was close to Zhang Yang. He then got down the horse and salute Zhang Yang. "In the name of Prince Serena, Zhan Yu has been requested to return to the castle immediately!"

The three of them exchange a surprised look. An NPC could search for a player?! How intriguing.

"What does Princess Serena need of me?" said Zhang Yang.

"My apologies. I was only sent here to summon you back," said Leanger as he saluted again. "The message has indeed been delivered. Please head back to the castle at once. Fare thee well."

# Chapter 323: Meteor Sword

---

Leanger got back on his horse and rode off.

Puffing her cheeks out, Han Ying Xue scoffed. "Dummy, I'd never known that some kid like you would actually manage to hook up with a princess! That, and the Elven Priestess of the Moon. What a player!"

Zhang Yang was not paying attention to her, as he was busy thinking about the reason why Princess Serena would actually summon him. Normally, an NPC would only interact with a player via direct communication and interaction. That applies to NPCs with complex AI as well. All things considered, Princess Serena had actually sent someone out to contact him. It was extremely odd.

Zhang Yang took out a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] and said, "You guys, continue your training. I'll head back for a bit!"

With a flash of bright light, Zhang Yang arrived at Thunderstorm Castle and "jumped" to White Jade Castle via the Teleportation Points. He then made his way quickly to the castle doors.

"Peasants are not allowed into the royal grounds!" cried one of the eight guards who were blocking the castle entrance.

Zhang Yang said sternly. "I am Zhan Yu. I am here under the order of Princess Serena herself!"

One of the guards standing closest to Zhang Yang approached him. "Are you really Zhan Yu?"

"The one and only!"

The guard nodded his head and opened a pathway for him. "Follow me!"

The guard led Zhang Yang directly into the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna.

"Please wait here! I will notify the princess," said the guard as he entered the chamber. After a moment, he came out of the chamber and allowed Zhang Yang to proceed further. "You may enter."

Inside the chamber, there were the same 24 gigantic pillars, along with heavily armored soldiers, standing at the side of each pillar. All of them were Elite tier soldier with their Levels hidden away! The defense of the castle had been upgraded to a whole other level!

Serena was sitting at her throne reading a book when he entered. As his heavy footsteps got louder, she closed the book gently and set it aside to welcome Zhang Yang. "Ah. Zhan Yu, please sit!" said Serena as she gestured to a small chair near her throne.

Zhang Yang went up to the chair and made himself comfortable. "Princess, I have no idea why you were in a rush to meet me. Is there anything of importance?"

Serene did not respond to him immediately. Instead, she glanced to the left and right without looking at him and said, "Zhan Yu, do you know of the Imperial Heaven's Empire?"

"Yes. Imperial Heaven's Empire was humanity's first and only empire. It was divided about 1,000 years ago, which was why there were many smaller kingdoms now," said Zhang Yang. It was the background of the game.

Serene turned to look directly at him. "My ambition, is to expand the great kingdom of White Jade to become the next Imperial Heaven's Empire!"

With no successor to the king, this princess had the heart of a real queen! That being said, it was already expected. If she did not have any intentions of expanding her kingdom, she would not have led the expedition to conquer Tukula Fortress in the first place, and would not have let herself become a hostage.

"How ambitious! We as thy followers, shan't disappoint thee" Zhang Yang continued to kiss her \*ss. At least, there was no one around to judge him.

Serena nodded her head in satisfaction. "You have proven yourself worthy when you planted the flag of White Jade Kingdom in the Tanilla Forest! Your actions have demonstrated the power of my kingdom!"

Zhang Yang was getting worried, thinking that she would have

him surrender his territory back to the kingdom. It was the one food provider of Zhang Yang, and if she wanted it back, he would not be giving it up without a fight.

"All is well, but that's not enough!" said Serena as she stood up suddenly. With a heroic stance, she roared, "I had advised my father, the king, to lead an army to enter the territory beyond the fortress but my father, the king wishes only to defend and not expand the borders of the kingdom! Before I succeed the throne, I am no position to command a large army in order to fulfill my ambitions! Therefore, I have to find another way!"

She paused a little. "Zhan Yu, do you know why the Imperial Heaven's Empire could rule over all of humanity and become history's first ever human empire?"

"No!" That was not a lie. The game's introduction did not include any further explanation.

Serena smiled and crossed her arms as she sat down gracefully back on her throne. "Legend has it, that Imperial Heaven's Empire had obtained a Celestial weapon called the Meteor Sword. Only with the sword, humanity had managed to suppressed all other beings in the world and built an invincible empire! However, it was also the cause of their downfall. Imperial Heaven's Empire was built on military strength, and was able to suppress other races in terms of military power. The following generations grew greedy. A greedy king is never loved by their subjects. They tried to enforce their will over the seven great generals, but were only brought down in retaliation!"

"Imperial Heaven's Empire has long lost it's royal blood line. The original seven generals of war had expended all their military forces. It was by then, when the officials wanted to take over the military in the name of the Emperor. One by one, they rose up to take the lead, but their true intentions were to take control of the Meteor Sword and to rule over the nation! Left with no choice in their hands, the seven generals had to resort to forbidden magic and banish the entire palace into an alternate dimension. However, they had also created a key that could open the dimensional gateway. The keys have been split into seven parts. Each general kept a part and their descendants now hold it. To open the gates, one must gather all the parts. One can enter the palace from there and obtain the Meteor Sword!"

Celestial weapon?

Serena continued. "After a thousand years, countless men have tried their best to search for the descendants of these seven generals, to search for the key parts, to obtain the Meteor Sword, but no one had succeeded! No one and no kingdom had ever been able to search for any clues! 7 years ago, I had sent spies out in various directions. After spending a large amount of gold, I have gathered the information about the location of the descendants of the seven generals! I know where they are! However, despite my efforts, father has vehemently disagreed! He thinks that the sword is a bad omen, a cursed weapon! That is why, I leave the search to you. Zhan Yu, you are my only hope in finding the sword!"

‘Ding! Serena had a quest for you: Search the Meteor Sword. Will you accept it? This quest will link to the main story quest. Complete the quest for a luxurious reward!’

A main story quest had just turned up at Zhang Yang door step!

Now Zhang Yang had finally understood the benefits of getting a good Relationship with Princess Serena! To think that she would deliberately seek him out for such a request!

Zhang Yang spoke out. "My princess, your wish is my command!"

Serena smiled and gave him a small pamphlet. "This is the current location of all the seven generals' descendants. I cannot disobey my father, the king's command. Therefore, the kingdom cannot support you in any way. You are on your own in this dangerous mission. Please be careful!"

"My Princess. Rest assured, I will complete the mission!" said Zhang Yang as he took the pamphlet.

"I will take your word for it. Please, hurry. I am not the only one who knows of this. The other seven kingdoms have already done the same thing! Please hurry!" said Princess Serena agitatedly.

"Roger!"

After exiting the royal chamber, Zhang Yang flipped open the pamphlet and read the paper. What a pain, all seven NPC were all scattered in all different maps! Just travelling alone would be tough! Among the seven NPC, three were located in three different Level 70 maps. Three others were located in three other different Level 80 maps. The last NPC is located in a Level 90 map! In that

case, to finish this quest, Zhang Yang would have to grind his way to Level 90!

For a start, Zhang Yang could at least gather the three key fragments from the Level 70 maps. Zhang Yang opened the quest window and read the description to see it could be shared with others.

[Search the Meteor Sword] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Princess Serena has ordered you to search for the ancient Celestial weapon, the Meteor Sword! The Celestial sword exists in the treasure vault within the royal palace of the Imperial Heaven's Empire. However, the palace, the vault and the sword is currently trapped within an alternate dimension. First, you have to search for the seven key fragments to form a perfect key. Only then, you can open the dimensional gates to enter the palace. The same key could be used to open the treasure vault.

Progress: Meteor Sword 0/1

Unable to share. In the lower corner of the quest description, the option button to share the quest was grayed out.

"Noobie tank, what did the princess ask you to do?" ask Wei Yan Er in the party channel.



"Hehe, a main story quest!" said Zhang Yang with a smile on his face.

"...Woah! What are you waiting for! Share it! Let's go! Come on! Share it!"

"Nope. The quest cannot be shared."

"What!?"

Zhang Yang first returned to the Thunderstorm Castle and went to Oz with the white bear panting beneath him. One of the seven descendants, named Alousous, was located somewhere in the small town of Lagguda. The information did not mention his exact position, neither about the exact position of the town Lagguda.

Riding around like the wind, Zhang Yang had spent over 3 hours and had finally came to a small, ancient looking town. The entrance of the town had a large clock tower that did not move; the long hand was pointing at 37 minutes while the short hand was pointing at 1. It seems that the clock was broken.

Zhang Yang patted the bear's head and the bear slowed down. Slowly, it walked through the streets of the ancient town. The strangest thing about this place, was the fact that it was shining brightly outside, yet, the moment Zhang Yang entered stepped into the town, everything turned dark and gloomy. Even the sky was void of sun light yet it did not seem to be night fall. A cold wind blew by, sending dusts and a few piece of paper rolling off the floor, giving a ghostly feel.

Where are all the people?

With a dead silence looming over the place, only the bear's footsteps could be heard. With each step it took, there was nothing else, besides the sound of its footsteps and the echoes it produced. That sort of atmosphere had given Zhang Yang a cold chill down his spine. The place was just too eerie for him to be alone. After a quick search, Zhang Yang arrived at the center plaza of the town. Standing there, Zhang Yang scanned the entire town and could not even find a shadow of a person. The entire place was completely devoid of any sign of human activity! It was as if some form of famine or plague had robbed the town of all life.

Clak. Clak. Clak.

Footsteps echoed behind Zhang Yang. Along with it, came the sound of ragged breathing as if someone was breathing through a mask. It was so terrifying that he did not even dare turn around to meet this approach.

Shaking, Zhang Yang tried to calm himself and gripped the hilt of the sword tighter. Props to the game developers for such convincing effects! The virtual atmosphere was so real that it could even induce a heart attack for the weak-willed.

"Young man~~~" came a shady voice from behind.

With all the strength he had, Zhang Yang pulled out the sword from the sheath at lightning speed and, ready to slash whoever is

was that surprised him. However, before the blade landed on its target, Zhang Yang quick reflexes saw that the person behind him was an older man with a walking stick, and was hunched back. Zhang Yang stopped the blade immediately with both of his hands, creating a powerful after shock that blew away some of the dust on the floor.

Zhang drew a long breath, calming down when he saw the name tag on the old man. He then slammed the sword back into its scabbard and walked closer to the older man.

[Alousous] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 1

HP: 1/50

Defense: 10

This man was the person that he was looking for! This NPC seemed so weak and a simple draft would easily blow him to his feet. Could Zhang Yang simply kill the man and take the key? Zhang Yang was seriously considering it in his thoughts. Technically, a majority of all the quests would not be so simply. If he killed the NPC, it would definitely not drop anything, instead, it might cause the quest to be stuck forever, since the key fragment would be forever lost!

That was what the game developers wanted the players to think. In truth, the NPC would simply die in a quick swing of the sword. After considering it for some time, Zhang Yang had decided to just act rationally. "Old man, what had happened here? Where are all the other people living here?"

Alousous held the walking stick closely and stood still. "They... they have all plunged into eternal sleep! Young man, this place is too dangerous! Please, leave this hellish abyss while you still can!"

Zhang Yang got down from his white bear and said, "Old man, could you please explain to me, why are the people in this town in eternal sleep?"

Obviously, he could not just walk away. How else would he obtained the key fragment?

"Sigh! Please do not think highly of yourself! There were many, many others like you! Young adventurers who thought they could take on the world! Many had come and many had refused to listen and chose to remain. In the end, they met the same fate as the citizens here. Never again to have a waking moment!" Alousous sighed heavily.

Zhang Yang could not help but ask. "If you could just explain, how did an old man like yourself escape and remained awake?"

"How, you ask? That's because I wasn't as greedy and gullible as the rest of them!" said Alousous while he shook his head. "Young man, do you intend to stay?"

"Yes!"

"Sigh!" Alousous sighed again. "This town used to be a beautiful and peaceful little town. People were happily working, happily living. Until 20 years ago, or 30 years...an evil witch came into town and offered a lie. The lie told the citizens that they could attain immortality by drinking the potion she had made!"

The old man shook his head. "One fateful night, 1.37 midnight. The entire town was frozen in time. Just like that clock over there. No living being in this town could move! No one would ever awaken from their dreams! They will never grow old! Neither will they awaken!"

"Did anyone defeat the witch?"

"She is a powerful witch, young man. Those who had drank on the potion will extend her own life span, killing her once will kill one of the citizens here!"

"Is there any other way to defeat her?"

Alousous dwelled in his thoughts for a moment before he answered. "There is a way. There is a Mirror of Truth that belonged to the queen, it could dispel all evil spells! That alone could defeat the witch! Young man, if you truly wish to help this town, please don't rush into things. Leave this place and head to Hera's Castle, and retrieve the Mirror of Truth to defeat the witch!"

‘Ding! Alousous has a quest for you: Retrieve the Mirror of Truth! Will you accept it?’

....There is but one problem with this quest. The Mirror of Truth had already been destroyed by him, a long time ago! Is this what they call shooting oneself in the leg? Zhang Yang laughed. He accepted the quest and bid the old man goodbye. "Old man, I shall try my best!"

The game would never make a quest impossible to be completed. That is why, even if the Mirror of Truth is destroyed, there had to be another way to eliminate the witch. Still, he must visit Hera's Castle. Zhang Yang then rode hurriedly towards Hera's Castle. Crossing rivers and over the mountains, Zhang Yang finally arrived at the ancient castle.

At the gates, Zhang Yang got down the bear and talked to one of the guards. "My name is Zhan Yu and I am here to speak with the Queen!"

"Kah Kah Kah! Do you think the Queen will talk to any sloppy adventurer who comes up to her castle?" one of the guards laughed.

"I came from the town of Lagguda. Something has happened to the town and I am here to seek the assistance of the Queen!" Zhang Yang explained. Since the quest had instructed him to talk to Shaenita in Hera's Castle, the word Lagguda should be an important keyword or pass phrase.

"Lagguda?" Bingo. One of the guards expressed his concern and quickly replied. "Wait here. I shall inform the Queen about this."

## Chapter 324: Underwear Thief

---

Without keeping him waiting, the guard came back and welcomed Zhang Yang into the castle. "Please follow me. The Queen will see you."

The guard led Zhang Yang all the way into the castle and into an exquisite library. There were two guards standing outside the library which were both Elite tier and their levels were three question marks, an indication that their levels were at least 20 levels higher than Zhang Yang.

"Your highness, the visitor from Lagguda has arrived," said the guard with the utmost respect.

"Let him in." The voice of Shaenita rang from within the library.

Zhang Yang walked in to the room and saw Shaenitta was sitting by the corner with a book in her hands. As expected of a queen, she was dressed in a black, fashionable dress which wrapped around her tightly that brought out the figure of her slim body. The cutting on her chest was so low and it squeezed her hooks out like a pair of water balloons! Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder how women actually breathed when their breasts were squeezed like that. Behind her were two handmaidens that also had their levels hidden.

When Zhang Yang finally approached her, Shaenita puts down the book in her hand and glanced up. Her eyes widened and was instantly burning with rage. "You!"



D\*mn! NPCs with AI had "memories" and were really a nuisance when they actually remember what you did to them! If it were any other normal NPC, it would not matter what a player did him! You could beat him, slam him, give him a cock screw punch, R.K.O the s.o.b, pinch his nipple, or anything else, and the NPC will completely forget all about it once you leave its aggro range. The NPC will run back to its original place and reset its memories.

Zhang Yang smiled awkwardly. "Your highness, I represent the citizens of Lagguda to beg for your help!"

"Hmph!" Shaenita scoffed. "You're not a citizen of my kingdom, who are you to represent the town of Lagguda?" It was plainly obvious that Shaenita was still angry at him.

"I'm but a adventurer. Fulfilling the wishes others in order to move forward. Now that I have given my word to the people in Lagguda, I stand by my plea to you. Please help us!" said Zhang Yang. It's best to have his slate cleaned before asking for anything else in return.

Shaenita looked at Zhang Yang and solemnly sighed. After a long pause, Shaenita finally spoke. "A few years back, many had asked me to investigate a case where people would disappear after entering the town of Lagguda. Since the number of missing people were but a small number, I had always pushed the thought to the back of my head. I had never thought that it was all the work of an evil witch!"

Now that Zhang Yang had drawn her attention, he had to strike the iron when it's hot! "Your highness, that witch was using some kind of time magic to obtain life force from the people who have consumed her potion. There is an easy to way to kill the witch, that is to use the Mirror of Truth!"

"You dare to mention about the mirror!" Shaenita shot up to her feet. "If it wasn't for your foolish act and gullible brains, the Mirror of Truth would still be intact! You dare to feign ignorance about this?!"

Zhang Yang bowed down horridly. "Your highness! When there is a will, there is a way! Everything that had been wronged, can always be right! Can the Mirror of Truth be fixed?"

Shaenita sighed and sat down. "The magic behind the Mirror of Truth is not the mirror itself, it is the magical tool's spirit! To fixed the Mirror of Truth, you must first revive the spirit that lives in the mirror!"

Jackpot. There's never a quest that could not be done!

Zhang Yang asked, "Your highness. How does one revive the tool's spirit?"

Shanita rested her chin on her silky, fair hands. While gazing to the horizon of the land from the window beside her, she said, "To revive the tool's spirit, it's not a big of a deal. All you need is a bottle of Ethereal Springwater. However, the only place to obtain the Ethereal Springwater is in the deepest parts of Siccory

Mountains within the Chaos Realms. It will be tough for you, since that place is crawling with huge and dangerous monsters!"

Chaos Realms? This is a bad joke. That place can only be access after Level 100! This is just a Level 70 quest! How could the quest require Zhang Yang to be at Level 100 to complete it!

Zhang Yang frowned. "Is there any other way to obtained the Ethereal Springwater?"

Shaenitta shook her head and stopped suddenly. "I recall that there was an adventurer named Gus who lived in the Tanjar Flatlands, the Town of Sivar. He had ventured into the Chaos Realms and obtained a bottle of Ethereal Springwater himself! Zhan Yu, if you can retrieve the Ethereal Springwater, and fix the Mirror of Truth, I will promise to lend you the mirror!"

What the hell!? This queen is being a b\*tch! The mirror was nothing but shattered into pieces of glass! The queen was taking advantage of Zhan Yu to basically fix the mirror for free! But from the way she phrased it, it seemed that Zhang Yang was the one who was gaining a huge favor from the queen! As expected from a manipulative politician!

‘Ding! Shanita has a quest for you: Fix the Mirror of Truth. Will you accept it?’

It’s not like he could simply ask for a better way around, does it?

Zhang Yang left the palace and rode the white bear towards the Tanjar Flatlands.

Tanjar Flatlands is a Level 70 map. Luckily, it was not far from Oz. It was just right beside the Black Moss Wilderness. Oz was to the left of Black Moss Wilderness, while the Tanjar Flatlands was to the right. Still, a Level 70 map was just too huge, that Zhang Yang had spent 5 hours just to travel from the far left to the end of the right.

Compared to the silent town of Lagguda, Sivar was much livelier. With many people walking around, filling the street, the town brimmed with liveliness. Along the street, Zhang Yang stopped once in a while to ask for the location of Gus the adventurer. Never had it cross his mind that Gus was rather infamous in this town. The thing was, it was not because of the tale of his adventures, it was the mischiefs that he had done in town.

"What? You want to talk to that old pervert? The guy that will fall to his feet and flip a beautiful girl's skirt to peek at her panties?! Is that the man that you're looking for?" This was said by an NPC in Sivar. However, it crossed his mind that that description would fit how Fatty Han would behave, 40 years in the future.

As he proceeded to the east of the town, Zhang Yang finally encountered the legendary adventurer who had ventured into the depths of Siccory Mountain and obtained the Ethereal Springwater, the brave and bold adventurer, who was currently crawling over a brick wall, trying to steal the neighbor's laundry, specifically undergarments that were worn by woman. However, even after he had successfully crawled over the wall, an older lady,

roughly by the age of 40, had come out of the house, and with a butcher knife in her hand, had started to chase after Gus.

Right then, Gus had not managed to steal any of her undergarments. Still, despite his age, his veteran status as an adventurer made itself clear as he started sprinting away. Behind, the old woman was puffing with steam, throwing a huge fit as she was slowly left behind.

Zhang Yang quickly hopped on his bear and chased after Gus as well. No matter how fast you may run, you can never outrun a four-legged beast.

After a good distant from the house, Gus stopped by the road side for a quick rest. Panting for his breath, he jumped when he saw the bear sniffing at him. Unconsciously, Gus covered the female fabric in his chest. "I'm warning you, young man! Don't be thinking of any funny business! It took me 3 days of scouting to get Marilyn's panties!"

Zhang Yang nearly fell off his bear. The 40 year old woman who was chasing him not two minutes ago was not what a normal man would want to have as a wife. Zhang Yang knew this because he had seen her clearly just now. To think that a man would have her panties, and do something...indecent...the man would need to have the heart of the bravest warrior!

Zhang Yang shook off the thought of what would Gus do that piece of undergarment and said, "Look, Gus, I just want to buy the Ethereal Springwater that you have."

Gus raised an eyebrow suspiciously. "I have you know that the Ethereal Springwater was obtained with such bravery. I nearly lost my own life venturing deep into the Chaos Realms to get that godly water. It's practically priceless! Young man, are you sure you want to buy it?"

Money? That word meant nothing to Zhang Yang now. He was not the kind of person who would use the money in some investment kind of trade. All the dollar bills that he owned was sitting in the bank's vault, collecting dust. If anyone wanted to compete in money spending, no miserly millionaire could even be a match for him!

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "State your price, old man!"

Gus looked at Zhang Yang while raising both eyebrows, one side at a time and was scratching his graying beard. He looked like the kind of man in the thrift shop trying to cut you a deal, but instead, he was just trying to get more money from you!

After tapping his foot a thousand times, Gus finally answered, while gritting his teeth, "100-"

100 gold coins? That's too low! But if it's 1,000,0001, that would be daylight robbery!

"—pieces of woman's panties!"

Zhang Yang actually fell from the white bear after hearing his demands.

"Nyehehehe! 100 female panties! You can't buy them from the store! I want them used! Not fresh! If it has to be fresh, it must be fresh from the laundry! And make no mistake, I better not be sniffing some men's boxers! You feel me?" said Gus, with a shameless expression, and a smug grin.

‘Ding! Gus has a quest for you: The Great Underwear Thief. Will you accept it?’

...Was there an option for him to reject the quest and beat this @\$% with a cast-iron frying pan instead?

[The Great Underwear Thief] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Search and give Gus 100 female panties! Pss! Don't forget, the best ones are the fresh ones! Don't be swiping the male underpants eh?

Progress: Panties collected 0/100

Quest Reward: Ethereal Springwater.

Zhang Yang sucked in a deep breath to prepare himself for the worst possible quest that he has ever done in his life. To become an

underwear thief was harder than he had expected.

Zhang Yang rode the bear and sighed all the way. He could not believe that the game developers would actually make a player commit such degenerate acts. Zhang Yang started peeking left and right for freshly dried underwear. He finally saw one at the far end of a street. He sighed heavily. He is the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke, the champion of the Soaring Sword League, China's number 1 tank! How did he end up doing something as retarded as stealing people's underwear! If word spread about this, there is no hole in the world for him to hide his face! He would literally lose all his fame in one night!

Behind the house, there were a few hanging laundries, one of them was a cute pink underwear that was surely was not worn by men! The backyard was only protected by a low fence. The bear leap over the fence effortlessly and proceed on to swipe his "prize". However, before Zhang Yang could reach out his hands, a low bark was heard from behind him. Zhang Yang quickly turned around only to find a large black hound waiting for him.

[Guard Dog, Black Star] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 75

HP: 150,000

Defense: 400



Note: The Guardian of the town! Rocky's Partner! Untamable!

"Woof!" the hound barked and leap towards Zhang Yang.

The white bear lifted its paws and forcefully pushed the black hound back to its place. Zhang Yang then started swing his Dark Enigmatic Sword to slice the hound. Even though he was never a person who would treat animals badly, but for the sake of this ridiculous quest, he had to kill the poor guardian.

Even though the hound was an elite tier, it was too weak to be a fair opponent to Zhang Yang. Within 40 seconds, the dog was beaten to its last drop of HP. However, before it could be killed, the hound whimpered ran away, its tail tucked between its legs. How fortunate, the system was protecting it.

Zhang Yang ignored the hound and picked the underwear and kept it in his inventory. With a "ding" ringing in his ears, the quest progress went up by 1.

A thousand-mile journey begins with the hardest step. Now that he had taken one, the rest should be a walk in the park.

Continue stealing!

Without delay, Zhang Yang had found another victim and leaped across the fence, towards the laundry.

"Woof!" The black hound appeared again, its health fully recovered. The hound charged heroically and was sent running again by Zhang Yang.

2/100!

The third piece! The hound appeared again! Same thing went with the 4th and the 5th!

The hound was persistent! Every time it was sent packing, it would always appear again from behind the fence and was ready to fight Zhang Yang until the last drop of its HP.

Zhang Yang could not help but recalled a joke he heard from Fatty Han.

It went like this: A hunter came up a mountain to hunt for bears. He failed and was beaten by a bear. The next day, the hunter came again and was sent home again by the bear. On the third day, when the bear saw the hunter coming up again, the bear asked, "Hey. Are you really here to hunt or to seek for some BDSM sh\*t from me?"

# Chapter 325: For The Sake Of Fixing The Magic Mirror

---

The black hound relentlessly made its return over again and again.

15/100!

...

43/100!

...

Since the town was...a town, the number of people who lived here were few. That means, the number of laundries were as little. Many of times, Zhang Yang would have to sit there and wait until the underwear re-spawned again. For as long as it seemed, Zhang Yang got really agitated as times goes by. Every time there was someone coming out of their house to dry their clothes, Zhang Yang would be the first to visit the house and wait for the golden chance to swipe the ladies' undergarment.

81/100!

...

99/100!

...

"Woof!" The black hound barked, "welcoming" Zhang Yang for the last time as Zhang Yang defeated the little critter to claim his final "prize". Once it's done, he rode frantically to Gus to dump all the "dirty" load.

"What a blessing!" said Gus as he buried his face in the pile of slightly damp laundry.

Zhang Yang felt the ultimate disgust. Turning away, he cried, "You done? The request is completed. Where's my reward?"

"Here!" said Gus as he tossed the Ethereal Springwater to him as if it was worthless. "Now scram! Don't interrupt me in my moment of bliss!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: The Great Underwear Thief. Obtained 15,000,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! You have obtained: Ethereal Springwater x1!'

15 million?! That's too much to be true! However, after thinking about it, Zhang Yang understood the reason behind it. As he had trudged along doing the quest, he had not obtained any drop of experience points! Perhaps defeating that black hound a hundred teams would have granted him that amount of experience points afterall!

Zhang Yang sighed. It may seem luxurious, but the system was just too stingy to not provide any bonus experience points. He quietly left the place with haste and go on his way. The moment he rode off a good distance, he saw a group of housewives coming out from their homes with kitchen knives in their hands. Everyone was pissed off. Just when he thought that he was about to be sliced and diced - Gordon Ramsey style -, the group of housewives headed for Gus!

"HEY!! PERVERT OLD MAN! SURRENDER OUR CLOTHES!"

"You sick old bastard! I'll beat you up good!"

"Gus! How could you even steal my granny's pants! Today, I'll make sure you regret your decision to ever steal from us!"

...

While the crowd of people surrounded the old man, only the one black hound gave chase to Zhang Yang, barking ferociously. Luckily, the group of housewives had their anger and frustration directed at Gus, they failed to noticed the black hound was barking at the real culprit!

Zhang Yang ignored the hound and made his way out of the town. After some time, the hound turned back around after leaving its original position. Zhang Yang left Sivar and took a long, cumbersome journey back to Hera's Castle.

"Noob tank! Wakey wakey! Time to make dinner for us!" Zhang Yang was only about to set foot into the castle when the annoying voice of Wei Yan Er came shouting. Zhang Yang logged out and realized it was already past 6pm. He then rushed down to make the "family" their dinner. He came down to the kitchen and got as busy as Hell's Kitchen would be during rush hour. However, unlike the contestants, Zhang Yang was much more agile and proficient in cooking and had made several dishes in a flash. Content with his work of art, Zhang Yang went to the girl's room and gave a hard and loud knock to notify them dinner was ready. He then hurriedly rushed to the toilet. Back when he was preparing dinner, he was already being called upon by nature, but since preparing a meal required constant observation, he could not just leave the stove on. Only after all the food was served, only did he permit himself to answer the call.

Turning and spinning around the house, he rushed into the toilet and relived himself. It was then he realized one fatal error of his decision. The toilet that he was in, was meant for Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue! When nature calls, you could not just put it on hold. Grah! So be it! Since it would only take a few seconds, at most a minute, if something is to happen during that duration, it's the worse of luck.

After emptying his bladder, Zhang Yang cleaned his hands zipped his pants up and was ready to pull the door when he noticed a pair of black colored fabric. It was a T-back undergarment. Such a design could only mean that it belonged to Han Ying Xue the B\*tchy Snow!

Honest to god, and everything that He had created. Zhang Yang

could swear at he had no fetish for a women's undergarment. However, since he had been the Great Underwear Thief for such a long time in the game, his hands had automatically, and involuntarily moved to grab that piece of laced clothe and place it in his pockets. It was how he usually store items in his in-game inventory.

Flop!

The toilet door opened and it was Han Ying Xue.

The two of them made eye contact for a moment and both of them turn to the dangling piece of cloth that had protruding out from Zhang Yang pocket. Silence filled the small toilet. After 7 to 8 seconds later, Han Ying Xue took a step back. Knowing that things had gone wrong at the maximum level, Zhang Yang frantically took out the panties and tossed it back to where it was.

"Wait! Let's me explain! It's an accident!"

Instead of the typically, expected response, Han Ying Xue seemed to understand him. Not in the way he wanted, however. "Well, it's understandable since you're living with two world class beauty and had not burst out like a raging beast. You did hold yourself back for a long time. This is nothing. Worry not. I'm completely fine with it."

What?!

Zhang Yang pulled the woman into the toilet and shut the door behind him. "You need to listen to my explanation before jumping to any messed-up conclusion!"

"Hey! Like I said! I understand what's happening!" said Han Ying Xue while nodding understandably. The problem was her expression was different from her usual outbursts. If this incident got out unresolved, that little brat would be the first to know. After that, the little trumpet will surely spread the word to Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream and the others! Like falling dominoes, it would only get worse and worse...

Zhang Yang pressed his entire body to block the door and said, "Please listen! I really took it by reflex!"

"Like I said! I understand and believe you! Now, can you please let me out?!"

"Y-You! You're not sincere!"

Han Ying Xue crossed her arms and her eyes turned soft suddenly. She took a step forward, drawing the distant closer and kissed Zhang Yang on the lips. "How about now?" said Han Ying Xue.

What was that? Was he just harassed by a lady pervert!?

Stunned, Zhang Yang was as stiff as a strawman. After a good second, "Y-You...W-Wha...Why?"



Han Ying Xue cocked her head playfully and flicked her index finger against Zhang Yang's forehead. "Sigh...Dummy. You're really a big dum-dum!" Han Ying Xue winked. "If I had no feelings towards you, why would I allow a man like yourself to stay with me? Do you think I'd let any wolf enter my house of lambs?"

Han Ying Xue stared into Zhang Yang eye's with a face that says: All men sure are dumb!.

Zhang Yang stuttered. "Y-You like me?"

"What are you stuttering about? Did that really shock you that much?" said Han Ying Xue as she leaned against the wall, emitting a lustful, sleazy aura.

"But...why?"

"What do you mean why?" She giggled. "You may not be as handsome as what I want from a man. However, you do have the qualities of what a man should be. You're a fighter. You're dependable. Brave, strong, buffed, and other qualities that satisfies my taste!"

"...Well...that's pretty straight forward."

"Sigh. What a tragic event. I had never thought that my confession would happen in a toilet. This is so not romantic! It's a total lady-bone killer!"

Zhang Yang was so confused that he was sure that his brain was all gooey and soupy inside. His heart beat was so fast and he was already not thinking straight. Han Ying Xue's confession was just too sudden! While looking into her dreamy eyes, he heard Han Ying Xue calling out to him.

"Is your head spinning?" Sighing heavily, Han Ying Xue pulled Zhang Yang large palm and pressed it against her left breast. "Can you feel my heart beat? If my words could not get through to you, perhaps the beat of my heart could!"

Waves and waves of confusion had successfully sent a surge of blood rushing to his face, making it flustering with red. Underneath her clothes, Zhang Yang could not feel nothing else but his own heart pulsing faster than a steam train! Unconsciously, Zhang Yang's palm had started curling its fingers around.

Han Ying Xue moaned, and her faced twisted with a surge of pleasure. With her cheeks dyed pink, she playfully pinched Zhang Yang's arms and said, "I said to feel my heart, not make yourself comfortable!"

What an impossible demand!

Han Ying Xue slowly removed Zhang Yang's hand and said, "Is it all that hard to believe?"

Nodding obediently, Zhang Yang could not help but to think that this was just a bad prank.

Han Ying Xue lunged herself and locked her hands together around Zhang Yang's neck. "Kiss me!"

How could he!? This minx is a world-class calamity! If he were to fall into her deceit, it would be the end of the chapter for him! Still, her sensual eyebrows were like magic working their way to hypnotize Zhang Yang. Her rose-colored lips were like the burning flames that could attract poor insects to burn themselves. In that moment, Zhang Yang knew that he had f\*cked up. His resistance towards this woman is practically 0!

Or perhaps, he already had feelings towards her a long time ago and had not realized it till now...

Zhang Yang lowered his head and pressed his lips against hers. Time stopped for the both of them. Both of their hearts were pulsating so strong that they could feel each other heartbeat. After an eternity, they separated their lips, a line fluid stretching between the both of them.

Be it bashful, happy, angry, or excited, Han Ying Xue's expression was gold. Giggling, she said, "Dummy, now that you had touched me, you had kissed me, you're now my man!"

"Actually, I had been meaning to ask you...Just how old are you?"

"Hmm...that is a good question. I'll answer that question when you're the grandfather of my grandchildren 50 years later!" said Han Ying Xue with a wink.

" ... "

"Now, begone! Yan Er will be out soon and if she sees us together like this, it would be a whole other mess to deal with," said Han Ying Xue. She then pushed Zhang Yang away and out of the door.

Still confused over what had just happened, Zhang Yang did not know how he found his way back at the dining table. Completely dumbfounded, the thought that Han Ying Xue had just confessed to him, and kissed him, was all simply too surreal!

Wei Yan Er was just too thick headed to realize what had just happened. She took no notice of extremely odd behavior of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue on the dining table. Minding her own business, she walloped the food on the table and once she was done, she tossed the chopsticks on the table, said "Thanks for the meal!", and disappeared into her room. They had a rule, or rather a competition, that whoever was the last person eating should be the one cleaning everything up.

Still confused, Zhang Yang decided to put it all behind his head and logged into the game to finish the quest.

"Your highness. Zhan Yu has arrived and had completely the mission!" said Zhang Yang as he took out the Ethereal Springwater and offered it to Shaenita.

One of the handmaiden walked and retrieved the bottle for Shaenita.

Shaenita took the bottle and opened it immediately. With a wave of her wand, a puff of black smoke came floating out of the bottle and formed into various of shapes in the air.

"Wonderful! This is, indeed, Ethereal Springwater!" Delighted, she summoned another handmaiden and said, "Fetch me the pieces of the Mirror of Truth!"

"Yes, your highness!"

It took them a while, but the hand maidens had come back with a large box. The box was then placed onto the large desk. Shanita took the bottle of Ethereal Springwater and emptied it into the box. She then start waving her wand whist chanting an incomprehensible spell.

Bang! Bang! Boom!

Like fireworks, the box started to glow with various colors, emitting popping noises here and there. This lasted for at least 3 to 4 minutes until Shaenita stopped her chanting. A bright white light burst out from the box and formed into a face of a man. With a loud groan, "uuuUUUAAA! I'm back! I'm finally back!"

Pieces of the shattered mirror pieces started to float up into the air. The broken pieces then glued themselves together and formed a large mirror.

Zoom!

A bright light flashed all the way from the bottom of the mirror to the top and all of the cracks and gaps in the mirror were repaired instantly.

Thud!

The mirror dropped back down and landed on the desk unscathed. A cloud formed from within the mirror and formed the face of a man. "Ah! My beloved lady, is there anything you want to ask of me today?"

# Chapter 326: Saving Lagguda

---

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Fixing the Magic Mirror. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!’

Shaenita raised her gaze to Zhang Yang and praised him. "You have done your part, adventurer. It is my turn to fulfill my end of the bargain. I will lend you the Mirror of Truth, however, you must return it back to me within 10 days!"

The man in the mirror turned around to observe the person who was about to receive his aid and was shocked to see the same person who was responsible for his demise! "Oh! My beloved queen! T-T-That man! Please don't let him take me! He was the reason! He was the person! He was the one responsible for my death!"

Zhang Yang picked up the mirror and grinned evilly while meeting the mirror's gaze directly. "If I were you, I'd be grateful to have been revived in the first place, instead of basking in your narcissism. Or, should I find another stone to wreck your body once more?"

The man in the mirror fill silent when he saw that even Shaenita, his owner, had remained quiet and ignorant to his plea.

‘Ding! You have obtained the item: Mirror of Truth!’

‘Ding! You are now affected with the {Item Return} effect. Lasts for 10 days. All attributes will be permanently reduced by 100%

upon failure to return the Mirror of Truth after the stipulated duration.'

Zhang Yang skipped past the warnings and checked the mirror's properties whilst leaving the palace.

[Mirror of Truth] (Quest Item)

Use: Dispels all Black Magic within the vicinity.

"Hey listen up! I'm not just some random Celestial item that can be found all around the world, so you best consider yourself fortunate enough to even talk to me! That being said, I expect you to handle me with extreme care! Furthermore, I demand that you serve me my favorite Energy Crystals! They had better be the best of quality or else—HEY! WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU—Watch your hands! Where are you touching!"

Annoyed, Zhang Yang kept the blabbering mirror into his inventory and it was immediately silenced.

"Sigh...what a long day..." Zhang Yang stretched himself out and summoned the white bear to ride towards Lagguda. Again, once he stepped foot inside the border of the small desolated town, the atmosphere grew heavy and the air was shrouded with a complete utter silence. There he was, one moment pleased to be greeted with silence from the absence of the mirror. Then the next moment, here he was, desperately wanting to be rid of the town's eerie



silence. He came to the center of the town and met the old man in the plaza. "Old man, I have brought the Mirror of Truth!" He then proceeded to take the mirror out of his inventory.

"Ahhack! D\*mn you! What else did you stuff inside!? I'm all sore here and there! Listen, you! I am the greatest of all Celestial items! I do not deserve treatment like this! I'm warning you! Never again..." The man in the Mirror of Truth continued on rambling as he plucked out feathers from all over him.

Delighted and surprise at the discovery, Alousous continued observed the mirror. "How and why would the queen lend the magical tool of the nation to a man such as yourself? This is fabulous! Fantastic! Bless the queen! May her reign last forever and ever more!"

...His thanks should be targeted towards Zhang Yang instead, since he had just spent an entire day just to steal some panties.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Retrieve the Mirror of Truth. Obtained 2,000,000 Experience Points!’

Alousous gazed up and down, looking at Zhang Yang and the Mirror in turn. "Young man, your feats have raised my hopes. Now, I truly believe that you could defeat the evil witch and rescue our town! Let's not waste time, please take the mirror with you and head west. The witch is living in a small, rundown garden!’

‘Ding! Alousous has a quest for you: Save Lagguda. Will you accept it?’

...

[Save Lagguda] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: You have obtained the one weapon to defeat the evil witch. Please take the mirror with you and slay the evil witch! The entire town of Lagguda awaits your victorious return!

Progress: Kill the Evil Witch Daphne 0/1

Zhang Yang took off alone. The lair of Daphne was pretty close to Lagguda. After traveling merely 3km away, Zhang Yang came to a small farm. There were weird flora that flourished around the garden and have been tended to carefully. In the middle of the garden were a few small shacks and one of them had smoke coming out from the chimney on top.

Just before he was about to barge into the shack, he noticed there were blinks in the mini-map that notified Zhang Yang about the location of herbs. Zhang Yang zoomed in and was shocked to see there were extremely rare herbs that were growing in the garden! Almost of them were rare and awfully scarce.

Two factors limit the production of herbs. A low number of spawn points, and an extreme lengthy spawning duration. These herbs that were growing in the garden were known for both

factors! Even though they were only Level 70 herbs, they were extremely rare and valuable! Without hesitation, Zhang Yang leapt down from the bear and started to harvest the herbs.

"Insolent fool! How dare you steal my precious herbs! Begone!" A loud and coarse sound of an old woman roared from behind him. Zhang Yang turned around only to be greeted by an old hag that looked like she was already at the age of 60. Her skin was wrinkled and she was as skinny as a stick. Dressed in a black magician cloak, the old hag took out a foot-long wand and point it at Zhang Yang. Instantly, a black ray blasted out and struck Zhang Yang.

‘-4,574!’

[Daphne the Witch] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 75

HP: 750,000

MP: 400,000

Defense: 400

Zhang Yang jumped back onto the bear and charged towards the boss. She was merely a Gray-Silver tier. There was absolutely nothing to fear about the battle. Since there were walls and

obstacle laying around, Zhang Yang could easily block the boss' line of sight to disrupt her spellcasting!

Just as he got within range, Zhang Yang pulled out the mirror from his inventory and yelled. "It's your turn to shine now, magic tool!"

"CALL ME THE GREAT MAGIC MIRROR!" Even though the man in the mirror protested, he carried out his task. Like oil and water, the mirror had automatically activated its power in the presence of Black Magic, just like how an anti-virus program automatically activates when a virus was present in the computing system.

SHIING!

A bright light blasted out from the mirror and illuminated everything that the mirror was facing, including Daphne.

"KYAA!"

Clumps of black clouds oozed out of Daphne shrieked in horror. Her reaction was rather amusing, similar to how a vampire reacts upon being exposed to sunlight.

"No....NO! It cannot be! Why...? Where did my life source go!? What has happened to my immortality!? What have you done to me? WHAT HAVE YOU DONE TO ME?!"

While being accused by the distraught old hag, Zhang Yang felt

extremely awkward. He was indirectly innocent since it was the mirror that had snatched away her black magic. He then started swinging his sword and taunted the witch. "Time for you to die!"

"Grr! It doesn't matter if I've lost my Vitality Puppets! I can always find more!" Without delay, Daphne started chanting her attack. Before the man in the mirror could voice his complaints again, Zhang Yang swiftly stuffed him back into his inventory and equipped himself with the shield.

"Hehehe! Feel the honor as being the first replacement of my Vitality Puppets!" cried Daphne, giving out a typical witch's cackle. Pew! A {Shadow Arrow} blasted and damaged Zhang Yang for 4,500 HP.

Zhang Yang planted five layers of {Cripple Defense} and shot back. "Old witch, you're not my type! Give it up!"

"Insolent fool! Weep for your own dark future! You shall be plunged into eternal sleep!"

The boss' {Shadow Arrow} casting rate was rather fast, at 2 seconds per shot, pushing her DPS up to 2,200! Guardians never had any solid form of defense against magic. They could not use {Block} either. Without the shield, the Defense value would not apply, thus forcing Zhang Yang to receive the highest damage possible.

With the immense damage received, his Rage gauge was constantly filled. Zhang Yang would not need to worry about the

cost of the skills, as he could blatantly cast all his skills at will.

Even though Daphne might be a Gray-Silver tier, her natural anti-tank magic attack had managed to damage Zhang Yang down to his last drop of HP in just half a minute, despite having attack no better than the physical attack of a Yellow-Gold tier boss. Relying on his set-equipment set-effect, and a bottle of [Level 4 Healing Potion], Zhang Yang had managed to keep his HP up to a certain degree. He then commanded the bear to move across the field, behind a wall to disrupt the witch's line of sight.

This would possibly reduce the total damage output, but at the same time, could reduce the damage received. As long as he could survive each clash for more than 2 minutes, he could easily win the battle with the 2 minute cool down of {Berserker's Heal}.

As easy as it seemed, the boss was still a boss. To defeat her that easily would put a shame to all Gray-Silver tiered bosses in the world.

As the battle continued on for another 4 minutes, Zhang Yang had managed to decrease the boss HP down to 130,000. He decided to activate the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}.

FOOM!

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

With each slice, the boss would take a clean amount of 10,000 damage. After the skill’s 10th consecutive strike ended, the boss had received a total of 100,000 damage!

Full Rage (points) {Killing Cleave}!

‘-8,940!’

Zhang Yang then consumed a [Transmute (5) Enrage Potion] to raise his Rage to 100 points and also gained an additional buff that increased 50% of his attack power!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

{Destructive Smash}!

{Force Strike}!

With a chain of attacks landing on the boss, coupled with the bear’s own claw strikes, the boss’s 130,00 HP swiftly plummeted

down to the last bit.

"OOOUUUAHHH!" The old hag wailed and fell defeated.

Nodding contentedly, Zhang Yang felt that the skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} was truly OP beyond words. It would be especially indispensable during the race to win the First Clear Achievement of a Hardcore Mode dungeon! When a sudden jolt of power is required to kill the boss, all 9 of the members who had the skill could activate them at the same time and instantly deal a massive amount of 900,000 damage! What could match up to that!?

Zhang Yang smiled knowingly as he fantasized using it in dungeons. He then went on to pick up his battle loots. Naturally, all the Gray-Silver tier equipment were junk to him. Only one item drew his attention, it was an Assembled Equipment part.

[Fireglass    Necklace    Fragment]    (Gray-Silver,    Necklace  
Fragment)

Use: Combine five fragments of the Fireglass Necklace to form  
a complete Fireglass Necklace.

Level Requirement: 70

Since the fragments did not have any specific numbers to them,



he could farm the same piece over and over again until he could assemble the item.

Zhang Yang tossed the fragment into his inventory. Just one of the five pieces would not be worth anything. When five fragments are gathered, they would worth a whole lot more. For example, each fragment could cost around 10,000 gold coins, but the cost of the completed equipment would be worth roughly 70,000 to 80,000 gold coins. If the item had any specific effects, it would fetch an even higher price, naturally.

Since drop rates were so unpredictable, one could gain four pieces successfully, without a hitch and be stuck forever, trying to gain the final piece. Furthermore, before the product is actually forged, no one could really judge the equipment's properties to deem it worth the trouble of farming in the first place!

Setting that aside, Zhang Yang went on to collect all the precious herbs that had spawned in the garden. All of them could be used to concoct [Invincibility Potions]! These potions will grant their users the ability of being literally invincible, to be immune to all attacks! It was one of the game's strongest potion! Just like [Mobility Potions], [Invincibility Potions] are categorized into three different ranks. Beginner, Intermediate, and Advance, each respectively having 3 seconds, 5 seconds, and 10 seconds of effective duration.

Logically, being one of the strongest potion in the game, it also had one of the longest cool down time, which was 30 minutes. That meant that, there was absolutely no way that a player could use the potion in the PvP arena.

After digging up all the herbs and grass, Zhang Yang hopped on his mount and rode back to Lagguda happily.

Back at the town's entrance, the clock's hands were no longer frozen. The time had changed to 1:58! The witch's spell was lifted! The curse was gone! Instead of the gloomy, dark, spooky town, light had been reintroduced into the streets!

One by one, windows and doors were open as many people were sticking their heads out to finally see the world again, after being frozen in time. Happiness filled the streets as Alousous greeted each and every one that he saw. With a jubilant smile, the old man greeted Zhang Yang. "Warrior! You have done this town a great favor! You have rescued everyone in Lagguda! You're our hero! The savior!"

Slowly, the citizen walked out of their home. Puzzled and confused of what has happened to them, they started asking one another questions.

Zhang Yang nodded and hopped down from the bear and patted the old man's shoulder. "I'm but an adventurer. The honor is mine!"

"Young warrior! You're brave and wise! I shall ensure the land will always praise your name in songs and poems for decades to come!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Save Lagguda. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!’

Alousous took out a piece of shiny metal from his pocket and gave it to Zhang Yang. "This old man has nothing to give you except this. It was an heirloom from my ancestors! It is said to be a treasure or some sorts, but I have no knowledge of it. Please take it. Instead of keeping it, I feel that it may be of some use to you!"

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 3!’

[Dimensional Key Fragment 3] (Question Item, Unique)

Description: Gather all seven fragments of the Dimensional Key to form a complete Dimensional Key that opens the dimension gate to the royal palace of the Imperial Heaven's Empire. In the situation where players that possesses the key fragment is in the same map as you, a system location notification of their position will be announced. If you are killed by a player possessing the key fragment, the key fragment in your inventory will have a 100% chance of being dropped upon death. The item will never appear elsewhere again.

Unique item! That meant that the same item will never appear elsewhere in the whole of China!

Dammit! After running all day long, running errands here and there, he had only manage to obtained one of the seven key fragments!

Sighing, Zhang Yang felt that it was rather unfair. He bade Alousous farewell and hurried back to Hera's Castle to return the Mirror of Truth back to Shaenita. Once the mirror was back into Shaenita's hands, like a spoiled child, the man in the mirror started to rumble about how Zhang Yang had been "mistreating" him.

The second, reachable descendant of the several generals is located in the Crimson Flame Hills. The NPC carrying the key fragment is called Tiffany..

Just as Zhang Yang was racing towards the destination, he was disturbed by a voice message from Wei Yan Er. "Hey! Noobie tank! Time for supper!"

"...Didn't you had enough for dinner? How are you able to eat so much at night?"

"What are you talking about? I'm a growing child! Of course I need more than that!"

"Glutton!"

Zhang Yang logged off and went to the kitchen to make the girls supper. Even though he was scolding the little girl about eating too much, he was, in fact, getting a little hungry himself.

In just a few minutes, the man had stepped out of the kitchen

with light snacks and a couple of hot drinks. He knocked on the door and the three of them sat down together, enjoying their late night supper.

While munching on the piece of bread, Wei Yan Er was busy scrolling her phone and spoke. "There's this guy in the news who had died while playing 'God's Miracle'! Woah. His house had caught fire and he had not realized it until it was already too late. He was actually burnt alive! And then there's this some university professor, a professor Tao, stating something about how the psyche of the human mind might be affected by too much VR diving! He had even urged the government to ban the game!" cried Wei Yan Er, her voice muffled by the piece of bread still in her mouth.

# Chapter 327: Batmans Of The Ghastly Mountains

---

When a user plays the game, the body will be place into a sleep-like state. The gaming helmet did more than just connect the user to the game. A weak electrical current flowed through the body to maintain a certain level of connectivity between the user and the helmet. This allowed the helmet to monitor the user's body health status. This function was thoroughly checked by the health department.

The function to allow player to continue playing the game consciously even in sleep was a newly added feature. Since the developers who had introduced the function did not apply any additional update to the helmet had led everyone to believed that the function had already existed in the helmet and was only waiting to be released. Just like a game update. It will only be open to the public, one update at a time and would only gather a number of response for a brief period of time before dying down.

The time adjustment (1 hour in real time is 3 hours in-game time) garnered exceptional response, as it was able to indirectly prolong a human's lifespan! Even without the advanced time adjustment in the game, the ability to play while sleeping was already impressive enough. So far, the number of active players had been expanding continuously, from 200,000,000 to 300,000,000 players in a year. While the whole world enjoyed the game, some groups had publicly expressed that 'God's Miracle' was a disaster and should be stopped. Judging from the reaction of those said critiques, unless they were only seeking momentarily attention by being a clown of the year, there was no other reason for them to do so!

Zhang Yang grinned, "Why is there suddenly a professor Tao?"

Wei Yan Er blink a little, "After some research, this Tao professor had a father. His father was once an infamous man named Professor Tao Hong Hong, and now everybody calling his son the Second coming of Tao."

Professor Tao was a professor, that meant that he had his own battles to fight in his field, which was almost similar how players fought each other bravely. Zhang Yang sighed, "Some people just love to cry wolf. When there is nothing happening, they would try to stir up something. All in all, it go back goes back one main objective, money."

Wei Yan Er griggled, "Be careful what you say. Professor Tao is a good friend with Researcher Yang. You best be careful, or else you will be caught and be strapped down to the electric chair!"

After supper, Wei Yan Er was the first one to flee back to her room, leaving Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue alone in the kitchen to do the cleaning-up. In truth, there was no reason for them to do so. There was a dish-washer in the kitchen which could wash everything with just a push of a button.

"Dummy. Just so you know, even though I had confessed my feelings to you, I'll have you know that I am not a loose girl. I won't be randomly confessing my feelings to any guy that I like. Oh and, I'm warning you. Don't let me catch you crawling into my room late at night!" said Han Ying Xue with a straight face.

Make up your mind woman! Was that a threat or a seduction!? Zhang Yang was a good man. He would have never had the thought of doing something as lame as sneaking into a woman's room while she slept. However, now that she had said it sternly, that idea was already planted in his mind. It was just like a person telling you not to think about elephants, but you would inadvertently start thinking about elephants.

"Please. I would never go to you. In fact, you're welcome to come into mine. I never lock my doors when I sleep!" Zhang Yang counterattacked, leaving Han Ying Xue to turn away with her cheeks blushing in pink.

"Hmm! Rascal!"

After cleaning up, Zhang Yang went back to his room with only the thought of finishing the quest to find all seven key fragments. He rode his way through the Crimson Fire Hills and into the small village called the Alfalfa Village to search for Tiffany. The village was rather historical. Outside, there were a few stone-carved statues of people, giving off an ancient, antiquated impression.

From afar, it would not take anyone a pair of binoculars to see Zhang Yang riding his white bear. Noticing his approach, a group of little kids had come up to him carrying sticks and wooden poles. Everyone surrounded Zhang Yang and glared at him as if they were adults, trying to intimidate Zhang Yang with their numbers.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and stopped. "Where are all the adults here?"



The kids exchange a look with one another and remained quiet. The silence lingered until an older teenager who looked like he was at the age of 13 to 14 walked out. He crossed his arms and glared at Zhang Yang like an old man. "What business do you have here, stranger?"

Zhang Yang smiled. "I'm Tiffany's relative. I'm here to pay her a visit!"

"Sister Tiffany!"

"He's sister Tiffany relative!"

Once they heard the name 'Tiffany', they lowered their guards almost immediately and surrounded Zhang Yang. Chitter chatter started to fill every small corner of the village. The little children were bombarding him with questions that any adult could expect, such as how did he catch the bear, or what does the outside world looked like. The worst one of all was a young boy, with snot leaking out of his nostril, asking Zhang Yang to pass his marriage proposal to Tiffany. It seemed that Tiffany was really popular in the village.

Annoyed, Zhang Yang had waited patiently for something to happen, a trigger event of the questline, perhaps, before he snapped eventually. "Tony!" he cried. Tony was the eldest teenager in the crowd. "Where is Tiffany?"

Tony snorted. "Sister Tiffany had led a few men to fight the

batmen."

"Bat...men?" Zhang Yang asked.

"50 kilometers east of the village, lies the Ghastly Mountain. There were flying monsters that looked like bats. They consume blood to survive. So, in order to prevent an attack to the village, we will always send a number of livestock as tribute for them to feed on. However, 2 years ago, their numbers multiplied. Eventually, our livestock was insufficient to satiate them. It was then, when the monsters started demanding for human sacrifice!"

Tony slumped. "People were afraid. None of us were willing to do anything. Eventually, the elders of the village had to sacrifice themselves in order to save the village. My grand-daddy and grand-mummy gave themselves up! However, the batmen were greedy creatures! They wanted more. Eventually, all of the elders of the village had given up their lives. After that, they had come to us and demanded the young ones! At this point, the villager had realized that there was no way to escape this. It was either to kill, or be killed. Sister Tiffany had stood up among the crowd and encouraged us to defy the batmen. Because of her, the adults in the village had rallied and were willing to fight. Under the command of sister Tiffany, she managed to lead the adults to victory and push the batmen back!"

Zhang Yang nodded. "She was always a brave young girl."

Tony came close. "Big brother, I see that you're carrying weapons and armor. Are you perhaps a warrior? You can help us to check on sister Tiffany and the other adults!"

‘Ding! Tony has a quest for you: Retrieve News. Will you accept it?’

[Retrieve News] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: Tony of Alfalfa has requested for you to search for Tiffany and the other adults. Find them and see to their condition. Tiffany and the others should be fighting the batmen up at the Ghastly Mountain.

Progress: Search for Tiffany and the adults from Alfalfa Village 0/1

Zhang Yang bade the young children goodbye and pulled the reins of the bear. With a loud roar, the bear dashed off and headed east. The next thing he saw simply looked magical. A few kilometers away from the village, he saw a huge mountain peak, that was actually floating a thousand kilometers up among the clouds! Beneath the floating peak was a flattened mountain. The entire scenery looked like some godly figure had used some godly sword skill to slice the mountain in half and had somehow, left the mountain on top of the clouds! No wonder it was called Ghastly Mountain! It actually looked like it would fall down at any moment! If you were standing at the top of the flat mountain, anyone could feel the tremendous pressure, fearing that the clouds might disappear anytime, sending the gigaton mass of earth to fall down like the an Armageddon-bringing meteor! It that were to happen, it would definitely be much more than {Block} could take.

The flattened part of the mountain was rather small and short. Measuring at almost at 300 meters tall, Zhang Yang took no time at all to reach the top. Since the massive peak was hovering on top of him, its shadow loomed over the area, turning the place as dark as the evening.

On the route to the top, Zhang Yang had noticed many corpses. A few were normal human beings, yet many more were belonged to an odd race that had wings protruding out from their back. Based on the sheer number of them, the death toll of the odd race was far greater than the humans.

Zhang Yang was skeptical. The villagers from Alfalfa were nothing more than normal villagers. How could they possess the battle power to pull this feat? The village was so small, yet the battle here had somewhat made it look like it was an intercontinental war between humans and the monsters! How many villagers exactly, were participating in this battle? From the looks of it, no matter how many monsters there were, the humans were winning by a landslide. Either the monsters were too weak... or Tiffany was too strong, for the sake of the story...

Just as Zhang Yang stood there deep in thought, a few men and women came back down the mountain, running amok. Some of them had weapons in their hands, while the others were sprinting empty handed. At first, Zhang Yang thought that the reason behind their haphazard steps were because they were going down a slope, after all. But upon a closer look, he understood the reason behind the chaos. There were hundreds of flying monsters following behind them closely.

[Alfalfa Villagers] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 70

HP: 7,000

Defense: 70

"ARCK!" With a scream, one of the woman was captured by the flying monster. With a flash, Zhang Yang pulled the reins and rode as swiftly as he could. Within range, Zhang Yang immediately cast {Spear of Obliteration}.

‘-2,189!’

The attack landed on the monster. Provoked, the monster dropped the women and immediately shot down towards him. The woman landed unscathed, since the monster had not gained much height off the ground.

[Ghastly Mountain Batman] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 75

HP: 7,500

Defense: 70

The monster glided down from the sky and divebombed Zhang Yang. However, a mere normal tier monster could not cause Zhang Yang any damage whatsoever. The attack has merely knocked some dirt off Zhang Yang's armor. Zhang Yang countered the batman and sliced him with a quick sword stroke. After dealing 2,000+ damage, Zhang Yang activated {Blood Rage} and gained 50 Rage. With a quick smash to the ground, Zhang Yang used {Destructive Smash} and killed the monster. With his monstrous strength, he could easily wipe out the entire swamp like a wasp's nest.

Every flying monster stopped their pursuit of the villagers and changed their target to Zhang Yang. He took out and consumed a bottle of [Transmuted (6) Enrage Potion] and gained 100 Rage.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

SWOOSH!

Those that were too close to Zhang Yang received a clean hit, damaging them with more than 6,500 damage. PAK PAK PAK! The Dark Enigmatic Sword effect was triggered on and on, dealing a massive amount of damage that instantly killed more than 20 airborne batmen. The bottle of [Transmuted (6) Enrage Potion] had increased Zhang Yang attack power by 1.6x, making him

practically a God of War at his level!

Undaunted, the monsters continued swarming Zhang Yang. Still, their attacks were so weak that even if he got surrounded by a thousand, or a million of them, it made no difference. With the sheer number of monsters, it was easier for Zhang Yang to kill all of them since the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect could be triggered almost endlessly. {Blast Wave}, {Horizontal Sweep} were used repeatedly. In just 4 to 5 minutes, Zhang Yang was completely surrounded by the dead corpses of the batmen. Not a single monster was left alive!

Every Alfalfa Villagers present on the scene could only stare in awe and disbelief. It was almost impossible for Zhang Yang alone to kill all of the monster singlehandedly!

"I'm Tiffany's relative!" said Zhang Yang as he went ahead to pick up the drops on the ground. It was not the coins nor the ETC items that he wanted, but the [Silk]. They were rather useful, not for selling in the market, but for making [Bandages] for healing.

Instead of being in awe, they villagers nodded their head as if they had expected the result, thinking that Zhang Yang was somehow related to Tiffany. It seemed to explain his admirable performance.

"Where's Tiffany?" Zhang Yang asked. He glanced around and found out that none of them had their own specialized name tags. In fact, every one of them shared the same [Alfalfa Villager] name! Zhang Yang could make out who was who at that point. However, he could easily guessed that Tiffany was not among them. Special

quest NPCs would almost definitely have their own names!

"She was taken by the batmen!" said a villager.

Sigh! Somehow, Zhang Yang knew that the quest to obtain the second key fragment would never be that simple.



# Chapter 328: Giant Cyclops Phango

---

"What happened?" Zhang Yang asked frantically.

"When we were led to destroy the batmen under Tiffany's command, we had successfully pushed them back to their lair! However, when we thought that victory was already in hand, there came down thousands of monster's reinforcements! Among the monsters, one of them was exceptionally strong and even defeated Tiffany. Unfortunately, she was nabbed and taken to Ghastly Mountain!" explained one of the villagers.

"Warrior! You look tough. Could you please rescue Tiffany on our behalf?" asked another.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Retrieve News. Obtained 100,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! The Alfalfa Villagers have a quest for you: Rescue Tiffany. Will you accept it?'

Hmph! Zhang Yang would accept any rescue mission in a heartbeat, compared to any other ridiculous quests, like the stealing panties!

That being said, how does one "walk" to that floating mountain? It's not like he could fly in the first place. He could, if he was Level 100 and had captured a flying mount. But, what could he do now?

He frowned. Perhaps there was something else that could assist the quest by asking the villager. "Tiffany is my relative. I would have done it even without you telling me. However, I have one complication. The Ghastly mountain is floating up in the sky. How do I get up there?"

Everyone exchanged a distress look, as if they had no clue either. After a few moments, someone cried out. "I got it!"

"Hm?"

"I had heard this from the elders of the village. They said that there is a teleportation point at the bottom of the hill! It could directly teleport a person to the top of the mountain." The villager walked out of the crowd and spoke.

"Where is the Teleportation point again?"

"At the other side of the mountain. However, I also heard that there is a terrible and dangerous Giant Cyclops living there that will kill anyone living near there!" he added.

Monsters were meant to be killed. If he could not do it alone, he'll just bring a party. There was nothing to be concerned about. Zhang Yang laughed. "Please head back to the village. I'll think of a way to rescue Tiffany!"

The villagers nodded their heads and left Zhang Yang without much fuss. Zhang Yang rode the white bear and made his way to

the foot of the mountain to the west. Zhang Yang was not in any particular rush. There were many herbs on the route and he took his time to harvest some [Wild Steelbloom] and [Stone Root]. Though they were rather uncommon herbs, there were not all too rare to begin with. However, since the number of Level 70 players with Herb Picking profession were few and had yet to set foot in the level 70 maps, the fore mentioned herbs were hardly seen in the market. That was one of the reasons why Zhang Yang had changed his profession to learn Herb Picking. That way, he could at least be self-sufficient.

A sudden bleep on the map indicated that a [Warden's Weed] was available in the west of where Zhang Yang was. Delighted, Zhang Yang kicked his feet against the white bear and headed straight for the rare herb. The [Warden's Weed] was used to craft a [Level 4 Strength Potion], which was the most effective potion to raise physical attack for the moment.

"Psss..."

A red viper appeared right beside Zhang Yang, revealing itself only when Zhang Yang approached the herb. The snake raised its triangular head, poised to strike Zhang Yang at any moment.

Starting from Level 60 and onward, be it minerals or herb, monsters will be nearby the spawning point to "guard" it. The strength of the monsters around will correspond to the rarity of the herb and mineral spawned. Some of them were normal monsters, some could be elite, and for the extreme cases, bosses could be guarding them! Just like the [Refine Iron Vein] back when Zhang Yang was only Level 10 which was "guarded" by the Black

Panther King! The developers never made anything easy.

That said, the [Warden's Weed] was not all too rare, hence the red viper guarding it was merely a normal tier monster. It took only seconds for Zhang Yang to kill that single snake and turn it into experience points. The red viper had also dropped a few [Snake's Meat].

[Snake's Meat] are one of the ingredients for the Cooking profession. Cooking, First Aid, and Fishing are three supportive type skills that can be trained together with two other Item Production profession like Alchemy, Rune Craft, and many more. Compared to First Aid, Cooking and Fishing were a hassle that will take more time and effort. Since those professions didn't do much for players, not many players practiced them. That being said, some players who dislike [PvP or PvE](#) would spend their time fishing and cooking in the game. That was how, non PvP, non PvE players would spend their free time.

PvP, PvE: PvP is short for Player Vs Player. PvE is short for Player Vs Enemy. In this case, PvE is used to classify battle between players and non-player entity, that is monsters, or NPC.

Cooking can produce items that could heal HP and MP. Unless the snacks can be purchased in shops, the items produced from Cooking had extra beneficial effects such as increased Vitality, Strength, or even provide a {Haste} buff. Only higher level ingredients can produce items with additional effects. [Snake's Meat] were one of those ingredients that can be used to produce such of healing items.

Zhang Yang took the [Snake's Meat] and swept them all into his

inventory. Since he was the kind of person who did not like sitting around, he had not taken up Cooking as his profession. However, he came prepared. There were players in the guild who were low level but possessed high levels of Fishing and Cooking. He will pass the items to them and let them deal with it!

‘Ding! You have used Collect on [Warden’s Weed]. Your Herbalism mastery has gained 1 point!’

‘Ding! You have obtained [Warden’s Weed] x2!’

Zhang Yang went on and collected more herbs and [Snake’s Meat]. Killing two birds with one stone, Zhang Yang had managed to gathered a small haul and was rather satisfied with it. After hiking a little through the slope, he found the surroundings shrouded in mist. Zhang Yang moved close to the source and stumbled upon a large fountain. Clear water still flowed out of the fountain and formed a beautiful small rainbow. However, beside the mystical fountain was a large giant. Even though he was seated, he was already at least 7 to 8 meters tall! He had the same appearance as a human, but only had one eye positioned on his forehead.

The giant was only wearing a pair of pants made from the leather of a beast. Resting on the right of him was a huge stone club, stained with dry blood. Perhaps, many had already crumbled under it.

[Giant Cyclops Phango] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 75

HP: 750,000

Defense: 800

There was the giant cyclops, but where was the Teleportation point? Zhang Yang went around the giant and searched on. However, no matter how many rounds he circled, he could not find the Teleportation point. Perhaps, the only way to reveal the Teleportation point was to kill the boss!

Zhang Yang drew the sword and sent the bear charging, rushing towards boss, ready to kill him.

Phango's aggro effective range was wide. Right when Zhang Yang had stepped out of the bushes around, he spotted Zhang Yang and immediately picked up a large boulder, and tossed it towards Zhang Yang.

The attack was both fast and accurate. Zhang Yang reacted swiftly enough and raised his shield to block the boulder. Amazingly, with a loud crash, the large boulder was smashed into pieces as it made contact with the shield. The white bear growled and rushed instantly to the boss with {Wild Charge}. Following the attack, the bear started clawing the boss. Zhang Yang followed and slashed at the boss' feet.

"URGH!" the giant wailed. He then picked up the gigantic stone club and smacked Zhang Yang on the head.

‘-3,756!’

The damage was rather high. However, considering that Zhang Yang's {Block} had a 6 second cool down, the boss' DPS was reduced to roughly 1,000. To defeat his long 60,000 HP, the boss would need about 1 minute. However, since Zhang Yang had too many of surviving skills, the boss would already be killed many times over before that happens!

"Human! Why did you attack me!" cried Phango in a low, husky voice.

Zhang Yang was stunned. Was not it normal for players to kill monsters? To bring peace and harmony back to the land? Since when would a monster ask a player the reason behind their attack?

After a long awkward silence, Zhang Yang had to think of what to say and finally opened his mouth. "Giant Cyclops! I want to use the Teleportation point!"

"HMPH! You're in the same league with the bat monsters!" Phango bellowed angrily. In a fit of rage, the giant stomped his feet with such force that it left a small crater with the shape of its feet in the ground below him. Zhang Yang had no clue what kind of relationship he had with the batmen, but it was most definitely a hostile one. However, now that he has already started the battle,

he could not just leave it hanging. Zhang Yang shrugged and continued raining attacks down on the boss! Even though he was taking severe damage, the boss' HP was dropping at a faster rate than his.

Within two minutes, the boss was left with only 10% HP! Suddenly, the boss made a huge leap backwards and fled the battle!

Trying to run away? Not on my watch. Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and gave chase. The boss leaped back again. This time, he jumped into the pool of water that was made by the fountain. A loud and massive splash of water was sent all over the place.

Not that a boss running away from a player was normal to begin with, the weirder thing was that the boss' HP had began to heal itself rapidly! Zhang Yang checked on the boss and found an additional buff. {Fountain of Life}.

{Fountain of Life}: Restores 1% HP every second.

After only a few moments, the boss' HP was already restored back to 17%!

What the actual hell! The boss is cheating!

If that was the case - Zhang Yang commanded the bear to rush and jump into the pool as well! He too, gained the buff and started healing as well.



"The Fountain of Life is mine! None shall take it from me!" screamed the boss as he picked up a boulder from nowhere and tossed it at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang frowned. Even though he had considerable DPS, it was surely not enough to overwhelm the healing effects of the fountain! It was the same for him. The boss would never be able to kill him while he remained in the fountain. However, if he does nothing to change the tide of war, they could easily fight till kingdom come and nothing would be accomplished.

Zhang Yang came up with a plan. For the moment, he shall dwell in the pool until all his skills are ready to used. He then left the pool and tried to kite the boss out of the pool. However, even though the boss was merely a Gray-Silver tier, it was smart enough to stay in the pool until he was completely healed before leaving. Now that both of them were fully recovered, the battle started over again!

Zhang Yang continued kiting the boss as far as he could, however, the boss was smart, or rather, the designer of the boss had set a limit before it would automatically turn back towards the fountain. Phango chased after Zhang Yang by several hundred meters and hit his limit. From there, he gave up on the chase and turned back.

...

With nothing else coming up in his mind, Zhang Yang checked

his skill tab to see that {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} still had 3 hours before it could be used. He wanted to try and slowly grind the boss' HP down to 100,000 and used {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} to kill the boss in one go without giving the boss any chance to jump into the pool.

Zhang Yang steeled his decision and left the battle to collect some more herbs until the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} was ready to be used. [Wild Steelblooms] were considered to be a common herb around this area. Even though the herb could only be found in maps higher than Leve 70, the mass number of spawning points made it easier for Zhang Yang to collect a large number of herbs since the re-spawn time was only around 20 minutes. Zhang Yang spent his 3 hours carefully, without wasting a single minute and filled his inventory with all sorts of herbs!

Hm. Now that {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} is ready to be used, it is time to kick some \*ss!

# Chapter 329: The Search For A New Source Of Energy

---

"Give it up human! I will never surrender the Fountain of Life to the likes of you!" Phango lifted the stone club again, preparing for another brawl.

The beginning phase of the battle was fairly straightforward. Zhang Yang kited the boss up to 70 to 80 meters away from the Fountain of Life before starting to attack him. Based on the damage statistics, the boss was no match to Zhang Yang. Still, it had an extremely long HP bar! With time, Zhang Yang gradually ground the boss' HP down to 10%, which was only 80,000 HP.

Phango jumped back, and just when he was about to turn around to run, Zhang Yang activated {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}. A hollow shadow emerged out of Zhang Yang's character and formed a soldier that wielded a long broadsword. The shadow then flew across the field and sliced into Phango like a piece of bread.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

....

As expected of an ulti skill, once the skill is activated, the boss' HP could be seen dropping down like a burst fire hydrant. Before all 10 slashes could land, Phango's huge body suddenly burst out with a bright light and exploded with a loud boom!

The top half was completely missing, while the lower half of Phango was left standing. Blood and innards could be seen directly. It was extremely vile and disgusting!

The game should be rated R for this level of gore! What a twisted scene! No ordinary human could hold the contents of their stomach in after seeing all the blood and organ flying around!

This was not the first time Zhang Yang had used the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, but the skill had not dealt the final blow to the witch, Daphne. That was why he was spared such a gruesome scene!

Just when Zhang Yang was about to let it all out, the upper body of Phango came back and he fell to the ground lifeless, in one piece. Perhaps the developers of the company thought that it was just too much for younger audience and only displayed it briefly for the wow-factor.

Zhang Yang shrugged and went to pick up the battle loots. There were a total of three Gray-Silver equipment, seven Green-Copper equipment and one Assembled Equipment fragment. It was a shame that it was not the one that he wanted which was the

## Fireglass Necklace.

[Bloodlust Snake Skin Boots Armor Piece] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor Piece)

Use: Combine four leather armor pieces to form a complete Bloodlust Snake Skin Boots.

Level Requirement: 70

Sigh...the smiths in 'God's Miracle' sure are godly. They could fix any kind of equipment! Zhang Yang bit down on his bitterness and kept the armor piece in his inventory. This equipment only required four armor pieces, it should be easier to assemble than the Fireglass Necklace.

All that's left was the Fountain of Life!

This contraption could easily heal 1% HP at every second. It would definitely change the tide of war. If only he could take it back to the Thunderstorm Castle, and use it to his advantage during a monster or enemy raid! Plus, if he could actually sell the item, it would definitely be worth the moon!

Just when Zhang Yang got close to the Fountain of Life, he received a system notification.

‘Ding! You have discovered a drying Fountain of Life! You may use Alchemy potion bottles to store the water from this fountain. The collected item will grant the user the ability to heal 50% HP over 10 seconds. Cool down time: 10 minutes. Item does not share the same cool down as the other potion. Hurry! The Fountain of Life is drying up!’

What the hell!? Of all the times to be drying up, it had actually chosen this time to be drying?! This is made purposefully so that players could not make use of this feature over a long term!

glup

The water level in the pool was getting lower and lower. Zhang Yang started to panic. Immediately, he opened his friend list and contacted Sun Xin Yu. "Icy! Go and buy 100...No! 50 stacks of potion bottles for me! Get over here as soon as possible! Be quick!"

A player's inventory are limited, Zhang Yang had only realized that half way as he was instructing Sun Xin Yu. If he had asked Han Ying Xue or Wei Yan Er, they would surely be asking tonnes of question instead of getting to work pronto! Sun Xin Yu, however, replied with a simple affirmation and hung up.

Zhang Yang hurriedly put on the Lover' Charm: Yang, and within 3 minutes, Sun Xin Yu appeared by his side.

"I have no time to explain. Just use the bottles and fill them up with water from this fountain!" said Zhang Yang as he took 10 stacks of potion bottles from Sun Xin Yu.

‘Ding! You have obtained [Fountain of Life] x1!’

‘Ding! You have obtained [Fountain of Life] x1!’

...

The two of them were bent over at the fountain, as if the water was made of gold, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were scooping up as much water as they could. By the time the water level got even lower, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu took out their boots and hopped into the fountain to get more of the water. After 1 hour of continuous work, the water from the fountain was completely dried up, leaving a huge magical circle at the bottom. By that time, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had managed to gather a total of 18 stacks, 3,673 bottles of [Fountain of Life]! It was a big haul!

Sun Xin Yu was surprised. "You must be some sort of luck magnet. How did you even find this place?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Hur hur. Impressed?"

Sun Xin Yu ignored his smug reply and said, "With just four more days till the Professional League, these [Fountain of Life] will really help us!"

The prowess of the bottled [Fountain of Life] was good, but as good as it seemed. For a non-tank player, 50% HP would be less potent than a [Level 4 Healing Potion] that could heal 8,000 HP,

and the [Fountain of Life] required 10 seconds to fully take effect. The main specialty of this healing potion was the fact that it did not share the same cool down sequence with other healing potions. While using any level of healing potion will cause all healing potion to be in cool down, consuming the [Fountain of Life] would not, and player could use the other healing potion while the [Fountain of Life] is in effect. Its effect could rival a healer! How could they not be strong? Especially during PvP match.

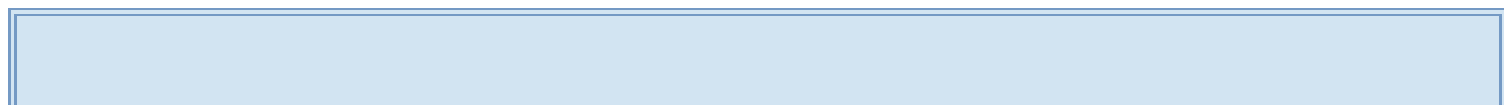
Zhang Yang kept a stack of [Fountain of Life] for himself and let Sun Xin Yu store the others in the guild storage. He then reverted his attention back to the magic circle at the bottom of the dried-up fountain. No wonder the fountain would dry up, it was to make way for the Teleportation point at the bottom of it! If the fountain water remained, how would the magic take place?

Zhang Yang placed his hands on the circle and heard a system notification.

‘Ding! You have discovered an ancient Teleportation Circle. The magical power that powers Teleportation magic has run out. If you want to reactivate the magic within, you will need to search for a new source of energy’

‘Ding! You have been given a quest: Search for a New Source of Energy. Will you accept it?’

Can he not?





[Search for a New Source of Energy] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: To the South, Ranging Runners roam in the Rolling Rock Canyon. The Stone Core of the Raging Runners contain mysterious powers! If you collect enough Stone Cores, you could perhaps reactivate the magic circle!

Progress: Collected Stone Cores 0/1,000

1,000. Right. ONE THOUSAND!?

Zhang Yang tossed all sort of insults he could think of in the back of his head. What were the designers of the quest thinking? To collect 1,000 of the quest item is no easy feat! To put it logically, by the time he had collected the Stone Cores and activated the Teleportation Circle, Tiffany would have been killed already and had her blood sucked dry! All that would be left of her would be dried meat! Granted, the quest did not imply a time duration, or else he would have already failed. Still, Zhang Yang couldn't help but groan. What were the developers thinking when they designed this quest...

Zhang Yang left the mountain and rode his way to the south, and came down to the Rolling Rock Canyon. For a canyon, it was rather small. From the higher ground where Zhang Yang was, standing, he could see that there were roughly close to hundreds of stone elemental beings rolling around, giving out a rocky, grinding sound.

[Raging Runner] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 600

The normal Level 70+ elite tier monster would have around 400 Defense value. Yet, these stone elemental beings had roughly 50% more defense than the norm. Zhang Yang did not care about the Defense and rode down the land and into the canyon, and charged bravely at a Raging Runner.

‘-1,356!’

The monster only just rolled over Zhang Yang and had already cause a noticeable damage to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang understood from the attack and had a roughly estimation about the monsters. He then ignored the first monster and headed straight into the heap and kited about 16 to 17 monsters in one flush!

Based on his current equipment in hand, he could never endure the simultaneous attack from all of the monsters. However, relying on his agility, he could make sure that he was only taking at most 3 monster attacks at a time! He could easily handle that.

15 targets, that was the maximum number of monsters that

{Horizontal Sweep} could strike. Even without the help from the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect, Zhang Yang had gotten used to using the kiting technique when it came to multi-killing. With the current godly weapon of his, if Zhang Yang still insisted on killing the monsters one by one, it would be a huge disgrace to the weapon itself!

With {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep} being activated repeatedly, coupled with Zhang Yang's white bear movement speed. The Raging Runners were clearly getting frustrated. It would be extremely funny if the names of the monster would suddenly change from Raging to Infuriated!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Like popcorn in the microwave, the stone elemental being would break apart violently, leaving behind their cores. Zhang Yang had taken only less than 2 minutes to change all 15 monsters into kernel pops. This sort of grinding speed was definitely unmatched! With the Dark Enigmatic Sword in hand, Zhang Yang could be the game's seventh class, the Grinding King!

The only problem he faced currently was the fact that the drop rate of the Stone Cores was just too low. Of the 15 monsters that he had just killed, only 1 had dropped a Stone Core. Zhang Yang grit his teeth as he knew that this would be a long day...

There were only a few hundred of Raging Runners in the entire canyon. Even if Zhang Yang could possibly kill them all in a go, he would have to clear them all two to three times before he could gather all the Stone Cores. The major problem was the low drop

rate! Since it was all RNG based, who knew how much time he would have to kill and kill again until he gathers 1,000 Stone Cores!? Still, Zhang Yang was not in a rush after all. In fact, he could take his time since there were no time limit for the quest.

Riding the bear, Zhang Yang kited another wave of monsters. This time, he was in luck. He managed to haul two cores. However, the next waves of monster did not drop a single core! Zhang Yang kept on at it till the next morning and had only managed to gather 58 cores. It was hard, but at least he had begun his first few steps for the thousand-mile journey. Still, it was not all for naught. In one night, Zhang Yang had already gained 12% experience points which was incredibly fast!

Zhang Yang opened the China level ranking board and saw that the top 10 players had barely changed.

1. Zhan Yu, Guardian, Level 74
2. Frost Night, Assassin, Level 73
3. Daffodil Daydream, Pyromancer, Level 72
4. One Sword Stroke, Guardian, Level 72
5. Fire Fountain, Pyromancer, Level 72
6. Blooming Ichor, Assassin, Level 72

7. Drizzler, Berserker, Level 71

8. Little Snow, Priest, Level 71

9. Snow Seeker, Cryomancer, Level 71

10. Lord Dullahan, Templar, Level 71

Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and several others were already over ranked and "kicked out" of the ranking list. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had missed some gaming time since the death of Wei Yan Er's father. They had been overtaken, but were still in the top ten list.

On the other hand, Sun Xin Yu was lucky enough to obtained the [Heaven's Pearl] which granted the user 50% extra experience points, which had allowed her to remain on the ranking board even though she had a full time job!

For a few nights and days, Zhang Yang had spent his time camping in the canyon, killing stone elementals beings. At the same time, he had also spent a little time to collect some herbs.

Sadly, before he could finish the quest to gather the Stone Cores, the Professional League had already started.

On the 31st of January, the officials had announced the battle

procedure of the S class and A class League battle. Since Zhang Yang and his team was the champion for the Soaring Sword Competition, they were seeded and could start on the 1st of February, fighting the first runner-up of the Soaring Sword Competition as their opponent.

Who would want to miss out the fight between the champion and the first runner up? The two teams, who happened to be strong guilds with deeply held grudges against each other, would surely bring a certain level of heat in the battle arena! On the side note, the officials had also released several new rules. One of them was the banning of using skills and items with cool down time exceeding 10 minutes. One extra rule was added, that had peaked Zhang Yang's interest. It banned non-hunter classes from using battle pets in the battle arena.

Zhang Yang clearly remembered that during his previous life, there was no such rule implemented in the battle arena. Looks like the developers had taken notice of Zhang Yang and had purposely set it as such to offset Zhang Yang's overwhelming prowess. Zhang Yang thought that it was rather justified. Zhang Yang was already overpowered to begin with. To allow someone like him to use a battle pet in the arena would rob the opponent of all their will to fight. Having the opponent giving up before the match even begins would only put off the heat of battle.

On the 1st of February, the first team battle Professional League had started. S class and A class both had their own battle areas and all players were welcome to visit the respective arenas to spectate the match.

Zhang Yang's own battle team were as such: Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, Hundred Shots, Lost Dream, and himself. Fatty Han, Galileo, and Fantasy Sweetheart had taken the leading roles of the secondary battle team.

The main battle team - (Zhang Yang's team) had accepted to carry the name of Silky Soft Holdings. The secondary battle team, which was led by Fatty Han, had accepted a contract from another veteran I.T company in china. The main team's name was Silky Soft Battle Team, while the secondary team name was Pride and Honor Battle Team.

This was the first Professional League ever. Even though the Soaring Sword competition was a success, the sponsors were not too deeply involved, thus their monetary remuneration was not very luxurious.

Zhang Yang's team had accepted 5,000,000 dollars a year as a payment to carry the name of Silky Soft Holdings. That was due to the fact that the company owners themselves were in his team. On the other hand, Fatty Han's team, Pride and Honor Battle Team had accepted an 8,000,000 payment a year!

Zhang Yang knew something else. According to proper history, after two to three month after the start of the first Professional League fights, all companies would increase their sponsorship rate due to the massive increase in popularity of the fights. Some even signed lucrative contracts with the individual players themselves!

'Ding! The battle of Silky Soft Battle Team VS Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team will commence in 5 minutes! Members of

Silky Soft Battle Team, please proceed into the battle arena within 5 minutes prior of this notification. Failure to do so will cause an automatic forfeit of your participation!’

7.30pm, Zhang Yang’s team had received the same notification. Without delay, everyone entered the battle arena and allowed the system to teleport them to their own station. One thing that Zhang Yang felt rather impressed was that players could enter the arena no matter where they were. Upon exiting, the players will be teleported back to where they were before entering. Participants no longer needed to be within a major city to enter the battle arena. That being said, players had to be out of combat mode.

Zoom! Zoom! Zoom!

One by one, they appeared next each other. Once everyone from Silky Soft Battle Team had gathered, an interactive window appeared in front of Zhang Yang. As the team leader, he had to decide the order in which they would fight.

"First, the 1v1 fights. I will fight the first battle. Ice, you’re second. Little brat, you’re third. Daffodil Daydream, fourth. Lost Dream, fifth. Hundred Shots, sixth. Snow b\*tch, you’re the seventh. Everyone got that?"

"As for the team fights, Ice cube, little brat, Lost Dream, Snow b\*tch, and me will fight. Remember, try to win the first 5 matches. Do not drag it to the sixth or the seventh. The same goes for the team fights!"



# Chapter 330: Rematch With Imperial Sky

---

When both captains had submitted the name list, the system will have lock in their entries. The name list would not be modifiable any more. In the case where the battle team did not contain the players that was listed in the presented name list, the said battle team will automatically be forfeited from the battle without any discussion.

‘Ding! The battle of Silky Soft Battle Team VS Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team will commence shortly. Both opponents shall proceed into the battle arena. The battle shall start in 30 seconds!’

Zhang Yang immediately walked up into the battle grounds.

"It's Zhan Yu!"

"Their ace in the first round!?"

"Zhan Yu! You can do it! Fight! Fight! Fight!"

Fervor from the audience could be heard from all the way up in the spectator seats around the stadium. Cheers from the audiences could be heard before the match starts. However, once the battle starts, the surroundings will be muted to allow the contestants to focus.

Zhang Yang turned to the audience and waved at them to express

his thanks. The contestant from the other team had also entered the grounds. His name was To The Sky. Level 70, male Beastman, Sniper, HP: 19,340.

The crowd booed when they saw that Imperial Sky had not sent out One Sword Stroke in the first battle. "Who is this To The Sky?! Never heard of this guy! What a huge let down! We were expecting the strongest of both sides to have a face off!"

On the other hand, Zhang Yang was completely unfazed. To The Sky was the main Hunter in the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team, in his previous life. Even though he was not in the top 10 Hunter list, his capabilities were worthy enough to be his opponent.

‘Ding! The battle will commence in 10 seconds!’

To The Sky gathered his composure and prepared to fight Zhang Yang. He knew that Zhang Yang would be his opponent in the first round, that was why he was sent to brush it off. This is a strategy that throws the tower over to waste an enemy’s chance. However, he was not satisfied at being the sacrificing lamb. Even though he knew that Zhang Yang was strong, he would go down swinging! Also, he was a secret weapon! Perhaps even Zhang Yang himself would be shocked to see it!

The horn of war was blown and the battle started. Zhang Yang lifted his shield and his sword up high and dashed towards his opponent. To The Sky controlled his pet behind him and shot a {Concussion Shot} at the 30 meters maximum attack range. The skill landed and stunned Zhang Yang for 4 seconds. A black

panther suddenly jumped out from the side and attacked with lightning speed.

In the game, a majority of physical attack type monsters will have roughly the same attack interval rate, which was 2 seconds. Only a portion of the monsters could have higher or slower attack rate. The panther race possessed faster attack speed. Its attack was, on average, one attack per second.

The game was fair. The developers had made everything balanced. Under the same level, same tier, the faster the attack speed, the lower the attack damage would be. If the opponent was a class that wears Cloth Armor type, it is better to have faster attack speed pets. The low defense of the Cloth Armor would not affect the low attack damage of the pet. It also could prolong the spellcasters' casting time! It could be as effective as prolonging a 2 second spell to be as long as 4 seconds.

However, to send out a fast attack speed pet to attack a tank class player would be extremely bad and unwise. With high defense, a passive damage absorption skill, and a passive damage reduction skill, the damage output of the pet would perhaps only be at most, 3 digits or even 2 digits!

Zhang Yang took a millisecond glance at the pet and turn his gaze back onto To The Sky. Black panthers are extremely common, they could be found at any random hill or mountain! It was not even considered to be at elite tier!

‘-O!’

As expected, the black panther could not even deal 1 damage to Zhang Yang.

The {Concussion Shot} from before had slowed him down. At his snail pace, and the black panther lightning speed attacks, Zhang Yang felt that it was wise to kill some time by using {Block}. Might as well use it for the sake of efficiency. {Block} would also grant him an extra 30 Rage for a successful parry!

{Block}!

‘-722!’ {Block} reflect damage.

‘1,479!’ {Shield Bash}.

Having only 12,000 HP, the black panther had 1/6 of his HP taken away.

"F\*ck!" cried To The Sky from afar. Well-equipped tanks are really something. Not only were they as solid as rocks, they also could ditch out painful attacks!

Knowing Zhang Yang prowess, To The Sky did not waste any more time. He started shooting at Zhang Yang and was able to chip off a decent amount of Zhang Yang's HP.

4 seconds later, the slow effect from the {Concussion Shot}

ended. Regaining his normal speed, Zhang Yang leaped towards To The Sky. However, just before he could jump, he was stunned. Zhang Yang quickly checked on his status window and saw a debuff called {Maim}. He was stunned for 3 seconds.

Now Zhang Yang understood why this Hunter would, against the odds, bring a pet panther to fight a tank. It was all because of the skill {Maim}!

{Maim} is a pet's passive skill that can stun the target for 3 seconds with a 10% chance on every attack. The black panther was brought into the battle, not because of its attack power! It was because of its high attack speed, it had a higher chance to proc a {Maim}!

Zhang Yang grined out of habit. He then quickly used {Warrior's Will} and freed himself from the stun.

‘-8,672!’ {Destructive Smash}, Critical!

"Aurgh!" The panther cried in pain. The devastating attack was so strong that it left the panther with only over 1,000 remaining HP!

To The Sky's face was drained of colors. The black panther was supposed to be his trump card. If it were to die, it should at cost Zhang Yang half of his HP! Panicking, To The Sky focused on saving his pet. He immediately shot a {Breaking Shot} to control Zhang Yang for 4 seconds! That was his intention. However, Zhang Yang was better. Right after {Destructive Smash} had struck the

ground, he had already consumed a bottle of [Beginner Mobility Potion]!

The effect of the [Mobility Potion] is special. Only after consumption, it will grant the user the immunity to all movement restriction skill! However, if the user was stunned or dazed, the user could not consume the potion to dispel the debuff. It can only take effect after consumption! That was why, the user had to be sharp in predicting the enemy! Zhang Yang had made the right call.

He knew that the opponent would not sit tight and let his black panther be killed. He predicted that the opponent would do something to save the pet. Besides {Concussion Shot}, a Hunter's other ranged interrupting skill could be {Breaking Shot}!

After consuming the potion, a rainbow color glow formed underneath Zhang Yang's foot, granting him immunity from all movement restriction skill for 3 seconds!

{Breaking Shot} landed on Zhang Yang!

Immune!

"What!?" To The Sky yelled. Could the game be stable and have lesser bugs?! Give him a chance to live for once!

‘-2,184!’

Zhang Yang did not need to activate any skills. With a quick slice, the black panther wailed and dropped to the floor.

"Why did Zhan Yu killed the pet before the Hunter? A Sniper's pet is not even strong to begin with, why would Zhan Yu waste that much time on the pet?" The same question started repeating itself among the audience, as none of them understood what was happening in the battle ground.

If it was heard by To The Sky, he would be sure to take off his boots and toss it to the crowd in a fit of anger. He may be a Sniper, but having the black panther with the {Maim} passive skill made it a very powerful asset indeed!

A Hunter could tame four pets at a time. However, only one pet could be summoned into the battle to aid the master in battle. During battle, the Hunter could not switch pets. Once the pet dies in battle, the Hunter would have to wait for 10 minutes before he is allowed to revive the pet, or to summon the other pets he had collected. To The Sky was all by himself now for the next 10 minutes! However, even if To The Sky could summon another pet into the battle, it would be meaningless without the {Maim} passive. A normal pet would only be like a kid hitting a castle with a wooden twig! Not only would the tank not feel a single thing, it would only be granting "free" Rage points!

Zhang Yang scoffed. He knows that victory was already in hand. With large, bold steps, Zhang Yang rushed towards his opponent. To The Sky was extremely disgruntled. He then begun to kite Zhang Yang. As expected, his skill was good. But whenever a Hunter attacks, he would have to remain stationary for a brief

moment. Since the battle ground had a limited space to begin with, Zhang Yang was able to reach To The Sky in just few minutes. He was already 20 meters away from To The Sky in a jiffy!

{Heroic Leap}!

Zhang Yang leaped. As far and high as the God of War, he glided through the air and landed firmly next to To The Sky! The massive shockwave was so strong that it had shattered the ground beneath Zhang Yang. The slam had also sent countless of tiny debris flying in all direction with Zhang Yang at the center of the commotion. As the dust was slightly blown away by the wind, a massive crack was seen throughout the arena!

HOHO! This skill effect was really showy!

The skill was bought in the Ravine of Coyotes. It was a "buyable" skill like {Blast Wave}. Still, a majority of the players had yet to know about it. {Heroic Leap} could not cause any kind of damage. It could only stun the target. But, from the audience's perspective, the skill display was so extravagant that everyone started cheering loudly.

It was just too darn cool!

"Again! Do it again!" the audience screamed.

{Heroic Leap}, 3 seconds stun.



One more!

{Blast Wave}, 4 seconds stun!

Seven seconds later, To The Sky had only 9,000HP, out of the 20,000 HP that he had! Once he regained his movement, he quickly flipped back and jumped 10 meters away with {Tumble}.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang was again next to To The Sky and stunned him for another 1 second!

If he could cry and not be humiliated by it, To The Sky wished that he could just let it out! The guy was genuinely confused with Zhang Yang. Is he a Guardian or a Thief? How could a Guardian have so many long stunning skills! It was not fair!

After recovering from the stun, To The Sky bent down a little and planted a {Ice Trap}.

Traps are a Hunter's specialty skill, with various kinds of effects. For example, the {Ice Trap} will trigger when a player steps on it. It will trap the target in a huge ice barrier, rendering the target immobile for 10 seconds. The target will be freed instantly if any amount of damage was received during the entrapment.

Zhang Yang smiled. He then moved around the trap and activated {Thunder Strike} to slow down To The Sky as he

continued to attack him.

The {Trap} that was planted will always be invisible to others. However, Zhang Yang saw To The Sky planting the {Trap} with his own eyes. If he had still stepped on it, he would have to call himself a dumb pig!

7,000! 5,000! 3,000!

To The Sky was slowly being pushed to the gates of death and Zhang Yang sent him off with a {Killing Cleave}.

With that, Silky Soft Battle Team had just gained their first battle victory!

Zhang Yang gazed up at the audience's seat and saw Wei Yan Er was pouting her lips. "Hmph! Noobie tank! What a loser! How could you take so long to kill a greenhorn? You sir, had just lost my respect for you! Bleh!"

She stuck out her tongue.

"Oh...my heavens...I am so saddened by what you had just said! Oh, my heart is so weary that I have to take a break from cooking ANYTHING at all! For at least 2 days!" said Zhang Yang while pretending to be a withering old lady.

Wei Yan Er jumped. She panicked and immediately pulled Zhang Yang's left arm. While smiling innocently, Wei Yan Er said, "This

little girl has learnt her lesson! Please don't be angry. Big brother..."

"F\*ck! Who you think I am? A weak-hearted lolicon?! Scram!"

# Chapter 331: Going Up Ghastly Mountain

---

The second match, Sun Xin Yu versus Blooming Ichor!

Both of them had fought against each other before and now they were meeting each other in the battle arena once again. Their gazes locked, furious and grudgingly! However, the resulting, endless match made people extremely angry and bored as when there is match between Thieves, they will only play hide and seek with each other!

Still, Sun Xin Yu was more skillful and she successfully caught Blooming Ichor after some time. After two to three attacks, Blooming Ichor's HP bar had become empty instantly!

Zhang Yang's gang won another match!

The third match, Wei Yan Er versus Lonely Tree.

Lonely Tree was the Thief who defected from Sunset Amber to Imperial Sky. Previously, he was the main Thief in Sunset Amber and now he was apparently doing well, developing and growing rapidly in Imperial Sky.

Wei Yan Er hated traitors the most, especially due to her personal experiences. Her full might was brought out upon her opponent!

Based on both of their strength, both of them were equally matched. But Wei Yan Er drank a Mobility Potion and blew up

Lonely Tree's combo. The little brat hacked at him madly with her big broadaxe and the pitiful Lonely Tree was terribly traumatized.

Zhang Yang's gang won three matches in a row!

The fourth match, Daffodil Daydream versus Venshi!

Venshi also had a traitor label on top of his head, he was the main Spellcaster in Radiance. During their match back then, he apparently goofed around and caused their team to lose deliberately to Imperial Sky in the Soaring Swords competition!

Both of these Spellcasters chose to be Pyromancers, so the both of them fired blazing fireballs at each other, flames danced in the wind and warped the air as they entered the battle arena and fought with a most extravagant display, unlike that of fireworks. In terms of the performances of their matches, the audiences enjoyed watching this match the most!

Both of them were skillful, constantly running out of the maximum skill range to interrupt each other's spell casting bars.

As more high-ended players broke through the Level 60 bracket, one after another, Yellow-Gold equipment had become very common. Although Lone Desert Smoke block-booked a few Yellow-Gold bosses, there were a lot of area maps which were above Level 60. A lot more bosses for everyone else. Both spellcasters were equipped with Yellow-Gold equipment from head to toe!

The slightest bit of advantage would tip the balance!

Daffodil Daydream had the additional advantages from Zhang Yang's transmuted potions, medicines and even the [Fountain of Life]!

After some intense fighting, Daffodil Daydream successfully defeated Venshi and scored another point for Silky Soft team!

4-0!

Sky and Ocean Electronics team was on the brink of elimination!

There were seven duels and one point for each duel; two points for party matches. Whichever team that got five points first would not need to fight for the rest of the match!

One Sword Stroke finally appeared in the battle arena for the important fifth match!

Lost Dream versus One Sword Stroke.

"Silly Yu, do you think Lost Dream can win this?" Han Ying Xue was not asking out of concern for the loudmouthed chatterbox, but for herself. She was hoping that she would not have to fight afterall, being the lazy woman that she is.

Zhang Yang thought about it and replied, "In terms of skill, Lost

Dream is on par with One Sword Stroke, but Assassins have always been an ill-fit against Guardians.

"I think Lost Dream could win this!" Wei Yan Er said, for the sake of arguing, and nothing else.

"If you say that Lost Dream can win, then he shall win this!"

"..."

At last, Lost Dream lost the match!

Lost Dream performed as expected of a first class Assassin, executing his skills and combos with precision and perfect timing. Still, he fell short of finishing off the hunk of corroded iron, and was beaten down. There was nothing for him to be ashamed of.

4-1, Sky and Ocean Electronics team finally scored a point!

The sixth match, Hundred Shots versus Tobacco Breath.

Tobacco Breath was a Templar who had rarely appeared in battle arenas! Hundred Shots, being wary about this unknown opponent, failed to grab any present opportunities and was taken out!

4-2!

Han Ying Xue was forced to fight for the seventh match.

Her opponent was her old enemy, Fire Fountain!

Fire Fountain was shocked when he saw Han Ying Xue, what an unfortunate match-up, why does he have to face this super healer once again?!

Although Han Ying Xue had no sense of direction, she did not forget faces easily. She looked intently at Fire Fountain. Suddenly recognizing him, she waved her hand and said, "Oh, it's you!"

Fire Fountain was shaken to the core, as this super healer had already caused psychological trauma to him in their previous clash! Fire Fountain's lips twitched and he shouted loudly, "Let's start the fight, cut the bullsh\*t!"

The battle had started!

History could only repeat itself!

Although Fire Fountain attack power was strong, Han Ying Xue healing power was even stronger. She threw {Putrefying Poison} on Fire Fountain and kept on spamming healing spells on herself as if she was fighting an NPC.

The pitiful Fire Fountain wanted to cry as Han Ying Xue stood rooted to the ground, casually throwing DoT skills on him, while healing herself. She did not even glance up at his incoming attacks,



only intently gazing at her own MP bar! It was ridiculous! The worst part of it all, was that he could not damage her one bit! Her healing completely counteracted every move he threw at her! Fire Fountain was eventually overwhelmed by DoT effects, which was a humiliating way to go!

The current PvP was different compared to the previous PvP in the open world, they were currently being spectated by thousands of people. Fire Fountain was going to be the biggest joke of the year!

Why does it have to be me?!

Fire Fountain could only rage within himself, as his HP slowly, inevitably went down!

5-2!

Silky Soft team successfully defeated Sky and Ocean Electronics team and also obtained the first victory of the competition!

There was another ongoing match for the S-Class Professional League, which was the match between Crimson Rage's Crimson team and Breaking Dawn's Shun Feng team.

This match was more intense as they scored 4-3 for the first seven duels and entered the final party match. Lastly, the female army defeated Shun Feng team by exerting outstanding performance and great teamwork. The final score was 5-4!

However, Silky Soft team won with the score of 5–2 and their net win points were two points ahead of Crimson team, therefore, Silky Soft team took the first position.

Everyone was jubilant after Imperial Sky's defeat as the relationship between both of these guilds, had never improved one bit ever since the attacks on each others castles.

After Zhang Yang left battle arena, he was immediately teleported back to Rolling Rock Canyon and continued chiseling away at the rock monsters.

After smashing the monsters for a while, a golden light flashed on Zhang Yang's body and he rose to Level 75!

That really took a long time!

After so many days, Zhang Yang had collected 786 [Rock Cores]. Victory was almost there.

Two days later, on the 3rd of February, Zhang Yang had finally gathered all the [Rock Cores]. He went back to the bottom of Ghastly Mountain, to the magic circle in Fountain of Life.

Zhang Yang threw five stacks of [Rock Cores] into the magic circle and he immediately received a notification from the system.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: The search for a new source of energy!’

‘Ding! Magic circle have activated!’

F\*ck, this mission was so hard and no rewards were given at all, the system was really stingy!

Zhang Yang grumbled to himself as he activated the teleportation portal.

A dazzling white light suddenly appeared. The teleportation portal seemed to be waking up from slumber. Lights and color danced before his eyes, the captivating scene lightening his mood up by a slight bit.

Once Zhang Yang entered the portal, the scenery in front of him changed and he appeared in another cave! The cave was not too deep and there was a way out about ten meters away from him. The weather was sunny and fresh, a contrast difference from the gloomy weather at the bottom of the mountain.

Is this where he’s supposed to be?

Zhang Yang walked out from the cave and saw that he was halfway up the floating part of Ghastly Mountain. The sun struck the land here, unhindered by the clouds below it.

Zhang Yang got on Whitey and quickly rode out of the cave.

"Human?" a rasp voiced out. A batman which hung from a tree suddenly flew down and glided towards Zhang Yang. The batman stretched out its 10 razor sharp fingers and reached out!

[Ghastly Mountain Elite Batman] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 400

Zhang Yang calmly lifted his sword and met the batman's clash.

"Aack..." as they fought halfway, the batman suddenly screeched loudly, threatening to deafen Zhang Yang! His ears really hurt this time! The scenery in front of Zhang Yang instantly turned black, and Zhang Yang could not help it but put both of his hands on his head.

‘Ding! You have been affected by the Ghastly Mountain Elite Batman's ear-piercing screech effect, you will not be able to control your own movements for three seconds!’

This was no different from the stunning effect, only that they

were named differently!

‘-1,342!’

‘-1,408!’

The elite Batman used this chance to slash at Zhang Yang madly with its sharp claws.

Three seconds later, Zhang Yang immediately counterattacked and the Batman was hacked to death.

Zhang Yang looked across, and saw a lot of Batmen hanging from big trees, similar to how actual bats did! If the Batman did not have the {Ear-Piercing Screech} skill, Zhang Yang could have kited a few of them and finish them all at once with the special effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword].

With {Ear-Piercing Screech}, these monsters could stun Zhang Yang perpetually, until his death!

To play safe, Zhang Yang had to clear the monsters one by one!

Zhang Yang patted Whitney and continued moving forward. He killed each monster that flew down from the tree. Despite the roundabout method, he only used about three hours to reach a huge altar.

A stone statue stood in the middle of the altar, standing at about 10 meters tall, it had the shape of a Batman and a pair of huge wings extended from its back. Both its legs were slightly bent, like it was about to spring up from the ground. The Batman statue held a dark spear. Zhang Yang looked carefully and found out that the spear was a real spear, and red lines flowed through it.

There was a basin at the bottom of the statue, where dried blood caked the surface. It had not been used for a long time!

Zhang Yang was not sure if the bloodstains came from animals or humans! Either way, Batmen ingested red blood, wherever it came from!

Suddenly, two Batmen flew down and glided to a nearby altar. As Zhang Yang was in the blindspot, they did not notice him immediately.

"What a waste, the female human we captured last few days ago has escaped! Otherwise, the ancestor could have been resurrected!" one of them croaked.

"That's right, we still need the blood of a virgin with extreme 'Yin' physique. Our ancestor would then break free from the seal and lead us a new age, instead of hiding in this little mountain! Damn it, how could such a weak human escape from here?" the other batman hissed.

"The human weakling does not have wings, she can will not be able to evade us for long. Unless she falls to death, there's no way

she can leave this floating mountain alive!"

"En, let's continue looking for her!"

The two Batmen flew away.

# Chapter 332: King Of Batman

---

‘Ding! Tiffany has already escaped from the clutches of Batman and she is hiding somewhere in Ghastly Mountain! Find her immediately, and escort her out of Ghastly Mountain!’

No wonder the quest had no time limitation. The game developers had simply solved the problem by mentioning Tiffany had escaped from the clutches of Batman. Such convenient ‘coincidence’.

Still, where could Tiffany be hiding at? This Ghastly Mountain was not exactly small in size!

Zhang Yang thought for a bit, knowing that the system definitely would not let allow players to complete the quest so easily. As always, to make things difficult, Tiffany would most likely be at the top of the mountain. Also, this would mean that players would have to fight their way through hordes of monsters in order to achieve their objective. Besides, clearing monsters is the supreme path and concept of online games!

Time to set off!

Zhang Yang patted Whitey and continued going up the mountain, where he killed endless of monsters along the way, quickly losing count.

Without the appearance of bosses, nothing could slow Zhang Yang down. Three hours later, Zhang Yang reached the top of



Ghastly Mountain.

Zhang Yang travelled through the dense woods, there was no Batman monster here but tigers, wolves and other wild beasts. All of them looked ferocious and violent, but they were merely normal monsters, and Zhang Yang killed them all with ease.

Shush!

When Zhang Yang moved forwards, suddenly, the sound of a weapon zinged in front of Zhang Yang, and he subconsciously raised his shield to protect himself and activated {Block}!

Dang!

The sword clashing with Zhang Yang's shield, producing a series of sparks!

Zhang Yang dropped his shield and immediately thrust his sword towards the attacker. As he finally focused on his target, he realized that the attacker who sneaked up on him was not a wild beast, or a Batman, but a young pretty lady with black silky hair, a tall and slender figure, wielding a sharp, gleaming sword!

He quickly moved a step backwards moving the young pretty lady out of his own range, and his sword swooshed harmlessly before her! Even if the name of "Tiffany" was not being shown on top of her head, there were no other humans here, only her!

---

[Tiffany] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

Tiffany also realized that Zhang Yang was also a human, so she stopped her attack and put back her sword into a scabbard on her back. She stared at Zhang Yang with her slanted, light gray eyes and asked, "Who are you? How did you get here?"

"I'm here to rescue you!" Zhang Yang answered and continued, "I have some kinship with you and I specially came to look for you from White Jade Castle, which is far away from here. Coincidentally, I heard from your villagers saying that you have been captured by the Batmen, so, I made my way up here!"

"Do you have any way to leave this Ghastly Mountain?" Tiffany was very surprised and excitedly asked Zhang Yang.

"Yes, there is a cave halfway up this Mountain, and also a teleportation portal which directly teleports us back to the bottom of this mountain! As long as we can make it to the cave, we would be able to get back to ground safely!"

"That's great!"

Both of them quickly went down the mountain. However, Tiffany did not have a mount, so they made rather slow progress.

Zhang Yang patted Whitey's butt and said, "Get on, you walk too slow!"

Tiffany hesitated for a while, but she decided to get on up. However, the sword that slung across her back jabbed into Whitey's butt.

"Roar!" Whitey growled in pain and instantly moved its four limbs and madly rushed down the mountain.

The monsters along the way were almost cleared by Zhang Yang, so there were not many obstacles and they smoothly reached the teleportation portal in the cave.

Wait a minute, that's it? Seems way too easy for a quest.

As long as they enter the cave and activate the teleportation portal, they would reach the bottom of Ghastly Mountain!

Both of them came down from the mount and walked into the cave.

Shush!

Suddenly a huge, beastly claw lashed out from within the darkness inside the cave. Gleaming silver, with the flash of multiple swords, the claw headed directly for Zhang Yang's chest!

"Watch out!" Tiffany shouted and kicked Zhang Yang's left hip. Hard. Zhang Yang was flung four meters away. At the same time, Tiffany also pulled out the sword on her back and dashed towards the beast.

Ding!

The sharp claw clashed with sword. The clang of steel rang through the cave and sparks flew!

Zhang Yang had actually lifted his shield and activated {Block}, but he was kicked by Tiffany and flung away, which also wasted one cycle of the {Block}'s cool down time!

Her good intentions had unwittingly inconvenienced him a little!

Zhang Yang pondered as he ran back to Tiffany with his sword drawn. Within the dark environment, he vaguely could see the attacker's outline.

It was a tall and huge Batman, with terribly huge wings, even though they were barely unfurled. Its upper body was bare, and it wore some crude loincloth, made from the dressed skin of animal, with long, lanky limbs.

Its face was scary, hook-nosed like an eagle's beak, and its forehead was protruding like a long horn was growing out of its forehead! And finally, a pair of cloudy gray eyes, murderous rage intent in its face!

[King of Ghastly Mountain Batman] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Zhang Yang groaned, why would he meet a Yellow-Gold boss in a side quest. Besides, this was only Level 70 area map and Yellow-Gold bosses should not be so abundant!

"Ha ha ha, do you think that you can escape from here?" King of Batman made a wry smile, it flexed its huge wings behind it and a strong wind was blown towards Zhang Yang and Tiffany. Both of them were blown out of the cave!

This King of Batman strode after them, coming out of the cave. In visible light, he could be seen more clearly now. King of Batman was more than three meters tall, and had a wingspan of up to eight meters!

Tiffany fearlessly swung her sword and dashed towards King of Batman, while yelling, "Demon! How many villagers have you killed over all these years?! Today, you must pay with your blood!"

King of Batman made another wry smile as it calmly caught her blade, "I thought it would take me some time to find you, but I discovered the appearance of this human. So, I decided to wait for you at the teleportation portal. As expected, like running rats, you turned up here!"

Zhang Yang shook his head in embarrassment, to play into the hands of a monster like that!

"Demon, you haven't won yet!" Tiffany slashed at the boss, a flash of white light bursting out of the sword. It did good damage, but the boss' HP bar was so abundant that it did not seem to do anything!

Zhang Yang had also moved in and added 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss to reduce its defense value so that Tiffany's damage power was magnified. In a short time, Zhang Yang quickly got a solid hold of the boss' aggro, while also drinking health recovery potions and the [Fountain of Life].

"Ha ha ha, the lady, whose blood courses with so much "Yin", lay down your sword, and obediently dedicate your virgin blood to our great ancestor. The Batmen will rise again!" the boss violently lashed out at Zhang Yang as it continued rambling on.

Shush! Shush!

The boss' huge wings were like cutting wheels, its wings spun about occasionally. It did not cause any damage but knocked back Zhang Yang and Tiffany by about three to four meters away.

Tiffany yelled and the sword in her hand moved even faster and struck the boss again and again, each strike causing more than 3,000 points of damage.

In this game, a player could take on a boss single-handedly, but only if he was sufficiently leveled, and had really good equipment! With all his long cool down skills, he could still duel with Gray-Silver bosses. However, he would need to equip some Violet-Platinum equipment in order to take on a Yellow-Gold boss all by himself!

Zhang Yang drank Red Bottle, gulped down [Fountain of Life], activated {Berserker's Heal}, summoned Merlinda's Shadow and used {Shield Wall}. He had used up all his emergency skills within a minute, and the King of Batman's long HP was reduced by less than 10%. Even if Zhang Yang used {Rearm} to clear all skills' cool down time and repeat the steps again, there was no chance of beating this boss!

Zhang Yang did what he could, tanking to his limit before he decided to hand over the pressure to Tiffany!

Zhang Yang hopped down from Whitey and used {Shadow of the Void} to escape from the battle. He ran 30 meters away from the

boss, and then emerged from the void, and quickly started gobbling down his health recovery consumables.

Because the Gold-Eared Bear King was "combined" with Zhang Yang, the pet itself did not carry any aggro from the boss. So, when Zhang Yang escaped from the battle, Tiffany was the one who had the highest aggro in the boss' aggro list. Although Whitey still had a few drops of HP left, it would have definitely been finished off by the boss. Because of Whitey was not targeted by the boss, it was spared.

Zhang Yang came up with a quick idea and commanded Gold-Eared Bear King to activate {Wild Recovery}. The Gold-Eared Bear King started to recover its HP, 5% every second.

Zhang Yang was surprised when he saw Tiffany holding her own solidly beneath the boss' violent, stormy attacks! Her HP bar was holding steady.

Zhang Yang selected Tiffany and looked carefully, realizing that the NPC had a powerful passive ability.

{Soul of Ancestral Blessing}: When attacked, damage is reduced by 90%.

It was like using a {Shield Wall} for the entire battle, oh my god, what a powerful effect!

Zhang Yang recalled that the first Descendant of The Seven



Generals, Khrishan was also the only person who did not get poisoned by the witch in the town of Lagguda. Obviously, the Descendants of The Seven Generals carried power in their bloodlines. Although they were not as powerful as their ancestors, they definitely held potent power!

Zhang Yang quickly recovered his HP within a short time and immediately ran towards the boss, using {Charge} to close the distance. After that, he quickly hopped on Whitey and combined both their HP once again.

Although Tiffany's immune ability was outstanding, her attack power was not strong. So, Zhang Yang easily pulled back the boss' aggro.

Zhang Yang activated {Rearm} then launched all surviving skills and used {Shadow of the Void} once again to escape from battle. After that, he continued eating the health recovery cakes to recover his HP at a quiet corner.

Even though Zhang Yang activated {Rearm}, the boss still had more than 80% HP left. Unless his {Shadow of the Void} was cooled down and ready, he would not survive the next charge!

After Zhang Yang recovered his HP bar to full, he took out his shield and dashed towards the boss once again. This time, he did not ride on Whitey and tried to share some aggro and let Tiffany act as the tank.

Even though Tiffany's defense was high, the boss' HP was too

long and its HP was hundreds of times Tiffany's! Even if Zhang Yang, Whitey and an NPC, Tiffany combined their attack power, they would not hold out for long. Even Tiffany would not outlast the boss!

Currently, Zhang Yang was looking forward Tiffany to shout something "Eternal life" and use {Berserker's Heal} when she a few drops of HP left and recover her HP bar to full!

The Boss' HP was reducing and the same went for Tiffany. Although her passive ability was outstanding, the boss could still cause about 1,000 points of damage on her for each attack and her 70,000 HP would only last for about two minutes!

10,000... 5,000... 2,000, Tiffany was close to the brink of death!

"Demon, I will destroy you, at any cost!" Tiffany shouted, taking a piece of metal out.

Clenching it tightly, there was a burst of extreme, bright light that emanated from it and quickly surrounded her body!

‘Immune!’

‘Immune!’

The boss' attacks instantly became useless!

Another additional effect appeared on top of Tiffany's head.

{Ancient Magic Shield}: Immune to all damage, attack power increased by 100%. Lasts for 10 minutes.

10 minutes of invincible effect, this skill was incredible! Zhang Yang thought, the boss must be extremely angry for bumping into such an NPC!

However, that silver metal looks like the [Key Fragment] that Zhang Yang obtained before. It was probably the second [Key Fragment]!

The King of Batman revealed an astounded expression and said, "That is the energy of the Ancients!"

Zhang Yang charged at the boss, unleashing his onslaught.

Tiffany's attack power increased by 100% which could cause much more damage on the boss, at the same time, meaning that she had a solid grip on the aggro now. Zhang Yang could attack the boss as much as he wanted now!

However, even with {Ancient Magic Shield}, close to ten minutes later, the boss still had 2,500,000 HP!

Zhang Yang quickly took out his [Key Fragment] in his backpack and asked, "Tiffany, can you use the power just now once again?"

Tiffany turned around, surprised as she asked, "You also have the [Ancient Fragment]? Quickly, hand it over to me, it will give me some more time!"

The NPC seemed to call the [Key Fragment], [Ancient Fragment]! Zhang Yang immediately threw the fragment to Tiffany.

Again, with a bright burst of light, she had another 10 minutes of immunity!

What an obvious cheat!

The boss would not complain about this and continued acting based on its duty. Its attacks to Tiffany became useless once again!

30%, 20%, 10%... the boss' HP became lesser.

500,000, 300,000, 150,000, 80,000!

King of Batman roared, its wings behind its back were extended and beat frantically. It rose up in the air and shouted, "I will be back!"

Do you think that you are the [grey wolf in Happy Lamb and Grey Wolf](#)?

Happy Lamb and Grey Wolf is a Chinese animated television series. Grey Wolf/ Wolffy is the main antagonist of the series. His

catchphrase (which he utters in one form or another each episode) is "Darn goat! I'll definitely come back/ I'll come back for sure/ I'll be back/ I'll get my revenge!"(Mostly "I'll be back" in later seasons, which is based on The Terminator.).

Zhang Yang gave a roar of rage and launched {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

# Chapter 333: Burrow

---

Shush!

A shadow emerged from Zhang Yang's body and formed a shadow which held a rapier. The shadow thrust the rapier rapidly like a flash of light and penetrated the King of Batman's body. Rapid '-10,000' damage texts appeared on top of its head, one after another!

Such a scene would never get boring!

"No!" King of Batman struggled to stay afloat and tried to escape from the devastating attacks. But without invincibility, there was no escaping such an attack!

Within 10 seconds, the boss abruptly lost all its remaining HP!

Bang!

The corpse of King of Batman was sliced up in the air and its blood poured like blood rain. The scene was sanguinary and adrenaline inducing. As always, a moment later, the corpse of the boss came crashing down again, back in one piece. It was just a cinematic effect of the skill.

"The demon is finally dead!" Tiffany felt relieved but expressed some sadness on her face and said, "Our village is finally free from the threat of these vampires! The dead will never be forgotten!"

Zhang Yang, left the NPC to her questline script, and silently shoved all the drops from the boss into his backpack and said, Tiffany, let's go back to the village!"

"Alright!"

Both of them entered the cave and came to the middle of the magic circle. A ray of white light flashed and they were immediately teleported back to the ground which was where the Fountain of Life located at.

"This is the Cyclops' lair?" Tiffany was shocked and asked, "You are a brave warrior, to even defeat the Cyclops. Is it that the gods had mercy on us and sent a savior down to earth?"

They rode on Whitey and rushed towards Alfalfa Village. Zhang Yang took advantage of this opportunity to flip through King of Batman's loots.

The loots included one Yellow-Gold equipment and nine Gray-Silver equipment, this boss was very stingy. However, it was probably due to the fact that Zhang Yang only managed to defeat the boss by relying on an NPC, Tiffany's invincibility skill. In that case, getting a Yellow-Gold piece of equipment wasn't that bad a deal!

Besides, this Yellow-Gold equipment was a Level 70 two handed axe. Even though the two handed axe's attack interval was 3.5 seconds, instead of the perfect 3.8 seconds, it was still a level 70

Yellow-Gold weapon, guaranteed to fetch a good price!

[Axe of Lunar Eclipse] (Yellow-Gold, Two Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 1,023 – 1,423

Attack Interval: 3.5 seconds

DPS: 349

Equipment: After hitting on the target, there is 10% chance of obtaining Acuity effect and ignoring 10% defense. Lasts for 10 seconds. The maximum stacked Acuity effect is 3.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 70

Perhaps he should gift it to Galileo, the main Berserker in the second party of Lone Desert Smoke and also the second S-Class Professional team of Lone Desert Smoke. Although the kid had a Violet-Platinum weapon, that weapon could only be equipped at Level 80. They would be fighting in the Professional League tonight, this axe would definitely help.

Zhang Yang did not even bother to look at the Gray-Silver



equipment, as all of them were fated to be sold in Little Merchandize Shop. On the other hand, this boss also dropped an Alchemy recipe which Zhang Yang immediately patted on his body, learning the recipe.

[Troll Recovery Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Restores 100 HP every five seconds. Lasts for an hour.

Level Requirement: 60

This [Troll Recovery Potion] seems normal, 1,200 HP restored within a minute, and 72,000 HP restored within an hour which was slightly higher than Zhang Yang's HP limit. Zhang Yang still had his {Alchemist's Intuition}, the effect of this [Troll Recovery Potion] could not be predicted after transmuted.

Whitey ran like the wind, and finally they reached Alfalfa Village.

"Sister Tiffany!" a small group of children at the gateway of the village spotted them from afar, and came running towards them. They were clapping and cheering.

Tiffany hopped down from Whitey and gently smiled at the children, no wonder those children dreamed of marrying Sister Tiffany.

The rest of the villagers also ran out from the village, relieved when they saw Tiffany. While, Tiffany announced that the King of Batman has been killed, and their village was no longer subject to the threat of vampires. The villagers cheered, tears streaming down some of their faces.

Tiffany brought Zhang Yang to her house, which was a very clean and neat cottage.

"Zhan Yu, this is your [Ancient Fragment]. I'm very sorry, I had extracted the power within this [Ancient Fragment], and you may need hundreds of years to recover the power within it again!" Tiffany handed over the [Key fragments] to Zhang Yang and apologized sincerely.

Zhang Yang pondered internally, the NPC's {Ancient Magic Shield} could only be activate once every hundred years. This skill's cool down time was extremely long, perhaps it was worth the ten minute duration afterall! Zhang Yang took the [Key fragments] and said, "Tiffany, I purposely came from afar to search for fragments similar to this [Ancient Fragment], can you lend me your fragment?"

Tiffany hesitated and smiled as she answered, "Although this was left behind by my ancestor, I will not be able to use it for another hundred years. Besides, our biggest threat, King of Batman is already eliminated and I no longer have any real reason of using it! Since you need this, it is yours!"

Tiffany handed over the second [Key Fragment] to Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 5!’

Zhang Yang took nearly 10 days to finally obtain the second [Key Fragment]!

"Anyway, Zhan Yu, thank you for saving me!" Tiffany smiled sweetly towards Zhang Yang, she stood on tiptoe and gently kissed Zhang Yang lips.

Her lips were as soft as cotton, and tasted slightly sweet!

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Tiffany. Gained 5,000,000 Experience Points!’

What a tragedy, no other reward was given to Zhang Yang, it seemed that her kiss was the only reward!

"By the way..." Tiffany took out a book covered with gray-brown leather and handed over to Zhang Yang, "This is a secret skill passed down by my ancestor. I relied on this to escape from the bat's guards. I believe this would assist you greatly!"

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: {Burrow}!’

Zhang Yang was stunned. What, {Burrow}?!

[Skill Book: Burrow]

Use: Grants the skill {Burrow}.

Class Requirement: Not limited.

Level Requirement: 70

Bound.

It was really that {Burrow}! The {Burrow}! Zhang Yang had struck the jackpot!

Zhang Yang quickly patted the skill book on his body and learned the skill before viewing the description of the skill.

{Burrow}: Allow you to burrow through the ground but the movement speed is reduced by 50%. Lasts for 10 minutes. Cool down time: 1 hour.

This was a marvelous skill that had some similarities with {Shadow of the Void} which allowed a player to bypass the enemy defense lines and penetrate deeply into enemy hinterland! The differences were that {Shadow of the Void} allowed the player to escape from the battle and increased a player's movement speed,

while, {Burrow} just allowed the player to hide in a place from the enemy which the enemy unable to attack the player, besides, the player's movement speed would be reduced by 50%. However, it lasted far longer!

No matter what, Zhang Yang had earned something incredible!

"Zhan Yu, please visit the village if you have time, our Alfalfa Village will always welcome you!" Tiffany said sincerely.

"Alright, I will come when I have time!"

After Zhang Yang got the second [Key Fragment], he did not go to Great Lake Valla immediately to look for the third Descendant of The Seven Generals but directly tore off [Teleportation Scroll] and returned to Thunderstorm Castle, and then teleported back to White Jade Castle.

In an hour's time, Fatty Han and the rest were going to fight for their first S-Class Professional League match, so Zhang Yang was going to be there to support them!

Zhang Yang disconnected from the game and prepared dinner. After feeding three stomachs, Zhang Yang logged into the game.

Currently, the competitions for S-Class and A-Class Professional League were in full swing, the number of people watching the competitions frequently broke a high record which brought a wide range of business attention. This could be expected, as soon after

there would be a huge influx of wealthy businessmen coming into 'God's Miracle' to seize the opportunity.

Zhang Yang gave the [Axe of Lunar Eclipse] to Galileo. The young boy was surprised and delighted. He constantly bowed to Zhang Yang and made the people around laugh out loud.

At 7.30 pm, the seventh S-Class Professional League started, Pride and Honor Battle team versus Mugen's Master Cow team.

Fatty Han and his team scored 3-4 for the first seven matches and put themselves at a disadvantage. They also started a party match as the final match which decided the final outcome! Fatty Han knew that he did not have much ability in PvP so he did not join the party match. However, they lacked a real commander candidate. Unfortunately, they lost the party match and their final total score was 3-6, defeated.

Zhang Yang consoled them and greatly praised Galileo as the young little boy definitely had a great potential, he must be a powerful player in the future and it would be a waste not to hone his skills.

Although the second team had lost, Zhang Yang had another piece of good news. One of the fanatic, non PVE players in the guild could finally cook [Snake Meat]!

Zhang Yang quickly threw all the [Snake Meat] he had to a middle-aged uncle who carried the bizarre IGN of "Uncle Susan". After cooking for at least 3 hours, the whole batch of meat was

cooked.

[Delicious Snake Meat] (Consumable)

Use: Restore 30,000 HP and 20,000 MP in 20 seconds and increases your dexterity attribute by 50 points. Lasts for 15 minutes. Can only be used under non-combat situation, any movement or combat would disrupt the consuming effect.

Level Requirement: 60

Unfortunately, the additional attribute was dexterity, instead of strength and vitality needed by Warriors. Anyhow, these 50 points of dexterity attribute were free and there was no harm in receiving it!

Zhang Yang rationed the meat and mailed them in separate bulks to Fatty Han, Sun Xin Yu and the rest.

However, Cooking and Fishing were not easy for the players!

Alchemists could concoct potions at an incredibly fast pace. Up to four potions could be produced in one second. However, Cooking and Fishing were totally different, as these two skills completely simulated reality. The time taken to fish and cook was equal to the time taken in real life!

For those players who preferred gaining levels and obtaining best equipment, Cooking and Fishing were definitely a waste of time for them! But there were no exceptions when it came to anything at all, like Uncle Susan. He logged into the game every night to Fish and Cook. It was how he enjoyed the game.



# Chapter 334: Heading For Emerald Island

---

As Uncle Susan was cooking the [Snake Meat], Zhang Yang also started making [Troll Recovery Potion].

‘Ding! You have made [Troll Recovery Potion] X4!’

...

‘Ding! You have made [Troll Recovery Potion] X4. Due to {Alchemist's Intuition}, [Troll Recovery Potion] has become transmuted!’

...

‘Ding! Congratulation, your Alchemy mastery has increased to Specialist-level. The number of potion and medicine that can be made at once is increased to six!’

After Zhang Yang’s Alchemy mastery became Specialist-level Alchemist, Zhang Yang would not gain any more experience from making any potions and medicines at the current phase, as he required the learning of new recipes or the gathering of new herbs to continue increasing his mastery. He would only worry about this when he reaches level 90.

[Troll Recovery Potion (Transmute 2)] (Consumable)

Use: Restore 100 HP every five seconds. When you are hit, there is 3% chance of restoring 10% HP. Lasts for 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 60

The chance for [Troll Recovery Potions] to be transmuted was very low. Although Zhang Yang had made about 1,000 potions, only six potions were transmuted. Among the six transmuted potions, the highest transmuted level was 5 and its additional effect was that when the player is hit, there is a 3% chance of restoring 25% HP.

If the ratio remained the same, a transmutation of level 10 would restore 50% HP!

Unfortunately, the chance for the potion to be transmuted was too low! But this was understandable, as the Lifesteal effect was too godly, so the number of the transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion] had to be strictly limited.

Zhang Yang distributed most of the non-transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion] to Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the main force members. Zhang Yang also teleported back to Thunderstorm Castle and planned to head for the Great Lake Valla to look for the third Descendant of The Seven Generals.

Whitey ran like lightning and travelled through the dense woods. Zhang Yang suddenly received a voice chat from Li Ru.

"Hello, hero Zhang, come over and help me tank a boss, I have a quest to complete!"

Li Ru was Zhang Yang's ex-classmate, so he immediately complied with her request. After Li Ru had joined Lone Desert Smoke, she had not asked him for any help. It was a small favor, so he had no problems helping out. However, Zhang Yang happened to be in a party with Wei Yan Er at that time, and since she would ask a million questions, he did not join Li Ru's party but asked Li Ru about her coordinates. Upon receiving them, he patted Whitey and directly rushed towards her location.

Currently, Li Ru was Level 53, and was still training at the Burning Flatlands. It was the pace of a casual player.

Zhang Yang ran for about two hours to reach the destination. However, Li Ru and her party members had gone to clear the minions for leveling while waiting for Zhang Yang. So, Zhang Yang waited for them a while at the destination then only he saw four players with mount were rushing towards him.

Besides Li Ru, the rest of three members were male players and Zhang Yang could see those three players were interested in Li Ru as they were competing to stay next to Li Ru.

Life of Seeking Love, Broadsword Lord and Stylish Pig were those three male players' names. All of them were Guardians, which was puzzling. Three tanks and one spellcaster, what kind of party arrangement was that?

The three men looked at Zhang Yang, their eyes were obviously full of hostility and alerted.

They seemed to treat everyone who appeared around Li Ru as potential love rivals because their facial expression showed that they wanted Zhang Yang to leave as soon as possible.

"Zhang Yang, let me introduce you my three supervisors in my company. I do not need to mention their names!" Li Ru walked next to Zhang Yang and gave him a teasing smile which made Life of Seeking Love and the other two slightly twitched their lips.

Finally Zhang Yang understood the three men intentions, they were not just wanted to pursuit a beauty but also yearned for Li Ru's huge assets. If they courted Li Ru, they could own the company. They would fulfill their careers and love lives at the same time!

Zhang Yang had no mood wrangling with these jealousy men and he smiled as he said, "Where is the boss, hurry up, let's go kill the boss. I still have other quests to do!"

"We waited for you about two hours and we never utter a word, what are you rushing for?!" Broadsword Lord was the first to trigger the wrangle as he could not bear the way Li Ru looked at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang only threw a faint smile and did not bother with the man any longer.

Li Ru said, "It is around here, is a Gray-Silver boss. You can handle it alone, right?"

This Burning Flatlands was Level 50 map, the highest level of Gray-Silver boss was Level 60. Zhang Yang was already used to killing Level 70 Gray-Silver bosses by himself. This would be a hitch! He grinned and answered, "I will give it a try!"

"Hey, don't just spout out hot air, we do not want to die with you!" this time, Stylish Pig tried to trigger the wrangle. These three persons were obviously hostile to each other but once Zhang Yang appeared, they tentatively formed an alliance and allied to gang up on Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang gave them a half-hearted smile. If Zhang Yang had not hidden his profile to prevent the in-game paparazzi, these three males would definitely have a very different attitude now! Zhang Yang was starting to get annoyed, but kept his calm demeanor and said, "Let's go to the boss!"

The boss was a giant wolf with silver white body, Level 55 with 550,000 HP but it had 10 followers and all of them were Level 53 normal monsters. No wonder Li Ru and the rest dared not fight the boss, as there were 11 of them. Even if Li Ru's party had a healer, they would still face trouble.

Zhang Yang just wanted to complete the quest as fast as possible and then leave, so he immediately patted Whitey and dashed towards that bunch of monsters. He swung his sword and launched attacks.

"Idiot!" those three persons shook their head again and again.

{Horizontal Sweep} launched which coincidentally stimulated [Dark Enigmatic Sword]'s special effect. Those monsters instantly killed and all defeated.

Broadsword Lord and the other two men were suddenly stunned when they saw Zhang Yang's super high damage.

Zhang Yang did not even want to waste time entertaining them. Zhang Yang swung his sword and drastically depleted the silver wolf boss' HP.

Silver wolf boss' basic attack was less than 4,000. When it struck Zhang Yang, it could only cause about 1,000 damage. So, Zhang Yang only used {Berserker's Heal} once and then defeated the boss as fast as a lightning.

"I'm leaving!" Zhang Yang took out [Teleportation Scroll] and quickly teleported back to Thunderstorm Castle.

"Sh\*tty Zhang Yang, I purposely wanted to make you jealous by using those three guys, but now you are making me mad!" Li Ru immediately spoke to Zhang Yang via voice chat.

"Why would you do that? We are old classmates, we should just leave it at that?" Zhang Yang said.

"Hmph, I will think of other ways to seduce you again!" Li Ru unwillingly disconnected the voice chat.

Zhang Yang did not think about it any further and rushed back to the Great Lake Valla once again.

The map name, Great Lake Valla, was 90% in a huge lake called Lake Valla. Level 70 maps were quite large and this Lake Valla was like an ocean. Besides, there were about 10 islands in the lake, small patches of evenly distributed land.

The Descendant of The Seven Generals that Zhang Yang was looking for was in one of these islands and the descendant's name was Khrishan.

The characters in 'God's Miracle' knew how to swim since the dawn of their creation, but they still swam much slower than they ran. The swimming speed was 10% of the character's normal running speed and it was not even worth comparing to the speed of mounts!

If a player used such a slow speed, like a turtle to find the NPC, it would take too long. Besides that, players could also tire out, swimming all the way would not cut it!

Zhang Yang pulled on the reins of Whitey and ran around the lake to look for a transport.

Two hours later, Zhang Yang reached a small fishing village, and

he found an old fisherman at a small pier.

"Old man, I would like to rent a boat for sailing, is there a ferry here?" Zhang Yang asked the fisherman.

Old fisherman looked up, glanced at Zhang Yang and asked, "Where do you want to go?"

"Emerald Island!"

Old fisherman thought for a while and showed two fingers as he said, "20 gold coins!"

"Alright!" Zhang Yang. He did not bother bargaining, unlike what Fatty Han would do. Time was money, and every second spared was money saved. Fatty Han could haggle with anything and anyone that moved for ages!

Old fisherman immediately showed all five of his fingers and said, "The price goes up, 50 gold coins!"

F\*ck!

Zhang Yang took out the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and remained silent, running a thumb down the blade.

"Just 20 gold coins, hahaha, 20 gold coins" the old fisherman immediately backed down.



Zhang Yang boarded the fishing boat, and paid the gold coins. The old fisherman opened up the sail and brought Zhang Yang into Lake Valla.

Although it was a sail boat, its speed was comparable with the nuclear-powered destroyer. About half an hour later, Zhang Yang saw a huge island within his sight.

"Behold, Emerald Island!" the old fisherman said.

At that moment, a tide of white, foamy water rolled towards them. Only after a moment, only did they realize that it was actually a three meter tall wave rushing directly at them!

Bang!

The billow hit them and the fishing boat instantly capsized. Zhang Yang and the old fisherman fell into the lake.

The wave sent Zhang Yang 10 meters away from the point of impact. Zhang Yang popped his head out of the water, spluttering. He had no idea where the wave could have come from, as it was a calm, sunny day.

"Ah!" that old fisherman broke the surface of the water, and immediately cried out in despair, "My boat! My boat!"

Retribution for greed!

Zhang Yang swam towards the island in front of him, ignoring the old man!

‘-1,342!’

As Zhang Yang was swimming, pain lashed across his leg, and a damage text immediately appeared above his head! He quickly took a dive but he could only see the blurry lake water around him. When he turned around, suddenly, a huge snake eel, four meters long, as thick as a human leg appeared in front of him. The snake eel’s body was a shiny, silvery color, and dangling from its lower jaw was a long beard!

[Shiny Silver Snake Eel] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 73

HP: 73,000

Defense: 400

At this moment, that Shiny Silver Snake Eel nimbly flitted around Zhang Yang and bit his elbow.

{Block}!

Zhang Yan quickly counterattacked. Because the old fisherman wanted Zhang Yang to pay another 100 gold coins as a sailing fee if Gold-Eared Bear King was summoned, so Gold-Eared Bear King was currently tucked away in his bag. As a result, Zhang Yang's attack power was slightly reduced.

# Chapter 335: The Missing Daughter

---

Having accumulated a sufficient amount of rage points, Zhang Yang flung a {Blast Wave} forward and took advantage of the 4-second stun on the monster to summon out Whitey.

The man and the bear joined forces on the battlefield, or rather, battlewaters, instantly inflicting an extreme amount of damage on the Shiny Silver Snake Eel.

But, it would be no surprise for one given a name such as a Snake Eel to have the characteristics of both eel and snake. Not only could the monster electrify its target, it also had the ability to use poison. Electrification caused 5,000 points of elemental damage and also paralyzes the target for 2 seconds; while the ability to poison actually had a damage over time (DoT) effect, inflicting a total of 3,000 elemental damage points. However, the poison effect was unstackable.

Paralysis and the stun effects were basically the same, players could not move under both conditions, they were as irritating as ever! Zhang Yang was basically immune to the poison effect, thanks to his equipment.

After a short battle against the sea and the creature, Zhang Yang finally slayed the Snake Eel, and loots dropped from the elite monster. However, he only received two pieces of [Shiny Fish Scales] which were only worth 50 to 60 copper pieces. He threw them away without second thought.

As he was now swimming to Emerald Island, it was inevitable for Zhang Yang to battle countless Snake Eels and their kin. As a result, he had acquired countless fish scales!

As humans were relatively poor swimmers, Zhang Yang spent more than half an hour to reach the land of the island. After he arrived at the shore of the island, he turned around and saw piles of dead Snake Eel bodies all lying on the shallows, it was a horrifying sight.

The surroundings of Emerald Island is covered in an emerald forest. From afar, players could see that the place is like a piece of Emerald jade, hence the name 'Emerald'.

Zhang Yang rode on Whitey and began his search in the forest. But the island was shockingly big and vast, as large as the level 20 to level 30 maps! After exploring around for a long time, Zhang Yang finally discovered a manor by the far north side of the island.

The manor was extremely large, and right behind it was a large garden. The stone fort was five stories tall. Right by the entrance of the manor, there were four guards doing their jobs with dedication.

The moment the guards detected the presence of Zhang Yang, one of the guards went up front to Zhang Yang and questioned him, "Who are you?"

These four guards are Level 70 NPCs, normal grade, but their names were in green, meaning that they were friendly towards all

players.

Zhang Yang did a salute and said, "I am Zhan Yu. An adventurer from the White Jade Castle!"

"Adventurer, you said?" The four guards were looking at each other and one of them later said, "Since you are an adventurer, you must be available for hiring! Our lord's daughter has been missing for a few days now, and although our lord had sent many in search for her, none had managed to find her! If you can find our lord's daughter, he will handsomely reward you!"

Zhang Yang was not given the opportunity to decline, one of the guards had already led Zhang Yang with much enthusiasm into the manor, then into the castle, and then up to a study room on the the second floor.

There was a sturdy man right behind a study table, he was large and tall, and he is a Descendant of The Seven Generals - Khrishan!

[Khrishan] (Yellow-Gold Leader, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

"Dear adventurer, I believe that you have heard from my men, that my daughter Meryl has gone missing! Young man, please do me a favor, and bring me back my daughter, I will definitely pay you a great sum!" Khrishan informed.

‘Ding! Khrishan has given you a quest: The Missing Daughter, accept or decline?’

It seems that the only option was to accept the quest! Although players can forcefully attack and kill Friendly NPCs, there won't be any experience points or loots from such acts.

To be able to acquire rewards from NPCs with green names, players can only follow the script and instructions obediently in order to complete the quests. However, if there was a change due to the events of the quests, or a cinematic cutscene, the NPCs can then switch their names from green to yellow or red, and players can slay them to get rewards!

Zhang Yang accepted the quest and left the manor. He brought up the quest list before him to check if there were any instructions given on the quest he just received.

[The Missing Daughter] (Difficulty: B-rank)

Description: The beloved daughter of Khrishan, Meryl has gone missing, you must find her as quick as possible! The wilderness is just too dangerous for a little girl!

Tips: Meryl loves to travel over to the south of the island by the cliff called the Heaven's Wave to look at the sea, you might find some useful clues and trails to follow.

Completion: Find Meryl 0/1

Zhang Yang immediately rode towards the south direction, going through a few dense forest growths before he arrived at the south side of the Emerald Island.

This so called Heaven's Wave was just about ten meters high, and Zhang Yang went on around the surrounding and discovered a vague glow on one side of the ground, so he approached it and took a closer look on the spot to find out that it was a pearl of a necklace. It seemed that the pearl had broken off a necklace.

‘Ding! You found the broken necklace of Meryl, she must have gotten herself into some sort of accident. Please look around, there might be other clues around.’

Searching a little more closely around the vast area, Zhang Yang found another pearl soon after. By searching around, locating one pearl at a time, he followed the trail of ‘breadcrumbs’. He picked up the pearls he found and followed the trail, leading him to an area of water. If he continued to go forward, he would be walking straight into the water already!

In reality, people could have easily set this up, but you can always



trust the cliché plotline of a game! Zhang Yang jumped right into the lake and dove into the water. As he had the [Lungs of the Mermaid], he could breathe underwater without having to worry about drowning in the water.

After some searching around, he uncovered a cave entrance about four or five meters down under the water. Immediately he swam towards it and entered the cave. The cave was dark and deep, and Zhang Yang swam for approximately two minutes before he saw a glimpse of light right above the surface of the water, before he swam up to the surface.

Right before him was an island within an island, and a beach right before Zhang Yang. There were crabs that were as large as cows creeping around the beach, crabwalking around, they clicked their mandibles and brandished their pincers menacingly.

[Giant Pincer Crab] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 75

HP: 75,000

Defense: 400

The moment when Zhang Yang set foot onto the beach, a Giant Pincer Crab nearby began to wave its large pincers around and

charged towards him.

{Block}!

"Chichichi---" The Giant Pincer Crab began to spit bubbles out, as its two eyes swiveled around to look at Zhang Yang, trying to crush him within its pincers!

"You big crab! Just rest in peace by the beach!" Zhang Yang spun with his sword and ran right between the two pincers, causing burst of sparks.

After exhausting the monster's health point down to 5% left, that Giant Pincer Crab began to spread its legs in attempt to flee. Zhang Yang immediately flipped onto Whitey and pursued, and in just a matter of seconds, he caught up with it and emptied out the remaining health points of the crab without much effort. But as the crab was running, they had attracted the aggro of two other Giant Pincer Crabs, which gave chase.

Zhang Yang did not have the time to recover at the moment, so he simply turned around and met them with his blade. It was fortunate that the first monster only managed to reduce his health points by less than 10,000 points, so he did not have to worry about not being able to handle the coming battle, not at all!

After a short while, the two Giant Pincer Grabs were near death, and they began to flee like the first one, attracting the other Giant Pincer Crabs in the surroundings. Before Zhang Yang could break free from battle he had to slay dozens of them, clearing up a whole

plot of land!

Having to fight so many monsters in a row, he had activated a few of his life-saving skills which had long cool down periods. After slaying all the monsters pursuing him, Zhang Yang immediately sat down on the beach and consumed [Snacks] to recover his status.

20 seconds later, Zhang Yang was fully recovered.

These Giant Pincer Crabs dropped [Clam Shells] which can be opened up for other items such as clam meats. Of course, there was a certain low rate that players might get pearls from the [Clam Shells]. Pearls can be used to craft some special potions, and only can be obtained from opening a [Clam Shell], so it can be categorized as a 'Rare' item.

Zhang Yang cleared the monsters that stood in his path, and along his way, he managed to pick up a total of 78 [Clam Shells], but he only obtained 3 [Small Pearls] out of all the [Clam Shells].

After getting through the defense line of the beach, he arrived at a sea of reef rocks, and there were many monsters with lobster-like lower bodies and humanoid upper bodies. These monsters were holding long spears while patrolling around the area.

Are these the 'legendary' [shrimp soldiers and crab generals](#)? Zhang Yang thought cynically.

Shrimp soldiers and crab generals - numerous underlings; ineffective troops

[Red-Tailed Lobster Man] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 400

What else to do? Just slay them all!

Fortunately, although these were just ‘shrimp soldiers’, the Lobster monsters were far more combative than the Giant Pincer Crabs, all of them stayed and fight to their deaths, none of them fled, none!

However, there were so many of them that even a night of fighting did not clear the area. He could only log out of the game to train his physical body. It was his old habit, and old habits die hard.

He jogged around the small housing area. Although February is still a cold month with cold weather that makes the air cold to breath in, but Zhang Yang was still wearing very little while jogging out. He only wore a sport t-shirt which prominently showed his sturdy and solid body. It was not clear how many lonely wives had set their thirsty eyes upon the sight of him

running around!

The women that live in the area can be mainly categorized into two types, the rich types, and the mistress-type. These mistresses are basically 'taken in' by old men, so they certainly lacked satisfaction in certain aspects. Seeing a sturdy and strong man like Zhang Yang jogging around their neighborhood, 'triggered' their lust.

After Zhang Yang returned back to Han Ying Xue's house, he recalled being eye-raped by those 'hungry' women and felt an intense shiver down his spine. If he had jogged a little slower, some of those 'hungry' women might have already caught up to him. He had already encountered too many of 'those eyes' in the bar, during his previous life.

Back inside the house, Zhang Yang saw Wei Yan Er wearing just a small T-Shirt along with a small pair of thongs with a picture of a cute bear on the front. She was yawning while walking towards the bathroom. Although the boobies of this little girl were not fully developed yet, her two thighs were long and smooth, and her complexion was crystal clear, she somehow looked far better than most of the so-called 'beauty-leg' models!

Zhang Yang felt a sense of shame and guilt, so he quickly turned away and said, "Little girl, there's a man in your house, please take care of your image!" Although he would always take the opportunity to run his eyes over a beauty, Wei Yan Er was already like a little sister to him, so just having the thought of it would make him guilty.

"Groot groot groot!" Wei Yan Er was rinsing her mouth with water, she only spoke after awhile, "Aren't you my brother-in-law? You won't be such an animal that you would 'eat' us two sisters right?"

"... when did I become your brother-in-law?"

"Wa, noob tank, so now, are you denying it all after you have accepted the 'goods'?" Wei Yan Er reached her head out from the bathroom, "Cousin sister already told me everything!"

That witch, unreliable witch! She said that she would keep the secret into her grave, but the moment she turned around, she already began to betray him!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and put the soya drink and the deep-fried dough sticks onto the table. He was already used to eating these, he was totally not a fan of the "American" breakfast of fried eggs - sunny side up and toast. When he moved into Han Ying Xue's house, he had also brought along his habit and supplies, so Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had 'picked it up' from him after their first try on the soya drink and the deep-fried dough sticks. Nowadays, Zhang Yang would go out early to buy some breakfast from the shops two streets away. He just treated this as a regular morning jog everyday.

As Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er was talking to each other, Han Ying Xue also walked right in. She was also wearing a T-shirt and a pair of tight pants, which was much better compared to that little girl. However, the main point was that maybe she wasn't fully awake yet, or she was doing it on purpose, her tatas were set free!

Braless! The pair of two round spherical objects that she was so proud of were 'towering' right in front of Zhang Yang's eyes, and the outline of the tips that seemed to be trying to drill their way out through the fabric poked out prominently!

"Pff---" Zhang Yang choked and spurted the soya drink out from his mouth, and the choke got him good, causing him to cough continuously.

It's not decent to seduce people like that!

"Hey Witch, please wear your bra, you're going to burn holes in your shirt!" Zhang Yang spluttered.

Han Ying Xue straightened her back, throwing out her massive pair and smiled sweetly at Zhang Yang, "At least your eyes are getting 'moist' aren't they?"

"... They'll sag if you don't support them anytime soon."

Shocked, she silently turned around and walked into her room.

Wei Yan Er had also changed her clothes and sat steadily by Zhang Yang's side, and then she winked and whispered dramatically, "Noob tank, you really are doomed, she's going to 'eat' you alive!"

Zhang Yang frowned with sweat running down all over his head, he had not even claimed full payment from Yu Li yet, and now he

has to face Han Ying Xue. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu has been looking at him kinda funny! The thought came across that there was a 1% chance of him sleeping with her, but he suddenly calmed himself down, the percentage of sleeping with her is obviously so much lower than the chance that he would end up with a bullet in his head!

As for Lin Yu, he did not pay much mind on her.

He had enough women on his mind, he did not need to find trouble for no reason!

Well, nevermind, [the cart will find its way around the hill when it gets there](#), he need not pay so much mind on it now!

The cart will find its way round the hill when it gets there - things will eventually sort themselves out

Zhang Yang logged into the game and continued slaughtering those poor Lobster Men until six in the evening, and finally, he managed to clear a path to the ancient ruins of a palace.

This ancient palace had been destroyed, and all that was left were the broken walls of the palace. Zhang Yang could see a huge statue made of stone being placed right in the middle of the entire area. The statue took the form of male mermaid, having a macho upper body, muscular and hot, like popstar icons, holding a trident in both of his hands, while the lower body was a fish's body, but it was blocked by some of the broken walls around, so Zhang Yang could not see the entire lower body of the statue.



Zhang Yang took out his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and charged towards the statue on Whitey.

Shoof!

The moment he set foot into the area of the palace, an arrow came straight at him! Ranged attack cannot be countered with {Block}, so the arrow inflicted a damage of ‘-1371’ onto Zhang Yang.

At the same instant, the attacker that shot the arrow at Zhang Yang walked out into the light. It was a female Naga, with a human upper body and a snake’s body as her lower body part. She looked just like the elves, and her face tattooed with their clan markings. She held a long bow in her arm, and she was loading up another arrow, ready to shoot!

[Screeching Siren] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

Having no time at all to hesitate, Zhang Yang immediately patted Whitey and ran behind cover.

The Screeching Siren let out a deafening screech, sending a cone of wave-like patterned attack at Zhang Yang.

‘-1342!’

That attack did a number of damage on Zhang Yang, and at the same instant, it pushed Zhang Yang 5 meters backward.

Screeching Siren took that moment of advantage to reposition herself and let her arrow fly, and it did another 1000+ damage onto Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang brought up the battle logs to find that this monster was capable of using {Sonic Screech}, which inflicts one round of damage to the target and pushes the target 5 meters backward!

Whitey immediately charged back up and Zhang Yang instantly countered the upcoming attacks from the monster.

It was fortunate for Zhang Yang that the rate of {Sonic Screech} used by the Screeching Siren was that high, and the damage inflicted by hunter-type monsters will reduce when players get within melee range. In a nutshell, this Screeching Siren is almost similar to the DPS of a Red-Tailed Lobster Man.

After taking out the Screeching Siren, Zhang Yang continued to push forward. But the next monsters that appeared right before Zhang Yang was a Male Naga, holding a long spear in both hands,

and it was obvious that this monster is a warrior type monster!

# Chapter 336: Mermaids

[Screeching Naga Warrior] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

It's attributes were similar to the Screeching Siren, and it was also capable of using {Sonic Screech}. However, it was a warrior type monster that can perform both ranged attacks and melee attacks, unlike the Screeching Siren that was poor in melee combat! This instantly gave Zhang Yang a small headache. But he took care of it swiftly.

Along the way, approaching slowly towards the center of the palace, any Naga monsters that appeared within Zhang Yang's sight were all put down to the ground by his sword.

Normally, humanoid monsters dropped clothing ingredients, but Nagas were categorized as abnormal types! Instead of dropping clothes, they dropped {Clam Shells}, and Zhang Yang acquired quite a number of pearls from all the {Clam Shells} that he collected.

Half an hour later, he finally arrived at the front of the statue that is located in the middle of the palace. He finally got a good look at it. At the bottom of the statue was a large, round fountain. Although the palace was already abandoned for a very long time, the fountain was still functioning, the sound of water giving a soothing effect.

Splash!

A girl came out from the water in the fountain, silky long hair in black that censored her otherwise naked snow-white body! Her skin was like the finest jade ever, smooth and fine. Only two pieces of shell covered up her boobies like a bra, protecting the pair of significant existence that stood round and tall on her chest.

[Meryl] (Normal, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 70

HP: 7000

Defense: 70

She leaned by the base pool of the fountain, resting her face on her arm as if she was thinking of something.

There were also many female Nagas roaming around the

surrounding of that fountain and they seemed to be guarding the place. It was most probably that they were trying to prevent Meryl from running off, because every one of the monsters looked sharp and vigilant, trying to look out for any suspicious activities around!

To save Meryl, Zhang Yang knew that he had to slay all the monsters in the surrounding!

Zhang Yang patted on Whitey's head and charge onward to engage with those weaker monsters around. Because the skill {Sonic Screech} that these monsters had dragged out battles longer than they should have been, Zhang Yang could not efficiently slay the monsters, and so, it took him about an hour to clear all the monsters.

If he only opened up a path straight to the fountain without taking out all the monsters, he would definitely be swarmed up by the monsters when he is rescuing the NPC. By then, it would have become one against one hundred! Zhang Yang is skillful, but he knew he wasn't capable of going against a bunch of Level 70+ monsters at the same instance, unless --- he had a full set of [Armor set] of Level 80 Violet-platinum grade equipment, he could cut corners!

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had experienced a few similar situations, and he had ran in blindly, without thinking about the consequences! With the experience of a veteran, he knew that he had to do this the hard way.

Slash!

Clearing up the surrounding of the fountain, Zhang Yang struck down the last Naga with his sword, and the monster dropped a piece of Black-Steel grade [Boots]! He could not help himself but to be shocked by it, a Black-Steel equipment, it's been so long ever since he saw one!

After clearing all the monsters around the area, he could finally move on to rescuing the NPC.

Zhang Yang approached the fountain on Whitey, and saw that Meryl was resting by the pool of the fountain. But then, she was awoken by the heavy foot steps of Whitey, and with a face of confused expression, she raised her head up and looked around with her sharp eyes.

The moment she saw Zhang Yang and Whitey, Meryl began to panic, and instantly, she opened up her mouth and began to scream on a supersonic frequency, "Ah---".

Fortunately, the monsters in the surrounding had been cleared out by Zhang Yang, it was a wise move indeed. Her scream would have attracted all the monsters towards them!

Zhang Yang quickly tried to calm her down, "Don't be scared, I'm not a bad person. I've been sent by your father to rescue you."

Meryl only glanced at Zhang Yang as she continued to scream at a deafening frequency.

Should he just pick this little girl up and run all the way back? Zhang Yang took a few steps forward, and Meryl quickly she swam to the middle of the fountain, terrified.

Splash!

The large tail of a fish broke through the surface of the water, the scales of the tail pinkish in colour, and the fish body was extremely beautiful, it was like anything he had ever seen!

Zhang Yang was left with his eyes and mouth opened wide, because, the fish tail is attached to the upper body of Meryl!

Meryl had finally exposed her true form in front of Zhang Yang, with her upper body being a very pretty human girl, while her lower body was the pinkish body of a fish!

--- A Mermaid!

Meryl was actually a beautiful mermaid!

Zhang Yang was confused by the situation, so what kind of transformation is this? What a twist!

Meryl stared at Zhang Yang in alarm, then she began to ask, "Who are you? The guards, there should be guards outside, what did you do to them?"



... Is Meryl really the daughter of that Krishan? Well, Meryl is a mermaid, she would be kin to those Nagas, Lobster Men and the other creatures of the sea.

And of course, Meryl might be a half-blooded mermaid or human or whatsoever, because her mother might have been a mermaid as well, with her father was a human.

"I'm Zhan Yu, an adventurer from the White Jade Castle. When I came across the Emerald Island, I was recruited by your father Krishan to locate you on purpose." Zhang Yang explained to Meryl. As for the Naga guards outside, he did not mention them at all. It was obvious that Meryl is related to these sea creatures. To inform her that he slaughtered them all... It's better to bring that secret to his grave.

Meryl looked at Zhang Yang, and then she closed both of her eyes and shook her head gently, and said, "I can feel that what you are telling me is true. But Zhan Yu, I don't want to go back to that so-called 'home' anymore, please take your leave!"

If he couldn't bring Meryl back to Krishan, then Zhang Yang will never be able to complete his quest, and he will never get his hands on the 3rd piece of the shattered fragment of the key!

So Zhang Yang tried get a better understanding of the situation first, "Milady Meryl, can you tell me why wouldn't you agree to go home?"

Meryl hesitated for a moment before she began to talk, "Alright, you seem like an upright person, so allow me to tell you a story."

She swam back to the side of the pool, pushed her hands against the side of the pool and leaned against the side of the pool. Then she rested her pretty chin on her arm as she slapped the water with her pinkish tail by the side of the pool, which was constructed with white jade stones.

"My mother, Siniia was a princess of the Merfolks race, and she was the most beautiful woman among all mermaids in the entire race! 17 years ago, as she swam up to the surface of a lake while a storm hit by, she was washed away by the wind and waves to a shore of an island, close to death! At that time, Krishan appeared and he saved my mother!"

Wasn't this a fairy tale story where the prince rescued a mermaid princess, making a touching story that made people sing and cry over it? The only difference was that, Krishan is not a prince.

The water droplets on Meryl's body began to dry up, as Zhang Yang stared, that pinkish fish tail of hers began to transform into two long snow-white legs. Of course, the 'important' part was covered up with a seashell.

She knelt down on the side of the pool and hugged her knees, then she continued to tell the story, "There is a rule for every single one of the Merfolks. If any of us is saved by human, we must fulfill one request of the human who save us. What Krishan requested was to take my mother as his wife! However, my mother had already fallen in love with someone else, and she had already

pregnant with me in her womb!"

So now the story has twisted from a prince being not a prince in the story, and now being a bad person who tried to take away other people's wife-to-be!

"My mother begged Krishan to pick another request , but Krishan would not listen! We had to keep the oaths and promises we swore, so my mother had no choice but to marry Krishan!"

Meryl spoke out with a heavy sense of sorrow.

So now Krishan became the 'big bad boss' all of a sudden. From the looks of it, to acquire the fragment of the key, Zhang Yang need not complete the quest that was given by Krishan. All he had to do was to wait for Krishan to turn into an 'enemy' against him and just slaughter him to get that fragment of the key!

"Zhang Yu, can you tell me, is it right or wrong to up hold one's oath?" My mother insisted on upholding her oath, and she ended up living her remaining life in sorrow, washing her cheeks with her own tears everyday, and she passed away at an early age, just like that!" Meryl looked at Zhang Yang with her moist, pretty pair of eyes.

Zhang Yang gave some thoughts about it and said, "It depends on what kind of person are you holding your oath on for! If the person is decent, of course you must uphold your oath for that person! But if the person is bad, upholding the oath would only mean hurting yourself!"

Meryl pulled Zhang Yang's arm over and begged, "So, please don't take me back to that place! Krishan is not my father, but the murderer of my mother! He kept my mother locked in the manor and never let her venture out, because he was worried that my mother would escape!"

"After my mother passed away, his intentions were made clear, he wanted to make me his wife instead! I could only escape during the night and I managed to reach the Merfolks race and begged them to look for my real father to take me back!"

So the truth had been told! But Zhang Yang still had an unsolved question in his mind, so he asked, "If you are willing to go with the Merfolks race, then why did you leave a trail back there with the fragments of your necklaces, the pearls for me to follow?"

Meryl shook her head and said, "Those are not my doing, it should be one of the guards that were ordered by Krishan to follow me! He followed us all the way to the entrance of the cave, that was where he got caught by Gethelo and got imprisoned in a cell. But none of us had thought that he had actually left a trail that would lead you here!"

Just as Zhang Yang and Meryl were speaking, footsteps could be heard suddenly, it was Khrishan and five other elite-grade guards walking into the scene. They immediately surrounded Zhang Yang.

"Adventurer, good job. You have found my daughter for me! Take

this, this is your handsome rewards!" Khrishan took out a bag of gold and threw it at Zhang Yang, "Now you may leave!"

Pak, the bag of gold reached Zhang Yang's hands. It was bulgy and there was probably hundreds of gold coins in it.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The Missing Daughter, acquired 1,000,000 experience points!’

"Warrior, please don't go!" Meryl had lost herself the moment she saw Khrishan, and she quickly sought aid from Zhang Yang in desperation, "Protect me until my real father arrives to get me! Wise, just adventurer, please, lend me your aid!"

‘Ding! Meryl has given you a quest: Buying Time, accept or decline?"

Accept.

[Delaying Time] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Buy enough time until the Prince of the Merfolks arrives to aid! Tips: One of the statues within the fountain contains a secret passage, there are numerous traps along the passage, they should provide advantageous effects to your quest!

Completion: Make sure that Meryl is not taken away within

Zhang Yang reread the quest again and again, and then he whispered to Meryl, "Meryl, quickly, go to one of the statues located at the center of the fountain and look for a secret passage!"

"Alright." Meryl followed his instructions and swam back into the fountain pool, leaving a line of water line behind her. She swam to the center position of the fountain where the statues were located and began her search for the secret passage.

Khrishan was enraged, then he spoke, "Adventurer, are you trying to be funny with me?"

Zhang Yang pulled out his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and pointed at Khrishan, "You low-life sadist, not only did you force another man's wife to marry you, driving her to death, now you actually intend to marry her daughter! Bastards like you shouldn't be left alive! Pui!"

"You bastard! How dare you curse me, the great Khrishan! Kill him, kill him now!" Khrishan raised up his hand and gave the order, and the five elite-grade guards immediately charged at Zhang Yang!

# Chapter 337: Buying Time

---

Krishan immediately turned from being a green-named NPC to a red-named boss monster! Meanwhile, he gained two extra effects on him.

[Twisted Heart]: Attack increased by 1000%, immune to all damage, last for 30 minutes.

[Arrogance]: Movement speed reduced by 50%, however, recover 10% movement speed for every guard dying in battle, last for 30 minutes.

30 minutes of invincibility, game-breaking attack, reduced movement speed. The main idea of the quest was clear: Buying Time! Let's not talk about Zhang Yang for the moment, the system is fair and will not allow any players to have the chance to slack while doing a quest, not even in a quest that requires hundreds or thousands of players to complete, no player shall be able to take advantage of any quests!

Meanwhile, the five elite guards were granted an additional effect {Pursue} on each of them, having their movement speed increased by 100%, lasting for 30 minutes!

Zhang Yang turned around and began to run! He ran around the fountain and began to play 'hide and seek' with the five elite guards. The five monsters were the 'keys' in keeping the restriction on Krishan's movement speed, so he should not even kill any single one of them! Or else, Krishan would regain his

regular speed, destroy Zhang Yang!

The five guards were pursuing Zhang Yang closely, while Khrishan headed towards Meryl.

Zhang Yang was shocked to see Krishan walking towards Meryl. Immediately he jumped into the fountain pool and began to swim towards Meryl as well.

"Found it!" just when things were getting tense, Meryl suddenly found the switch and she shouted with excitement, 'Ka! Ka! Ka!', the bottom of one statue suddenly cracked right open, and right in front of Meryl was a secret passage. The entrance of the passage was extremely small and tight, it seemed that only one person could go in.

"Go in!" Zhang Yang cried frantically. This was one instance where his combat prowess would not be of any use at all.

"There's no water in the passage, I can't get in!" Meryl looked at Zhang Yang hopelessly.

--- a mermaid's tail will only transform into a pair of legs when there is no water at all, and the passage was completely dry!

Zhang Yang had already swam to the side of Meryl, so he picked her up on his back and began to squeeze into the passage with her.

"You imbeciles, go get them back to me at once!" Khrishan roared



at his guards.

"Yes Sir. Khrishan!" All five of the guards quickly squeezed themselves into the passage one after another, pursuing Zhang Yang and Meryl.

Zhang Yang was carrying Meryl on his back while Whitey was following them from behind. The passage was not as dark as he expected as there were numerous blue gemstones adorning the passage walls. Even in the dark, the slight glow from the gemstones gave Zhang Yang limited visibility.

After walking forward for tens of meters, the passage began to widen. It was about 4 meters broad and 2 meters high at the moment, and it was enough for a person to sprint forward without hesitation or worries on crashing into the sides while running!

The footsteps behind Zhang Yang's back could be heard very clearly, the boots of their heavy armor stepping on the solid ground of the passage, the grinding between the soles of their boots and the sands on the ground causing continuous sharp and clear crisps, echoing throughout the passage. As the echos were getting more and more mixed up, it eventually got difficult to differentiate whether the sounds were coming from the front or the back!

Zhang Yang turned his head around for a peek, and he saw the five guards holding torches, hundreds of meters behind them!

As he was carrying Meryl, his movement speed was down to only

80%. He may not feel the weight, but his movement speed had definitely gone down. It was just a matter of time before those guards caught up on them!

Zhang Yang was not too worried about the five guards, but he could not kill any of the guards or else the restriction on Krishan’s movement speed will be lifted and he really steamroll over him by then!

Didn’t the description of the quest mention that there were traps in the passage? About time they showed up now!

Zhang Yang continued running forward while looking around for any possible clues. He ran for another tens of meters and finally, he saw a handle by the wall in front of him.

[Trap Handle] (Item)

Level: 1

HP: 1

Defense: 1

Zhang Yang had no time to hesitate, so he went up to the handle, reached his hands on the handle and pulled it down with his strength!

Ka ka ka!

A stone door smashed down onto the ground from the top of the passage with a loud ‘bang’, blocking the five guards just when they were about to catch up with them. Their fingers were almost reaching Meryl’s hair, before the door shut down for good!

[Defensive Stone Door] (Item)

Level: 1

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 1,000

This door should be able to hold the five guards for awhile here, but if Krishan arrives, the stone door would go down when the big man starts punching it!

As Zhang Yang was moving forward, he saw numerous suspicious glowing pupils approaching. As they got closer, Zhang Yang quickly realized that these actually belonged to huge gray rats, each of them the size of a cat! They were lurking in the dark with their shining, bloodthirsty pair of eyes, giving Zhang Yang a chill down his spine!

[Sewer Rat] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 75

HP: 7,500

Defense: 70

Although they were just normal monsters, their numbers were huge! Zhang Yang saw the seemingly countless rats with his bare eyes and knew that he would not be able to take them all at once!

"Ah --- rats!" Meryl was instantly shocked and let out a scream, and she slapped on Zhang Yang's shoulder continuously as she tried to lift herself higher up on Zhang Yang.

"Of course I see them!" Zhang Yang shouted in annoyance and he put Meryl down. Then he pulled out his sword and activated his {Blast Wave} --- he could not enter combat as he was carrying a person on his back.

Shoof!

A wave blasted out, and in the narrow passage, the {Blast Wave} washed up all the available areas within the passage, going out as far as a distance of 3 meters!

The rats were huge in size, which are about 20+ cm in length and they were tightly packed together in the passage. Up to a thousand rats could be within the space of the 3-meter area!

{Blast Wave} was only limited by distance, and nothing else. Not the amount of targets, or if they were being blocked by others!

Instantly, approximately thousands of ‘-723’ appeared at the same instant and the special effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was triggered. Furthermore, the special effect of the sword was triggered as rapidly as the firing of a machine gun!

‘-723!’

‘-723!’

‘-723!’

...

Zhang Yang was blinded by the damage values that were appearing in front of him, he could only see countless ‘-723’ bombarding his view sight on the screen. If this scenario happened in an older online game, the game could have crashed or players could have been disconnected due to technical errors!

After at least one minute, the numbers finally stopped flashing

up. Zhang Yang could only see a sea of dead rats in front of him, with a relatively small number of rats still alive.

Ji ji ji!

The remaining rats were letting out their raging screech and ganged up on Zhang Yang.

As the cool down of the {Blast Wave} had ended, Zhang Yang threw another {Blast Wave} at the remaining rats, and it was another spectacular scene where damage values danced in the screen!

After the second wave attack, only dozens of rats survived!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and activated his {Horizontal Sweep} and {Thunder Strike} onto the remaining rats, clearing out every single one of them!

These rats did not drop anything, however, Zhang Yang looked at his experience bar, it actually increased by more than a grid!

Holy god! One should know that after reaching Level 70, a player would have to grind for at least 10 days to be able to gain 1 level, and one grid of the experience bar required one solid day in reality to fill up, which meant 3 days and 3 nights of game-time of non-stop grinding. And now, Zhang Yang had just achieved all that in slightly over a minute!

Are there any other methods that were better and faster than this?

The special effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was like a bug when it came to blasting enemies out in AOE style while grinding!

The large number of rats were initially spawned at the spot to block players when the NPCs that were pursuing them were blocked by the stone door. If players could take out all the rats, then they can continue to move forward; but if the five guards broke the stone door before the players could defeat all of the rats, the quest would have likely ended up in failure!

But no one had thought that the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] would be so powerful, and the rats were also being very 'cooperative', squeezing themselves in a tight area of space. Further more, the {Blast Wave} was an AOE that inflicted damage across all targets within the area of it's effect range. With all these 3 conditions together, a miracle where Zhang Yang acquired 10% experience points within one minute became real!

It was so satisfying for Zhang Yang!

So now, Zhang Yang could only hope for more similar traps ahead of them, the more, the better now!

After turning his head back for a peek, he saw that the remaining health points of the [Defensive Stone Door] was still at 920,000! Zhang Yang quickly widened his steps while running forward.

After running for about 3 to 4 minutes, suddenly, Zhang Yang heard a loud and thunderous 'bang' coming from behind, and the crowded sounds of footsteps began to continue again! Zhang Yang knew that it must be Khrishan, he must have arrived at the stone door. Any obstacles would become a piece of thin paper apparently, when Krishan arrives!

But Zhang Yang had already got himself at least a 3 minute gap!

The second handle had appeared right in front of Zhang Yang.

Pulling it down!

Boom! The stone door dropped down and the path was blocked. It also had a similar 1,000,000 health points and 1,000 defense points!

Ji ji ji! Countless sewer rats were approaching from the front gushing towards Zhang Yang.

But in his eyes, these countless rats were oddly cute, maybe it was because of the countless experience points!

{Blast Wave}!

Another spectacular scenario presented itself, with the countless damage values jumping up and down on Zhang Yang's sight view on his screen. It was visible that Zhang Yang was gaining experience point in a very swift manner, and he gained another



12% of experience points on his experience point bar!

Zhang Yang turned to Meryl, and he could not help but to think about losing her after delaying for 29 minutes and giving up on the quest, and then he could restart the quest all over again to take advantage of the experience points by repeating the same process all over again! But it did not seem possible and it was not right to do so. Although Meryl was just a normal-grade NPC at the moment, the quest description had stated that her father is the king of the Merfolks, and her mother was a princess of the Merfolks! She would most definitely be equipped with a sophisticated AI, which meant that she will definitely remember if you ever did something to provoke her!

Meryl felt embarrassed after being looked upon by Zhang Yang with that weird look, so she spoke shyly, "Warrior, please don't look at me with that kind of eyes!"

Zhang Yang laughed while moving forward with her on his back, and at the same time, he began to speak nonsense, "You're so pretty that the sun stayed quiet with your presence!"

Meryl actually bought it, and her face turned red immediately as she blushed. His words was super effective on her, she then rubbed and pinched her face with her hands and shook around without a pause, as if she was very happy but shy at the same time.

After the second trap, it was the third trap, then the forth trap, then the fifth trap... The seventh trap!

A stream of golden light shined upon the entire body of Zhang Yang, and he was elevated up to Level 76 in a magnificent scene!

He felt so satisfied!

However, it was time for him to say goodbye to this fortune he was earning while running away with Meryl. Both of them saw a light source in front of them, and as they were approaching it, the light source was enlarged, and by the end of it, was the exit of the passage, apparently.

Splash!

Enormous waves were stirring up, Zhang Yang and Merul came out onto a half-round platform with Whitey following them closely. On the platform, the three directions were the sides of the cliff around the platform while a lake loomed below them!

Splash! Splash! Splash! Countless Snake Eel monsters emerged from the surface of the lake and began to roam around in the lake, the number was shockingly enormous!

Zhang Yang then turned to Meryl, "Meryl, I'm putting you into the lake, you can just wait in the lake until your father arrives. Then you will truly be safe!"

"No---" Meryl quickly responded and used her two long and white arms to hug Zhang Yang tightly by his neck, "Those Snake Eels are the worst enemies of the Merfolks, they will definitely tear me into

pieces if I go down into the lake now!"

# Chapter 338: The King Has Arrived

---

Zhang Yang took a look at the quest timer. Currently, 24 minutes had passed and there were only 6 minutes left before the King of the Merfolks arrives to get Meryl!

Protect her to the end!

Another two minutes passed, and the five guards had finally come out of the passage and stood right in front of Zhang Yang. They shouted, waving their weapons, and charged towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang flipped onto Whitey and let Meryl climb behind him where she hugged him tightly. After tightening his teeth, he gulped down a transmuted Level-5 [Troll Recovery Potion], with the additional effect of having a 3% rate to recover 25% health points when hit by enemy. It was equal to recovering 0.75% of health points every time the enemy struck him. The health points of Zhang Yang after mounting onto Whitey is about 60,000 points, it would mean that he would recover 450 points every hit!

Furthermore, with the additional effect of the [Troll Recovery Potion], he could probably hold on for a long time!

After activating his {Blast Wave}, the five guards were all stunned!

These henchmen were carrying the effect of {Pursue}, so they could catch up with Zhang Yang and Meryl much sooner.

Furthermore, they ensured that Krishan kept moving at a snail's pace, so Zhang Yang had to keep them alive, he could only use his Status Effect Skills to restrict their movements!

4 seconds later, the five guards had recovered the stun effect and resumed their pursuit of Zhang Yang.

They were like gazelles, Zhang Yang could not shake them off, even while mounted! In just a short while, the five guard had already caught up to him and were hacking at Whitey's plump rump!

Zhang Yang could only turn Whitey around to face them all head on.

If he was alone, Zhang Yang could simply jump down from his bear mount and activate his {Heroic Leap} and {Thunder Strike} to slow down the guards. But now that he had Meryl by his side which appeared to be a burden to him, he could only use Whitey to shield her from being taken away while he was on the mount. Because if he jumped off Whitey, Whitey would switch from being a [Mount] to a regular pet, and the paraplegic Meryl would end up lying on the floor helplessly!

Zhang Yang defended himself from their attacks, constantly moving about to avoid taking more hits than necessary. He was buying time for this {Blast Wave} to cool down, in order to restrict their movements without hurting them too much.

He was losing health points constantly, but he had used a

transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion] which constantly fueled him with some health point recovery effect. He could last for a bit this way!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Heavy steps could be heard approaching the exit of the passage, and then came Krishan from the exit. He revealed a crazy smile on his face and said, "You are not getting away from me!"

Piak piak piak! Meryl was in a panic and she could not stop slapping Zhang Yang's shoulder and said, "Warrior, he has caught up with us! What should we do? What should we do!"

Zhang Yang was getting annoyed by her repetitive questions, and he roared in anger, "If you won't calm down, I'm going to throw you straight to him!"

Meryl was shocked, and she dared not prod Zhang Yang anymore, so she fell completely silent.

Zhang Yang kited the five guards around the platform in circles, while Krishan was like a big boss, following his minions closely.

2 minutes left!

But the five guards were not weak in their assaults as well. Every single hit from them inflicted Zhang Yang with at least 1000 damage, and Zhang Yang had already activated his life-saving skills

once! Now that his health bar had almost hit the bottom again, he could only activate his life-saving skill one more time! It was lucky that his life-saving skill had already cooled down.

1 minute left until the quest timer reaches it's end!

Suddenly, a stream of vertical white light emerged on the surface of the lake from afar, and a tall wave of about two to three meters high was vaguely visible from where Zhang Yang stood. The wave was rolling towards their location aggressively, as if it was intent on washing away everything that stood in its path!

"Zhan Yu, just hold on a little longer, my father is about to arrive!" Meryl was screaming in joy and excitement.

The tide of wave seem familiar somehow. It looked similar to the one that had capsized his boat when he was arriving at the Emerald Island! Could it possibly be that King of Merfolks, was it all his doing?

"Father has no idea where mother is, so he had been searching for her all these years. Sometimes he would release his frustration by stirring up big waves!" Meryl gave an explanation that make sense, "These are the things I was told by Gethelo and the others!"

"Quickly, kill that bastard!" It seemed that Khrishan could feel that something was off, so he quickly commanded his five guards to finish off Zhang Yang.

40,000!

30,000!

The health points of Zhang Yang were decreasing without a pause!

30 seconds left! 20 seconds left!

The high wave was approaching closer and closer by the second, and vaguely, Zhang Yang could see the a shadow of a merman right on top of the wave! The merman held a golden trident in his hand, letting out thunderous roars to express his rage!

"Quickly! Quickly!" Khrishan could not move fast, so all he could do was to command his guards to do it for him!

20,000! 10,000! 5,000! 1,000!

Shoof! One of the guard threw his axe at Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang had already used up all his life-saving skills, and he had been dodging their blows endlessly! But the forth attack was so sudden and near, it seemed like he could not dodge it!

The blade of the axe came closer and closer to his face, if this attack lands on his face, he will be a dead man!

‘Ding!’



Just when everything seemed lost, a golden trident was hurled from afar, deflecting the axe right before it could land on Zhang Yang's face!

The flashing of sparks was blinding!

Kiang!

The golden trident surged with incredible power! After deflecting the axe, it embedded itself, deep into the surface of the rocks in the direction it was flying towards. A third of the trident was already buried in the solid rock!

Zhang Yang had once again escaped death! He let out a breath of relief and turned his eyes to the quest timer. The quest timer had already reached 0:00!

Boom!

The wave had arrived, and the water spouts were splashing all over the platform, causing enormous thunderous sounds all around that shook the ears of everyone within range. The Snake Eels were like small little mud fishes, washed up by the huge impact of the wave! Their dead, white bellies lay motionless above the surface of the water!

It was at that moment, when the merman stepped on the water and leaped over to the ground on the platform. He waved his left

hand and a white light surged through his body. Every single droplet of water on his fish tail was instantly dried up, and the tail transformed into a pair of macho legs. He stood right in front of Zhang Yang like an unmovable mountain!

[Gethelo, The King of Merfolks] (Mythical, Humanoid Creature)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Wow, a very important person (VIP) has arrived!

The moment the timer of the quest reached its end, the two effects on Krishan had also disappeared automatically, and Khrishan had regained his normal movement speed. Of course, his attack had also restored back to his default setting, he was no longer a ridiculous, unkillable being! He pulled out the sword that hung from his belt and said, "Human and Merfolks have a peace treaty, and neither have broken them. That mermaid had made an oath with me, are you trying to go against the oath you merfolks had sworn?"

Gethelo raised his right arm and moved his arm towards the

location of where the trident landed, and the trident emerged from the rock and flew right into his hand.

He spun his trident around in a circle on top of his head and stirred up a strong wind around him. Then he pointed his trident at Krishan and spoke in a calm, commanding manner, "I'm here for my daughter!"

"Father, it was him who imprisoned mother. It was him who forced mother to lived in agony! It was him who pushed mother to her death!" Meryl pointed her finger at Krishan.

Wow, from 'Gethelo' to 'Father' in an instant! She really adapts fast! Because he's royalty?! Zhang Yang thought to himself disapprovingly.

Gethelo was staring straight aright at Krishan with murderous eyes and said, "Human, you dared to imprison my fiance, this crime must not go unpunished! You will pay, now!"

"He forced mother to marry him, all because he saved her!" Meryl began to accuse Krishan of his crimes.

Gethelo was enraged after hearing all about it, and he shouted, "You worthless piece of human, how dare you mistreat my Siniia! Unforgivable! Unforgivable!"

Krishan laughed out loud and said, "So you are the man that Siniia thought about everyday! It was such an unfortunate event

that she could not see you for one last time before she departed from this world!"

"You bastard! Die!" Gethelo was bristling with anger, he waved his trident around and charged at Krishan.

"Haha, then I shall kill you, before I take your daughter for myself!" Krishan was laughing madly while swinging his sword at Gethelo. He barked at the five guards, "Go get them, boys!"

The five guards immediately raised their weapons at Gethelo and charged forward.

"Get lost!" Gethelo let out a thunderous roar and spun his trident around. The swing was swift, and instantly, the five guards were inflicted with a damage of about 30,000 on each of them!

Mythical bosses are indeed strong!

Two seconds later, Gethelo spun his trident once again and did another 30,000 damage to each of the guards! The elite guards only had about 70,000 health points on each of them. After two rounds of attack from the trident, they were only left with not more than 10,000 health points each!

Zhang Yang flipped down from the back of Whitey, and then he placed Meryl at one corner. Now that Gethelo was at the scene, Meryl would definitely be safe!

He used a [Bandage] and recovered 16,000 health points, and then he flipped himself back up on the back of Whitey and charged towards the five guards.

With a {Horizontal Sweep}, he inflicted 4,000+ damage to each of the guards. It wasn't necessary at all, for they were one more swing away from death anyway. He was simply bored of just standing by and watching!

As expected, Gethelo spun his trident around once again and put down all five of the guards on the ground for good.

After taking out the trash, it was natural for Gethelo and Zhang Yang to turn their attention towards the big boss! However, Zhang Yang did not dare charge in front, as all his life-saving skills were still on cool down period, and his health points were far from recovered. If he were to charge into Krishan now, he would just end up being smashed to death!

Gethelo let out a long shout, and he stomped on the ground with an aura emerging from his feet before he charged over to Krishan! Shoof! He stabbed his trident out in an attempt to pierce Krishan's chest.

Of course, Krishan would not just stand there and do nothing about it. Immediately he raised his sword to counter the attack. The two leader-grade NPCs engaged in battle!

Zhang Yang followed Gethelo from behind. He knew that he could not do much damage to the boss, but he could at least lend

his aid to Gethelo by applying five layers of {Cripple Defense} to weaken the defense of the boss! It was definitely better than doing nothing at all!

Furthermore, if the monster is slayed by the NPC all by himself, the player will get nothing at all!

Although they were both leaders, a Mythical grade creature was two grades above a Yellow-Grade! Their levels were different as well, resulting in Krishan being outclassed in every aspect!

Gethelo was stabbing and slashing Krishan with incredible speed and strength.

Splashes of blood were oozing out from Krishan's body in flower-blooming patterns as Krishan was stabbed and slashed by Gethelo. The trident really did a great number on Krishan!

90%, 80%, 70%... Although Krishan had a large amount of health points, it was dropping at an alarming rate!

Krishan would activate his {Tornado Cleave} once in a short while, and very frequently too. He would activate the skill once in every 10 seconds. But Zhang Yang had {Block} to counter the attack, as long he timed his {Block} well enough, he would not have to receive any damage from the boss.

Since that Gethelo was keeping the boss busy at the moment, all Zhang Yang had to do was to reserve his {Block} for the boss's

{Tornado Cleave} attack.

50%, 30%, 10%!

Under the ridiculous onslaught from the Mythical-grade boss, Krishan had no other choice but to die in tragedy.

Shiik!

Gethelo pierced through Krishan's chest with brute force, and then he pulled his trident back out from Krishan's chest and gave another horizontal strike on Krishan's chest, tearing flesh out from the already gaping wound! Fresh blood was oozing out from the cuts on the body!

"No---" Krishan let out a pathetic cry while puking blood as he choked on his own blood. Then he collapsed onto the ground unwillingly and died.

Pak, a silver-white piece of metal dropped from Krishan's dead body. Other than that, the boss did not drop anything else.

Zhang Yang reached out for the silver-white metal piece and picked it up, and immediately, he received a system notification.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: [Key of the Void Fragment 2]!’

Zhang Yang had no other choice, because during the final battle

with the boss, Zhang Yang was just poking around like a small little bee, the outcome would be the same with or without him around! The system was already very generous for giving him the fragment of the key he was looking for.

So now, he would just have to wait to see what kind of reward he would receive after completing this quest!

Meryl and Gethelo had finally reunited, the scene of a daughter reuniting with her father was presented in front of Zhang Yang. Of course, they were exchanging their sweet nothings to each other as warm tears dripped down their cheeks.

After a long while, Gethelo had finally turned his attention towards Zhang Yang, and he thanked Zhang Yang, "Warrior, you have saved my daughter from harm, now I am in great debt with you."

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Buying Time, acquired 10,000,000 experience points!’

Zhang Yang was touched by the moment when they had finally realized that he was still there, even after their most melodramatic reunion.

He said, "Curbing the violent and assisting the weak is just my duty, nothing else!"

Gethelo nodded and said, "The Merfolks will forever be your



friends! Farewell, my friend!"

Are they trying to toy with him? Zhang Yang was just pretending to be modest in front of them and they did not give him anything in return! It would still be reasonable if they didn't give him some legendary weapon, but at least they could have provide him something good!

What kind of stingy quest is this! Only one fragment of the [Key of the Void]!

It was still fortunate that the experience points earned from the quest was really abundant, which elevated Zhang Yang by 1 level! At least it was worth his time after all!

"Zhan Yu ---" the status of Meryl had been elevated by three grades after she had reunited with Gethelo. Now that she had become the 'Princess of the Merfolks', her grade had been elevated to Violet-Platinum grade, and she had inherited all the spells of Gethelo as well. With just a gentle flick of her fish tail, all the water droplets on her tails were gone, and her tail transformed into a pair of long legs.

She walked up to Zhang Yang and bowed to him, and then she thanked him, "Thank you so much for everything you have done for me!"

Since he had already pretended to be modest, let's proceed with it! Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Meryl, I shall miss you!"

Meryl instantly blushed and she smiled, her face was as red as a tomato. She took out a little turtle of a size of a palm out of nowhere and gave it to Zhang Yang, "This is a present that my father gave to me, I have decided that you should have it instead! So whenever you see this little turtle, you will think of me!"

After that, she walked away with a crimson face and leaped into the water of the lake.

‘Ding! You have acquired a new [Battle Mount: Mythical Turtle]!’

Gethelo had a funny look as he witnessed his daughter handing the turtle over, and after staring at it for a while, he too, leaped into the lake. A few seconds later, the father and daughter appeared hundreds of meters away from the shore, riding a wave, leaving Zhang Yang behind.

From afar, Zhang Yang could vaguely see the image of the princess of Merfolks, Meryl blushing in front of him.

He could not help but smile, and then he brought up the attributes of the [Mythical Turtle] to have a look.

[Mythical Turtle] (Violet-Platinum Battle Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Right in the middle of Zhang Yang's backpack, a [Lease of the Mythical Turtle] automatically appeared and occupied one slot of the backpack.

[Lease of the Mythical Turtle] (Violet-Platinum Battle Mount)

Use: Summons or unleash a [Mythical Turtle] that can be mounted on into battle. Movement speed of the [Mythical Turtle] will be reduced by 90% when on land. However, underwater movement speed of the [Mythical Turtle] will increase by 300%, and you will be able to breathe underwater. If you die while mounting the [Mythical Turtle], you can only summon the [Mythical Turtle] again 10 minutes after death. You can only summon one [Battle Mount] at a time. Summon time: 2 seconds.

Required Level: 30

Bound upon pick up.

A Violet-Platinum grade, underwater [Battle Mount]! Awesome! No wonder Gethelo looked like he was having a constipation when Meryl handed the [Mythical Turtle] over to him. It was a priceless gift meant for his daughter afterall!

Zhang Yang could not help but smile like an idiot, because he just

earned something very useful for future usage!

# Chapter 339: Mythical Turtle

---

Because the [Mythical Turtle] was current at Level 0, it could only appear in the form of a small little pet. It was fortunate that this [Mythical Turtle] could be summoned out together with Whitey. Zhang Yang quickly tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to the White Jade Castle, and he picked a spot where there was a large number of monsters and began to train the [Mythical Turtle].

It was fairly easy to level a pet up, in addition to the fact that Zhang Yang was currently engaged with monsters that were Level 70 and above, so the [Mythical Turtle] received an enormous amount of experience points. In just a short while, the little fellow had already leveled up to Level 30, and was immediately upgraded to [Battle Mount] status. With Whitey as the higher level [Battle Mount], the [Mythical Turtle] was automatically unsummoned back into the backpack.

So when Zhang Yang attempted to summon the [Mythical Turtle] out, Whitey was replaced by the presence of the [Mythical Turtle] and was banished into the backpack instead.

Level 30 [Mythical Turtle] had already grown larger than the size of a mature turtle, with a thick and solid turtle shell just like a millstone, covered with blocks of mysterious patterns of lines. It looked very mystical.

[Mythical Turtle] (Violet-Platinum Battle Mount)

Level: 30

HP: 18,930 (with vitality aura)

Focus points: 100/100

Defense: 1,140

Attack: 2,890 - 3,290 (Attack interval: 3 seconds, Damage per Second: 1,030)

Skill 1: [Shared Life] (Passive) : Combine the health points of the owner and the pet together.

Skill 2: [Turtle Shell Defense]: reduce damage received by 90% for the owner and itself, last for 10 seconds. Consumption: 20 focus points. Cool down: 10 minutes.

Zhang Yang was very satisfied, this meant that he had acquired another life-saving skill!

A Violet-Platinum [Battle Mount] is really powerful! Compared to his current [Battle Mount], a level 75 Yellow-Gold which only had a total of 19,800 health points, and an attack range from 4,212 - 4,612, the Turtle definitely did not lose out.

Of course, the [Gold-Eared Bear King] had also learned a skill

{Iron Build}, increasing 30% of the health point cap, and with the addition of the 16% increase from (Vitality Aura), it's attributes still surpassed the Turtle.

However, the movement speed of this [Mythical Turtle] was a huge minus. It was slow! It would take half a day just to move a few steps! The kind of leisurely momentum the turtle had would really give hot-headed people brain cancer! It was fortunate that Zhang Yang had the skill {Pet Taming}, so he need not necessarily mount himself onto his [Battle Mount], he can just let the [Mythical Turtle] take it's own sweet time crawling slowly at the side while he went on to kite the monsters over to the [Mythical Turtle] and let it begin it's killing streak!

In the following days, Zhang Yang spent most of his time and efforts on leveling up [Mythical Turtle], he was now halted by his level when it came to getting the next piece - [Dimensional Key Fragment 4]. He had nothing better to do at the moment. Furthermore, the 7 fragments of [Dimensional Key] had to be together for them to function. So even if he really acquired the 3 pieces of fragment within the Level 80 dungeon map, he would still have to get the final piece in the map of Level 90 dungeon!

His current objective was to level up as much as possible!

On the 5th of February, Zhang Yang and his 'Silky Soft Team' had took part in another match of the Professional League Championship. This time, their opponent were the Angel Wings who they had engaged before during the Soaring Sword Competition, and they had named themselves as the 'Tengfei Technology Team' for the current competition.

This time, the match was a devastating blow to the opposition party, Zhang Yang's party won the match by scoring a 5:0, and they had accumulated 2 more points, placing themselves ahead of other parties with a total tally of 8 points!

And on the next day, Fatty Han and his 'Huatian Team' managed to proceed into their second match of the competition, and they scored 5:4, narrowly keeping a positive revenue of points!

On the 10th of February, Zhang Yang and his 'Silky Soft Party' once again scored 5:1 and secured their victory over the 'Millennium Team' of The Glory, solidifying their first place on the list of points accumulated.

On 13th of February, Zhang Yang had not only leveled up his [Mythical Turtle] to Level 75, he had also managed to level up himself to Level 77!

[Mythical Turtle] (Violet-Platinum Battle Mount)

Level: 75

HP: 38,280 (with Vitality Aura)

Defense: 2,100



Attack: 6,271 - 7,071 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds, DPS: 2,224)

Those attribute points had left Zhang Yang speechless and drooling at the same time! It totally left Zhang Yang's own defense and health points behind! Compared to the regular attack - 2,038 - 2,238 of Zhang Yang, the attack of the [Mythical Turtle] was much more intimidating and terrifying. If it's attack interval can be shortened down any further, it would become a nightmare!

By reaching Level 50, the [Mythical Turtle] had also learned a new skill.

[Tear]: inflicts 120% physical damage to target. Consumption: 50 focus points.

If the [Mythical Turtle] was not so slow on land, Zhang Yang would definitely use the [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll] to 'cut' the {Icy Built} and {Iron Built} from Whitey and transfer the two skills over to [Mythical Turtle] without any hesitation!

Unfortunately, he would have to use the [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll] when he obtains a stronger [Battle Mount] or pet!

This year, the 14th of February was a little special, it was not just a regular Valentine's Day but also China's most celebrated traditional festival --- Chinese New Year!

As Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had basically cut ties with their relatives, they had no one else to celebrate a reunion dinner with. On the other hand, Zhang Yang had been alone for more than 10 years, so when three of them were coincidentally gathered together, they decided to make themselves a reunion dinner. Unexpectedly, Sun Xin Yu did not travel back to her hometown to celebrate Chinese New Year with her family --- one thing was for sure, Zhang Yang knew that she is not from Zhou Su City.

So, on the 14th of February, with Valentine's Day and Chinese New Year stacked together on the same day, all four of them were seated around a table, having their dinner together.

Zhang Yang managed to cook a few dishes and placed them on the table, and the four of them had some red wine as they had some light conversation. As they had been through a lot of bad experiences year after year, they seemed to have forgotten their hardships for the moment, as they spent the entire night together.

That night, they did not log into the game, but stayed up playing some board games till 5 am, before they retired to their rooms, yawning. Of course, they wore their game helmet and logged into the game, as they could play in their sleep.

The moment they logged into the game, they received waves of wishes from the players in the entire server, it was a merry atmosphere.

As Chinese New Year had arrived, everyone was filled with joy. However, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er remained down, even if they momentarily forgot their troubles in the heat of the

celebration. The deficit of the Silky Soft Holding was far worse than they could imagine, although they had sold a number of companies and parts of their holdings, they still could not cover up all of the 'holes' that had cropped up from the damage cause by the internal sabotage!

Silky Soft still had most of its integrity up in view of the public, but banks simply refused to offer them any loans, having had their reputation tarnished to that extent. They might have to wrap up at that rate!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er wracked their brains until they gazed upon a bypassing Zhang Yang. Perhaps he could stabilize their situation after all.

It was safe to say that Zhang Yang had nothing but money!

The Little Merchandize Shop, the Territory, and now a mining cave! The total earnings from managing all these had given him a total of 700 millions in earning! Zhang Yang, being the free-spirited, simple man, was never aware of his own exact net worth, but only knew that he had money. When he did check on it however, he had to pinch his face to make sure that it was not a dream, and that his eyes were not playing tricks on him!

Silky Soft Holdings could be said to be a centipede, because an idiom says that [a centipede dies but never falls down](#), as long as the company survives the hardships, then it could definitely rise back up from the ashes and reborn! Zhang Yang had always had high hopes on Silky Soft Holdings, and since his money was idly resting in his bank account, why shouldn't he take it out and put it to use?

He had a territory, and his Little Merchandize, and also other ways to earn money, so he would always have a stable income!

A centipede dies but never falls down - old institutions die hard

However, his money was not enough to revive the company just yet, because there was still a deficit of 300 million in cash! Now that Zhang Yang recalled, there was a person called Li Ru, and the woman is a rich person. However, he had never thought that Li Ru would immediately agree to help right after she heard about Zhang Yang's request! It left Zhang Yang with mixed feelings, and he was definitely shocked by her instant decision! If he was being untruthful, Li Ru would have been cheated a total of 300 millions! How would she be willing to risk parting with such a sum?!

Li Ru's company could not give 300 millions directly to Silky Soft Holdings, but she had loaned the money from the bank and succeeded on getting 300 million for Silky Soft Holdings.

On the 19th of February, Silky Soft Holdings had released a new announcement on the news report, announcing the two new shareholders: Zhang Yang occupied 21% of the shares while Li Ru occupied 10% of the shares, putting in a successful investment of 1 billion, solving all the problems that Silky Soft Holdings was facing.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had finally gotten rid of their problems, but Zhang Yang had gained tons of new problems!

Because, under the recommendation and support of the two pretty ladies, Zhang Yang was forced to take up the position of a

CEO in the company!

He frowned with sweat all over his head and said, "I don't know anything about economy or finance, let alone on how to be a CEO!"

Han Ying Xue threw a flirtatious wink at him and smiled, "It's very simple to be a CEO, you just have to know how to sign. Pick up a pen, and write your name down! Like what the wisemen say, the secretary will handle things for you, and if there's nothing to handle, then you just 'handle' the secretary. A most favorable position for men like you!"

Zhang Yang flipped his eye balls backward and said, "What do you mean, men like me? If it's so simple, why don't one of go be CEO?"

"Little Snow needs to go to school, and as for me... My purpose is to spend money, not earn them!" Han Ying Xue stated.

Although Zhang Yang was still trying to reject the arrangement, it was 3 against 1, in favor of Zhang Yang becoming CEO. And that was it, Zhang Yang found himself as CEO of Silky Soft Holdings. He had been played by the devilish ladies! On the 20th of February, Zhang Yang was officially the CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings.

Donning a suit, complete with a tie, Zhang Yang walked right into the company with an appearance of a human but the mannerisms of a goofy dog. Whether he was in the elevator or on his way to his office, every employee was greeting him by 'Mr.Zhang', making him very uneasy.

Alright, a man should make a good career sooner or later, and countless people in this world would be envious of the position he is in right now! Zhang Yang comforted himself and continued to walk towards his new office.

After entering the office of CEO, he shut the door tight and took out his game helmet, and he began to play the game from there.

As he was so near to reaching Level 78 currently, he went on to grind for experience points for the entire day, and through his efforts, he was elevated up to level 78 by the end of the day.

On the 24th of February, the S-Rank and A-Rank matches of the Professional League Championship that were postponed due to the celebration of Chinese New Year were finally resumed. Meanwhile, the D-Rank matches of the championship had not acquired a fixed schedule or battle chart for them to compete against each other yet. So if they wished to take part, they could just let the system decide their opponent based on their rate of victory to accumulate points and increase their rate of victory in the championship. Even during the Chinese New Year period, a number of teams had already met the criteria for accumulated points and the rate of victory, and succeeded to be eligible to take part in the C-Rank championship.

When B-Rank championship matches begin, the Professional League Championship of the {{God's Miracle}} shall become a competition fully based on the fixed system.

On the second day of Zhang Yang joining the Silky Soft Holdings as the CEO, he received a call from Fatty Han saying that his old apartment was on fire last night, and everything in his apartment was lost! Fortunately, everyone in the same floor of the apartment was able to escape in time, and no one was killed during the incident!

The cause on how the fire started still remained unknown, the police were still investigating the source of the fire. However, two suspects instantly came into Zhang Yang's mind.

Number one, naturally it would be Liu Wei! That fellow had already being humiliated by Zhang Yang multiple times, and knowing his vengeful personality, he would most probably take his revenge whenever he see fit!

Number two, it might be the fish that got away last time during the Mr.Luo incident, Liu Shu Yan! He had foiled her plans, and this was probably a warning from her!

## Chapter 340: The Flying Dutchman

---

Zhang Yang dwelled in his sea of thoughts. In the end, he felt that Liu Shu Yan was the main suspect. If Liu Wei ever wanted to act, he would have already done so before he entered Silky Soft Holdings. Since it all happened after he had become the C.E.O, perhaps Liu Shu Yan's prime reason in doing so was due to the hatred and the intention to seek revenge on Zhang Yang.

With that thought in mind, Zhang Yang went back and shared his thoughts with everyone, which put everyone on edge, especially Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. They asked Zhang Yang to protect them even more.

Fatty Han took the opportunity to talk to his own gang members. That guy knew everyone in the local community and had even had many underlings. With their help, Fatty Han could investigate the location of Liu Shu Yan. Zhang Yang had mentioned before, that the people with Fatty Han were mostly street thugs. They are not police. They will not follow the legal procedures. They had their own protocols, which was to beat first, and question later. Zhang Yang felt no guilt in doing so, since the woman was never a good person.

However, ever since Liu Shu Yan had left the police station, no one had ever heard from her again. Fatty Han had been sending out his thugs to search for the woman but to no avail. Not even a trace of her shadow could be found in the city. Even though Zhou Su City was not a big place, it still had at least 6 million to 7 million doors to knock on and houses to ransack. And that was on the impression that Liu Shu Yan was not hiding on purpose. If she did try to get off grid, it would only make things worse for Fatty Han



to search for her. It would be like searching for a grain of sand in the middle of the beach!

Imagine a venomous snake is hiding somewhere that you cannot see, and then imagine the possibility of getting bitten by it at any moment, and there was nothing you could do to prevent it. That sort of feeling is extremely uncomfortable. Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er had spent some time to discuss about the matter. They even considered moving to another house. However, before they could reach to a final decision, the little brat had told Sun Xin Yu about their plans and had invited the unsuppressed wrath of the policewoman.

...

On the other side of things, Zhang Yang had spent half of his time in the office as the C.E.O of Han Ying Xue's company, Silky Soft Holdings. Even though his job was indeed as easy as signing papers like what Han Ying Xue had said, to give the work to a secretary, or to do the secretary when there is no work, Zhang Yang was not as sexually-deprived as Fatty Han. It was true that his job was easy, but he was constantly being harassed by the secretaries!

Zhang Yang could not help but feel that Wei Yan Er's late father was a playboy among playboys. He had actually hired six, sexy, booty-licious, badahoonkers, secretaries! Zhang Yang had to use those kinds of adjective to describe them, because they were all Victoria-secret level super models! What a perverted old man...

After Zhang Yang had taken over the C.E.O position, all of the

female secretaries had approached him. One by one, they had used their skills to seduce Zhang Yang. In broad daylight, they would wear overly short pencil skirts and sexy garter belts. Each time they entered Zhang Yang's room, they would drop something on the floor to make a move. They would make sure to moan obscenely to draw Zhang Yang's attention and bend down while sticking out their chest to display their deep cleavages. Either that, or they would bend over to let Zhang Yang see their butts. Zhang Yang could swear that some of them did not even have anything beneath their clothes!

Still, being a man, and not a hypocrite, Zhang Yang took the liberty to enjoy the "view". Whenever the girls came up to him and offered him a show to remember, Zhang Yang would just sit back and relax while the girls did their things. However, things had escalated to a point where the girls would deliver him a cup of coffee a few times a day. The unwanted coffee was one thing, the main problem was the fact that they would "accidentally" drop the coffee and spill some of it onto his shirt, giving them the excuses to make physical contact. Physical contact, meaning, overly sexual rubbing and borderline molestation.

There was even one time where one of the secretaries had spilled the coffee on Zhang Yang's pants. Without even acknowledging it, the girl had bent down, like a hungry wolf, and made her way down to his zippers, and was that close to greeting little Zhang Yang. That crossed the line for Zhang Yang, which led him to publicly have the secretary fired on the spot. With that, the rest of the female secretary were silently warned. Since then, their behavior had changed a 180 degree. From the slutty, sexy girls who would gladly hop on his cock at his command, to smart, casual, serious with work secretaries. They had even dressed decently for a change and were sure to hide every part of their body.

Eventually, after a very short period of time, they had found out that Zhang Yang did enjoy the occasional display of "affection", as long as it did not go over the line. After that, they reverted back to their revealing outfits and came back to being the secretaries who would moan as they bent over, displaying their fronts and their rears. The only thing that had changed in his office was that, he had to get his own coffee.

After work, Zhang Yang would come back to the game and continued his quest to search for the lost Dimensional Key Fragments. Back at the Great Lake Valla, he had ignored all other quests and had only one focus in his mind. Originally, he did not plan to grind in this map since the entire place was practically water. Before a player could get their hands on a flying mount, their movement speed will be greatly affected. However, now that he had Mythical Turtle, things had turned out to be better! Since players had chosen to flock to the other five land-based training grounds, no one else was in Great Lake Valla, thus, Zhang Yang was able to grind to his heart's content, without anyone disturbing him.

Zhang Yang arrived at the lake side and summoned the Mythical Turtle to his side. The Gold-Eared Bear King morphed into an orb of golden light and shot back into his inventory. Zhang Yang hopped onto the turtle's back and commanded it to move towards the lake. The problem with turtle was its moving speed. It moved at an incredibly slow speed to the water, lumbering on its flippers.

Seeing that he was literally moving at a snail pace, Zhang Yang remembered a joke. A snail had fallen sick and had asked a turtle to buy some medicine from the pharmacy on the opposite road. After

two hours of long waiting, the turtle had not returned. Puffing with anger, the snail had bellowed angrily and said, "What is taking that turtle so long?!" Just as the snail had done letting out his frustration, the voice of the turtle could be heard from the outside the door. "Complain again and you'll walk over there yourself!"

Zhang Yang chuckled by himself. Just when the turtle had touched the surface of the water, there was an immediately change in speed. Like a train, the turtle suddenly sped up and he found himself practically flying in the water!

Hmph! Good speed!

The movement speed of the Mythical Turtle was so fast that it trumped the movement speed of the white bear! Furthermore, as expected of a Violet-Platinum tier mount, after diving into the water, a huge air bubble formed around the turtle's back and protected Zhang Yang from the water. The main purpose of him being deep in the water, other than to grind, was to search for the water-specific herb called [Devil's Algae]. This herb could only be found around or in an underwater environment. Any small river or pond would have it, albeit an incredibly low spawn rate. Still, the sheer size of this massive lake accounted for that scarcity! Zhang Yang wanted to collect the [Devil's Algae] to craft [Level 4 Strength Potion]. As the herb was currently not available in the market, he had to harvest them on his own.

‘Ding! You have used Collect on [Devil's Algae]!’

‘Ding! You have obtained [Devil's Algae] x3!’

It was a pity. His Herbalism has reached to the level of Specialist. Collecting herbs in level 90 maps or lower would not increase the profession's mastery level. The herb - [Devil's Algae] was not especially rare, thus the monsters around the herbs were not too strong. It was just a normal tiered monster, Marching Crab that required only three to five hits to kill.

Zhang Yang took his slow sweet time collecting herbs, and killing monsters. In the blink of an eye, Zhang Yang had already collected close to one stack of [Devil's Algae]. There was a sudden bleep in his mini-map. Zhang Yang did not take notice of it, since it was probably just another indicator of a [Devil's Algae]. However, it did not take long before Zhang Yang saw that something was wrong with it. The bleep was moving.

Could it be that the Devil's Algae had gain consciousness and had decided to swim away?

Zhang Yang was extremely intrigued. He then patted the Mythical Turtle and swam towards the bleep. With haste, the turtle arrived at the source of the blinking light. Zhang Yang could not keep a straight face when he saw what was presented to him. It was a huge sailing...NO! Swimming ship! Zhang Yang was close to a hundred meters below sea level and the ship was fully submerged!

The ship was at least 200 meters long. The sails of the ship was still intact and was guiding the massive and grand ship like a huge dragon, swimming majestically under the water. Hanging on top of a rotting old center mass of the ship was a flag with a human skull.

Written on the lower side of the flag were the words "The Flying Dutchman". On top of the ship were many types of wild moss and weeding, and a large portion of them were [Devil's Algae]. No wonder the bleeps in the mini-map could move! Zhang Yang was grateful for this lucky find. The ship was moving at an extremely slow speed, probably the same as the speed of the turtle when it was walking on land. The size made it look majestic, despite the moving speed. Zhang Yang swam alongside ship to have a good look at it.

After thinking thoroughly, Zhang Yang had realized that the name Flying Dutchman was the name of the legendary ghost ship! According to the folklore, the ship once belonged to a group of infamous pirates. They had robbed and plundered a number of treasure! On one fateful day, during one of their usual robbing routine, they had encountered a powerful magician. Even though the pirates managed to kill the magician, they had been cursed by him. As a result, no one heard from them for long. Many had spread the word that the crew members had perished with the ship. In truth, the ship was not destroyed. It merely had been turned into a submarine! That was why no one ever heard from them.

From a distance, Zhang Yang noticed that there were a few skeletons patrolling on the ship. Some of them were cleaning, while some were standing on the observatory platform, looking into the telescope. It appeared that none of them had realized that they had already died, and had continued moving and behaving as if they were alive.

Just then, Zhang Yang realized something. Pirates robbed others of their wealth. Now that they had sunk into the water...there

should be treasure on the ship!

Greatly motivated, Zhang Yang patted the turtle and swam towards the ship like a torpedo. This is a chance that should not be missed. The Flying Dutchman had an entire massive body of water to roam about! If he misses this chance, he could take another long month to search for it!

Once the turtle was alongside of the ship, Zhang Yang immediately dismounted and hopped onto the ship. Two skeletal crew members noticed the intruder and immediately drew swords from their sides and growled at Zhang Yang.

[Flying Dutchman Crew Member] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

‘-6,284!’

The Mythical Turtle snapped its beak and dealt heavy damage on one of the skeletons. At the same time, {Tear} was activated, dealing another 7,620 damage to the same monster. In an instant, a total of 14,000 damage was dealt! This kind of damage can only be

dealt by strong entities! As expected of the Violet-Platinum mount! What a monster!

Feeling extremely lucky to own the mount, Zhang Yang started his own attack on the incoming skeleton.

‘-1,840!’

Even though Zhang Yang was supposed to be ultra-strong, his attack was only a pea shooter compared to the attack of his own pet! After a short skirmish, Zhang Yang had wasted close to 20,000 HP to kill both of the elite tier monster. Zhang Yang took a short amount of time to fully recover, using [Bandages].

Onboard the ship were 10 and more skeletal monsters. Zhang Yang drew their attention with {Spear of Obliteration} and killed them one by one. After clearing every monster he could see, Zhang Yang tried to find his way into the ship's interior. The problem was that the cabin of the ship was sealed shut. If he wants to get inside, he would have to find another way in. Zhang Yang searched all over the ship's rear and gave up, after he could not find any entry points.

He then mounted the turtle and swam towards the bow of the ship. Along the way, he had killed another 10 and more crew members before arriving to the ship's front. At the frontmost of the ship, there was a huge man, wearing the ship captain's hat, steering the ship. The man was shouting commands like, "Man the bridge!" or "Raise the sail!".



[Captain Mordor] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 78

HP: 780,000

Defense: 800

The boss was obviously one tier higher than the normal monster. Having a perfect body with no decaying muscles, the only part that made it non-human were the glowing, emerald green flaming eyes!

# Chapter 341: Floating Clouds Guild

---

Zhang Yang did not rush into the battle with the boss first. Instead, he spent some time to clear out the other monsters, using {Spear of Obliteration} and killing them one at a time. Zhang Yang was not stupid enough to rush into the herd and fight them all once like he usually does. These monsters were all elite tiered. If he rushes in crazily, he would probably be in trouble.

With Mordor standing there, minding his own business, Zhang Yang successfully killed all the monsters without triggering the boss fight. It took him a brief 10 minutes before the boss was the only target left for Zhang Yang to kill. He was still, in fact, shouting commands, as if there were still crew members around to listen to him. Now that everything was ready, it was time for the boss.

Zhang Yang patted the turtle and charged towards Mordor at an amazing speed.

"HM!? Land breather!?" cried Mordor as Zhang Yang entered his range. The boss shifted his hat to one side, drew his curved saber and bellowed. "Lo an' behold, mateys! 'tis time t' shed some blood!"

With no monsters around, Mordor's command was for naught. After a few seconds of unresponsiveness, Mordor turn around and frowned when he noticed there were no one around to assist him. Mordor leaped forward to slice at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang intercepted the attack with a {Block} and counterattacked immediately. Compared to Zhang Yang's sword attacks, the Mythical Turtle attacks were much higher than Zhang Yang, and

were actually causing significant damage to Mordor!

"Curse ye! I'll slice off yer hands 'n feet fer me fishes!" bellowed Mordor with rage as he swung his sword, cutting through the water and striking Zhang Yang's armor with such force that sparks started flying underwater!

Zhang Yang laughed and provoked him more. "You can try!"

"Yer be a small fighter! Ye dare to be spouting nonsense in presence of the great Mordor! I 'ave scuttled more scallywags than ye have eat'n hardtack!" It seemed that Mordor had the mouth to keep up with witty chatterboxes like Zhang Yang!

Out of the blue, the boss thrust his hands out. Right then, the muscles and skin on his hands immediately rotted away, leaving a clean, "meat-less" boney hand, and touched Zhang Yang!

'Ding! You have received the effect of {Decaying Touch}! Defense has been decreased by 100 points! Lasts for 30 seconds!'

Soon after, a second strike came again, causing {Decaying Touch} to gain another stack, decreasing Zhang Yang's Defense by 200! The problem with this skill was that unlike {Cripple Defense}, {Decaying Touch} could be stacked by more than 5 times! In just half a minute, Zhang Yang had completely lost all his Defense!

'-4,572!'

The boss' damage gradually increased as Zhang Yang's defense decreased. Each strike dealt at least 4,500 damage! His DPS was decreased to at least 1,500!

"Ar! Ar! Ar! Ye be impressed! Now ye know how strong Mordor be!" Mordor scoffed through his panting breath as he continued slicing at Zhang Yang with all his might. "Witness the power of Mordor! Water Dragon Rush!"

Shoom! Shoom!

Two tornado-like whirlpools were formed by the swing of the boss and headed towards Zhang Yang. Each whirlpool was the size of a regular human and was at least 3 meters long.

Although Zhang Yang did not know what was the skill about, he knew it was not something that he should touch. Zhang Yang quickly maneuvered the turtle away to safety and attacked the boss from another angle. Since the whirlpools' movement speed were slow, Zhang Yang was not worried about it since they were fairly easy to avoid.

Mordor continued trading blows with Zhang Yang and conjured two more whirlpools. Slowly, the numbers rose. All of the summoned whirlpool moved slowly, and were heading towards the boss's direction. Zhang Yang quickly moved away. Right now, he wanted to kite the boss away from the whirlpools. Although he succeeded in kiting the boss away to a safe location, the whirlpools followed. As if they were conscious, they followed the boss and headed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang frowned, but it was not a huge problem for him. Zhang Yang then kited the boss all the way from the front of the ship to the rear! Luckily, the boss had only 780,000 HP. Since Zhang Yang and the turtle were combined, their DPS had reached to 6,000! He only needed 2 minutes or so to kill the boss off! Zhang Yang used one count of of {Shield Wall}, {Turtle Shell Defense}, {Berserker's Heal}, a bottle of {Level 4 Healing Potion}, a bottle of {Fountain of Life}, and the set effect of the set equipment, to kill the boss without any hitch.

Once Mordor was killed, Zhang Yang had lowered his guard and had recklessly got caught in the whirlpool. He was then sent spinning out of control for 10 seconds before he was able to escape the whirlpools. If he had been caught in them during the battle with the boss, it would have definitely spelled a certain doom for him. Zhang Yang realized his mistake and patted the turtle to speed towards the battle loots.

Mordor's drops were fairly average. Zhang Yang picked up three counts of Gray-Silver equipment and seven Green-Copper equipment. However, he was slightly lucky. One of the Gray-Silver drop was the equipment fragment of the [Fireglass Necklace]. These few days, Zhang Yang had amassed a total of three [Fireglass Necklace] fragments. He had also obtained one fragment from the auction house. Right now, he had gained the final piece and was ready to forge the complete necklace!

Now that he thought of it, he was almost Level 80 before finally managing to forge a Level 70 Assembled Equipment. No one could predict that a Level 80 boss would directly drop a Level 80 Violet-Platinum or Yellow-Gold necklace for him. If that was the case,

this [Fireglass Necklace] would be for naught.

It could not be helped. Assembled Weapons were mainly created to sort of compensate the extreme rarity of high tiered weapons and equipment. If Assembled Equipment were easily obtained, it would completely throw the game off balance, and cause the mass majority of player to seek out Assembled Equipment instead of actual equipment. At this current rate, even players would have the same chance to obtain strong equipment without burning a hole in their pocket, or wait too long before they could obtain one! This balance was to allow a proper scale of power between lower-level players and higher-level players! Everything was set to be balanced!

Zhang Yang kept all the battle loots and was heading to the internal cabin when he noticed something from afar. A group of nine players were heading towards his direction. Zhang Yang was baffled. The map was extremely huge to begin with, allowing players to choose a variety of areas to grind their level. Since that was the case, the players heading towards Zhang Yang were not here to train. Furthermore, Zhang Yang was currently located deep within the lake. Like HP and MP, when a player dives into water, they will have a "Breathing Gauge". Slowly and surely, the gauge will run out and if the player did not resurface to catch a breath, they will be drowned alive! Only those who possess Water Mounts like Zhang Yang could dive deep into the lake to grind.

Now that everything was established, the players did not possess any mounts and were swimming by themselves! Obviously, their main target was the ship! The Flying Dutchman!

The ship was moving slower than a snail could crawl, but it was always constantly moving. Plus, it will always remain underwater! Without guidance from a certain quest, Zhang Yang truly believed that the players would never spend their free time swimming underwater just to search for this ship! Although the movement speed of the players underwater was slow, the ship was even slower. Without much effort, the nine players had arrived the ship's rear. Now that they had arrived, Zhang Yang checked their profiles.

Everyone had the same guild tag "Floating Clouds". Based on their equipment set, he could distinguish that one of them was Guardian, two Hunters, two Thieves, and the four remaining players were Cloth Armor wearers. All of them had the buff "Underwater Breathing", most probably gained by consuming a potion.

Among the nine players, the highest-leveled player there was the person named Wind Up 30 Feet. The lowest level player was Branda Nights at Level 70. Everyone of them noticed Zhang Yang and started raised their guards.

One of them, the Guardian named [Snow.Wolf.Lake](#) (with the dots) approached Zhang Yang and said politely, "Excuse my sir. Could you please shift your business here to some place else? This ship belongs to the Floating Clouds guild!"

Snow.Wolf.Lake: Snow.Wolf.Lake (Chinese: 雪狼湖) is Hong Kong's first modern musical. The title combines the Chinese name of the two main characters; "Wolf" 狼 in the title refers to the main male protagonist, and "Snow" 雪 refers to the main female protagonist. The "lake" 湖 refers to a plot related element.

It was a polite, civil request. However, beneath it, there was an intangible sense of unmeasurable pride and arrogance. Zhang Yang could deal with that. Even if the player was genuinely courteous, Zhang Yang had no intention of surrendering the place to them! In his previous life, he had picked up news that the Flying Dutchman's boss, Van der Waals – Dunkirk, would drop treasure maps! These maps will lead players to a treasure that rewards them with extremely rare and powerful equipment, or even skill books!

However, there were limits. The fourth kill of Dunkirk would not drop any [Treasure Maps]. As per usual, the first kill would have the big drop, the [Treasure Maps] dropped would surely lead to the best of the best items! After all, they were pirates, and they did steal from the best. Still, they had limited lifespans and they could only steal so much in their lifetimes. It was not like the treasure they had amassed could provide for all players in this game.

Zhang Yang could swear that the current boss right now has not yet been killed even once! That would mean the kill that he was about execute would drop the jumbo loot! With a bonus, the [Treasure Map] that the boss will drop later will be the best of the best! That was why Zhang Yang would not surrender the ship to them, for a single, polite sentence. Especially when they were wearing the same expression that practically saying "You should consider yourself lucky that we did not kill you on sight!"

Zhang Yang smiled lightly and revealed his own profile information. He was never a man who favored a fair fight. If his title would scare the nine players away, it would be for the best since he would not want to be accused of being a bully or something.



"Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician's Friend, Hero of Snow Sprite City, Warrior of Centaur, Hero of White Jade Castle, Level 78, Male Human, Guardian, <Lone Desert Smoke>."

The sudden, long title that appeared on his head had clearly scared and blinded the nine players from Floating Clouds.

"H-H-He is Zhan Yu!"

"The leader of the champions of the Soaring Swords Competition! The MVP!"

"The guild master of Lone Desert Smoke!"

"The only guild in China that has two battle teams participating in S – class Professional League!"

Everyone chanted their discovery, and some of them were clearly showing fear. There was a saying, people lived and left the world with their name. Zhang Yang was now, the man greatly feared by almost everyone in the entirety of China!

Snow.Wolf.Lake, assumed to be the party leader of the group of nine, had looked at Zhang Yang and said, "So what if he was Zhan Yu?! He is just one man! And there are nine of us! What are we afraid of?! If we tuck our tails and run away, the name Floating Clouds will forever be tarnished!"

"Right now, we are underwater. We are all slow. He is slow! We have so many ranged attackers! Surely we can kite him to death!" said one Hunter named Heartless Aqua Luna.

Wind Up 30 Feet nodded in agreement. "If we kill him, it will be a massive boost to our guild's name! Also, when he won the Soaring Sword Competition, he won two Violet-Platinum equipment! Perhaps, we could get that off him..."

"That would be a huge bonus!" said everyone with a sudden glint of greed in their eyes.

At the current stage of the game, Gray-Silver tier equipment were the bread and butter for all of the players around. Every piece of equipment could be sold for as cheaply as a few hundred gold coins to a thousand gold coins based on their bonus attributes and effect. Weapons were usually expensive. Even though Yellow-Gold were fairly common now days, those who were wearing Yellow-Gold equipment were part of large guilds. Even then, only the higher officers of the guild had the privilege to put on Yellow-Gold equipment!

Obviously, Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop was a major provider of those equipment, and they were categorized to that of the prices of cars and houses!

Yellow-Gold equipment that turned up in the open market were mostly forged by farming Assembled Equipment fragments which were hunted from Gray-Silver boss! Those were sold up to 10,000 to even 100,000 gold coins! Weapons, rings, and necklaces could go as far to even more than 100,000 gold coins!

Violet-Platinum equipment were literally priceless. You can never find them in the market. Across the entire China region, One Sword Stroke has one, while the rest of the Violet-Platinum equipment were in possession of Lone Desert Smoke!

If Yellow-Gold equipment were worth so much in the first place, what would a Violet-Platinum equipment go for?

1,000,000?! OR MORE!

Just like when Yellow-Gold equipment has made its first debut to the market, the first Violet-Platinum could fetch up to 1,000,000!

There was a reason why greed was among the seven deadly sins. Because of greed, these nine members of Floating Clouds would willingly fight Zhang Yang, not knowing that he would basically massacre them all without a flinch.

The intention to kill had already steeled in their will. Even if they lost, they will only lose a bit of experience points. They stood to gain a lot more from killing Zhang Yang.

All of them started to breath raggedly. Zhang Yang only needed to read their expression to know what they were thinking of. Zhang Yang sighed heavily. If they want a blood bath, so be it. He shall grant them a blood bath.

Shush!

Wind Up 30 Feet shot the first arrow and started the attack.

‘Ding! You’ve been attacked by the Snow.Wolf.Lake party. You have 10 minutes to return fire!’

With the system giving Zhang Yang the green light, all members of Floating Clouds (present at the field) had their name tags turned red.

Zhang Yang lightly hummed and the Mythical Turtle swam like a speeding bullet towards the Cloth Armor class players. Even though he was not sure which was the Priest or the Spellcaster, when the battle starts, the persons having a progress bar above their heads will display the spell names and he could easily differentiate which class was which.

Everyone knew that Zhang Yang had the multi target AoE skill {Horizontal Sweep}. That was why when Wind Up 30 Feet shot the first arrow, all of them had fanned out, not allowing Zhang Yang to catch them all at once.

As expected of the Mythical Turtle, at such an amazing speed, Zhang Yang had arrived at the nearest Spellcaster in just 2 to 3 seconds!

"How is he so fast!?"

Everyone was baffled. Was he using some sort of hacking

program? How could he possess such insane speed underwater!?

‘-6,724!’

‘-8,242!’

The Mythical Turtle attacked once and used {Tear} and had dealt close to 15,000 damage in an instant. That Spellcaster had only over than 13,000 HP. He was killed in such a speed that he was not able to use any evasive skill such as {Ice Frame} or {Apparate}!

Everything that had just happened, happened in a flash!

Whack! Wham! Bam!

All sort of attacks, spells, debuffs had landed on Zhang Yang. But at his current level of equipment, physical attack class equipped with Gray-Silver equipment would be lucky to deal over 1,000 damage on Zhang Yang. On the other hand, Spellcasters’ attacks were strong. Their attacks could easily reach over 2,000!

After the barrage of attack, Zhang Yang only lost close to 10,000 HP. However, he was mounted on the Mythical Turtle, and with both of them sharing their HP bar, Zhang Yang had pushed his maximum HP to 85, 900. With that amount of HP, he was technically far stronger than any elite tier monster around! That 10,000 damage that he had just received was nothing but a mosquito bite!

Immediately, Zhang Yang consumed a bottle of [Mobility Potion] and eliminated the debuff from {Blast Wave}. Zhang Yang controlled the Mythical Turtle and flew towards the other surviving Spellcaster!

Zhang Yang's current target was not as stupid. He knew that the attack from the Mythical Turtle was ridiculously strong. In defense, that Spellcaster activated {Ice Frame} without a second thought.

# Chapter 342: Crimson-Gold Crab

---

The Mythical Turtle mount, possessed by Zhang Yang had given him the highest advantage in underwater battle. Whichever target Zhang Yang chose, the turtle would swim towards his target like a homing missile! On the other hand, the poor enemy could never surpass Zhang Yang speed and could only use skills to evade and survive!

Zhang Yang had the natural athletic ability that was able to move behind his opponent during a battle! That was proven during the fight in the battle arena! Now that he had the Mythical Turtle with him, he was able to chase after two of the Thieves and one of the Guardians, not giving them any single chance to attack him!

Once the Spellcaster had activated {Ice Frame}, Zhang Yang had pulled the reins and had headed towards the last Spellcaster. They had a total of three Spellcaster and one Priest. When he had turned his target to the last Spellcaster, he too had activated {Ice Frame}. Zhang Yang turned around and headed straight to the Priest. Knowing his power, Branda Nights drew in a deep breath, and opened his mouth, and activated {Terror Shriek}.

[Terror Shriek]: Causes fear to all targets within 2 meters, making them to turn around in fear. Lasts for 5 seconds. Cool Down Time: 1 minute.

Zhang Yang responded quickly with {Warrior's Will} and dispelled the effect on him.

Branda Nights was shocked and quickly cast a {Holy Shield} on himself. He knew that he would never beat Zhang Yang in a contest of speed. Since escape was not an option, might as well try to heal a little.

‘-2,726!’

‘-8,073!’

‘-8,874!’

The first attack was greatly diminished by the {Holy Shield}. Close to 4,000 damage was absorbed by shield. However, the next attack - {Tear} by Mythical Turtle and Zhang Yang’s sure Critical strike - {Destructive Smash} had landed cleanly without any reduction in damage. With their combined attack, they had emptied Branda Nights’ 13,000 HP and had him immediately sent to the graveyard!

Two down, seven more to go!

The battle had only started for 5 seconds, and two members were already dead. The party had lost their composure. With the Priest killed, and the other two Spellcaster yet to "come" out of their {Ice Frames}!

Seeing them acting in hysterics, Zhang Yang laughed and shot towards Wind Up 30 Feet.



{Breaking Shot}!

Pak!

Zhang Yang was finally struck. The turtle stopped moving and Zhang Yang's character started to wander like a drunkard in the water.

"Make a move! Have him controlled!" screamed Snow.Wolf.Lake in the party channel. "Thieves! Get to them and have him stunned! Old fart, you first! Have him stunned for 10 seconds with {Ambush} and {Kidney Shot}! Wintermelon! Take turns with the old fart, and we could at least stun Zhan Yu for 40 seconds! I don't believe that we can't kill that guy in 40 seconds! Smokey! Gunner! Get out of your {Ice Frames} and hit him!"

Believing that they may have the chance to defeat Zhang Yang, every surviving member of the party regained their confidence. However, planning to have Zhang Yang killed and actually doing so is a whole other world of difficulty.

A player's movement speed was reduced during underwater movement. After a Thief enters stealth mode, their movement speed will be further reduced! Their speed was so slow that you would be wondering if you were watching a slow-mo video playback! Even though Zhang Yang was rendered immobile by {Breaking Shot} for 4 seconds, it was not enough for either Thieves to reach Zhang Yang! Even if the other Hunter, Heartless Aqua Luna could lengthen the {Dazed} duration by firing another {Breaking Shot}, it was not enough for them to reach Zhang Yang!

During that time, no one dared to attack Zhang Yang. The effect {Dazed} was just a temporarily state of immobility that could be easily dispelled by applying the slightest damage to the target! All of them were waiting for the Thieves to start their chain of stunning before they could attack for as long as 40 seconds!

Zhang Yang grinned. With a sudden twist of his body, Zhang Yang rushed towards the Spellcasters who were already out of their {Ice Frames}. Spellcaster were natural tank-killers. Zhang Yang had to destroy the two targets as his first priority before the others.

‘Apparate’!

Both of them blinked away and were able to move 10 meters away from Zhang Yang. However, even if they could evade the first charge, they could not do the same for the second rush. 10 meters of distance would only take the Mythical Turtle half a second to travel!

Pak! 3 down!

Zhang Yang could not help but feel extremely impressed with the Mythical Turtle during PvP. During traveling, the turtle would regain 50 Focus points, and would ensure that every attack on the enemy could include one normal attack and one activation of {Tear}! The accumulated attack damage would sum up to 15,000! Zhang Yang only needed to plant one more strike to kill most of all the non-tank player characters!

Speed kill! All Spellcaster had been killed without breaking a sweat! Now that his natural enemies had been dealt with, the rest should be an easy task. It took him less than a minute to completely wipe them all flat and send them to the graveyard. The two Thieves gave him the easier kills. Since the beginning, they never had the chance to attack Zhang Yang. Instead, Zhang Yang had managed to catch their movements before they could enter stealth and had cast {Horizontal Sweep}, killing them both with a normal attack and {Tear}.

When the storm hits, there is nothing that you can do!

After clearing the battle field, three of the nine players had dropped a total of three equipment. Zhang Yang helped himself and took them all. Zhang Yang had given them the warning signs, but greed had clouded their judgement and had caused them to pay the price! Everyone would have to take responsibility of their actions!

Zhang Yang took his chance to enter the cabin. However, he did not rush into the hull. Instead, he waited on the inside. If the attackers revived and decide to leave, Zhang Yang would leave them in peace. But if they decide to make a comeback and ambush him while he was inside the cabin, Zhang Yang would be ready to launch a counterattack.

After a while, Zhang Yang saw them reviving. Disappointed in their next actions, Zhang Yang sighed. Humanity's greed is immeasurable! After reviving, they had recovered back to full health and were headed towards the cabin again! However, to the

least of their expectations, they did not predict that Zhang Yang would be waiting for them at the entrance of the cabin!

Zhang Yang consumed a bottle of [Rage Potion (Grade 4 Transmutation)] and activated {Horizontal Sweep} in a swift motion. The attack had caused everyone in the party to be in a disarray. Since they were all heading towards the entrance, they were all grouped together closely. Because of that, the Dark Enigmatic Sword had able to trigger its effect and had blasted them with two waves of 4,000+ damage. All of them had lost more than half of their maximum HP. Zhang Yang then cast a {Blast Wave} and stunned them all shortly. One by one, the turtle had been able to attack with quick snaps, killing them and dropping more of their equipment.

Zhang Yang then leaped into the group with the {Heroic Leap}, stunning them for a longer period. With this wave of attack, three Spellcaster had managed to save themselves by activating {Ice Frame}. However, it only bought them 10 seconds of additional time, and nothing else! In the realm of the underwater, the Mythical Turtle prevailed. None shall escape from it!

10 minutes later, everyone revived again, but this time, Zhang Yang strike preemptively. Everyone was killed instantly since they had only 20% remaining HP after being revived. After three rounds of killing, Zhang Yang had managed to collect a total of 10 Gray-Silver equipment. It was...a great haul?

Zhang Yang waited to strike again but this time, but the bodies that were slowly floating up to the surface disappeared. They had all revived directly at the graveyard! However, Zhang Yang was

cautious. Instead of heading into the cabin immediately, he waited for close to half an hour for them. It could be a trick. They could pretend to have given up and come back again only to strike him from the back. However, as time passed, Zhang Yang had convinced himself that he was being overly cautious. Perhaps, they had really given up, and were scarred for life!

Zhang Yang humored himself and went into the cabin after waiting for 30 minutes.

Inside the cabin were a number of Spectral Pirates. They were all hiding in the shadows and would wait until Zhang Yang was close to them before striking. However, their methods would never work against the combined strength of Zhang Yang and his Mythical Turtle!

After some time, Zhang Yang felt that he had memories of Floating Clouds of his past life. Zhang Yang thought hard. He remembered the name, but could not recall why would he remember them. After killing on and on, Zhang Yang had finally associated them to his memories.

In his previous life, Floating Clouds was a rather famous guild. They had even managed to enroll themselves in the S-class Professional League, with good rankings! The guild master's name was Blue Phoenix. Some said that she was a beauty to behold. There were three vice guild masters. They were called, Handsome Suppressed, Weed Lord, and Tooth Fairy. These four players were best friends in reality. They had been together ever since they were in primary school, all the way to graduation from a university. Their bond was practically unbreakable. Besides their friendship,

the three males really liked Blue Phoenix. This had led Blue Phoenix to be in a tight spot. Since their friendship grew deep, whomever she chooses will lead the same outcome. One of them will be happy and the other two, or three will be sad. Eventually, Blue Phoenix chose Handsome Suppressed.

Weed Lord and Tooth Fairy had nothing to offer but blessings for those two and silently moved out of the love triangle. On the day of their wedding, both Weed Lord and Tooth Fairy had incidentally obtained bad news from the drunk Handsome Suppressed. Blue Phoenix had chosen him was because he had raped her while she was intoxicated and had impregnated her.

This news had led both Weed Lord and Tooth Fairy to be extremely mad and had killed Handsome Suppressed in a fit of anger. Both of them were sentenced to prison for 20 years and 22 years respectively. Blue Phoenix was saddened by the death and had left the game and the guild, leading to the disbandment of the guild ultimately.

When Zhang Yang first joined 'God's Miracle', it was at the time when Floating Cloud was just disbanded. That was why he did not recall much about the guild.

Now that Zhang Yang had thought about it, he was contemplating whether to or not to give a piece of advice to all three of them. Zhang Yang may not be a savior of humanity, but if he could save four players with a lift of a finger, why not?

However, there was the catch. What should he say? Since the incident had yet to occur, and their relationship was as strong as

platinum, it'll just appear that he was antagonizing them! In the end, Zhang Yang sent an anonymous, mysterious, foreboding message to remind them of their friendship and if they refuse to listen, he could do nothing else.

For now, Zhang Yang placed the matter about Floating Clouds at the back of his head and continued on killing more and more Spectral Pirates.

Shush!

A fiery red shadow shot passed Zhang Yang in a flash. Zhang Yang turned just as quick and smiled when he saw what it was. The fiery red shadow was a tiny little crab, roughly the size of his palm. The opaque red shell was so vibrant that it seemed to be dyed in blood. The crab remained stationary and stared at Zhang Yang while snapping its tiny claws. Its eyes were constantly shrinking and popping back out.

[Crimson-Gold Crab] (Rare Yellow-Gold Battle Mount, Beast)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Note: Can be sealed.

Zhang Yang swiftly contacted Han Ying Xue and said, "Hey Snow B\*tch, take the Lover's Charm from Ice cube and come to me. Here's the Yellow-Gold battle mount that you had always wanted."

Zhang Yang could only hear a sudden cry of happiness before she hung up without saying another word. Zhang Yang shrugged and put on the [Lover's Charm: Yang]. Not soon after, a white light flashed and Han Ying Xue appeared right beside him. Shocked, Han Ying Xue struggled for a moment before she could adjusted herself to the underwater environment. Zhang Yang laughed for a bit and handed the [Mermaid's Lungs] to her.



# Chapter 343: The Ghost Captain

---

The Crimson-Gold Crab's main attraction point was that its color was extremely pleasing to the eyes. Perhaps it was because Zhang Yang was reminded of the color of blood. Han Ying Xue was clearly delighted at the sight of it. She quickly took a [Sealing Leash] out and used it on the crab.

The little crab was shocked. Like a real-life crab, it actually tried to run away when Han Ying Xue approached the little critter.

23%...36%...45%...Pak! Fail.

"That's 100 gold coins wasted away!" cried Han Ying Xue bitterly as she took out another [Sealing Lease] and used it on the crab.

17%...57%...89%...100% Success!

This bloody woman's luck is off the charts. She had managed to capture the little crab after two tries! Zhang Yang was feeling a little envious of her when it all changed into pitiful laughter when Zhang Yang tried to imagine how Han Ying Xue would sit on the crab, walking sideways. That being said, now that Han Ying Xue has arrived, she might as well joined Zhang Yang for a little killing spree. It would be nice to have someone healing him.

The two of them proceeded deeper into the ship. Even though Han Ying Xue was slightly slower, Zhang Yang could go on further and take on monsters without Han Ying Xue needing to be present right on the spot during the battle. Zhang Yang had more than

80,000 HP! He could at least hold his own before help arrives. Before he ever got in danger, Han Ying Xue would already reach him and cast a simple {Heal} and a {Regeneration} and be on her way. Other than that, she could do nothing much and gain the share of experience points. The small party of two killed their way in and gained a decent amount of experience points, causing the little crab to almost reach Level 30! It was almost ready to be mounted!

[The Reins of the Crimson-Gold Crab] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Use: Summons or unsummons a mountable and battle-ready Crimson-Gold Crab. The Crimson-Gold Crab can travel both on land and in water, and grant you a 100% increase in movement speed. During underwater travel, the mount will grant the user the ability to breathe underwater. If you were to perish during a mounted status, the pet can be summoned again after 10 minutes. You can only have one active mount at a time. Casting time: 2 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

Bound.

The Crimson-Gold Crab was somewhat a jack of all trades. Its movement speed on land was not too fast, and it was not too slow in water. A jack of all trades, yet master of none. Still, Han Ying Xue was extremely pleased with her catch. After all, she had just

obtained her first mount! A Yellow-Gold at that too! She was so happy that her smile was from ear to ear!

The Crimson-Gold Crab had two skills. The first being the common {Shared Life} and the second one was {Sharp Claw}, which cause 100% melee damage to one target.

When the crab had finally reached Level 30, Han Ying Xue had made herself comfortable on the crab and had started to ride it. Zhang Yang turned to witness the sight and laughed uncontrollably. Han Ying Xue raised an eyebrow and said, "Dummy, do you really think that you're cool when you're riding a turtle?"

"Well, at least I have style. While you...well..." Zhang Yang burst into a huge laughter as Han Ying Xue kept quiet, finally realizing that her crab was walking funny.

"Hmph!" She scoffed disgruntledly. "This maiden simply likes to walk horizontally!" Zhang Yang laughed even harder.

With the mount taking her wherever she wanted to, Han Ying Xue movement speed was increased. Still, her speed could not match up with that of the turtle's, but she never got left behind. With the growing level of the crab, Han Ying Xue was able to contribute a little bit of damage in battle. However, the damage was insignificant due to the level gap suppression.

Without much time, the second floor of the ship was almost cleared. Until they reached the third floor, they came to a small

room and saw a man dressed unlike that of a crew member. He was neatly dressed and was seen focused on scribbling something on a piece of paper. There were many compasses and measuring tools laid messily on the table.

[Navigator Zuro] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 79

HP: 790,000

Defense: 400

Without the help from Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang could easily defeat this Gray-Silver tier boss with a few ulti skills. Now that he had Han Ying Xue with him, he could go wild. Within 3 minutes, Zhang Yang had reduced the boss to a pile of rotting bones, without breaking a sweat.

The boss did not drop anything of value. If only the boss would drop a fragment of the Assembled Equipment, Zhang Yang would have gained some good Yellow-Gold equipment. However, the items that Zhang Yang picked up were all Gray-Silver and Green-Copper. All of those items were fated to end up in the Little Merchandize Shop.

The party continued on and as the Crimson-Gold Crab grew, the

faster the party proceeded. That being said, it would never match up to the Mythical Turtle! With haste, the party took on the third and fourth floor quickly and swiftly. The two of them had finally arrived to a rusty door, where the last boss awaited them behind it!

The last boss was a short, middle-aged man. Although he was small in size, he was well built. Wearing the standard pirate outfit and hat, the most iconic symbol of a pirate captain was the iron hook on the left wrist of the man. The man was lounging at his desk with both of his feet on top of the desk. On the side of his old, rotting wooden chair was an opened treasure chest. He was jubilantly counting the gold coins pieces by pieces as he stacked them on the desk. As he counted, he tossed the coins back into the chest by his side. There was a extremely similar smile on his face that Zhang Yang could immediately identify.

[Ship Captain Edward – Dunkirk] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 1,500

Zhang Yang grinned and turned to Han Ying Xue. "Woman, see that smile on his face. It's exactly the same as yours!"

Instead of being mad of the insult, Han Ying Xue smirked and scoffed. "Oh please. He's not as beautiful as I am!"

"...Narcissistic Queen!"

"Excuse me, this maiden prefers the word confident!"

"You know, I just realized this. Why did you start calling yourself "maiden"?"

"Hmm. Listen here you swine. I am but a young maiden. Besides, I'd haven't...you know!"

Oh my god. This woman is going to cause a whole lot more trouble...

Fearing for what comes next, Zhang Yang quickly ignored Han Ying Xue and rushed towards the boss. "Edward – Dunkirk! Give me all of your treasure!"

The boss' area of aggro effect was huge. Zhang Yang had only stepped two or three steps forwards, and he had already noticed his presence and had lowered his fet from the table. Only when Zhang Yang had provoked Edward with his words, he slammed the desk and closed the treasure chest. He stood up frantically and swept all the gold coins on the desk into his pockets. He walked off the desk and pulled out a chipped saber from his waist and got into his combat stance.

"Ye' be regrettin' ye words, boy! Ay be chippin' flesh before yer popped out from ye mommy's womb!"

DING! CHIIING!

Sparks flew when Edward's sword clashed with Zhang Yang's shield, even when they were underwater. Han Ying Xue was far from where Zhang Yang and the boss was. Instead of joining the fray herself, she stayed back to heal Zhang Yang from a good distance. Han Ying Xue was rather smart. Since the boss could possibly have one or many kind of AoE skills, it was best for her to observe the battle from a safe distance and enact her role as a healer properly.

On the side note, her crab was only Level 58, it would not contribute to the battle much. The risk of her standing close to the boss to allow the crab to attack was not worth the damage!

-7774!

Edward – Dunkirk's attack was strong. With a single, undefended attack, he could easily deal more than 8,000 damage on Zhang Yang, after all the damage reduction and absorption passives! Zhang Yang was a professional Guardian. He would not allow his {Block} to be wasted for even a second. Each {Block} was used right on time to ensure the maximum effective usage would be applied. Thus, within 6 seconds of battle, he had only taken 2 attacks!

In 6 seconds, Zhang Yang would nullify roughly 15,000 damage. The boss DPS would be roughly at 2,500. This kind of attack would

be nothing for Han Ying Xue to handle. Zhang Yang would not need to activate any defensive skills or use healing potions! Even though the boss HP was hellishly long, Zhang Yang could take his slow sweat time to grind him down to zero since Han Ying Xue, the super healer was by his side.

"Ye' scoundrels! Damnation seize ye souls! Ar' smash ye heads in!" bellowed the boss in a fit of anger. With his left hook (hand) raised up high, a ceiling full of gold coins started to rain down!

'Ding! Edward – Dunkirk has used {Mountain of Treasure}!'

Ding! Ding! Shuaaaush!

Countless gold coins rained down upon them and quickly, the flood was practically flooded with gold coins. Quickly, the coins rose from the floor and had already reached to Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's knee levels! Even though they were on mounts, the heavy metal that dropped from the sky had buried them deep in the sea of coins! The massive pressure of the coins had encased the both of them with only their heads popping out of the sea of coins! Neither of them could move!

Wham!

Taking the chance, the boss rushed towards Zhang Yang and attacked him furiously. Worried, Zhang Yang forcefully turn around, ignoring the boss just to check on Han Ying Xue.



"Hey! Dummy! Stop fighting! Quick, take the coins! Let's fill up our inventory with all of these coins!" Han Ying Xue was "swimming" among the coins, dipping her hands in the sea of coins.

What a miser!

Since their characters were trapped, Zhang Yang could not use {Block} and Han Ying Xue could not heal, and from over 80,000 HP, Zhang Yang took a great deal of damage and his HP was reduced down to half in just 10 seconds! Luckily, the skill {Mountain of Treasure} was not permanent. Once the effect duration ended, the coins in the room disappeared into thin water.

"No! Not my money! No!" cried Han Ying Xue in despair. Angrily, Han Ying Xue turned to the boss and glared at him murderously. She went up front to the front lines and fired a {Punishment Ray} at him. "You rotting piece of stinking pirate! Give me back my gold coins!"

"...Woman please, at least heal me first!" Zhang Yang screamed at her.

Han Ying Xue was still puffing with rage. She glared at Zhang Yang and tossed a {Regeneration} and turned back to the boss. Gritting her teeth, she said, "Dummy! Kill this boss and get this maiden's money back!"

"Erm...The money did belong to the boss...not you..." said Zhang Yang awkwardly.

"Listen to me when I'm talking! This maiden's money is this maiden's money!"

"Please stop using maiden this maiden that. No one talks like that anymore..."

"Hmph!"

Edward's skill, the {Mountain of Treasure} was considered to be an ulti skill that was capable of immobilizing every player for 10 seconds! If any other tank were to face the boss in place of Zhang Yang, they would surely have perished if they could not cast {Shield Wall} or {Sacred Protection} in time. On a side note, {Shield Wall} and {Sacred Protection} were two long cool down skills. If the boss's {Mountain of Treasure} was cast every 30 seconds, how could any tank survive?

Here's where battle mounts came into play. They basically extended the HP of players, turning everyone into tanks, and tanks into - super tanks!

If Mythical Turtle rarity was Green-Copper instead of a Violet-Platinum, the bonus HP granted would be at most 10,000! Even with his current equipment, Zhang Yang would face great difficulty in surviving the 10 seconds immobilization! That is why higher rarity battle mounts were extremely valuable!

"Non shall be taking me treasure, laddy!" bellowed Edward again as he swung his sword menacingly at Zhang Yang, creating ripple

of wave with each strike!

Han Ying Xue had stopped attacking and was focusing on only healing Zhang Yang. Even though having a high maximum HP was beneficial in a battle, having 10,000 HP and 100,000 HP gave healers a lot of work! Han Ying Xue had been healing non-stop for sometime and had only managed to restore Zhang Yang HP to over 60,000!"

Slightly annoyed, Han Ying Xue complained begrudgingly. "Dummy! Could you not have such beefy HP?! This maiden is tired of healing you!"

...

"If I did not have that much HP, we would both have been dead a long time ago, "maiden"."

# Chapter 344: Treasure Chest

---

The mechanics of Edward – Dunkirk's skill, the {Mountain of Treasure} were really complicated. There was no fixed interval to it. It could be as frequent as once a minute, or it wouldn't even occur after a certain period of time. If Zhang Yang had not been lucky enough to stumble upon the Mythical Turtle, he would have already been gritting his teeth, thinking of a thousand ways to defeat the boss. As expected from an open-world boss. The game developers had turned off their common sense while designing open-world bosses. There was only one strategy, to take as many players as you can, and to overpower him with numbers! If 10 was not enough, bring a 100. If 100 was not enough, bring 1,000! Or even 10,000!

Edward – Dunkirk was supposed to be defeated via such a crude, inefficient strategy. However, even attributes designed for such numbers were shattered with the appearance of a single Violet-Platinum battle mount! It should have taken more than a thousand players to take on the boss, and yet Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were able to fight the boss. Just the two of them!

As the boss's HP slowly, but steadily dropped from 100% to 80% and 60%, the boss would roar shout out the same old line over every 10% HP loss. "Give up! The booty shall be mine and mine alone!" and after the line which was quickly getting old, he would wave his metallic hook arm and throw sharp hooks with chains in all directions. An iron hook did up to 10,000 damage, and the boss actually sent three waves of hooks out per cast. If players did not have any life preserving skill active, they would surely be killed! Not even the current tanks with their best equipment could survive after taking that huge amount of damage, let alone the other more fragile classes!

Luckily, Han Ying Xue had the Crimson-Gold Crab at Level 58 now and having the rare, Yellow-Gold battle mount had pushed her HP up from 14,320 to 31,240 HP! Coupled with Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}, Han Ying Xue HP had surpassed 35,000 HP, enough for her to endure attacks from the "Meteoric" iron hooks!

Even though there was already the existence of tiers among items, monsters, and bosses, bosses alone were separated by yet another category! Edward was a Yellow-Tiered boss, AND the final boss of a map. A player might be able to defeat a Yellow-Gold tier boss in any random field, but if they think that they could defeat Edward – Dunkirk without paying the blood price, they will only be mopping the floor with their own blood!

It was different for Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. They had underwater battle mounts! It was natural for them to be able to handle a boss such as Edward!

...

After some time, Zhang Yang managed to bring down the boss to 5%! Edward – Dunkirk's green emerald eyes suddenly burst into bright red flames. His entire body was dyed in red as if someone has just showered him with blood. The deep red color of his entire body emitted some kind of ancient power that was not to underestimate.

‘Ding! Edward – Dunkirk has berserk! All damage increased by 100%!’

"Crap! The boss has gone berserk!"

In his normal mode, Edward was already overwhelming, now that his attacks were doubled, that would only spell instant doom for them!

Frantically, Zhang Yang reached out to Han Ying Xue. "Use {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!"

"Okay!"

Shush! Shush!

Two shadows emerged from both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue and headed straight to Edward. The shadow morphed itself into two humanoid warriors, wielding two swords and tore into Edward's body!

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

"GRWAHHH!" The boss bellowed with so much rage that it released a shockwave that pushed them back a few inches. In a flash, the boss waved his hands and cast the "meteor" iron hook

skill. It now had a 100% buff to it!

Zhang Yang turned with such speed and cast {Sacrifice} on Han Ying Xue. He then activated {Shield Wall} and protected both of them. 10 seconds after the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, the boss had still over 150,000 HP. {Shield Wall} ended at the same time!

‘-17,345!’

Edwards sliced Zhang Yang with a quick stroke and dealt the strongest damage Zhang Yang had ever received!

"WTF!? The boss is just too strong!" cried Zhang Yang in horror. "B\*tch! You best stay close to me! If the boss throws another iron hook out, I will use {Vanguard Aggression}!"

As expected, during berserk mode, the boss did not follow his original pace. Just 10 seconds after the first iron hook skill, he cast the same skill over again. Luckily, the boss skipped {Mountain of Treasure}. If he had used both skills at the same time, they would have been dead!

Zhang Yang frowned. His brows were furrowed as he concentrated extremely hard to survive and attack at the same time.

{Turtle Shell Defense}! 90% damage reduction for 10 seconds!

The boss had 100,000 HP left!

...

50,000!

{Turtle Shell Defense} ended. {Rearm}! {Shield Wall}, {Vanguard Aggression}!

40,000! 30,000! 20,000! 10,000! 0!

"NOOOO! Curse...ye..." Edward growled his last as he tumbled down to the cabin floor. His lifeless body floated aimlessly around the cabin like a dead fish.

"Fuah! We did it..." Zhang Yang let out a breath. He had used up all his skills in the process, and if the boss had still survived for a few seconds, the bodies that would be lifelessly floating around the room will be theirs! Anything could have happened! The boss could have done something to turn the table around at any point when he had his last 1% of HP!

Zhang Yang stretched his body and was happy that he survived the entire ordeal. On the extreme end, Han Ying Xue was extremely disgruntled. With a face that could have sent shivers down anyone's spine, she turned to Zhang Yang and said, "...The boss had just attacked us with a room full of gold coins. Yet after his death, he had only dropped 8 gold coins...WHAT.IS.THE.MEANING.OF.THIS!?"



Zhang Yang swallowed his saliva and said, "Calm yourself, woman. I'd rather he dropped a couple of equipment than a few more coins. One Yellow-Gold equipment could be sold for at least a few 10,000 gold coins! Think about it."

"Having equipment is not the same as being drowned in a sea of gold coins!"

"...I think the only two people who would love that would be Scrooge McDuck and you."

Han Ying Xue glared angrily at Zhang Yang but suddenly burst into huge laughter. The two of them happily waltzed towards the loots to collect them. They had collected a total of three Yellow-Gold equipment, eight Gray-Silver equipment. All of them were Level 80. There was one more item, and it was a piece of Treasure Map!

When Zhang Yang noticed the piece of [Treasure Map] he knew immediately that it was the most valuable item that the boss had just dropped. Since Edward – Dunkirk would only drop three pieces of [Treasure Map] in his own "life", the first map will lead to the best [Treasure Chest]!

[Earth Spirit Gauntlet] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +134

Strength: +54

Dexterity: +27

Equip Effect: Absorbs 104 damage upon being attacked.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

Among the three Yellow-Gold equipment, Zhang Yang had obtained a pair of gauntlets. Han Ying Xue had obtained a magic staff. Even though it was not as strong as a Violet-Platinum tier, it was still fairly powerful!

[Bloodstone Staff] (Yellow-Gold, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 1,198 – 1,598

Equip Effect: Increases your magic critical rate by 1%

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

The last piece of Yellow-Gold equipment was a Leather Armor hat. However, despite being a Yellow-Gold tier, its attributes were not too good. The bonus Vitality was too much, while the Strength and Dexterity boosts were too little. It was not suitable for any attacking class. Zhang Yang just placed it together with the rest of the Gray-Silver equipment and kept in his inventory, ready to be sold in the Little Merchandise Shop.

As for the [Treasure Map], Zhang Yang kept it to himself.

"Hey Silly Yu, are we going to hunt for the treasure now?" said Han Ying Xue excitedly.

Zhang Yang nodded. "Hell yeah."

Han Ying Xue smiled from ear to ear. The [Treasure Map] was drawn very explicitly and had indicated that the treasure chest was at the west corner of the Great Lake Valla. The two of them left the ghostly ship and made their way to the treasure chest. Zhang Yang did not want to resurface to travel on land but instead, he insisted to travel underwater, since it was much faster for him, and he wanted to collect more herbs. Although the distance to their destination was far, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue chatted and joked with each other happily without realizing that 2 hours had already passed. They reached their destination and Zhang Yang found his inventory having an additional stack of [Devil's Algae].

The destination was a small island the size of a basketball court (approximately the size of a stadium). The land on the island was extremely scarce and was practically a large, mountainous route. The mountain alone was at least a hundred meters tall! There was a huge, obvious problem with this island. The mountain alone bore no trees. In fact, the entire mountain was completely brown and clean! If one would compare this mountain with the face of a teenager, this mountain must have been taking care of its face really well!

The two of them went on shore. The moment their characters moved out of the water, their clothes were instantly dried, as if they had never been submerged in water. This feature was set to allow maximum comfort for the players.

On land, there was no use riding the turtle anymore. Zhang Yang then unsummoned the Mythical Turtle and brought out the Gold-Eared Bear King in its stead. Han Ying Xue, on the other hand, remain seated on the Crimson-Gold Crab, walking horizontally which led to Zhang Yang bursting into huge laughter.

There were no signs of any monsters spawning on this deserted island, allowing both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue to reach the foot of the mountain relatively fast. They traveled around the mountain, before heading up, since there was literally nothing there to explore. On the far side of the mountain, they found a cave which was blocked by a huge stone. Zhang Yang tried to attack the stone but ended up damaging his sword, losing 10% Durability!

"Stupid me!" Zhang Yang cried in anguish.

Luckily, they found a way to move the stone. It was a door to the cave and could be opened easily. Zhang Yang followed the description of the map and found a palm size round stone sitting on the rock by the side. Han Ying Xue read to Zhang Yang the means to operate the stone and instructed him to turn the stone which acted as a knob.

"Three turns to the left and seven turns to the right, then, four turns to the left, two turns to the right."

"What?? Slowly, woman!"

"Sigh...Three left, seven right, four left and two right."

"Ok...I think I got it!"

Ka Ka Ka ka!

The stone door then turned and rolled to the side and exposed the entrance to the cave. The moment Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue set foot into the cave, the torches on the wall lit up by themselves and revealed the interior of the dark cave.

"Hmph. I would have preferred the door opening by saying "Open sesame!" That would be wayyy cooler!" said Han Ying Xue.

The two of them entered the cave and proceeded deeper. The

cave was huge. It was so huge that Zhang Yang could not even see the ceiling. The pirates had basically hollowed out the entire mountain from within! The place was practically glowing with gold and silver luster! With the light being emitted from the torches on the wall, the treasures glimmered with rainbow-colored lights that filled the place with a vibrant, metallic gleam!

Zhang Yang made a bet with himself that the woman would jump into the sea of treasure and start swimming in it like a certain cartoon duck that he had seen when he was very young.

Among the stacks of treasure, a huge stone statue of a warrior that stood right in the pile of treasure. It was positioned there as if it was tasked to guard the treasure. Zhang Yang kept his guard up worrying that something might trigger a battle. Han Ying Xue, on the other hand, commanded her crab to march right into the sea of treasure.

Ka! Ka! Ka! Ka!

Before she could get off the crab, the stone statue started rattling. Dust that had accumulated on it started to fall off the status. Rock and tiny debris rained down from the ceiling. The entire cave shook.

"None shall take our treasure!" said the statue as it came to life. It opened its eye lids, revealing a pupil-less pair of eyes, and swung the stone axe at Han Ying Xue.

‘-4,892!’

Han Ying Xue jumped and shrieked when she took the damage. She returned to her crab and hurried back to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was already laughing maniacally when Han Ying Xue came to him. "Consequences of being too greedy, woman!"

"Hmph! Stop talking and start killing! Dummy!"

Zhang Yang patted the bear and rode into the fight. He swung his Dark Enigmatic Sword and sliced at the stone statue. A loud crashing sound, accompanied with a bright spark occurred when his sword struck the stone.

[Treasure Guard] (Elite, Tool)

Level: 78

HP: 78,000

Defense: 600

Elite only? Hmph! Small fry!

Zhang Yang and the white bear combined their attacks, while Han Ying Xue assisted them with her crab, and both of their

attacks swiftly reduced the Guard into mere pebbles.

After the short battle, Han Ying Xue was the first one to jump into the treasure pile and scoop up the coins, letting them flow out of her hands. She was behaving like a young girl who was playing with water in a water theme park! Zhang Yang smiled when he saw that adorable part of her. He then got down from the bear and scooped up as many coins as he could, only in a well-mannered way. With each fistful of coins Zhang Yang stuffed in his pocket, the inventory only registered an increase of a few copper coins. The system would never allow a player to have such a sudden gain in fortune.

Despite that, Han Ying Xue was still delighted. While she was having the time of her life, Zhang Yang got busy killing the other Treasure Guards in the cave. There were actually more than one of those statues, placed a certain distance from each other, and Zhang Yang spent some time hunting them so that Han Ying Xue could enjoy her time here collecting all the gold coins. Zhang Yang did not mind having to kill all of the guards by himself since they did provide some experience points.

After slowly collecting and killing their way in the cave, they finally reached the deepest part of the cave after only half an hour. Sitting quietly on the three-meter-long and 1 meter wide stone desk, was a chest that gleamed with a purple luster. The chest was not that huge, yet it was extremely eye catching! On the outside of the chest were carvings of mythical creatures that made the chest look like it was meant for royalty.

"What the...a Violet-Platinum Chest!" Zhang Yang shouted in



surprise when he saw the chest.

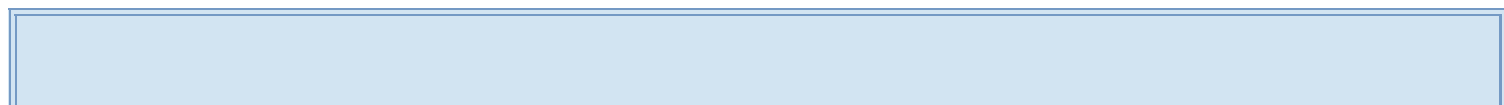
Even though they saw the chest just sitting there, seemingly ready for the taking, they did not throw themselves at it. After the first attack by the stone statue, they had their guards up. Standing guard beside the chest, was another one of those stone statues, only that it was much taller and wielded a huge axe.

Now that he was going to fight once again, Zhang Yang switched back to the Mythical Turtle. Somehow, he knew that the stone statue was going to be at the level of a last boss. Why else would this boss be guarding the Violet-Platinum chest? Even though the Mythical Turtle might be much slower, the attack and HP, not to mention its {Shield Wall}-like skill, completely outclassed the other pet!

Zhang Yang summoned the Mythical Turtle but he did not ride on it. Instead, Zhang Yang rushed to the boss and started the battle.

Cruck! Cruck! Krack!

Countless stone pieces started crumbling down the statue and in mere seconds, the stone statue had "come" alive, and took a huge step forward. Similar to the previous stone statues, this boss opened its stone eye lids, however, it was not the pupil-less eyes that Zhang Yang had expected. They shone brightly like the headlights of a truck!



[Andasia the Guardian] (Yellow-Gold, Tool)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 2,000

"Sigh...What a load of crap. We have the treasure map! Why would we have to go through more bosses?!" Han Ying Xue complained angrily.

Zhang Yang rushed ahead and entered the range of {Spear of Obliteration}. He then activated the skill and hurried back to the Mythical Turtle. There, he got on and waited for the boss to come to him instead. The Mythical Turtle was actually moving, but the speed was so slow that it could be ignored...

"GOOOOON!" Andasia growled and swung his massive stone axe at Zhang Yang.

As mentioned before, even though Andasia might be a Yellow-Gold tier boss, but its strength could not be compared to that of Edward – Dunkirk. After a normal attack, Andasia would have a skill similar to that of {Destructive Smash}. Now that Zhang Yang knew about the skill, he made up a sequence of his skills to counter that skill whenever the boss uses it. With that, there was nothing else to be worried about! To Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue,

Andasia was just an elite monster that had a longer HP and a stronger attack. It was only a matter of time before they could kill him off.

After 20 minutes, Zhang Yang had turned the stone statue into pieces of stone pebbles. It was so easy that the pair was left fuming, thinking that it had not left them any loots! However, they soon realized that they had already obtained the battle loots. It was the treasure that the stone statues were guarding. They were only there to see if players were worthy of claiming the treasure!

"MUAHAHAHAHA! TREASURE! WOOHOO!" cried Han Ying Xue as she jumped on the table and caress the chest like it was her own baby daughter. Her drool almost dripped onto the lid.

# Chapter 345: Blizzard Sky, Luna's Dew

"...Could you please refrain from drooling all over the chest. You're gonna get it dirty!" said Zhang Yang while crossing his arms.

Han Ying Xue pushed herself back up and rolled her eyes at him. She then opened the chest and revealed the haul.

[Titan's Cape] (Violet-Platinum, Cape)

Vitality: +141

Strength: +40

Dexterity: +20

Equip Effect: Absorb 81 damage on attack.

Equip Effect: Grants a 10% chance to reset the cool down of {Block} every time you use {Destructive Smash}.

<Unidentified>

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

It's a Titan armor set!

Zhang Yang was extremely happy. With that, he had collected a total of four pieces of the Titan armor set. With one more piece, he could activate the second set equipment effect!

Great!

"Hoho! This maiden has the best of hands!" said Han Ying Xue as she kissed her own pair of hands.

"Yeah yeah, I'll give you a red packet when we go back. Don't stop now!"

[Heart of the Death Knight] (Violet-Platinum, Accessory)

Equip Effect: Reduces all Restriction effect received by 50%

Use: Immune to all damage and status restriction effect. Increases damage by 50%. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cool Down Time: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 80

Now, this is a real haul! This is too strong to be real! It's a bug!  
No! It's a cheat!

Han Ying Xue turned to Zhang Yang and raised two fingers. Two red packets.

Zhang Yang happily nodded his head. For two red packets, this accessory was definitely worth the trade! The passive skill was able to reduce the effects of all restriction skills on him by 50%! This would definitely be useful during PvP fights! For the final decisive match, the equipment could be the one thing that could turn the entire fight around! For example, when a Thief has chained their stun perfectly, this item could break that chain and help the user engage in a perfect counter attack!

Furthermore, the item had an active skill! Upon activation, the user would be granted 10 seconds of invincibility and increase damage for 50%! Even though the cool down might be a little long, the skill alone was definitely worth the wait! After all, it was a Violet-Platinum accessory!

Han Ying Xue continued digging around, but there was no more equipment. All that was left in the chest were two skill books!

[Paired Skill: Blizzard Sky]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Blizzard Sky}

Special Restriction: Cannot be learned once {Lunar's Dew} is already learned.

Class Requirement: Unrestricted.

Level Requirement: 70

[Paired Skill: Lunar's Dew]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Lunar's Dew}

Special Restriction: Cannot be learned once {Blizzard Sky} is already learned.

Class Requirement: Unrestricted.

Level Requirement: 70

Han Ying Xue crossed her arms and asked curiously. "Hey Silly, what are these Paired Skills? It seems that the two skills books have something to do with each other. Look at the description, it says that one player cannot learn them both."

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Paired Skill are those skills that require help from another person. Like those Wuxia stories, some skills cannot be used alone! It has to be done by a pair!"

"Oh! Like Yang Guo and Xiao Long Nu's Forbidden Lover's Sword? The Sword Art of the Horny Husband and Vixen Wife?"

"...Since when did those two learn that sword art?"

"Beats me. Or is it Fiery Fist of Fury?"

"...You're just making stuff up now. Anyhow, which skill do you want to use? {Blizzard Sky}? Or {Lunar's Dew}?" Zhang Yang was annoyed.

After thinking it through, Han Ying Xue picked the {Lunar's Dew}. "I'll take this. This name suits a young maiden like me! Kinda sounds like a moon goddess, doesn't it?"

Zhang Yang facepalmed himself. Without wasting any more energy dealing with the woman, he took the other skill book and learned it instantly.

[Blizzard Sky]: Deals 5,000 Chaos damage every second to all targets within 30 meters, around the target. Lasts for 30 seconds. During the channeling duration, players must remain stationary. Any physical movements would cause the skill to be stopped instantly. During channeling, players would gain invincibility. Both {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew} must be used simultaneously. Both players have to hold hands to activate the skill. Cool Down Time: 3 Days.



It was a little pitiful that the skill had fixed damage instead of a percentage-based value. It would surely be deserted in the late game stage. Compared to the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew} had a longer cool down, and stronger damage. Best of all, the skill was an AoE type! The major drawback was the fact that both players would have to be holding hands!

"Haha! With {Lunar's Dew}, this maiden will be the strongest maiden in the world! None shall defeat me!" said Han Ying Xue as she laughed into the sky.

"Calm your tits. Anything else in the chest?" snapped Zhang Yang, already irritated at Han Ying Xue's previous antics.

"Hm...There's this broken sword hilt." Han Ying Xue pulled out something that looked like an ancient sword hilt. The condition of the sword was extremely old and brittle. It looked like it could not even be used to crack open a walnut. Useless as it seemed, there were ancient markings carved at the side of the hilt, making it somewhat important.

"...Is this an Assembled Equipment?"

"Nope."

"Then, what is it?"

"See for yourself, woman! I'm not an encyclopedia!"

[Mysterious Sword Hilt]: Use it to induce a quest.

Class Requirement: Warrior, Knight, Thief

Level Requirement: 70

This quest item was the last item in the chest. After Han Ying Xue took out the sword hilt, the chest glowed a little and turned into millions of light particles, dispersing into thin air. Blinking in shock, Han Ying Xue bellowed. "What!? We have been busy for a whole day and this maiden here has busted her butt to serve someone ahem. Why is there nothing for me!"

Zhang Yang dripped a cold sweat. "Well, at least you got a skill out of the deal."

"Please. This is half a skill. Plus, I have to hold your stinky hand to use it! Sigh!" Han Ying Xue sighed heavily and shrugged exaggeratedly.

"Fine. I'm sorry!"

Zhang Yang took the sword hilt from Han Ying Xue, since she could not trigger the quest.

After accepting the sword, Zhang Yang's quest list was refreshed with a new entry.

[Mysterious Sword Hilt] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: You have discovered an ancient sword hilt. You can still feel an ancient power sleeping from within the broken sword! Due to the lack of knowledge, you failed to identify the source of the power from within. However, your instincts tell you to search for an old blacksmith in White Jade Castle call Banderas. Perhaps the elder blacksmith will know something about the sword hilt.

Progress: Ask Banderas about the origins of the Mysterious Sword Hilt 0/1

"Are we going right now?" asked Han Ying Xue.

"Not unless you still want to eat dinner? I could go and get the quest done, but someone might be grumpy later," said Zhang Yang as he raised his eyebrow questioningly at Han Ying Xue.

"Hmph!"

Both of them tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to Thunderstorm Castle. After a long day of battle, both of their equipment durability values were low and were in need of fixing.

From Thunderstorm Castle, Zhang Yang went back to White Jade Castle and had the new equipment Identified, placing them for sale in his shop.

In the past few days, Zhang Yang had been visiting the auction house. He found that there was someone trying to stir up the market by monopolizing all the pet skill books. Zhang Yang had wanted to purchase the skill, {Wild Recovery} for his Mythical Turtle, but had never gotten the chance, since the extremely common skill book was nowhere to be found on the market! Zhang Yang had poked around a little and found out that only the common pet skill books were affected. There were some other pet skill books for sale, but they were sold for ridiculous prices. To think that someone would try to flip prices to such an extent.

Zhang Yang arrived at the auction house and decided to try his luck for a change, however, his eyes almost popped out their sockets when Zhang Yang saw the search result. The books were all there. Thousands of them. However, the price was just too absurd. A few days ago, a {Wild Recovery} skill book would only cost as much as 20 gold coins. Yet, in front of him, were such books being priced at 500 gold coins. What more, the auction price was not placed at a minimum bet. They were all set at a fixed price of 500 gold coins!

How could anyone be that greedy!?

Zhang Yang did a few more taps found the name of the seller. The player clearly did not intend to hide his identity. It was Jurassic Lover!

Hm! It was the same dishonest trader from his past life!

Zhang Yang immediately recalled the name and the person. This player was the same player who once caused a huge market meltdown in his previous lifetime. He was the kind of person that could cause an item in the market to raise up by several hundred percents of its original value. His usual tactic was to buy all item at the lowest price and sell them at a huge marked up price. No doubt, this man knew his stuff. Many times that he had successfully grabbed the business opportunity and became a multi-billionaires by exploiting 'God's Miracle' market.

Eventually, Jurassic Lover's tactic in messing up the market was greatly criticized by the public. Players who had to buy items from him always got riled up upon hearing the name Jurassic Lover.

As of now, values like 500 gold coins were nothing for Zhang Yang, since he had a few more zeros in his own bank account. However, ethically, he was not pleased with the man's dishonest trading's behavior. For him, no matter how much money he had in the world, he would rather throw the money into the river than giving them to the man!

Zhang Yang then decided to buy the item later in the future. Since the particular skill book had a decent drop rate, the price would never remain at that position for long. At most, Zhang Yang predicted that the price would only last for a few days before plummeting back down. He gave up the search for the skill book and headed to the blacksmith to forge out a complete Fireglass Necklace.

[Fireglass Necklace] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +59

Intelligence: +24

Equip Effect: Increases 46 Fire resistance.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 70

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes in frustration when he saw the attributes. Equipment type that increased elemental resistance were not very useful! It was a total waste of an equipment effect slot. This would only cause the equipment to nerf a DPS class player. Luckily, it was at least a Yellow-Gold tier item. Since it was a rare drop, it could still be sold out!

Zhang Yang took out the sword's hilt and handed it over to Banderas, "Master, do you perhaps know about this sword's origin?"

The dwarf blacksmith took over the hilt and examined it carefully. His uninterested expression gradually turned serious, and he gazed up back at Zhang Yang with his tiny eyes wide open. "This sword...hm...I can sense powerful godly energy from this.

Even though there's nothing left except for the hilt, it still has contains some power!"

Zhang Yang was not expecting much from it. Surprised and slightly intrigued, Zhang Yang asked, "Master, do you have any means to restore the sword back to its former glory?"

Banderas shook his head sadly. "The ancient art has long been gone with history. I do not possess the ability to repair the blade of the sword, although I do not claim to be the best blacksmith in the world. Others may be able to do it. However, when I was examining the sword's hilt, I sensed a strong power lying dormant. Perhaps something could happen if you awaken the power!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Mysterious Sword Hilt!’

What a drag! It did not even reward a single point of experience!

Zhang Yang frowned disgruntledly and asked again. "Master. How does one awaken the power from within?"

Banderas picked up the hilt and examined it. He then pointed something out to Zhang Yang. "Look here, there are three magic circles that have sealed the power of the sword. I fear that the power will remain dormant until all seals are broken!"

"Master, how does one break the seal?"

"I'm but a blacksmith, breaking magic circles and seals are not

part of my specialty. Perhaps you should try and search for Margery. She is a magician and a scholar. She could help." Banderas returned the sword hilt to Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Banderas has a quest for you: Consult Margery. Do you accept?’



# Chapter 346: Level 80, Finally!

---

[Consult Margery] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: According to Banderas, you should look for a magician scholar named Margery. Request her help to solve the problem with the seals on the sword's hilt. Margery lives in a place called the Pandemonium. You will face great difficulties in meeting her. Note: Margery will only appear in the Hardcore Mode of the Pandemonium dungeon.

Progress: Obtain the method to unseal the power of the sword  
0/1

Pandemonium would be an upcoming 25-man, Level 80 dungeon. There would be a total of seven bosses from the beginning till the end, which was quite a number compared to the other dungeons he had ever conquered. On a side note, the monsters in the Pandemonium belonged to a specific race and power. Level 10 dungeon had the underground crypt dwellers. Level 30 dungeon had werewolves, and so forth and so on. In this dungeon, however, out of the seven bosses, there were four different forces that were vying for superiority, hence the name Pandemonium.

Now that the quest needed Zhang Yang to raid a Level 80 dungeon, he had to put it aside first. He would need 25 level 80 members, a matter that was out of his hands. Zhang Yang thought of a way, but eventually placed getting to Level 80 as the main priority. He should reach Level 80 as soon as possible and collect

all three Dimensional Key Fragments in the Level 80 map. Now that he had taken such a long time collecting all the keys, he guessed that by the time he has collected all the keys in the Level 80 map, he would have gathered enough eligible players to raid Pandemonium.

Zhang Yang left the blacksmith and went to the bank to take out all the previously collected [Warden's Weed], and went to the Alchemy shop to buy a few empty potion bottles. To concoct a [Level 4 Strength Potion], he would need 2 counts of [Warden's Weed] and 1 portion of [Devil's Algae], which he had already gathered.

...

‘Ding! You have made [Level 4 Strength Potion] x6!’

...

‘Ding! You have made [Level 4 Strength Potion] x6! Due to Alchemist's Intuition, [Level 4 Strength Potion] has been transmuted!’

[Level 4 Strength Potion (Grade 3 Transmutation)] (Usable)

Use: Increases Strength by 100 points, and 3% Critical rate.  
Last for 1 hour.

Zhang Yang had made more than 400 bottles of [Level 4 Strength Potion] in one go. Among the 400 bottles, 32 bottles had the Transmutation effect, and he was extremely lucky to have 2 bottles of Grade 10 Transmutation! The effect was a 10% bonus Critical rate!

It was a pity that players were restricted to only one potion bottle effect at a time. Zhang Yang would love to have both Strength and Troll Recovery potions in effect. Zhang Yang shrugged at the limitations and gulped down a bottle of [Level 4 Strength Potion] before he went on to grind.

In the same time, the Battle Team Professional League was still in progress, with Zhang Yang's Silky Soft Battle Team standing strong at the top of the point accumulation board. They had not lost a single round! Fatty Han's Pride and Honor Battle Team was not performing as well, in fact, they were the second lowest team.

...

On the 9th of March, Zhang Yang reached Level 80! He had obtained 1 SP and learned a new skill. What was more important was the fact that he could finally put on the equipment that he had stashed in his storage bank!

The first, was obviously the Titan set, Titan's Helmet, Titan Greaves, Titan Wall, and Titan's Cape! After that were the two

Violet-Platinum Rings, Ring of Imprisonment, and the Heart of the Death Knight. The last two was the Yellow-Gold tier, Blazing Defensive Boots, and Earth Spirit Gauntlet. The Helmet, Greeves, and Cape had a total of 5 Level 3 Gem Sockets. Level 3 Vitality Gems could provide an additional 50 Vitality, compared to the Level 2 Vitality Gems that could only provide less than half of that, which was 20 Vitality!

Zhang Yang swapped all nine of his equipment and achieved a whole new level of power!

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 80

HP: 69,880 (Inclusive of Vitality Aura and Titan's set equipment set effect, 10,000 HP bonus)

Defense: 2,200

Damage Absorption: 1,658

Weapon Attack: 2,421 – 2,621

With his god-like stats, the only lacking point was his attack power. Even though the Dark Enigmatic Sword was extremely useful in AoE attack, it was only a Level 60 Yellow-Gold. Its single

target attack power was not on the same level as the rest of his equipment!

Now that he had reached Level 80, it was time for him to search for the remaining Dimensional Key Fragments! The first stop was a place called the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night - for an NPC named, Kent Joseph.

There were only three Level 80 maps that he needed to visit. The only reason Zhang Yang had chosen the Grand Canyon, was because it was the closest to him! Still, close was a relative term. From Thunderstorm Castle, Zhang Yang had run close to 7 hours before he arrived at the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night.

As the name described, the place was a huge canyon, with endless folds of earth. This place was dubbed as Eternal Night, due to the dark clouds covering the sky, blocking the sunlight from ever reaching the surface of the canyon. With the absence of sunlight, the place was plunged into an eternal night, causing the lack of plantation, making it a place where Spectres could prosper!

As far as the maps go, Zhang Yang adapted quickly. It was not because he was getting stronger, but because he had fresher memories of the higher level maps. Lower leveled maps like Level 50 maps were not fully explored. There were many of them and Zhang Yang had only ventured through three or four of them before entering the Level 60 border. However, there were only three Level 80 maps. Before reaching Level 90, the majority of players would likely have ventured through all of them a couple of times. However, in his previous lifetime, Zhang Yang had been in the Eternal Night Grand Canyon for the duration it took for him to

gain three levels. In his past experience, Zhang Yang had never encountered any NPC named Kent Joseph. On a side note, his memories about Kalin Town were also quite jumbled. He had to rely on the quest manual to search at the "north" of the canyon. The description was extremely vague and Zhang Yang had to spend more than 7 hours to find the town of Kalin. Kalin was a small, ancient town. It was not abandoned not deserted, it was just old. The buildings were as old as the earth formed over the years. However, the town was brimming with life. There were many people walking around, and it was rather crowded.

Zhang Yang had questioned over a dozen visitors, and none of them knew who or where did Kent Joseph live. Zhang Yang frowned, but since the quest has already led him here, there should be clues as to where he could find the NPC. A sudden idea came to his mind, and that was to ask elder occupants, instead!

Zhang Yang searched throughout the streets and found an older man seated on the sidewalk. He came up to him and asked, "Excuse me, do you know a man named Kent Joseph?"

"Kent?" The man expressed a nostalgic face. "Old John's kid? Little Kent? Of course, I knew him! I remember carrying him in my arms when he was only a little kid! Why'd you ask? Is he back? If he is, he's too late. Old John passed away a few years back, due to illness!"

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow. "Back? Did he go somewhere?"

The old man hummed a little and said, "Roughly 20 years ago, Kent joined the army. We never heard any news from him since!

Sigh...That kid...He was a kind human that was full of justice in his head. He was a nice lad. May the gods bless him!"

Zhang Yang quickly asked more questions. "Where did he joined the army?"

"Hm...if I remembered correctly, he joined the army troops at Black Coal's Sentry. But, I don't think that he will still be there!" said the old man. He then got up and walked away slowly.

Zhang Yang sighed with another piece of vague information that he had just received. With just the name of a place called Black Coal's Sentry as the only hint, Zhang Yang had no choice but to go there.

After a short journey, Zhang Yang arrived at Black Coal's Sentry in an hour. Zhang Yang recalled that he had been there during his previous life. However, he had no recollection of any army troops stationed there. The land was completely dyed in black, hence the name Black Coal. The place was completely devoid of life. There was no trees nor grass growing at all. On top of a small hill were a few old, and torn flag posts. It was clear that this place had long been deserted by the army.

Zhang Yang made his way up to the post and examined the surroundings. Beside the abandoned station, there were many tombstones resting in peace there. Zhang Yang did a head count and counted at least 50 to 60 tombstones there. Each on every tombstone had names of the deceased engraved on them. Zhang Yang examined every tombstone and was stunned when he saw the name Kent Joseph present on one of the tombstones.

Did the descendant of the seven great generals die in the battle?

The quest manual explained the key fragment was in possession of Kent Joseph, and not Old John. Now that Kent was dead and buried, did the quest intend for Zhang Yang to exhume the grave?

Zhang Yang contemplated for a while and finally reached a decision to become a grave robber. Since the only clue left was this grave, he had to do it. What else could he do?

...DIG!

Zhang Yang walked the talk. He jumped down from the white bear and used his Dark Enigmatic Sword as a shovel to dig up the dirt near Kent Joseph's tombstone. The white bear was not left out, it plunged its massive claw into the dirt and helped Zhang Yang dig away.

"STOP! WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!" a voice cried out from behind.

Zhang Yang spun and saw a man at the age of around 40 years old. He was holding a bouquet of flowers that had been completely mushed up in his grip.

[Veteren Soldier Schroeder] (Elite, Humanoid)



Level: 80

HP: 80,000

Defense: 450

Note: A veteran soldier that was stationed here as a Black Coal Sentry.

What timing! He did not arrive early, nor late. He arrived just when he was needed to. It reminded Zhang Yang of an old wizard from a certain western novel. Schroeder had arrived just in time to catch Zhang Yang digging up the grave. It was definitely part of the quest line!

Zhang Yang kept his sword back into its sheath. The white bear followed and moved away from the spot, trying to hide the fact that they had tried to dig the grave. Zhang Yang walked towards Schroeder and asked, "Elder brother, why would you stop me?"

Schroeder was so angry that his face turned from a furious red to the bright rays of the sun! Schroeder was so angry that he was about to engage in an unavoidable fight! Schroeder then tossed the bouquet of flower to the side and clenched his fists. "How dare you disturb those who were resting in peace! Young man! I'll teach you a lesson myself!"

Without any delay, the older man threw a supersonic fist at

Zhang Yang! His name was immediately changed from green to red! Zhang Yang had no choice but to fight this NPC!

Zhang Yang drew his sword hopped on the bear to attack the NPC. Having leveled up to Level 80, the bear's HP was raised to 32,700, with a Weapon Attack of 4,769 - 5,179. Zhang Yang himself had close to 70,000 HP! With both of them combined, their HP had reached beyond 110,000 HP! They had even exceeded the HP limit of normal and elite tiered monsters!

The NPC was completely outclassed! Even his attacks were puny, in comparison to Zhang Yang's. From the perspective of Zhang Yang, his Defense was so thick that the NPC only dealt over 1,300 damage per hit! It was nothing but an itch!

Zhang Yang did not need to rely on any ulti skills that he had. By simple hacks and slashes, Zhang Yang defeated Schroeder! However, his HP was stuck at 1 point left and had gained an immunity status. At the same time, Zhang Yang received a system notification.

‘Ding! You have defeated Schroeder. Please make a choice: 1, Kill him. 2, Ask clues about the death of Kent Joseph!’

# Chapter 347: The Search For Kent

---

What kind of question was that? Clearly, Zhang Yang is not going to kill him!

Zhang Yang withdrew the blade that he had placed right at Schroeder's neck. "Sir. I bring you no ill intent. I am Kent Joseph's distant relative. I have come back to Kalin on behalf of his father. I have to meet Kent. I will never believe it until I see his body!"

Schroeder got back to his feet and dusted off the dirt on his shirt. He got closer to Zhang Yang and asked curiously. "You know Kent?"

"Of course! I'm one of his nephews!" Zhang Yang shamelessly established a close relationship with an unknown person. He did not even know how he looked like. Luckily, Wei Yan Er was not around, or else that little brat would be teasing him for the next few days.

Schroeder's face darkened, "Must you disturb the spirit of Kent?"

Zhang Yang gripped his sword. "I do not believe that Kent would just die like that. Like I said, unless I see his body in this grave, only then I will believe that Kent's soul has been taken by the gods!"

Schroeder sighed. There was a long moment of hesitation going on in his mind, which was reflected in his expression. "You... Sigh...You're right. Kent is not dead. Kent is still alive and

breathing. That coffin beneath the earth is empty. There's no need to dig it up."

"Was that why you didn't want me to unearth it?"

"Saved your time by explaining it, did I?"

Zhang Yang scoffed. He lowered his guard and asked. "Why the secrecy?"

Schroeder sighed again. His expression was twisted between agony and extreme fatigue. It felt like he had grown much older in an instant. "Young man, would you like to hear a story?"

Here it comes!

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "It is a young man's honor to listen to the tales of the elder and experienced."

"Well said." Schroeder's expression was slightly elevated. With a light smile, the man started his story. "22 years ago, I joined the army. You must know, this place was a huge mess. The army I speak out would just be a masquerade for something else. A word used in bad taste. Mercenary, would be a better description for what we were doing since tens of towns paid for our cause. Those of us who joined the army were from poor families. We had to risk our lives for the sake of money! After I joined the army, I befriended Kent. He was a brave and mighty soldier. Unlike me, a man who fought for money, Kent was a man who truly wished to

serve the nation and its people."

"We were brothers-in-arms. Together we had killed Spectres, exterminated monsters, defeated bandits, and had many more adventures! We had become even closer since. Roughly 20 years ago, Kent and I were investigating in a hidden village. There we found out that the village was being raided by a bunch of bandits. Both of us then proceeded to fight. Yet...I..."

There was a sudden Schroeder glint of rage in his eyes. His voice suddenly got louder. "The bandits had masks covering their faces. At first, we didn't care about it. After killing a few of them, Kent unmasked one of the bandits as they fought. It was then when we found the truth. The bandits that we had fought were our own comrades. The same comrades that we fought alongside, under the same banner!"

Schroeder smashed his fist on one of the tombstones. His forceful strike shattered the withered piece of cement. Schroeder did not waver. He even spat on the grave and continued. "Once we discovered the truth, we went back to report about the situation. Yet, to our horror, we were attacked by those who we had called friends. We had just found out that the entire army was in it! They were all bandits in disguise! The bandits were the army! The army was the bandits!"

Zhang Yang had been quiet for the entire time listening to Schroeder rant. In his mind, he thought that having a family and friends who were both your allies and enemies. How could one's life be so ironic?

"However, they had severely underestimated Kent's strength. He single-handedly took down the entire army in Black Coal's Sentry! Everyone at this post was killed! After the ordeal, we calmed down and had a serious discussion about reporting this matter. The problem was that the mercenaries were too wide-spread. They had already formed a strong stance in the hearts of the people. If Kent and I reported this matter to everyone, there will be war. A war so large that it would involve many casualties! Innocents will die! In the end, Kent decided to go anonymous. He hid his real identity and formed a small elite force to take down the Mercenary Leader Cazaro."

Schroeder smirked. "To help his cause, I made a fake grave and spread the rumor about his death. I had spread the fake news that we were ambushed by Spectres and I was the only survivor. No one but me knows about his well-being. This way, Cazaro cannot use Kent's close relatives to threaten him."

Zhang Yang had a little dilemma going on in his head. It was better for him to have Kent dead. Zhang Yang could simply be a grave robber and take the key fragment from this corpse and be done with it. Now that the story had turned out to be this way, a certain manhunt quest awaited Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang thanked the man and asked. "Sir. Do you know where Kent is now?"

Schroeder gazed up to Zhang Yang and said, "Can I trust you?"

Zhang Yang raised his right hand. "I swear by the God of War, I am not on the side of Cazaro! For I am a seeker of justice and

truth!"

Schroeder thought about it for a little while more and revealed the truth. "In that case, I will take your word for it. My instincts tell me that you're a trustworthy warrior! Kent is located at White Stone Hills. He has established a stronghold in the name of a small bandit. However, he has never robbed from the poor. In fact, he had specifically engaged in small battles with the mercenaries to weaken their forces. One more thing, Kent goes by the name of John Smith!"

"You have my greatest appreciation, Mr. Schroeder." Zhang Yang bowed to Schroeder and left the place. He called to his bear and rode towards the west.

After another long journey, Zhang Yang arrived at the steep edge of a large hill. At the hillside, there was a huge creek, measuring approximately 300 to 400 meters tall. There were a few large trees that had grown at the side of the entrance. Zhang Yang walked closer and could feel a cool breeze blowing out from the creek. Zhang Yang followed the trail and move up the hill. In just a few steps, there were two armed huge men ambushed him from a large rock. Without saying anything, the two men jumped at him and began to attack.

[White Stone Looters] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 81

HP: 8,100

Defense: 80

They were only normal monsters in which Zhang Yang had no interest of wasting his time on. With no intention of fighting, Zhang Yang ignored the attackers and head straight on. The two attackers did not stop and followed Zhang Yang all the way up the hill.

"Intruders!" cried three more attackers. They too, attacked Zhang Yang.

If they were not any higher or equal to elite tiered monsters, Zhang Yang would not even draw his sword! He continued on.

After a long journey up, Zhang Yang stumbled upon a large wooden gate. He destroyed it and entered the bandits' lair. Along the side of the pathway were clay houses. All the bandits that were "residing" in the houses came out to attack Zhang Yang. Naturally, Zhang Yang did not attack. Instead, he continued to play chase with them and had formed a long, 100-men or more "train" behind him.

After a short while, Zhang Yang had to stop. There was a boss in his path!



[Team Captain Afael] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 81

HP: 810,000

Defense: 900

Before attacking the boss, Zhang Yang turned around and attacked the oncoming wave of bandits.

‘-o!’

‘-o!’

‘-o!’

...

Zhang Yang’s Defense was that of a bunker, naturally, the bandits were not able to deal any damage to him! Not even a single bit of damage was able to penetrate his defenses!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

A sea of over 5,000+ damage text popped out but did not reoccur.

The attack did not trigger the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect.

Zhang Yang shrugged. It happens sometimes. After the 1 second global cool down, Zhang Yang activated {Blast Wave}. Compared to {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave} attacks were not strong, however, its AoE range was much better and wider since it was considered to be penetrative! The more monsters, the rowdier it got, and the stronger the skill effect would be.

Wham!

More than 20 "-1,093!" damage text popped out with a few being Critical strikes. This time, the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect was triggered and blasted another wave of attack. However, it only triggered once.

10 seconds later, Zhang Yang used {Horizontal Sweep} again, but it did not trigger the sword's effect, until the fifth use of {Horizontal Sweep}, which dealt devastating damage to all.

Zhang Yang had spent close to 5 minutes to deal with all the attackers. All in all, the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect trigger rate had definitely dropped!

Zhang Yang frowned in frustration. Equipment with percentage trigger rate, such as the Dark Enigmatic 2% trigger rate, had a hidden setting behind it! The written trigger rate would only be in effect when the item level and the player's level correspond to each other. However, when the player's level starts to overshoot the item level, the item's trigger rate will be forcefully dropped. The

Dark Enigmatic Sword item level requirement was Level 60. From Level 60 and Level 70, the item trigger rate will remain the same. However, when Zhang Yang had surpassed the item level by a long shot, the trigger rate will drop! Right now, Zhang Yang guessed that the sword effect trigger rate would only be at 1% or less. After Level 90, it would be lesser than 0.5%!

This had been set by the developers, to make sure that players would change their equipment at a faster pace. If they had not set it that way, a low-level item that had superior item effect could be used until late game!

It was a real shame that the Dark Enigmatic Sword could not carry Zhang Yang a little further. This sword was a mass killing machine. Looks like, by all means, the sword could only last until Zhang Yang reaches Level 90 before it will be replaced.

Zhang Yang sighed and summoned the Mythical Turtle out. After Level 80, the Violet-Platinum pet had grown vastly stronger. Zhang Yang had managed to buy the {Wild Recovery} skill book from the auction house when the prices had finally plummeted. So far, the Mythical Turtle attributes were as follows: HP: 50,480 (With Vitality Aura), Defense: 2,400, Weapon Attack: 7,038 – 8,038. It was strong!

Zhang Yang walked a few steps forwards and tossed a {Spear of Obliteration} at Afael. After that, he swiftly returned to the Mythical Turtle and waited for the boss to come to him instead.

"Intruder! You dare to stroll around White Stone Hills?! I'll tear you apart for your imprudence!" cried the boss as he chased after

Zhang Yang, with a large battle hammer in his hands.

BANG!

Like hammering a nail to a plank, Zhang Yang took a strong blow and received 2,982 damage.

A Level 80 Gray-Silver boss was a little stronger than a Level 70 Gray-Silver boss. However, Zhang Yang's defenses had been doubled after reaching Level 80! Compared to when he was only Level 79, the damage received from the boss was almost halved!

Zhang Yang grinned and counterattacked.

Zhang Yang's movement speed while riding the Mythical Turtle was so slow that he could have shoved his middle finger up the turtle \*sshole just to make it walk faster. Still, the boss was not player-controlled. It would never use any kiting technique, and would always head into the battle, and fight with the player head-on without having any strategies.

After laying down five {Cripple Defenses}, Zhang Yang's attack was maximized! Especially the Mythical Turtle. On average, its attack was around 7,500. The boss's puny 450 Defense barely reduced the value! The turtle had over 4,100 DPS which was stronger than Zhang Yang's 3,300 DPS!

As expected from a Violet-Platinum tier battle pet! Such a strong ally!

In contrast, the boss DPS was only at most 1,000! To kill Zhang Yang's current combined HP at 120,000 would need at least 2 minutes! On the contrary, Zhang Yang's and the turtle's combined DPS at 7,400 could easily dry out the boss' 810,000 HP in less than 2 minutes! Zhang Yang could easily defeat the boss without relying on any survival skill!

In truth, with half of his equipment being Violet-Platinum tier, and the Violet-Platinum battle pet, Zhang Yang was the equivalent of a Gray-Silver boss at the same level!

As they continue grinding Alfael's HP down, Alfael stopped attacking at 10% HP. A progress bar appeared on top of his head. It was {Heal}!

While a player {Heal} skill could be cast instantly, Alfael's {Heal} had a 1 second casting time!

Zhang Yang immediately cast a {Crash Magic} but failed!

Immune!

In a split second, Zhang Yang activated the Ring of Imprisonment's effect to force a 2-second stun on a target!

Immune!

What the world!? If he could not even stop the casting, why would it have a 1-second casting time? Might as well make it an instant cast!

‘+202,500!’

A large, green colored number text floated up the boss’s head and Alfael had recovered close to 25% of his HP. Luckily, the boss had Zhang Yang’s {Destructive Smash} effect which greatly decreased the healing received! Now Zhang Yang understood why the boss had a 1-second casting delay, it was to allow players to cast a {Destructive Smash}!

Having healed over 200,000 HP, it was still a futile effort to stop his inevitable death! Zhang Yang ground his HP down to 10% again. With no more {Heals} to cast, the boss could only smash at Zhang Yang and fell dead.

‘Ding! You have killed Alfael. Obtained 810,000 Experience Point!’

The boss only dropped a few Gray-Silver and Green-Copper equipment, which Zhang Yang did not even spare a look and swept them all into his inventory. He then called out the bear and rode his way up the hill.

SHUSH!

A bright flash of light gleamed in the air, and Zhang Yang caught

the sight of a long spear flying through the air. Wielding the spear was a large green orc that was snarling at him with his mouth wide open, revealing a pair of sharp fangs and teeth.

[White Stone Elite Robber] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 82,000

Defense: 450

Now that an elite tier monster had appeared, Zhang Yang would not dare to be too relaxed. After all, an elite monster had a strong attacking power that could easily deal significant damage to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang pulled the reins on the bear and used {Wild Charge}, dashing to the orc to attack it with its paws.

Based on the Gold-Eared Bear King's current attributes, he could roughly stand toe to toe with an elite monster without Zhang Yang assistance! If Zhang Yang were to attack it, it would end the fight so fast before Zhang Yang even started counting down the seconds. As such, the green skinned orc was already lying in a pool of its own blood within seconds.

However, even though he was that strong, Zhang Yang was not able to engage in mass-killing. Zhang Yang's current pushing rate

was massively reduced, due to the sharp decline of the Dark Enigmatic Sword's ability! The bear's attack was at 5,000 while Zhang Yang current attack power was only at around 2,500! Zhang Yang was unexpectedly weaker than his own pet!

He could not even compete with the bear, let alone the Mythical Turtle! Pets that were stronger than their owner! Looks like Zhang Yang would have to get his hands on a Violet-Platinum weapon to make things right for him!



# Chapter 348: Unstoppable

---

It's sad to say that Zhang Yang's pushing speed was reduced, due to him not able mass-kill. Still, it wasn't like he had the attack power of a grunt. Zhang Yang's attack power was still considered to be somewhere among the best. That being said, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were the best among the best! There could be others out there who were stronger than they were!

However, being combined with the Gold-Eared Bear King, Zhang Yang could consider himself as a one-man-army! The most important factor was his Defense. From the beginning till now, Zhang Yang had never needed to sit down to heal himself with any recovery items! If he had an issue with HP, all he had to do was to use {Berserker's Heal}! He was like a perpetual moving machine! This kind of efficiency was far superior to Sun Xin Yu or Wei Yan Er!

After two hours of trekking, Zhang Yang had made his way to the second outpost of the hill and found himself another boss to defeat.

[3rd Commander Balgor] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 820,000

Defense: 900

---

This was another green-skinned orc, with a huge build. He was holding a large Wolf Fang Club that would occasionally be swung around to destroy random boulders in his path. Orcs were one of the first four races that roamed in the Union and were the toughest, sturdiest race among all. Balgor wore nothing but a pair of small leather pants. The hair behind his head was almost a foot long. It was quite manly of him to hunt in the wild. The wind would occasionally blow his hair, making it something like a scene from a movie to emphasize a man's coolness. Even his muscles were so ripped and well built! The six packs in his abdomen looked like shiny, fresh baked bread!

Still, no matter how manly he was, he was just a Gray-Silver tier boss. Zhang Yang had no need to make any sort of preparations to kill him. Zhang Yang only needed to summon the turtle out and draw him into the battle with the {Spear of Obliteration}.

Balgor was considered to be a warrior type monster. Aside from the normal smashing and bashing, Balgor also possessed warrior skills such as {Tornado Cleave} which was used once every 20 seconds, and {Destructive Smash} which was used once every 30 seconds, carrying a 50% healing reduction rate which lasted for 30 seconds! This skill was used so often that Zhang Yang did not have any room to breathe. The good thing was, Zhang Yang had no need of healing at all!

In less than 2 minutes, Zhang Yang had hacked Balgor up and made him his b\*tch! Balgor dropped a few Gray-Silver and Green Copper equipment that were not worth mentioning. There was also a piece of Alchemy recipe, meant for making Level 4 Healing

Potions.

Even though Zhang Yang could easily buy [Level 4 Healing Potion] from shops, it was just too expensive to buy in bulk. It was always better to concoct them on his own. Money was nothing to him, but the skill {Alchemist’s Intuition} was! He could concoct a potion that could possess a Transmutation effect! Since he never made any healing potions, he did not know what the bonus effects would be.

After clearing the boss up and collecting all the goods, Zhang Yang recalled the bear and rode further up the hill.

Along the way, Zhang Yang only encountered elite monsters. Since it was taking quite some time, Zhang Yang went on and harvested some herbs on the side. The herb [Purple Seed Orchid] was all over the hill in abundance. These herbs could be used to concoct [Blazing Potions] which could enhance a Pyromancer’s attack. Overall, Zhang Yang had taken four hours, plowing through the hill. He had collected a total of 132 [Purple Seed Orchid] before he reached the third boss.

[2nd Commander Gullini] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 83

HP: 1,660,000

Defense: 1,500

After entering Level 80 maps, Yellow-Gold bosses were much weaker. If Zhang Yang was in a Level 70 map, Gullini's HP would surely be at least 8,000,000! However, after Level 80 maps, Yellow-Gold bosses would be downgraded to make way for the superior Violet-Platinum bosses.

Gullini was a tiny little Gnome. Like Orcs, Gnomes had a similar green colored outer skin. However, they possessed smaller bodies, comparable to Dwarves! Zhang Yang wondered how did the Dwarves end up being named "Dwarves" since the Gnomes were obviously smaller! On the side note, Gnomes had trademark features such as long, sharp noses like Pinocchio. They had no hair on their scalps. Their scalps were so free of hair that they could be used as mirrors!

Gullini was seen standing guard on the route. In his right hand was a large battle axe that was taller than he was. In his left hand was a shield. He was obviously a tank class monster!

Zhang Yang stopped and called out the turtle. Now, Zhang Yang had the utmost confidence to fight a Yellow-Gold boss all by himself!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-5,380!’ Critical!

How lucky! A critical strike!

Gullini bellowed angrily and brandished his axe, rushing towards Zhang Yang. "Human! You dare to attack the great Gullini!? Gullini will smash you into bits and make stew out of you!"

Zhang Yang hopped on the turtle and waited for the boss to come to him.

‘-6,024!’

‘-7,423!’

‘-1,976!’

The Mythical Turtle had attacked with a normal attack, followed by a {Tear}, coupled with Zhang Yang’s own normal attack. They had instantly dealt more than 15,000 damage on the boss.

"URGH! What power! You’ve hurt the great Gullini!" cried the boss as he retaliated.

{Block}!

‘-383!’ {Block} reflect damage.

‘-1,516!’ {Shield Bash}.

Zhang Yang had not activated the Titan's set equipment second set effect. With that, he could double the attack of {Shield Bash} to greatly increase his DPS.

{Block}!

‘-582!’

Since the boss' Defense was so strong, Zhang Yang had first used {Cripple Defense} on him. However, on the second {Cripple Defense}, the boss had suddenly raised his shield and blocked Zhang Yang attack. What that was surprising, was not the use of {Block}, but the fact that he could still deal 582 damage on Zhang Yang, even with Zhang Yang's greatly upgraded defense! Zhang Yang calculated that the boss' minimum damage was at least 5,000!

As expected from the boss, if a player could deal 5,000 damage on damage reflect of {Block}. He must have 5,000 Strength! Right now, Zhang Yang only had 1,133 Strength points, which was very far from what he wanted to reach!

This battle is a match between a super tank and a super tank!

Player had dubbed tanks as turtles since their Defense values were as strong as turtle shells. That is why, right now, there was a total of two, NO, THREE NINJA TURTLES, FIGHTING EACH OTHER!

Like Zhang Yang, the boss could use {Block} to negate Zhang Yang attacks. However, the boss' {Block} cool down was as long as 15 seconds, whereas Zhang Yang's {Block} was only 6 seconds long. Any tank that did not invest in {Block} first, are useless tanks!

Gullini had all the basic Guardian skills like {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}, and {Shield Bash}. Luckily, he did not have the passive skill - {Shield Oath}, which could reduce 20% incoming damage. The boss' damage was quite devastating since his normal attack could deal as much as 6,000 damage! Even with Zhang Yang's 6 seconds {Block} cool down rate, the boss DPS reached as high as 2,000!

In less than 1 minute, Zhang Yang was already beaten down to his last drop of HP.

{Berserker's Heal}!

'+120,360!'

That exaggerating healing power that had just restored all of Zhang Yang health. It could easily cause the shock of any healer, even Han Ying Xue! Still, even with Zhang Yang's and the Mythical Turtle's combined attacks, the boss' HP was dropping slowly. He still had more than 74% HP left! Zhang Yang would have to last for another 4 minutes before he could kill the boss!

Technically speaking, even though all Level 80 Yellow-Gold bosses have suffered a slight nerf, having their HP reduced to a certain extent, they were still not something that a player could

solo-kill! However, Zhang Yang could do it since he possessed a game-breaking amount of recovery skills! {Berserker's Heal}, {Fountain of Life}, {Healing Potions}, {Troll Recovery Potion} that had been transmuted, {Shield Wall}, and if he still faced difficulties, everything could be used once more with {Rearm}!

The best fact was that the {Fountain of Life} healed in terms percentages, not fixed values. Zhang Yang's lengthy HP was at around 110,000, and 50% of that would be 55,000!

Zhang Yang used his skills one by one, consumed healing potions, [Fountain of Life], and even used the special effect of his necklace that could grant Zhang Yang an additional 5,000 damage absorption! It was unlucky for the boss to face a player such as Zhang Yang. He hacked and slashed his way until the boss was down to his last 10% HP.

Naturally, Zhang Yang had done his part to achieve that feat, by using almost all his ulti skills.

‘Ding! Gullini has gone Berserk!’

The boss entered Berserk state after his HP dropped lower than 10%.

‘-15,782!’

His body glowed with the usual red light and gained a huge muscle mass! His power had grown so strong that one axe attack



caused huge damage to Zhang Yang.

As predicted, Zhang Yang had kept {Shield Wall} on standby to anticipate the boss' berserk mode. The Titan Wall's equipment effect extended {Shield Wall's} effect duration by 5 seconds! Zhang Yang now had a 15 second long {Shield Wall}.

Now that everything is ready, all that's left to do was to slash! Slash as hard, as fast as he could!

9%! 8%! 7%!...3%!

15 seconds! {Shield Wall} ended, but Gullini still had 3% HP, 50,000 HP left!

Zhang Yang clenched his teeth and focus only on attacking.

2%...1%...0%!

'Ding! You have killed Gullini. Obtained 1,660,000 Experience Points!'

Pak!

The Gnome jumped in shock, dropped the axe on the ground and ran away, with his tail tucked between his legs.

Zhang Yang noticed that the axe was lootable! The first battle loot from him.

[Gnome Commander Battle Axe] (Yellow-Gold, One Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 732 – 1,132

Attack Interval: 2.6 seconds

DPS: 358

Equip Effect: Increase 1% Critical rate.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

Zhang Yang whistled! It was a shame that it had a 2.8 seconds attack interval. Still, it was a Level 80 Yellow-Gold weapon. After having it Identified, it should be much stronger than his current Dark Enigmatic Sword.

Zhang Yang had a sudden idea. He would use the axe for single monster fights, and the sword for mass-kills!

Zhang Yang kept the [Gnome Commander Battle Axe] and proceeded to check on the other drops. Zhang Yang was quite impressed at what Gullini dropped for him. There was a Chaos Gem that could increase his inventory size, a Magic Scroll, and a piece of Rune Craft recipe!

[Magic Scroll: Extreme Fervor] (Usable)

Use: Increases attack power by 30%, but lowers Defense by 50%. Applies to all party member. (Maximum of 10 men). Last for 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 80

This Magic Scroll would work best during boss fights. Since attacking classes had little Defense, they would not lose much defense. On the other hand, + 30% damage would be a huge buff. Since everyone in Zhang Yang's little party of nine, had the skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, with the attack buff...The boss would be crying before the fight even starts!

Zhang Yang took the Chaos Gem and used it immediately, increasing his inventory space to 90 slots. It was a pity that the Chaos Gem drop rate was extremely low. Players would use it immediately. Only a few would sell them. So few, that Zhang Yang's intention to increase his inventory size to 200, would just be a pipe dream. Especially, since Zhang Yang had taken up Herbalism. With {Alchemist's Intuition} the different types of Transmuted potions had piled up and stuffed his inventory up!

# Chapter 349: Bloody Shura Mauta

---

Having defeated Gullini, there were no more monsters in Zhang Yang's way. After passing through a narrow mountain path, he came to the top of the hill and saw a huge, tile-roofed house. Outside the tile-roofed house was a tall and muscular middle-aged man. He was working on a boxing bag, his shirtless body gleaming in the sun, as his rippled muscles worked.

[Joe. Smith] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: Leader of gang of bandits in White Stone Hills.

The boss' aggro range was wide, so it directly rushed towards Zhang Yang with it huge fists.

"Kent!" Zhang Yang shouted.

The boss blinked in surprise, and immediately stopped attacking Zhang Yang and asked, "Who are you?"

Zhang Yang laughed as he answered, "Kent. Joseph, son of old John, you kept your identity hidden for 20 years and became the leader of a gang of bandits, right?"

Zhang Yang saw that the name on top of the boss' head turned into "Kent. Joseph" and his name also turned from red tag to green tag. He was no longer aggressive.

Kent was frowning as he asked, "Young man, how do you know about this?"

"Schroeder, he told me!" Zhang Yang answered.

Kent was silent for a while, before he looked at Zhang Yang with a dangerous glint in his eyes, as he asked, "What are your intentions?"

"I something from you, which looks like this." Zhang Yang took out a [Dimensional Key]'s fragment and shook it in front of Kent.

"Eh, how you have a Soul Fragment?" Kent revealed an obviously surprised expression.

Alright, Alousous said he did not know what a [Dimensional Key] fragment was, Tiffany called it an [Ancient Fragment], and now Kent is calling it a Soul Fragment! After a period of 1000 years, the exact name and use of [Dimensional Key] has been lost in history and named differently by the seven Descendants of The Seven

Generals.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "So, you and I have some kinship! Kent, I need the fragment from you to complete a quest, what should I do to earn it from you?"

Kent pondered as he said, "Although this Soul Fragment had powerful magic, it can no longer help me anymore. Still, you'll need to put in some effort to claim it, as you said!"

Kent slowly paced in front of Zhang Yang and said, "Show me your ability first! First, you need to go to the Raven Ridge and bring me back the head of the army chieftain, Bloody Shura Mauta, who is garrisoned in Raven Ridge.

‘Ding! Kent. Joseph has a quest for you: Kill Bloody Shura Mauta. Will you accept it?’

Accept.

Zhang Yang answered, "Okay, I will bring back Mauta's head to you!"

Kent laughed out loud and paused then asked, "If you broke into my place here, you probably my followers who got in your way, right?"

"Yes, you are right! Am I in trouble now?"

"No!" Kent shook his head happily and continued, "Those people were the disciples of Spectres, the real bandits. I recruited them, only to use them to fight against the filthy mercenaries, just a dog eat dog method to fight against the mercenaries, their lives truly mean nothing to me!"

Damn, this Kent is so ruthless!

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey, followed the mountain path and went down the mountain.

[Kill Bloody Shura Mauta] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Kent. Joseph requires you to slaughter Bloody Shura Mauta! This man is a ringleader in the mercenary and he is a sadistic killer who loves the sight of blood, but he is quite capable, so you better bring some friends! Hint: Bloody Shura Mauta is garrisoned at the east of Raven Ridge.

Progress: Hand over the head of Bloody Shura Mauta to Kent.  
Joseph 0/1

Zhang Yang went as fast as he could and reached Raven Ridge in a short period of time.

This ridge was much more barren than White Stone Peak. There

were graves could be seen on the ridge from far away, also, there were red-eyed ravens that perched atop gravestones and made loud raspy calls as they took off.

Raven Ridge was not high and steep, and its upland was quite flat. From the hillside, the surroundings of the ridge were surrounded by a tall wall and only a passage on the hill path could be accessed.

Zhang Yang looked from far away and he saw guards standing watch atop the wall and heavily armed soldiers everywhere. These guards were Level 82 elite monsters!

There were at least hundreds of elite monsters already in sight, not including the ones who were within it! They also tended to patrol in groups, thus, it was impossible for Zhang Yang to lure them out separately for him to eliminate them one by one!

With so many monsters at once, even for Zhang Yang, he needed to think about this more than twice!

Well, better avoid these monsters and look for the boss directly!

Zhang Yang thought to himself and activated {Dig}!

Once {Dig} was activated, the soil beneath Zhang Yang's legs immediately became soft like water and Zhang Yang sunk into the soil. It was like swimming in the water, so he "swam" all the way up the hill.



{Dig} was simply magical, even if Zhang Yang was deep beneath the soil, he still could see the scene on the ground, right through the soil.

Although the movement speed was decreased by 50% when using {Dig}, Zhang Yang did not need to clear the monsters, so he made really good progress. The 10 minutes duration of {Dig} was sufficient for him to move more than halfway up the hill!

{Dig}'s effect ended, and Zhang Yang was ejected back up to the ground and appeared in a camp.

Three guard monsters immediately surrounded and attacked Zhang Yang.

[Raven Ridge Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 82,000

Defense: 450

Zhang Yang used {Block} and normal attacks at the same time, and after getting enough Rage, he launched {Blast Wave} which

caused the three monsters to be stunned at the same time. He took the opportunity to summon Whitey.

"Roar!" Whitey immediately appeared and started clawing into one of the guards. Zhang Yang quickly rode on Whitey and his attributes skyrocketed.

Zhang Yang could use {Dig}, but his pet could not, and only could run on the surface of the ground while following him. Therefore, Zhang Yang unsummoned Whitey so that it would not be attacked by the monsters.

However, these three elite monsters were pieces of cake for Zhang Yang. After launching a few attacks, Zhang Yang defeated the monsters which dropped a few pieces of silk clothes.

Zhang Yang went out of the camp and continued moving up the hill. At that moment, he was a quarter away from the top of the hill.

"Intruder!"

Once Zhang Yang stepped out of the camp, a flashing axe rapidly came at his head.

Zhang Yang stared at the attacker and realized that it was still an elite guard, similar to those in the camp. Still not a major threat.

All the elite monsters were like dummies for Zhang Yang, they

quickly fell defeated and dropped a few copper coins.

"What a poor system!" Zhang Yang sighed. In order for this system to maintain the value of gold coins, the output of coins had been severely decreased.

Zhang Yang felt depressed about it as he continued moving up the hill. Although he had avoided at least three-quarters of the monsters, he still needed to clear a lot of minions in front of him. After hacking his way through, Zhang Yang finally reached the top of the hill in 30 minutes later. He turned back and thought that if he never used {Dig}, he would probably have had to spend at least two hours to reach the top of the hill.

A huge camp appeared in front of Zhang Yang. There were four guards who were guarding the camp, and because of the camp was tightly enclosed, Zhang Yang could not see the situation inside the camp. He had no idea where Bloody Shura Mauta was!

Therefore, Zhang Yang decided to summon the Mythical Turtle first, as players were not allowed to change pets during combat!

After Zhang Yang summoned Mythical Turtle, he threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the guards.

‘-2,567!’

"Where did this thief come from? You actually dare to come to Raven Ridge to seek for death, don't you know our master is

Bloody Shura Mauta?!" the four guards raised their weapons and rushed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately sat on the Mythical Turtle and said, "I'm coming to kill Bloody Shura Mauta today! Big turtle, rush towards them!"

Mythical Turtle immediately used its fastest speed to move its limbs. It was like a slow motion scene. One flipper was slowly raised up, and Zhang Yang actually stared at it, waiting for the moment for it to come back down on the ground! Not even one step was made!

"Damn, what a shame!" Zhang Yang laughed, wielded his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and dashed towards the four guards himself.

"Big turtle, I have already ran for 10 meters and you have not yet even made one step, what's wrong?!" Zhang Yang ridiculed at Mythical Turtle as he launched attacks towards those four guards.

Luckily Mythical Turtle did not protest, otherwise, it would have definitely given a slap to Zhang Yang with a huge flipper.

After a round of clashing, one of the guards with the least HP suddenly shouted loudly, "Master Mauta, the assassin is here! Assassin is here!"

"Which vulgar little thief actually dares to assassinate me!" a burly man strode out of the camp. His top was undone, which

exposed his hairy chest and a few ferocious scars!

He held a sharp saber in his right hand, while his left held a wine bottle. He took a swig from it as he spoke.

[Bloody Shura Mauta] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 84

HP: 1,680,000

Defense: 1,500

The same guard who had shouted immediately rushed to the feet of Mauta and said, "Master, there's the Assassin!"

"Useless crap, you could not even handle an assassin, why would I still need you?!" Mauta stared and lobbed the guard's head off with his sharp saber.

"Puff!" The head rolled off and stopped at a pile of rocks. The headless body was spewing out a lot of blood like a water spring.

His body soon fell over.

F\*ck, that was so cruel. It really was the Bloody Shura, cruel to his followers as well!

"Ha ha ha, Lord Kazalo had me stay back here for these few days, I was getting terribly bored, and now someone automatically shows up in front of me. At least I get to have some fun with this toy now!"

Mauta put the saber on his shoulder and strode towards Zhang Yang, his saber still dripping with fresh blood!

# Chapter 350: Search For The [Titan's Chest Plate]

---

Zhang Yang hastened the fight to his limits, as fighting one boss and three minions at the same time would be ridiculous, even for him. He quickened his attacks upon the elite guards!

Fortunately, those three elite guards were already close to death. Under Zhang Yang's storm-like bombardment, they soon fell, groaning their last.

"Fool, I'm going to slice you into pieces and make you scream for three days and three nights. Now, entertain me as you struggle futilely against my might!" Mauta smiled evilly as he swung his saber at Zhang Yang.

‘-6,273!’

The boss' damage was very high, more than 6,000 points of damage in a single slash! Although the HP of Yellow-Gold bosses in Level 80 area maps were reduced, their attacks were still very strong!

Zhang Yang rode on the Mythical Turtle and stood motionless at that spot like a dummy, as he could not even move around to change positions!

Zhang Yang's current situation could be compared to how people would not have time to cover their ears when the crackling of

thunder hammers their senses! Although the speed of the boss' attack was not as fast as thunder, the Mythical Turtle was simply so slow, that Zhang Yang had no choice but to receive all the attacks!

Of course, the movement speed aside, the Mythical Turtle was immensely powerful! It had a high attack power and a high HP limit which were sufficient to offset the weakness of a slow movement speed!

Moreover, the boss' attacks were fast, so even if Zhang Yang rode on Whitey, Whitey would be unable to evade the attacks! But if the boss uses any AoE skills like {Rain of Fire} or {Frost Arrow}, Whitey could at least avoid them!

After Zhang Yang added 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss, Mythical Turtle and his attacks were instantly magnified. Mythical Turtle was especially affected by this, its {Tear} caused more than 8,000 points of damage on the boss, and almost caused 17,000 points of damage on critical strikes!

Currently in China server, there was no players' single attack could be higher than the Mythical Turtle!

Zhang Yang whistled at the high values floating before his eyes.

"Let me hear your screams, weakling!" the boss flourished his saber, drooling from the mouth as his bloodshot, dilated eyes gazed upon his foe.



Zhang Yang laughed out loud, undaunted. "Today, I'll be the one doing the slaughtering, Shuro!"

"Come, I do not fear anyone!" Mauta was extremely angry, his eyes bulged as he stared at Zhang Yang.

98%, 95%, 92%... Boss' HP started to steadily drop.

90%!

"Ha ha ha, what a fun toy, let me have fun with you!" the boss laughed maniacally and swung his saber, stomping on the ground.

The light reflected by his saber had been transmitted into the soil, and with the boss at the center, the ground within a radius of 30 meters suddenly flashed with rays of light exiting the cracks in the ground!

‘Ding! Bloody Shuro Mauta has released {Shroud of Swords}!’

Zhang Yang's first response was to pull on the reins and try to escape, but he was riding on Mythical Turtle, who barely budged. Zhang Yang could only sit there in resignation and receive another attack full-on!

Shwoop, shwoop, shwoop!

Countless of dazzling swords light shot up into the sky where

they blew up like fireworks. The pieces then came raining down! More swords continued shooting out of the ground as this went on!

‘-612!’

‘-612!’

...

As the rays of light came down, ten damage texts appeared above Zhang Yang’s head, all at once!

Zhang Yang exhaled in relief, as the boss’ ulti damage only did a total of around 6,000 HP damage. In fact, each wave of boss’ damage could have dealt up to 5,000 points, but Zhang Yang’s immense attack immunity reduced it to slightly over 600 points!

If the attackers from his party had received this kind of damage from the boss, within 10 seconds, the boss could have caused 50,000 points of damage! Besides, this {Shroud of Swords} was an AoE skill, so the party would have suffered massive casualties if they were here!

Luckily, the 50,000 points of damage was not released all at once, otherwise, Zhang Yang would have cried out in dismay!

"Ei, little guy, you are quite capable!" Mauta took out his saber and slashed it at Zhang Yang once again. The boss had been stuck in a pose for the last 10 seconds as he casted the skill, causing only

around 6,000 points, which was an absolute waste of time for the two of them!

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, "Bloody Shuro, I told you I'm the one who's going to chop your head off!"

"Arrogant and ignorant fellow, I will rip your bones out and crush them before your dying eyes!" Mauta roared with anger, with Zhang Yang's taunts getting on his nerves.

Both of them continued fighting intensely!

With Zhang Yang's current equipment, skills, and items preparation, he could totally fight a Yellow-Gold boss alone! Besides, the pitiful Mauta only had one AoE skill of note, which was the {Shroud of Swords}! This skill was designed to fight against many players but when the boss used this skill to fight against Zhang Yang alone, it turned out to be a highly inefficient move!

80%... 50%... 20%... the boss' HP depleted dramatically, as the DPS of Zhang Yang and Mythical Turtle together was more than 7,000, a value that was actually far more powerful than a normal 5-man party!

"Bastard, it hurts, I'll pay it back tenfold! I'm going to use the most brutal methods to torture you!" as Mauta's HP dropped bit by bit, his dialogue had also started changing from an arrogant tone to manic, angry tone of disbelief.

Zhang Yang did not bother with the back and forth of words any longer and continued slashing madly on the boss. He could not let his guard down, who knew if the boss had an emergency skill, or a ridiculous berserk mode?!

At 10%, the boss' whole body turned blood red, and he entered his "berserk" state, which increased his damage by 50%!

Zhang Yang took the opportunity to activate the [Ring of Beastman's Ancestor]'s special effect! It was time for a trial run.

Instantaneously, a green-skinned Beastman's shadow emerged from Zhang Yang's ring. It had the look of a Beastman's Prophet, holding a staff that looked ancient and moved with a speed that matched its aged appearance.

The summoned old Beastman slowly waved the staff in its hand, and a globe of light gradually gathered up at top of its staff.

The special effect of the ring releases the soul of the ancestor, and apparently, would cause massive damage to the enemy. But, this old Beastman did not look like it was going to do anyone any harm, and Zhang Yang even worried that the old Beastman would die of old age at any time!

"Ha ha ha, weakling, are you going to rely on this? Is this old man your grandfather? Ha ha ha, let me kill both of you together!" Mauta laughed out loud as he lifted his saber and swung at Zhang Yang and the green-skinned Beastman!

{Dividing Slash}!

The saber directly went through the old beastman's shadow and struck Zhang Yang.

-11,202!

No time to play around with a "Berserk" boss!

At that moment, the old beastman's spell was finally prepared! In fact, it had a two second cast time, but Zhang Yang somehow felt like that took ages! Perhaps it's due to the fact that he was on a slow turtle, accompanied by a slow shadow of an ancestor!

Shush!

A mass of bright light emerged from the old beastman's staff and shot towards the boss.

Although the old beastman was slow in motion, that mass of bright light flew through the air. The boss had no chance of evading the light. It struck him squarely in the chest!

Zip!

A few strong flashes of electric current fizzled over the boss' body, like sparkling lights that danced through his body, what a spectacular view!

A debuff icon appeared on the boss' head.

{Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}: Receives extremely strong electric current bombardment, unable to move, receives 10,000 Nature damage every second. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Zhang Yang laughed happily and said, "You will be struck by lightning if you talk too much nonsense, didn't you know that?"

By taking the advantage of the 10 seconds, Zhang Yang quickly unleashed a flurry of attacks.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

Zhang Yang and Mythical Turtle produced about 7,000 DPS, and within 10 seconds, they successfully emptied the boss' remaining 170,000 HP!

"Ah!" Mauta uttered a pitiful cry, his tall, huge body collapsed to the ground.

Finally, they killed the boss!

Starting from the Level 80 area maps, Yellow-Gold bosses were becoming pushovers, as their HP had been drastically reduced!

Zhang Yang reached out and grabbed the boss' drops. Firstly, he picked up Mauta's bloody head, as it was the quest item. It had priority above all else.

After completing the quest, then only did Zhang Yang start to check the loot.

The boss dropped two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, the upper parts of a cloth armor and a leather armor, which were of no use to him. The rest were seven pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, which would be automatically sent to the shop!

These few days, Zhang Yang had been acting alone. Lacking Zhang Yang's guidance, the number of the equipment hunted by the 9-man party had decreased rapidly, which led to Fatty Han complaining that Zhang Yang had no sense of brotherhood, and did not share any of the fortune with him!

Zhang Yang laughed and divided the profits of Little Merchandise Shop, and distributed it to his main force. Each member had a 5% share of the shop. Based on their shared system, the hunter of the equipment made no difference, and everyone would receive the money every month, anyway.

The 5% shares cannot be underestimated, although the profit of Little Merchandise Shop was not as high as the territory, the Little

Merchandise Shop actually generated about 30,000,000 of net profit, and 5% of it would be 1,500,000. This was a stable income, so after a year, the members of Zhang Yang's gang would become millionaires!

Everyone in the main force was there because of their skills, save for Fatty Han. By bribing these people with 10 million as their annual incomes, Zhang Yang got back way more than what he's paying for!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, when he participated in A-Class Professional League, his annual income was already more than 10 million. Besides, Hundred Shots and Lost Dream were also in the S-Class bracket!

Zhang Yang unsummoned Mythical Turtle, and then used {Burrow} to leave Raven Ridge. After that, he summoned Whitey to go back to White Stone Peak and made his way back to Kent. Joseph.

"Pa!"

Zhang Yang threw Mauta's bloody head at his feet.

Kent was clearly surprised, as he bent down to pick up Mauta's head. He had a look at it, and then threw it down the hill. "Young man, color me impressed! I honestly did not expect you to get the job done so soon!"



‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Kill Bloody Shura Mauta. Obtained 2,000,000 experience points!’

Zhang Yang smiled as he said, "So, I should have proven my strength, now!"

Kent crossed his arms and said, "Steady now, young man!"

Kent looked at Zhang Yang and said, "Come, let's fight, I want to know how strong you are!"

Suddenly, Kent's name changed from a green tag to a red tag!

Shush!

Kent swiftly punched at Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield and activated {Block}.

‘-120,359!’

{Block} was invalid and Zhang Yang only had 1 HP remaining, Zhang Yang could not help but fall off his mount, where he sunk to a knee and started coughing out blood!

"Ha ha, young man, confidence is good, but too much of a good thing, is never good!" Joseph lowered his fist and his name

changed back to green.

Obviously, the system deliberately made the player fail. Otherwise, no Level 85 Yellow-Gold boss would be so powerful!

Zhang Yang was left with no choice. Obviously, Zhang Yang would have to initiate another new story quest.

Kent slowly paced back and forth as he said, "If it is so easy to defeat Kazalo, I would have killed him 20 years ago! He was stronger than I am, and if you cannot even handle one of my attacks, how in the world are you going to defeat him?!"

Zhang Yang was eating health recovery cakes. He asked, "Kent, does that mean that we are going to let Kazalo continue harming the innocent people?"

Kent sighed, "I know that there is a strong relic that can defeat Kazalo, but it is extremely difficult to get this relic! For 20 years, I have been looking around for this relic, but I am surrounded by enemies all around me. I cannot leave this spot safely. Not that I am afraid of death, but once I die, there will be no one else to fight against Kazalo anymore!"

Here it comes! Zhang Yang spoke up, "Kent, let me help you search for that relic!"

"You?" Kent looked at Zhang Yang and hesitated, "Although you are quite capable, to ask you to search for a [Titan Chest Plate]

would be ridiculous!"

En? [Titan Chest Plate]!

Zhang Yang's eyes shone. He speedily rushed to the front of Kent and got so close to Kent's face that their noses almost touched, and then asked, "Did you just say, [Titan Chest Plate]?"

Kent actually blushed, and he quickly pushed Zhang Yang away and said, "Young man, you look good and all, but I only like women, so please stay away from me!"

Zhang Yang laughed happily and said, "Kent, tell me where the [Titan Chest Plate] is, and I will definitely find it for you!"

Kent hesitated a while and then said, "Okay, since you insist, I'll tell you!"

Kent looked into the sky as he started telling a story, "According to legend, in the prehistoric age of mythology, the powerful God of Titans created a Titan set equipment which had supreme, godly power! Unfortunately, in the Gods' war, even the immortal relics were not spared. So, the Titan set equipment also took great damage in the war. The Titan set equipment lost its original supreme power, and the eight Titan equipment set parts were scattered in every corner of the world! Although the Titan set equipment had lost its godly power, in the hands of mortals, they would still overpower everything else!"

# Chapter 351: Blackwater Abyss

---

The Titan set equipment actually had such a great backstory?

Since the Titan set equipment was created by the God of Titans, even if the Titan set equipment is already damaged, how should it just be a Violet-Platinum grade?!

Zhang Yang could not hold his doubt anymore, so he unequipped his [Titan Wall] and handed over to Kent, asking, "Kent, I came across this [Titan Wall], at least that's what it calls itself, can you have a look at it?!"

"Oh?" Kent was a little surprised and took the shield and examined it carefully. He focused on the shield, and after a while, he passed the shield back to Zhang Yang, smiling as he said, "Young man, this [Titan Wall] is an imitation. Although it is not the real [Titan Wall], I have to confess that the craftsmanship of this shield is very intricate, it faithfully reproduces the image of the original. Imitation or not, it does have power in its own right, the one who forged this shield must have been very skillful!"

Imitation! Then, this perfectly explains why there were so many Titan sets around. They were all just imitations, this allowed the game to produce as many sets of it as it liked.

Zhang Yang laughed as he shook his head at the cheap method of covering up a plot hold, and asked, "So, this [Titan Chest Plate] that you are looking for is the real deal?"

"Exactly!" Kent nodded his head and continued, "The genuine Titan equipment contains immensely powerful strength! The [Titan Chest Plate] is able to resist all mortal attacks. If we equipped it, even Kazalo will have a hard time harming us!"

Zhang Yang earnestly asked, "Kent, please tell me, how do I search for this [Titan Chest Plate]?"

Kent hesitated again, and then said, "[Titan Chest Plate] is in the deepest depth of Abyss of Blackwater, and it is guarded by a huge python! This d\*mned huge python is no ordinary beast, as it understands the power and value of the [Titan Chest Plate]! When I said guard, I meant that the chest plate is in its stomach! The d\*mn thing swallowed it whole to start absorbing the power from within. That's some completely messed up digestive system! D\*mn it, the power within the [Titan Chest Plate] is going to be completely absorbed at this point!"

Zhang Yang quickly said, "I will reclaim the [Titan Chest Plate] right away!"

Kent nodded his head in approval. "Then, you must be careful!"

‘Ding! Kent. Joseph has a quest for you: Snatch back the [Titan Chest Plate]. Will you accept it?’

Accept!

Zhang Yang left White Stone Hills once again and headed to the

Abyss of Blackwater.

[Snatch back [Titan Chest Plate]] (Difficulty: S)

Quest Description: Kent. Joseph requires you to head for the Abyss of Blackwater immediately to snatch back the [Titan Chest Plate] from huge python! Warrior, you must hurry up, every single day that passes, the Huge Python Mopy will absorb even more strength from the [Titan Chest Plate]! Abyss of Blackwater is to the north of Grand Canyon, you better bring a few friends, as it is not easy to fight against Huge Python Mopy!

Progress: Snatch back [Titan Chest Plate] 0/1

This was an S grade difficulty quest!

If it was a B or A grade difficulty quest, Zhang Yang would have completed the quest alone without hesitation! But an S grade difficulty quest, the boss would never be an enfeebled Yellow-Gold boss. It had to be a Violet-Platinum boss, the toughest tier of bosses at this stage of the game!

Zhang Yang had planned to invite Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang to come over and defeat the boss together, the quest had a time limit! Although the quest did not clearly mention the time limit, being an S grade difficulty quest, there should be quest score, so if he completes it in a speed beyond the prediction of the developers, he might once again score a beyond perfect rating!

Zhang Yang thought again and then decided not to waste time and immediately looked for the boss. For this, he has decided to use the last charge remaining of [Friendship Jade]!

Of course, Zhang Yang would still bring along Han Ying Xue. If the two of them proved enough to be able to defeat the boss, Zhang Yan would definitely keep the last charge of the [Friendship Jade]. Since Han Ying Xue just needed to ask for [Lover's Charm: Yin] from Sun Xin Yu, she could immediately teleport to Zhang Yang at a short notice.

Zhang Yang made the call to Han Ying Xue as he was rushing to the Abyss of Blackwater and said, "B\*tchy, ask ice cube for the Lover's Charm, I need you to heal me soon!"

"No need to be so troublesome, the Lover's Charm is always with me!" Han Ying Xue smiled sweetly and said, "That frosty lady want me to return the Lover's Charm to her? Humph, that's not happening!"

Zhang Yang felt a headache starting up. These two ladies better not start a fuss out of nothing now!

"Then, come over to my place now. If you are here, I'll get things done even quicker!" Zhang Yang said.

"Thank you for summoning me, Your Highness!" Han Ying Xue said in an awfully melodramatic tone, and immediately appeared beside Zhang Yang.

"You intend to play a role of Lady Yang, or Zhao Feiyan?"

"Wu Zetian, fated to cause her husband's death, stopped her son from robbing power off the throne, and gained independence as the emperor herself!" Han Ying Xue threw a flirtatious look to Zhang Yang and summoned her Storm and Gale Direwolf. The Red Gold Crab could only increase her movement speed by 100% when on the ground. Of course, it would shine during combat.

Both of them rushed towards the North, and they reached the north of Grand Canyon in a short period of time. There was black liquid flowing in a river stream, and the river extended to a huge, black lake. The river was flowing so fast that no raft could possibly survive the rough journey. Foam and mud frothed about.

"How do we proceed? Are you actually planning to swim in this filthy ditch?" Han Ying Xue rolled her eyeballs as she said.

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, "Black water wouldn't necessarily be smelly, perhaps it is petroleum, that's black gold there!"

"Yo, it is sticky and disgusting!" Han Ying Xue complained, "If I knew that, I should have come after you've made it through here!"

"Cut the bullsh\*t, just summon your Red Gold Crab and move!" Zhang Yang shouted. He knew that Han Ying Xue enjoyed dominance. However, if one were to strongly assert command over her, she would give in and obey.



Although Han Ying Xue pursed her lips, she still obediently summoned the Red Gold Crab.

Zhang Yang also summoned his Mythical Turtle, and the both of them entered the black water river, and followed the current!

The river rapidly went into the valley, going deeper and deeper down, until they were plunged into total darkness. After what seemed like hours, they saw light once again, and saw the high walls of the cliffsides on either side of them.

Quack!

Vultures flew over their head, except that they were skeletal, spectral, huge birds without any feathers or flesh. Other than that, they acted as they did in life, the scavengers of carcasses that they were.

On both sides of the river, there were countless skeletal animals of different types. They all blindly wandered around, their eyes flashing the familiar green.

The flowing speed of the black river gradually slowed down at a certain point, eventually stagnating. Still, the entrance to the abyss seemed far away. They could still swim along the river, without having to bump into the spectral animals at this point.

But, Zhang Yang said, "B\*tchy, let's go ashore!"

"Why?" Han Ying Xue was a lazy person, and the less she had to work, the better.

"There are herbs!" Zhang Yang smiled, as he could see the appearance of plenty of herbs on the both sides of the river in the mini map. Besides, there were also rare medicinal materials which required long duration of respawns, such as [Ancient Vines]. These vines took up to a full day to respawn, they were incredibly rare!

Once they went ashore, a Blackwater Sabre-Toothed Skeletal Tiger dashed towards them, its sharp teeth snapping at Han Ying Xue, who was the closest to it.

[Blackwater Sabre-Toothed Skeletal Tiger] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 84

HP: 84,000

Defense: 450

‘-6,102!’

A damage text immediately appeared above Han Ying Xue’s head. Fortunately, she was already mounted on her crab, giving her

almost 50,000 HP. The attack barely fazed her!

"Silly Yu, quickly save me!" By right, Han Ying Xue should be much stronger than Zhang Yang at this rate, thanks to her pet mount! The pet mount would be responsible for attacking, and she could simply heal herself, how would any elite monster be a threat to her?

But, Han Ying Xue's first reaction was to ask for help from Zhang Yang. She knew the right tone, and the right role to play the b\*tch in distress. She just knew how to trigger a man's desire. Men would die protecting her, without really knowing why.

Zhang Yang, fully aware of this, shrugged and lifted his sword. He dashed towards the skeletal tiger. First, he used {Provoke} to pull away the monster's aggro and then took turns attacking, along with Mythical Turtle's bites. They definitely had the monster's attention now.

At that moment, Han Ying Xue had already trained her Red Gold Crab to Level 76, so their attacks were quite impressive, although they could not be compared to the Mythical Turtle. But, Han Ying Xue and her Red Gold Crab's attack power would already bring shame to most dedicated attackers! With the two game-breaking pets, the Blackwater Sabre-Toothed Skeletal Tiger became a pile of bone fragments within a short period of time. It gave a lot of experience points to Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue.

"It is great to ride on the coattails!" Han Ying Xue came down from her pet mount and looted the monster's drops.

Zhang Yang raised one of Mythical Turtle's right legs and flapped it in front of Han Ying Yue.

"What are you doing?" Han Ying Xue stared at Zhang Yang.

"I thought you wanted to ride on the coattails?"

"..."

With the presence of Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang pulled all the monsters without hesitation. He summoned Whitey and stayed among the monsters, and then turned around and pulled about 10 monsters at once. After that, he started group killing.

Unfortunately, the chance of triggering the [Dark Enigmatic Sword]'s special effect had greatly reduced after Zhang Yang had reached Level 80. Although 1% and 2% was only a difference of 1%, it was half its value!

However, [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was still a godly AoE weapon that could not be replaced at the current phase. Although the chance of triggering special effect of {Horizontal Sweep} had been reduced a lot, it still did impressive damage when using {Blast Wave}, his main monster-killing skill.

Five to six minutes later, there were a lot of bones around Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. Bypassers could have easily mistaken them as grave robbers or something, at that rate.

Han Ying Xue happily looted the monster' drops all over the ground, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue had a good habit of not missing any loot. Even single pieces of copper coins would be swept off the floor! In the meantime, Zhang Yang was busy harvesting the herbs.

After looting the drops and harvesting the herbs, both of them continued moving forward and they pulled another wave of monsters and started clearing them off.

Han Ying Xue was very satisfied. Although Zhang Yang was a Guardian, he had the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and a bunch of AoE skills which surpassed the attacking power of attackers! Although Wei Yan Er also excelled in group killing, she was limited to normal monsters only, as she would not last against the combined attacks of an elite crowd!

Moreover, as Zhang Yang had both high defense and strong attacks, nothing wiped out huge waves of monsters better than he did!

By staying together with Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue's leveling efficiency was at its highest, and she could do her healing with one eye closed. Naturally, Han Ying Xue would wish to ride on Zhang Yang's coattails more than anyone else.

# Chapter 352: Huge Python Mopy

---

Both of them continued pushing forward like locusts crossing the border, not missing out any herbs or monsters!

Still, they had to tread carefully. Up ahead, the black river swirled into a huge and bottomless vortex. If both of them aren't careful, they might actually end up being flushed down it!

If both of them really did get caught by the current, there would be no escape! Either they would have to use a [Teleportation Scroll] to teleport back to the city, or commit suicide and resurrect at a graveyard! Both of these were totally unnecessary expenses.

Three hours later, they came to the deepest of the abyss. Both of them had already obtained plenty of experience points and herbs, and Han Ying Xue's backpack was already fully stuffed.

They could see from afar, that a huge python had coiled its body under a huge rock. Its body was thicker than a train!

The huge python's scales were thick and heavy, and each scale was as big as a manhole cover, which made them drip cold sweat.

Before they approached it, both of them could already smell a nausea-inducing stench.

Han Ying Xue used her hands to cover her mouth and nose, and then complained, "How long has this smelly snake gone without a

bath? Oh my gosh, I can't even breathe, how are we supposed to fight it?!"

"Adjust your olfactory sensitivity!"

Both of them were fine after adjusting their olfactory sensitivity.

[Huge Python Mopy] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500,000

Defense: 2,400

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyeballs and asked, "Silly Yu, don't tell me that you plan to take on this Violet-Platinum boss with just the two of us?"

"Yeap, that's the idea!"

"Brother, you are going to die fighting against this boss, and I'm not going to die with you. I'm heading back to the city! Good luck!" Han Ying Xue was already pulling out a [Teleportation Scroll].

Zhang Yang anxiously said, "Let's just give it a try, if it's too tough, I will use the [Friendship Jade]!"

Han Ying Xue kept her [Teleportation Scroll], rode on Red Gold Crab and stayed behind Zhang Yang, saying, "Silly Yu, carry on then!"

First, Zhang Yang equipped the [Friendship Jade], and then moved a few steps forward and summoned the Mythical Turtle. After that, he threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss.

‘-2,451!’

{Spear of Obliteration} had the special effect of ignoring defense. Although the boss had 2,400 of defense, it could not negate the damage from the {Spear of Obliteration}.

"Si!"

Huge Python Mopy stuck its red tongue out and angrily slid towards Zhang Yang.

40 meters away, its huge tail was lashed out like a giant whip and struck Zhang Yang.

‘{Block}!’

Zhang Yang responded swiftly as always, he raised his [Titan



Wall] and blocked the attack.

Huge Python Mopy twisted its long body and wound itself around Zhang Yang.

‘-11,824!’

Zhang Yang immediately received a huge amount of damage.

Han Ying Xue quickly healed Zhang Yang’s HP by spamming all her healing spells.

After the boss was done twisting around Zhang Yang’s body, it immediately moved back and lashed its tail at Zhang Yang again.

‘-12,012!’

Violet-Platinum bosses were really strong and ferocious, this one was dealing 5 digits of damage at a time!

Luckily Zhang Yang was mounted atop his turtle, with a HP limit that exceeded 120,000. Any other tanks would have been crushed to death by now! At this stage of the game, battle mounts were a necessity if players intended to stay ahead of everyone else. Therefore, the presence of battle mounts made a huge difference to battles!

Huge Python Mopy’s attacks were random and unpredictable, it

occasionally swung and simply whip its tail which caused strong whirlwind like hurricanes. Besides, this was an AoE attack, even if Han Ying Xue was standing 30 meters away from boss also received the attacks, thus, '-19,000' high damage text popped up on top of her head!

Han Ying Xue quickly yelled, "Silly Yu, quickly, use the [Friendship Jade]!"

Two waves of AoE had pushed her to the limit. Healing Zhang Yang alone was already a monumental task for her, but she was taking heavy damage herself, it was impossible to carry on!

After all, Han Ying Xue was only Level 78, equipped with a Level 60 Yellow-Gold set equipment! If she was equipped with her Violet-Platinum set equipment, she definitely could heal Zhang Yang and herself and keep up with the battle!

Zhang Yang saw the boss using its tail to wind up for yet another huge attack, and knew then, that it was an impossible battle! He immediately activated the [Friendship Jade] and used the last remaining summon.

"Roar!" Smaug's phantom appeared and roared towards the sky, wielding his Blood Shadow Blade. He dashed towards Huge Python Mopy without saying a word!

'-143,210!'

Smaug's sword came raining down, causing a ridiculous amount of damage!

Huge Python Mopy furiously turned towards Smaug's phantom. But fighting against a Holy boss, was too much for a mere Violet-Platinum boss!

Both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue only needed to stand aside and watch the battle between the two bosses.

Unfortunately, I had to use the last charge of the Friendship Jade. I can only dream of getting another!

As Zhang Yang watched Smaug's phantom toy with the Huge Python Mopy, he sighed dejectedly.

"Silly Yu, that [Friendship Jade] has already given you three Violet-Platinum bosses. If you don't curb that greed of yours, lightning will strike you down!" Han Ying Xue said.

Zhang Yang was shocked and said, "Evil b\*tch, should I start calling you an evil w\*tch instead? You read my mind!"

"Please, your face said it all!" Han Ying Xue scoffed.

"How is the little brat now?" Zhang Yang tried to divert the topic.

"She's still pretty depressed. At least she's a little more talkative

these days, even saying that she has decided to go for a good university!"

Zhang Yang felt worried for Wei Yan Er and said, "With her half-hearted attitude, how is she going to achieve anything?!"

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyeballs and said, "Yan Er is actually really smart, you know!"

"Hey! If you are telling lies, you will be punished by lightning strikes!"

"..."

As they continued chatting, Huge Python Mopy was fighting for it's life against the powerful strikes of a Holy boss. At this stage of the game, it's like a cheat code being activated. Just how powerful would the Holy bosses in the future be?

'Ding! The party you are in has killed Huge Python Mopy. Obtained 4,250,000 experience points!'

Within two minutes, Huge Python Mopy was slain, and a huge corpse sprawled like an overturned train, with a length of several hundred meters!

Smaug's phantom went back to Zhang Yang's side, sheathed his blade, and stood upright like a loyal bodyguard.

"Wow, I'm going to be rich!" this time, Han Ying Xue took no notice of the slime and muck, but instead, ran to the smelly corpse and picked up the coins, equipment, skill books and ETC which had spilled all over the floor.

"Ei?" after Han Ying Xue picked 10 gold coins, she wanted to pick up a very ancient looking armor, but was unable to. She asked, "Silly Yu, what's wrong with this thing? Why I can't pick this equipment up?"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "This is my quest item, it's not for you to take!"

"Ah, so you had that good a quest and you never even bothered to mention it to me, let alone share it. Finally, I have seen through you!" Han Ying Xue grumbled.

"Silly girl, I wanted to share the quest with you when you arrived, but the quest assistant notification showed that I am unable to share the quest with other players! It's a single player quest!"

Zhang Yang walked over and picked up the armor. The quest notification rang in his ears, signifying the fulfillment of a part of the quest!

[Titan Chest Plate] (Quest Item)

Description: Although this piece of armor has been dilapidated, you can still feel the immense power within it! You feel like an ant before its divine might!

Zhang Yang had a feeling that this armor would be his, by the end of the quest! However, it should be an imitation like his [Titan Wall], as Celestial equipment would not appear at Level 80 stages of the game!

Han Ying Yue continued picking up the rest of the drops.

[Scepter of Snake King] (Violet-Platinum, Staff)

Magic Weapon Attack: 1,897-2,297

Equipment: Each time you cast spells, there is a 1% chance of obtaining extra 200 spell damage bonus.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

"Ha ha, my hands are lucky!" Han Ying Xue gleefully admired the staff. Staves did not have attack speed limits, as casting speeds

depended on the skills themselves.

Zhang Yang sighed and said, "You probably used up all the luck there, I won't be getting anything now!"

"Ha ha, my luck will get you a suitable weapon!" Han Ying Xue assured Zhang Yang as she thumped her chest.

Her fist sunk into her huge, soft melons each time it made contact, inadvertently jiggling the rest of the soft flesh around it. Zhang Yang's eyes wandered, and lingered upon the marvelous sight.

"Silly Yu, you miss them, don't you?" Han Ying Xue thrust her chest out at him, the bountiful mounds of sinful creations jiggling in response. She then cackled like a witch.

"F\*ck you! Evil witch, they would have drowned you to death if you lived in ancient times!" Zhang Yang covered his nose as he said. Blood was threatening to spurt out from it at any moment.

"Ha ha ha" Han Ying Xue laughed to her heart's content, before she continued picking up the boss' loot.

[Snake's Spur] (Violet-Platinum, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 599–799

Attack Interval: 1.3 seconds

DPS: 538

Equipment: All attacks ignore target's 500 defense value.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

"Damn, this is a great offhand weapon for Assassins!" Zhang Yang exclaimed.



# Chapter 353: Slaying The Enemy's Chieftain

---

Assassins excelled in stealth attacks. Emerging from their stealth mode, they would acquire an additional 30% damage over their initial damage output. With two weapons to wave around, they could also stun players of any professions, at similar levels and similar grade of equipment. As long as they weren't dealing with tankers, no one else stood a chance against them!

But, when engaging in a boss battle, the attack speed of the secondary weapon was too rapid, resulting in the extremely small amount of damage output due to balancing algorithm of the game. The faster the attack rate of the weapon, the lower the damage output of the weapon. So, when they are attacking a boss with extremely high defense, they would basically be like ants trying to bite into the hide of an elephant! From this point of view, defense points would always nullify their attacking power, so they could only depend on superior equipment grades and excellent player skills, along with proper mana management to cover for this weakness.

This secondary weapon dagger [Snake's Spur] actually had a special effect that ignores 500 defense points, prior to identification! At the current stage of the game, regular Violet-Platinum bosses had about 2,400 defense points, and after being smashed with 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}, they would be left with only approximately 1,200 defense points. With the special effect of this dagger, the defense points should be deducted further down by 600 points or so, leaving only 400 to 500 defense points on the bosses. This would definitely allow the wielder to unleash quite an astounding amount of damage!

This dagger was ideal!

"Humph, that 'cold' labeled one has the advantage, this time!" Han Ying Xue curled her lips as she threw the dagger over to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was wise enough to not get himself caught in the middle of a fight between two women, men usually die horribly when in such positions!

[Mask of the Shadowy Death] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: 48

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Agility: +378

Equip: Reduces the cool down time of {Take Aim} by 1 second.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

---

Although leather armors could be used by both thief and hunter professions, the special effect clearly favored hunters. Of course, some rich ‘thieves’ would spend a fortune to get their hands on this equipment. The special effect aside, this fine piece of equipment would still be a Violet-Platinum equipment!

Zhang Yang kept the [Mask] into his backpack as well. He would leave the decision in the hands of those two hunters.

With the quest completed, the two of them retraced their steps, but the turbulence of the black river was streaming rapidly all the way down, making it impossible for them to go up the way they came down from. Feeling helpless, the both of them finally gave up and took out their [Teleportation Scrolls].

Zhang Yang was thinking of killing himself and directly reviving at the Graveyard. But once he thought about the possibility that he might end up in an unknown Graveyard, deep down the abyss, he decided against it. Who knows, if it really happens, then he would have died for nothing, and only bring more trouble to himself!

It was just a journey back to the White Jade Castle, and he had to at least identify the [Goblin's Head Lobber], if he intended to use it for battles in the future.

[Goblin's Head Lobber] (Yellow-Gold, One-handed Axe)

Attack: 1,131 - 1,531

Attack Interval: 2.6 seconds

DPS: 512

{Level 2 Socket 1}

{Level 2 Socket 2}

Equip: increases critical rate by 2%.

Required Level: 80

After inserting [Gemstones] with the [Runestones] that he acquired from Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang's attack instantly rose to 2,577 - 2,977.

Then he made some fine repairs on his equipment before he teleported back to Thunderstorm Castle. He then summoned Whitey and headed towards the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night in a hustle.

It was another long journey that took about seven hours, before Zhang Yang finally arrived at the White Stone Peak. It had been a long while since he last visited this place, so the monsters on the mountain had respawned. Zhang Yang went up to the hillside and

switched to his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], and then he cleared out all of the non-elite monsters along his way. After that, he activated {Dig} and went all the way up to the mountain and stood right before Kent.

He dug out his [Titan Chest Plate] out and shoved it over to Kent, "I have completed the quest!" He felt that he had already repeated this sentence many times over already.

Kent was filled with surprise while he received the [Titan Chest Plate] from Zhang Yang, and then he put his hands on the equipment and stroked it like his 'precious', revealing his obsession towards the relic. After a long while, he finally opened his mouth and said, "Young man, I'm impressed with your capability! Not only did you manage to recover the [Titan Chest Plate], you also managed to complete the quest in such short time! I can't help but to be impressed by you!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Recover the Titan Chest Plate, acquired 5,000,000 experience points! Quest rating: Perfect! The rating will be calculated into the final quest rewards!"

What the hell, the system was actually planning to keep the rewards from the players until they completed the entire quest? Why must the system learn from those crooked businessmen, trying to delay when it came to giving their 'employees' their salaries!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Kent, we can now go get that sun of a beach, Kazalo, can't we?"

"Yes, with this piece of [Titan Chest Plate], I shall be able to withstand against his [Star-Devourer], and we shall be able to finish him once and for all!" Kent was agitated with excitement, and he let out a trembling roar at the top on the mountain and said, "My brothers and sisters, it's time to follow me on a heist that you have never seen before!"

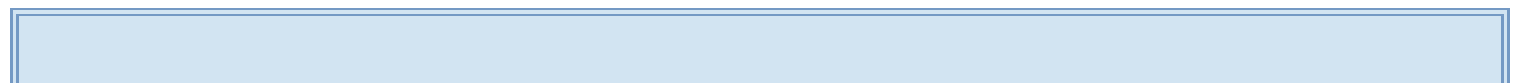
"Roar!" all of the thieves in White Stone Peak shouted and roared in unity, their voices thunderous enough to pierce through the heavens!

"Let's move out!" Kent turned to Zhang Yang, and then he summoned a battle horse with shiny armor all over its body. This battle horse was so much taller than the regular military horses. The moment it appeared, the continuous clapping of horseshoes against the ground and the heaving stream of air coming right out of it's nose gave an intimidating presence. It almost seemed to be breathing flames

‘Ding! Kent Joseph has given you a quest: Slay the Chieftain of the enemy, accept or decline?’

What a handsome horse! If Wei Yan Er would ever have the chance of seeing it, that little girl would definitely abandon her own mount for this one!

Zhang Yang accepted the quest and quickly summoned Whitey.



[Slay the Chieftain of the enemy] (Difficulty: S-Rank)

Description: Kent Joseph has invited you to hunt down the 'Cancer' of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night, Kazalo, and restore true peace to the people of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night! Warrior, the time to boil your blood with justice and fight for a righteous cause, is now!

Completion: Slay Kazalo 0/1

With a long roar, Kent came down from the mountain on his horse at an extreme speed, just like a bolt of lightning. Without much effort, he reached the bottom of the mountain.

As Zhang Yang charged down from the mountain, he could see the thieves were already lining up in a position of a large formation! The formation was incredibly neat, at a level that could be compared to the official army! By the looks of it, Kent had spent his fortune and time just to plan an attack to take out Kazalo, during all these years. He had managed to turn these 'Scattered sands' into a strong 'Castle'! It was unbelievable that he could actually train up a bunch of thieves into such a disciplined army!

"Brothers and sisters, today, we shall carry out a heist that history has never seen before!" Kent stood at the front of the formation on his horse, while holding a huge axe in his hand. His aura was really intimidating and pressurizing. He waved his axe and said, "We shall go head on against Kazalo and his army and end this once and for all! As long as we kill them all, the Great Canyon of Eternal Night shall be ours to claim!"

"Kill!"

"Kill them all!"

"I want women and money!"

The thieves were roaring out like an army of madmen.

It was indeed, killing two birds with one stone! Using a bunch of thieves to engage with a bunch of real bandits, it would not matter whichever side dies, it would still be great news to the regular people in the Great Canyon of Eternal Night!

"Now, charge!" Kent turned his horse around to face his army, and then he pointed his axe eastward and said, "Brother and sisters, fortune and fame are just ahead of us, for the taking! Charge! Charge!"

"Charge forward!"

Shoof!

At least tens of thousands of thieves got on their horses, following Kent, and charged towards the east! The stomping of the horseshoes from the army stirred up dirt and dust into the air, and from afar, it was like the forces of nature itself were attacking!



Zhang Yang patted the head of Whitey and followed the army of thieves. It was fortunate that they were only two times faster, compared to the regular speed of a player's sprint. Therefore, Whitey should probably be able to catch up to them with ease.

But Zhang Yang did not charge at the front. It was obvious that there would be a large-scale battle coming right up, so he did not intend to serve himself as one of the 'cannon fodders' that would be blown to bits in the front lines.

After charging forward for about an hour, Kent led the army to the front of a castle. The facilities of the castle seemed quite complete. [Magic Cannons] were installed right on top of the castle wall. Even a Violet-Platinum grade boss would be blown to bits if he or she ever tried to penetrate the defense line of the castle with brute force!

Kent realized the threat, and he immediately gave the command for his army to halt. Then, he raised his left hand and bellowed, "Bring out the catapults!"

Rolling out one after another, three large-scale catapults appeared right in front of the army, and all of the catapults were the sizes of large trucks. The thieves cooperated with professional efficiency as they moved rocks that were as large as millstones and loaded them onto the catapults.

Zhang Yang was left with his jaws and eyes opened wide. How did the three catapults miraculously appeared in the battlefield? It was so fake! He had not seen them when they were charging to the enemy! Could catapults be kept in backpacks, now?

"Release the catapults!" Kent shouted loudly, and with 'Ki ki ki' sounds, the three large rocks shot out like shooting stars, flashing through the sky, and flying towards the wall of the castle!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The distance between the castle and Kent's army was about 300 to 400 meters long, but Zhang Yang could still feel a slight tremble across his feet as he stood by and watched the spectacular scene!

Boom! Boom!

The catapults were shooting out a series of 'cannonballs' towards the direction of the castle. In just a short while, the walls of the castle were devastated by the assaults from the catapults. Quite a number of the [Magic Cannons] were blown into pieces, along with the wall!

That is the weakness of the [Magic Cannon]!

Although the attack power of the [Magic Cannons] were immense and terrifying, they did not have the range of the catapults! So they would just 'sit' there, waiting for the catapults to blow them up into pieces!

After a while, the castle side had also begun using their catapults to defend themselves, shooting large rocks towards Zhang Yang and the army. The rocks were huge, that when they landed on the

army, a large number of the thieves were blown away!

The first stage of the war would be to see the effectiveness of the ranged weapons. After a period of exchange, most of the [Magic Cannons] had been obliterated. The catapults had ended up crushing each other, so all at once, the battlefield no longer had any terrifying siege engines left!

Kent charged at the front of the entire army and waved his axe around, and roared, "Brothers and sisters, after this battle, fortune and treasure await!"

"For gold!"

"For beer!"

"For women!"

"Kill!" Kent roared intensely.

"Kill ---" All of his army followed and let out their thunderous battle cries!

"Kill!"

"Kill ---"

"Charge!" The tens of thousands of thieves followed Kent closely as they charged towards the castle!

Zhang Yang was not hot-headed to the point that he would follow them in the front lines. Although the [Magic Cannons] had mostly been cleared out, there were two of them remaining! These 'toys' could inflict a total damage of 200,000 to all the targets within the range in a single shot. The total health points he had, even while mounted, was not enough to survive that! He simply laid back and continued enjoying the dramatic scene!

Furthermore, one player could not do much in a large-scale battle. He wouldn't make much difference!

Boom!

The [Magic Cannons] that still remained on the wall had begun to open fire at the thieves, as expected! Streams of white lights shot across the army. Whether the ones struck were elites or normal monsters, they were instantly vaporized!

Fortunately, after waves of assaults from the catapults, the [Magic Cannons] had settled down into their long periods of cooldown! The last thing the game needed was a rapid-firing cannons with infinite ammunition!

Kent was born to be brave, so he charged on without any sense of fear and was the first to arrive at the gates of the castle. With a few swings of his axe, he destroyed the gate of the castle with brute force! He really was a great general!

Zhang Yang was envious of what he saw, hoping to emulate that sort of image, one day, and lead his guild to war! Be it 'Territory Sieges' or 'Monster Attacks', it would have great effects on their morale! Zhang Yang shouted and patted the head of Whitey, and quickly followed the army!

The moment they entered the castle, the map instantly switched to a smaller map. The map showed that the interior design of the place was like 'Stromgarde Keep' from World of Warcraft, but unlike the one in World of Warcraft, the castle interior was not ruined, and the design of the place was extremely grand, where the roads were made of white jade! The place looked just like a palace! Unfortunately, at the moment, it had been reduced into another bloody battlefield. The thieves had already engaged in deadly battles with the mercenaries. Blood was spilled everywhere on the streets, and the roads were filled with bloody, mangled corpses!

Zhang Yang was trying to locate the whereabouts of Kent, because a boss like this would be like a firefly in a dark place. He would be the center of attraction, and the center of the plotline! It was the best option for Zhang Yang, since he did not know what to do at the moment!

As expected, he saw the man's shadow flashing by! Kent was riding on his battle horse while spinning his axe around, blowing the surrounding enemies away. It did not matter if the enemies were cut into half or chopped to death, blood would just spill and departed limbs from the body of the enemies were flying around. It was war, after all.

He was really a powerhouse NPC in the cinematic mode, compared to the 'Cannon Fodder' who had a low attack of 5!

Zhang Yang tapped on Whitey's head again and aided them in killing their enemies. His main quest was to slay Kazalo. Although it was not necessary for him to be the one slaying Kazalo, he should at least inflict some damage to the boss! Otherwise, he would fail the quest and get nothing in the end!

The two bosses were bound to clash anytime soon, his best option was to hang on to Kent like a fly!

The mercenaries definitely outnumbered the thieves, but there is a Kent on the thieves' side! This Yellow-Gold boss was impressively strong and intimidating! With a swing of his axe, most of the enemies were instantly sent to their afterlives! The situation for the thieves was like a pillar of rocks in the midstream of a river that supports the bridge! Not only did it prevent the thieves from breaking formation, it also gave them the advantage over the battle!

The thieves were marching forward steadily, slowly pushing deeper into the castle.

Zhang Yang stayed right behind Kent, where he would activate his {Horizontal Sweep} and his {Blast Wave}, just to get some experience points. Whenever the special effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] got triggered, the damage values looked awesome!

The two sides were depleting their number of fighters in a very swift manner. As Kent was going forward, following the path ahead, he managed to push on into a spot on the highest location of a building in the castle. It was a tower that was about 13 floors high, and it was exceedingly 'thin', about the square area of 3 to 4 houses.

Kent had finally stopped moving because there was a very powerful person standing right in front of him!

[Kiev the 3rd] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 84

HP: 1,680,000

Defense: 1,500

Kiev was a middle aged man with a lean and skinny body, wearing tights that covered most of his body. He held sharp swords in both of his hands, and he looked like he was an 'Assassin'.

"Joe ---" Kiev let out a loud roar and pointed a sword at Kent, "So it was the bastard who has been a pain in the \*rse all these years! Now, you dare to show yourself on our doorsteps! Good, very good! Then I, Kiev shall be the one who breaks every single one of the bones within your body!"

Kent also roared and said, "Pitiful bandits, taking all the people's money! You didn't just do a lousy job protecting the people, you actually stole from them! You worthless sh\*ts, die! Just die!"

The two bosses roared at each other, and they engaged in a fierce battle.

Zhang Yang had also charged forward and smashed five layers of his {Cripple Defense}. Then he continued to unleash all his attacks onto the enemy boss as well!

Although two bosses were the same grade, Yellow-Gold, it was really obvious that Kent was far superior. One boss that was only a mini-boss of his organization, while the other boss was a powerhouse. Although the amount of their health points were the same, that's where their similarities ended!

Kiev was brought down on his knees in just short amount of time!



## Chapter 354: Kazalo Appears

---

Because the boss was taken down mostly by Kent, the loot dropped from the body were extremely miserable to look at. All Zhang Yang got was a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment and two Gray-Silver equipment. Furthermore, that piece of Yellow-Gold equipment was just a mere cloth armor with weirdly high attributes of Spirit and Ice-Resistance. So, he could only put it out for sale at his Little Merchandise.

"Pui! Filthy scumbag!" Kent spat on the dead body of Kiev and charged into the tower with large strides.

There were no thieves among them, the sounds of battle far behind them. Well, it was obvious that they had stepped into the battlegrounds of the final showdown between two kings!

As they entered the tower, Zhang Yang was automatically dismounted from Whitey. Because Zhang Yang had {Beast Taming}, Whitey had immediately turned into a combative pet and followed Zhang Yang from behind.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and unsummoned Whitey. Since he would not be riding Whitey within the tower and the super slow movement speed of the [Mythical Turtle] would not affect his movement in battle, he kept Whitey into his backpack for the moment. He intended to summon [Mythical Turtle] after the boss battle begins!

There were still monsters within the tower, and all of the

monsters were Level 85 elite-grades. But with Kent rampaging about, the monsters did not stand a chance at all. The monsters were slaughtered one after another with ease. Every single one of the monsters was killed in one hit! They were not able to do anything at all! It was actually a bad thing for Zhang Yang because he would not be getting a single point of experience!

However, he soon figured that he could hurl {Spears of Obliteration} at the monsters within his sight. Even if he attracts the aggro of the monsters, they would instantly be killed the moment they get closer, and Zhang Yang would immediately acquire experience points!

Being invincible all along the way, the two of them arrived at the seventh floor of the tower. At that moment, another boss appeared to block their way forward.

[Phoebe the 2nd] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

This time, it blonde beauty with her luscious hair dancing in the air. It was unfortunate that she was blind in her left eye, wearing a

black eye-patch. Otherwise, she had a strange and seductive appeal. She had a great body that was beautiful and charming, with a T-Shirt on her upper body that showed her navel button. She wore a pair of hot pants that exposed her snow-white, long thighs. She was bare footed, and held a golden leather whip in her hands.

The 'queen' has three main special plays, the 'Wax Play', 'riding the [Spanish donkey](#)', and the 'Whipping Exercises'! Zhang Yang could not help but start thinking of weird stuff in his mind!

Spanish donkey - a tool for torturing people, but in modern days, it has become a tool for BDSM!

"It's you ---" the moment when Phoebe saw Kent, she revealed her hatred through her one good eye, "Seven years, Joe, seven years, since you took my eye from me! For seven years, I have been waiting for the day I can get my revenge! Joe, I'm going to suck you dry, of every drop of your blood!"

"Hahaha! You escaped seven years ago, but today, you are destined to die by my sword!" Kent let out a loud laugh and swung his axe around, charging towards Phoebe.

"Joe, for seven years, I have not forgotten how you blinded my eye with that sword of yours! That scene plays through my mind every single day!" Phoebe lashed out her whip with utmost prejudice.

Zhang Yang took the opportunity to charge at the boss, and then he summoned the [Mythical Turtle] out while applying his stacks

of {Cripple Defense} on Phoebe, "Kent, someone has really been missing you! Seven years, my goodness, she's madly in love!"

Kent laughed out loud and said, "Unfortunately, I have no interest in such vicious ladies!"

"Shut up!" Phoebe was enraged even more, and the golden whip in her hands swung around even more intensely! It tore the air open as it lashed at the two of them.

‘-6,212!’

Zhang Yang was instantly inflicted with a damage value. Although he was not the first aggro of the boss, but the attacks of Phoebe had an AOE effect. Zhang Yang had let his guard down and suffered some damage for his complacency!

"Hahaha! Young man, this woman is a beautiful snake, now you have tasted her power!" Kent laughed at Zhang Yang's expense while swinging his axe around, reducing the health bar of Phoebe in a very swift manner!

"Joe, you are a scumbag who deserves to die over a million times! You destroyed my beauty, and now you dare to humiliate me!" Phoebe was screaming in a high pitch, her golden whip was surging with vague red aura.

‘-6,342!’

Zhang Yang once again received a damage value. He was so shocked, he had already made sure he activated his {Block}, how could he possibly be hurt?

‘You have blocked Phoebe’s {Chaotic Dance of the Snake}.’

‘The additional fire damage of Phoebe’s {Chaotic Dance of the Snake} has inflicted a fire damage of 6,342 points on you (2,000 damage immune, 1,658 damage absorbed).’

What the hell, a physical attack with an additional fire damage! No wonder Zhang Yang was still receiving damages from the attack even though he had already activated his {Block}!

It was fortunate that the boss only had one AOE skill - {Chaotic Dance of the Snake}, and the cool down period of the skill was 20 seconds long! So, Zhang Yang reserved his {Block} to counter the attack. Even if he received additional fire damage from the attack, the long cool down period of time was enough for him to take a bottle of [HP Potion] to recover his health points!

Under the powerful damage output of Zhang Yang and his turtle, the health points of Phoebe plummeted, and by the end of it, she let out a miserable scream and collapsed into her own pool of blood.

And this time, the loot was even more miserable to look at! Phoebe only dropped two pieces of Gray-Silver equipment! Not even one piece of Yellow-Gold equipment! Stingy as f\*ck!

From the looks of it, the final boss Kazalo would be dropping anything good, so Zhang Yang could only count on the final reward of the quest! Zhang Yang could already predict that the rewards would include the [Titan Chest Plate]. However, the previous quests included a S-Rank difficulty quest and a cumulative quest rating. Would there be any add-ons for a good performance?

Zhang Yang unsummoned the [Mythical Turtle] and followed Kent from behind without questioning further.

Every monster that appeared on the way were instantly killed by the swinging axe of Kent. Both of them arrived at the highest floor of the tower in just a short amount of time.

A powerful, hulking middle-aged man was standing right by the large windowsill of the floor with a sword in his hands. He was looking down to the battlefield from up high. Although he had already heard the footsteps of Zhang Yang and Kent coming up, he did not turn around, and spoke with his back facing them, "Joe, you must be Joe. Smith, aren't you? I just don't get it, why must you go against us so badly! I have already sent you secret letters! As long as you join us, you will have your territory in the mountains! You won't lose anything!"

[Kazalo] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 88

HP: 8,800,000

Defense: 2,500

Kent was shouting in rage, "Kazalo, you and your men had been plaguing the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night for so many years! Today shall be the day that I end you and rid the 'cancer' of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night!"

Kazalo burst into laughter and he finally turned around. His face was almost square, with a pair of sharp and fierce-looking eyes, giving a sense of calm, and yet intimidating aura. He shook his head and said, "To hear these words from a thief in the mountains, it's like listening to a joke!"

"Kazalo, prepare to die!" Kent took a deep breath and began to charge towards the boss with his axe.

"You're just a small fry, you need to know your own place!" Kazalo did not even look at Kent, and with an upwards swing of his sword, he intended to deflect the axe!

‘Ting!’

Kent's axe was broken in half, like it was made of tofu! With only one hit, the boss had broken Kent's axe!

"Hahaha! Tremble before my [Star-Devourer]!" Kazalo was

laughing madly, and he continued to raise his sword up, ready to slash at Kent's body.

Kent showed no signs of dodging the blow! With his right fist raised, he forcefully threw a fist at the boss with incredible strength!

‘Ting!’

The [Star-Devourer] reached the body of Kent first, but it did not slash Kent into half like it did to the axe. Instead, the hit gave out sparks upon impact, inflicting a certain amount of damage to Kent.

On the other side, Kent's fist had landed on the boss, inflicting an incredible amount of damage to the boss!

"Huh?" Kazalo was shocked and confused, he questioned his own eyes and said, "What kind of armor are you wearing? It can actually withstand my [Star-Devourer]!"

Kent lifted up his other fist and began to punch it out, "Curious, aren't you? Let's wait until I punch your brain out of that thick idiotic skull of yours, and then I shall tell you! I won't let you die without knowing!"

"Dream on! What can one good piece of equipment do to you, I will still be able to obliterate you! I should thank you for bringing me such good armor!" Kazalo confidently resumed his attacks!



"Young man, please aid me by securing the entrance of this place, don't let anyone in!" Kent shouted at Zhang Yang as he engaged in the fierce duel.

‘Ding! The objective of the Quest: Slay the Chieftain of the enemy has been modified, you must secure the entrance of the floor by the stairs, stop any of the mobs from giving aid to Kazalo, until Kent slays Kazalo. If Kent dies, the quest will fail!’

It meant that Zhang Yang did not have to slay the boss, all he had to do was to block the entrance. The more monsters that got through him, the higher chances of Kent losing the battle and ending the quest in a failure!

Zhang Yang took in a long deep breath, and reminded himself to hurl his {Spear of Obliteration} towards the boss from afar whenever the opportunity presents itself. Because as long as he could inflict some damage on the boss, at least he would be able to receive some experience points and loot. Although the value of the loot was expected to be low, it was better to get one or two pieces of equipment than end up empty handed. Plus, the boss was a Violet-Platinum grade boss, anything dropped from him would be worth hundreds of thousands of dollars!

As he was looking down from the higher ground, he saw a wave of approximately 10 elite-grade monsters marching up the stairs.

Zhang Yang had already summoned his [Mythical Turtle] by his side, ready to engage anything that comes his way, together with his turtle!

Tut tut tut! The first monster had already arrived in front of Zhang Yang.

[Kazalo's Close Quater Guards] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

Zhang Yang immediately took out his axe and hacked at the enemy, inflicting a damage of 2,812 on the monster. His rage points were instantly accumulated, rising up to a total of 31 points! At the same instant, he activated his {Block}, saving himself from the counterattacks from the monster, giving him another 30 points of rage points!

As the second monster was approaching as well, he immediately switched his weapon to [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and activated his {Horizontal Sweep}. Instantly, another two damage value of 4000+ were inflicted on the monsters at the same time.

That's right! {Horizontal Sweep} did not have the attribute to pass through solid objects, but the entrance of the stairs was so narrow with Zhang Yang and [Mythical Turtle] blocking the way,

only two of these elite monsters could squeeze to the front to attack Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was also limited to hitting the two targets in front of him.

First he activated his {Blood Rage}, and then he let out a burst of {Blast Wave}!

This time, 10 damage values appeared at the same time within his sight view! The [Dark Enigmatic Sword] kicked in, inflicting further damages to the monsters!

Zhang Yang then switched his weapon back to the [Goblin's Head Lobber] and continued to station himself and his turtle at the narrow entrance, where they continued to unleash their assaults on the two monsters in front of them.

The quest only required him to delay the elite monsters from reaching Kent, it did not say that Zhang Yang would need to clear out all of the monsters in front of him. Therefore, it was not necessary for him to work on killing them off. As long as he could block them at the entrance until Kent slays the boss, he would have done his part.

His strength value was already very high at the moment, so the monsters would not be able to knock him back. Like a sturdy rock, he stood against the tide!

# Chapter 355: The Mighty Titan Chest Plate

---

‘-1,391!’

Every single attack of the monsters inflicted Zhang Yang with approximately 1,400 points of damage value. Zhang Yang did not dare kite both the monsters by himself, so he only kited one of the monsters and allowed [Mythical Turtle] to block the other monster.

When his health points were beginning to run low, Zhang Yang would take a bottle of grade-5 transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion], or a [Fountain of Life], or activate {Berserker’s Heal}, depending on the situation.

While waiting for those activated skills to cool down, Zhang Yang did not forget to throw his [Spear of Obliteration] onto the boss. Even if he could just reduce a 1 second period of time required for Kent to slay the boss, it would definitely reduce the pressure on him in blocking the monsters by the stairs as well.

One minute later, another wave of elite monsters began to charge up the stairs in an attempt to break through Zhang Yang’s defense. They were shoving the monsters in front of them, threatening to push Zhang Yang back. He was forced to use a combination of several skills to stabilize his position!

{Blast Wave}!

{Heroic Leap}!

{Wild Assault}!

{Blast Wave} and {Heroic Leap} were both skills that had crowd control effects, while {Wild Assault} is a new skill learned when a warrior reaches Level 80.

[Brutal Smash]: Delivers a fatal blow to the head of the target with the strength of a beast, inflicting 100% physical damage based on strength attribute, stuns the target for 4 seconds. Cool down: 2 minutes. Consumption: 30 rage points. Range: Melee.

{Brutal Smash} was a skill that had a control effect over one monster only, so if wisely coordinated with {Blast Wave}, a single target could be stunned for a total of 8 seconds! It would be extremely useful in PvP matches!

Zhang Yang turned his head around to check on the boss, and could see that the boss was still left with 97% health points! It would still take another 15 minutes or more for Kent to slay the boss! Although his equipment is top-notch, and he is well equipped with many lifesaving skills, he couldn't possibly hold back two elite monsters for 15 minutes!

In a haste, he brought up his voice communication device and reached out for help, "Witch snow! Come quickly! Help!"

"Silly Yu, what's up? Can't hold your piss! Can't you just hold on a little longer?" Han Ying Xue teased Zhang Yang.

"Just get over here, woman! I'll make a superb dinner for you tonight!" Zhang Yang roared in desperation.

In just a short moment, Han Ying Xue activated the [Lover's Charm] and teleported straight to Zhang Yang's location. When she saw the number of elite monsters on the stairs, she was almost struck speechless. After a moment, she asked, "Silly Yu, how on earth did you attract so many monsters?"

"Just heal me, now!"

With Han Ying Xue healing him from one side, Zhang Yang no longer had to worry about his survival. He finally managed to hold off the assaults of the monsters, wave after wave, with ease.

As the third wave began, the number of those newly spawned monsters was increased up to 20 in a single wave! The fourth wave still had 20 monsters spawning to join into battle, and the fifth wave increased the number of newly spawned monsters to 30 in a single wave! The monsters were accumulating as more waves came!

That would mean that after every two waves, an additional 10 monsters would spawn with each subsequent wave!

Fortunately, it was safe to say that the entrance of the stairs was hard to break through, and was easily defensible. Even if there were 10,000 coming at them, only two monsters would be able to launch their assaults at Zhang Yang and his [Mythical Turtle] at a

time! But as the number increased, so did the forces that worked against him. If he was careless, they could actually shove him back. He would have to put in far more effort in holding his ground!

11 minutes into the battle!

The boss was left with 26% health points, but the number of the monsters clogged up at the stairs had gone up to over 300! Although Zhang Yang and his [Mythical Turtle] had slain a few of the monsters, it was like trying to put out a burning cartload with a glass of water.

As the battle entered its 12th minute, another wave of 60 monsters joined the battle, totaling up the horde to 400!

The 400 monsters exceeded the strength of Zhang Yang, and slowly, he slid back, unable to maintain his position.

"Witch snow! Let's use our {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}!"

"... Silly Yu, don't you start groping me!"

"Relax, I have standards!"

"B\*st\*rd!"

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue retreated at the same instant, leaving a gap by the entrance of the stairs. Immediately, a large

number of monsters gushed in like a wave of tsunami from the entrance of the staircase, ganging up on the two of them!

As they held each others hands, they unleashed the dual skill! The {Blizzard Sky} and the {Luna's Dew}!

The floor around them actually sunk down, and pieces of small snow flakes began to rain down, forming a layer of snowy-white frost on the ground! Then, a bright moon appeared right on top of the tower, and a ray of moonlight shone on the two of them!

This chilly moonlight turned out to be lethal!

‘-5000!’

‘-5000!’

...

As the moonlight struck the monsters, the monsters were continuously inflicted with a series of damages!

‘Immune’!

‘Immune’!

The monsters did not flinch under their assaults, but continued



to launch their attacks fiercely on Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, but the two of them had been rendered invincible at that moment!

17 seconds later, the large horde of monsters began to die off, one after another, with more casualties at each passing second!

The {Blizzard Sky} and the {Lunar's Dew} lasted for a full 30 seconds, and when the skill stopped, no monsters were left alive on the battlefield!

"Okaaay, maybe the developers might nerf this skill soon..!" Han Ying Xue had never slaughtered so many monsters by herself before, and was shaking in excitement.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "When you reach Level 100, you can go ahead and get a damage-type 'Inheritance'. It will turn you into a healer that both heals her allies, while channeling damage upon your enemies!"

13 minutes into the battle, another wave of 70 monsters spawned and charged up by the staircase again!

But they had survived a wave of 400 monsters, what was 70 to them!

Zhang Yang positioned himself by the entrance of the staircase once again with his [Mythical Turtle] and once again, formed a blockade!

14 minutes into the battle, the number of the monsters had accumulated up to a total of 138!

Meanwhile, on the other side, Kazalo was left with merely 7% of his health points! Victory was just right in front of them!

It was really fortunate that they had that overpowered dual skill, or else they would not have lasted the battle! It would take countless players to guard against that horde of elite monsters! This was why the quest has been graded as an S-Rank. Although it wasn't a quest that required players to defeat a Violet-Platinum boss, players were required to hold back a horde of super strong, elite-grade monsters!

30 seconds left!

Zhang Yang steadily held his ground, a number of monsters well within his capabilities!

20 seconds left!

Kazalo was left with only 2% of his health points!

10 seconds left! 9, 8, 7... 3, 2, 1!

"No! You can't possibly have defeated me! I'm the invincible Kazalo, I'm the wielder of the [Star-Devourer]! I should be the one who would rule the entire world!" Kazalo was letting out his last miserable breath, right before his last drop of health points were

cut off by Kent!

Pak!

Kazalo's heavy body shook the ground, and his [Star-Devourer] fell beside him with a 'cling!' The glow of the sharp blade gradually faded, turning slowly into the natural shine of regular steel.

The remaining elite monsters started running away upon witnessing the death of their leader.

Kill the head, and the body will follow! When Kazalo died, it was natural for these monsters to run for their lives.

Zhang Yang did not pursue them, because he knew, he would get nothing in return for slaughtering these monsters. He could always get an abundance of experience points without having to chase their asses around.

Kent picked up the [Star-Devourer] from the ground and turned his eyes towards the dead body of Kazalo, and kept it in its scabbard. After that, he turned to Zhang Yang and said, "Young man, we have succeeded! We have slain the chieftain of the 'cancer' and have rid the people of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night of its 'pests'! Now, I shall rebuild an army for the people, an army that can really protect the people from harm!"

"Then, I wish you best of luck, Kent!" Zhang Yang smiled.

"Young man, you are a brave warrior, I need a warrior just like yourself by my side, come, help me build the army!" Kent invited Zhang Yang to join his cause.

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head and said, "Thank you for the offer, Kent. But I am an adventurer, I wander around, building my strength, exploring the world, that is my most desired dream! So I must decline your invitation."

"Hahaha, young man, maybe the thing that you seek is somewhere in this vast world!" Kent did not pursue the matter any further, and he said, "No matter what, I must thank you. Without your aid, I would not have defeated Kazalo! Take this, as promised!"

Kent placed a piece of the metal fragment that glittered silver into Zhang Yang's palm.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 7!’

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Slay the Chieftain of the enemy, acquired 5,000,000 experience points! Kent's remaining health points: 35%, quest rating: Perfect! The rating will be calculated into the final reward of the quest!’

‘Ding! You have completed Linked Quest: Rebuild the Republic Army! Total rating: Perfect!’

Kent took off the [Titan Chest Plate] that was on him and gave it

to Zhang Yang, "Young man, hold on to this. This belongs to you now. Now that Kazalo is dead, you can have this chest plate!"

[Titan Chest Plate] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +806

Strength: +230

Agility: +115

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Equip: Absorbs 232 damage when hit.

Additional effect 1 (Only effective on Player Zhan Yu): Cast a {Titan's Shield} onto yourself or your targeted party member. When {Titan's Shield} is activated, a player's casting will not be interrupted. {Titan's Shield} can last for 2 minutes, or absorbs a total of 300,000 damage points and then vanish. Cool down time: 4 hours.

Additional effect 2 (Only effective on Player Zhan Yu): When {Shield Wall} is activated, you will recover 10% of your health points for every second until the shield vanishes.

Required Profession: Guardian

Required Level: 80

Titan Armor Set (5/8):

Note: This is a legendary equipment forged by the god of Titans himself, not some cheap replica!

The additional effect probably came up because he had completed S-Rank quests with perfect ratings! So, although the equipment was not bound to him, the two additional effects would only be accessible by Zhang Yang alone in the entire game!

Yes indeed, this was the difference between the original item and its replica!

The additional effects of the equipment are super dope! The {Titan's Shield} was a super powerful protection skill for himself and his party members! Although the cool down period is a little too long, it could become the key to changing the tide of a battle!

The second additional special effect was even more incredible!

Zhang Yang had already leveled his {Shield Wall} up to level 6, and the cool down period of the skill was currently at 4 minutes 30 seconds. With the additional special effects of his shield, the [Titan Wall] that extends his {Shield Wall} by another 5 seconds, his health points would recover by 150% whenever he activates {Shield Wall}!

In a nutshell, he has become even harder to kill!

# Chapter 356: Answering A Fool According To His Folly

---

The good news was that the fourth fragment piece of the [Dimensional Key] had been acquired. The bad news was that, even though Zhang Yang had been hurling [Spears of Obliteration] at Kazalo throughout the entire the boss battle, he had not earned a single experience point! And the boss did not even drop anything at all!

At least he acquired the [Titan Chest Plate], which was already worth all the trouble he went through!

More importantly, he had already collected enough [Titan Armor Set] pieces to activate the second special effect of the [Armor Set]: Every time {Block} is activated, the next activation of {Shield Bash} wouldn't consume any rage points, while it would deal an additional 100%, lasts for 3 seconds.

Back in White Jade Castle, Zhang Yang inserted the [Gemstones] that he had acquired into the two empty sockets of the [Titan Chest Plate]. Instantly, his health points were increased up to a total of 76,590 points, and his damage absorption attribute reached up to 1,774 points, while his defense became 2,240 points! His survivability was once again boosted up to another level!

He is currently the CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings. Although all he really had to do was just to sign some papers, he was required to attend some company activities and some important meetings. Because the company had been shadowed by lots of negative news for awhile now, many of their top models had jumped ship to other



companies. This month has been the toughest month for Silky Soft Holdings, and the worse has finally passed. Everything has gone back to normal as they should be, and Silky Soft Holdings is now back in business! Naturally, they had to recruit a new batch of models to present their latest products on their 'menus'!

As the CEO of the company, Zhang Yang was required to interview the new batch of models.

He only found out later on that this rule was apparently set by Wei Yan Er's father when he was well and alive. Enough was said about that, all men should know why such a rule was set.

It was fortunate that the models had already been filtered out through initial sign ups and interviews, so this session was more or less the final hurdle! Of course, having gone through the filter, these girls were truly lookers with pretty faces and bodies appropriate of modeling in lingerie. Although he did not plan to do anything with the girls, it would be really satisfying and fun for him to wash his eyes by looking at pretty, sexy girls. This would be interesting!

Currently, he was alone in the interview room, seated at a working desk, with a large-sized couch placed right beside the desk. It was odd to see a couch beside his desk. Zhang Yang could not help but to start having creative ideas. The things he could possibly do on the couch...

What he did not know was that Wei Yan Er's father would have 'settled' the girl on the couch itself if he liked what he saw!

The girls coming for the interview came into the room, one after another, showing off their assets, flaunting as much as they could to earn 'points'. It was all to 'win' the interview! These women knew that Zhang Yang is the CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings, and also a shareholder of the company. So they tried to use all their skills on Zhang Yang during the process of their interview, one after another. They were showing their yearning, hungry expressions at Zhang Yang. As long as Zhang Yang wanted it, they would give it to him!

Zhang Yang rated them based on his own preferences, as he did not care about professionalism or whatever sh\*t when it came to picking models.

"Nice to meet you, Mr. Zhang. I'm entry number 21, my name is Luo Xin Yan---" the soft and sexy voice of a woman came through the door.

Zhang Yang was still rating the previous interviewee, which had a pair of very big boobs, a hot body, and a deceitfully baby face. She would surely be popular among men! However, when he heard the three words 'Luo Xin Yan', he snapped his head up in shock, what were the odds!

The woman that came in right after, and closed the door shut right behind her was the woman who had a history with Zhang Yang in his previous life, the woman with the name 'Luo Xin Yan'!

It is already March, although it was still considered to be late

spring, some vain women had already started wearing skirts and dresses. Of course, Luo Xin Yan was one of them, and for an interview such as this that could decide her future, she would definitely dress up nicely and put up enough make up to make her look her best! With a pair of red high-heels on her fair, long legs, wrapped up in [black ultra sheer](#). She had a very thin knee-length skirt around her waist that wrapped around her body, revealing her sexy, seductive figure.

Ultra Sheer - super thin long socks that reach beyond thighs. Covers almost the entire leg. Also known as stockings.

The interview was facilitated in an air-conditioned room, but the temperature wasn't too chilly. She probably brought along a coat to handle the elements outside.

Luo Xin Yan also caught sight of Zhang Yang. She was shocked to see him to the point that she opened her small little mouth wide, staring at him like a deer caught in headlights! She could have never imagined that the hoodlum who forced himself on her mouth would actually be the CEO of a huge company like this one!

Previously, she had already cursed Zhang Yang over the incident many times over and was finally prepared to move on with her life. But what she did not anticipate was that Zhang Yang would actually appear right in front of her, as a CEO of the company!

Zhang Yang was very entertained by the expression that Luo Xin Yan showed him. He crossed his arms and smiled vaguely. In his previous life, Luo Xin Yan had caused so much misery to him, that Zhang Yang would never let her off so easily this time. Furthermore, the thoughts of having her back by his side were

repulsive.

As Zhang Yang had been really obedient towards her demands, he would give her any luxury that she desired! But, it appeared that her greed knew no bounds, and she was a heartless ingrate! Instead of being thankful for having Zhang Yang as her man, she had stabbed him the back! Zhang Yang would never forget the heartbreaking betrayal!

Luo Xin Yan began to calm herself down, and then she lifted up her skirt and took her panties right off and threw it on the floor. Then she strutted up to the sofa, bent down and squeezed her boobs together forwards, showcasing them. She then rolled her skirt up and revealed her plump, round butt with a thick black bush in between it, showing it to Zhang Yang.

She pushed her two palms against the sofa and turned her head over, "Didn't you want to 'please' me that day? Bring it, as long as you sign the contract to hire me, I'm yours to 'please'!"

Thud, thud, thud, Zhang Yang approached her slowly.

Luo Xin Yan revealed a cold smile, thinking to herself that men were all about the few seconds of pleasure! She believed that there was nothing to lose in those few seconds. And if she happened to 'encounter' men who were talented and good at 'pleasing' women, it would be a bonus!

"Argh ---" She let out a moan, with her eyes closed and her brows knitted as she felt an 'unknown' object entering the crevice right

beneath her butt. It was cold, but it was extremely thin. Luo Xin Yan could only scorn in her heart. So, this tall and macho Zhang Yang has such a tiny object in his pants, what a joke!

Zhang Yang, from a seated position on his sofa, spoke up. "I don't have the habit of 'pleasing' prostitutes!"

Luo Xin Yan was stunned, as she instantly that felt there was something wrong about this! Even if Zhang Yang's 'little buddy' was really long, he couldn't possibly reach her from the sofa, right beside her! She looked around again to see that Zhang Yang was still well dressed and his 'little buddy' was still safe and sound underneath his pants!

She quickly put her hands to her crotch to investigate, only to realize that there was a ball pen inserted within her! She only realized then, that the cold and thin 'unknown' object was in fact, a ball pen!

Luo Xin Yan instantly felt embarrassed and enraged at the same instant, but she remembered that Zhang Yang was the man controlling her fate at that very moment, so she did not dare to treat him like how she treated him during the 'Speed Dating Event'. She spoke softly in a calm tone, "Mr. Zhang, I'm sorry for being so blind about you. Please forgive me. You're such a significant person, you don't have to bother so much about a little peasant like me."

How could he not see this side of her in his previous life? Such a manipulative, cunning side of her, so shallow-minded and snobbish!

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh quietly. In his previous life, he was really blinded so much by his own lust, or should it be that blind love had made him so stupid! Now, this woman, Luo Xin Yan, only disgusted him so much that he was genuinely remorseful over his stupidity for loving her so much in his previous life!

He smiled vaguely and said, "I will never give you this job!"

Luo Xin Yan instantly sank into silence, and after standing up, she turned her back on Zhang Yang and was ready to leave the room.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Although I won't be signing you as a model of the company, there is another job that pays you millions a year. I'm just wondering if you are interested in it."

Luo Xin Yan froze mid step and stopped. With a quick and loud "shoof!", she spun around and looked at him with a happy face, "What did you say? A job that pays mi... millions a... a year?"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "That's right!"

Luo Xin Yan immediately walked back to Zhang Yang and said, "So you're simply a rabbit that doesn't nibble the grass near its own hole! I thought that you were a decent person!" She thought that Zhang Yang was going to take her as his mistress.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "I want you to become a

mistress, for someone else!"

Luo Xin Yan suddenly turned furious, "What do you think I am?"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "You tell me, what should you mean to me then?"

Luo Xin Yan went into silence, and finally, she gritted her teeth and said, "One million a year, not a cent less!"

In his previous life, Liu Wei had planted Luo Xin Yan in his life to spy on him. In this life, Zhang Yang had decided to do the same thing to Liu Wei, to plant Luo Xin Yan on Liu Wei in order to spy on him, and to ambush him when the time came!

According to the history of his previous life, the Silky Soft Holdings should have already been 'torn apart' by Luo Ming Yang and those scumbag relatives. So, it would have been impossible for Luo Xin Yan to attend today's interview. In that case, she should be meeting Liu Wei anytime soon to become his woman! Two years from now, she should be sent to spy on Zhang Yang.

Time to answer a fool according to his folly!

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I'll bank-in 100,000 into your account on the 1st of every month! You will be earning about 1,200,000 annually, far more than what a model could earn!"

Luo Xin Yan grit her teeth as she thought about it, because being

a mistress is a totally different from having a one-night-stand with a man!

Zhang Yang continued on, "You don't have to do anything after you return to school. Just, go to classes, as usual, finish your classes as usual. One day from now, one month from now, who knows, a man called Liu Wei will appear in front of you. Then, you know what to do! What I want you to do is simple, just report to me every single word he says. Send me recordings, send me notes!"

Luo Xin Yan blinked in surprise, and then she said, "You're asking me to become a corporate spy!"

Zhang Yang gave some thought about it and replied, "Yeah, that's the idea!"

Luo Xin Yan immediately shook her head and said, "That's too dangerous, one million is not enough!"

Zhang Yang smiled coldly and said, "Don't you think that you're the only woman I can ask of this! 1,200,000 is just an extra earning for you in a year. I believe that you would not really want to be somebody's mistress for the rest of your life, right? After you have earned enough, you can just pick a favorite spot and vanish! I also believe that this amount of money is enough for you to disappear and have a good life! There's more to this, whenever you get me some useful information, I shall add a bonus of 100,000 to your account!"

Luo Xin Yan was trying to bargain for more, hoping that Zhang



Yang would increase his pay. These 100,000 extras did it for her! After giving it some thought, she said, "Alright! I'll do it!"

Zhang Yang gave her a contact number to keep him informed of things.

Luo Xin Yan's butt wagged from side to side with each step, as she walked all the way to the door and left the room. After just a short while more, Zhang Yang heard the sound of the door opening again, and another girl came in, "Mr. Zhang, I'm interviewee number 22, my name is Wang Ya ---"

A delicate and attractive beauty walked into the room, she had a pretty face, with curly locks of hair going down her visage. Her boobs were so round and huge that they were on the verge of bursting out of her clothes!

Zhang Yang could not help it but wonder, why are all these women so well-endowed! The reason is simple, this is a company that manufactures bra! So they would turn their eyes towards models who would best display their 'weapons', they had to be huge! This was also the final stage of the interview, the 'lesser' women had already been eliminated up to this point!

As the beauty ran her eyes across the room, she saw the pair of black panties that were left on the floor by Luo Xin Yan. She could not help but smile knowingly! No wonder it took so long for the previous interview to end!

Thinking that she had it all under control now, she smiled and

began to take off her clothes.

Zhang Yang stared wordlessly at the scene, "..."

...

Who would have thought that it would be so tiring to host an interview!

After everything was settled, Zhang Yang closed the door of the office shut and put on his game helmet. Ever since Luo Xin Yan had walked out, all of the remaining interviewees seemed to have been ‘enlightened’ by the panties on the floor, the moment they walked through the door, they used all of their ‘skill sets’ to seduce Zhang Yang!

But none of them thought realized, that even if Zhang Yang was really lustful, it would still be impossible for him to have so much ‘stamina’ and ‘juice’ to take them all, one after another!

In the end, the company managed to recruit a total of 30 models out of 64 interviewees. That was about half of the number of the interviewees. Zhang Yang had followed his own preferences in picking the 30, after which, he passed the name list to his secretary, leaving the ‘cleaning up’ for his employees to do.

The moment he went online, Zhang Yang went straight to the Alchemist Shop to buy some [Potions], and then he proceeded to his warehouse and crafted all of the materials into [Level 4 Healing

Potion].

‘Ding! You have crafted [Level 4 Healing Potion] X 6!’

...

‘Ding! You have crafted [Level 4 Healing Potion] X 6! Because of [Alchemist’s Intuition], the [Level 4 Healing Potion] has transmuted!’

[Level 4 Healing Potion (Grade 4 Transmutation)]  
(Consumable)

Use: Immediately recovers 8,000 health points, and proceeds to recover 3,200 health points over the period of the next 10 seconds. Cool down: 1 minute. Using any kind of potion will send all potions into the same cool down duration.

Required Level: 60

Awesome, grade 4 transmutation is giving an additional 40% of the initial healing amount. It also means that grade 10 transmutation could give up to a total amount of 16,000 healing points! Unfortunately, this additional healing amount of health points was just like [Heal], it had a cool down of 10 seconds before any healing potions can be used again.

This [Potion] will really come in handy during Player VS Player match!

Zhang Yang then gave these [Level 4 Healing Potion (Grade 4 Transmutation)] to the members of the two parties that were taking part in the S-Rank Professional League Championship. Lost Dream and the rest of the party members were shocked to receive the potions from Zhang Yang and they thanked him over and over again.

Just as he was preparing to craft more potions, Zhang Yang suddenly received a message from Hundred Shots.

"Zhan Yu, we have a situation. I received news that The Dominators has been gathering other guilds to aid them in launching an assault on our Mining Cave! They are planning to take our Mining Cave from us!"

--- it had been a regular thing for large-scale guilds to plant spies in their enemy guilds to spy on them internally.

Zhang Yang was shocked, he paused for a brief moment and shook his head, "This 'Hypocrite' still has not learned his lesson yet! Still trying to get back at us, eh? Fine, make some arrangements then! If The Dominators want a fight, then let's bring the fight to them! We shall show no fear!"

"Yes!"

Zhang Yang contacted Han Ying Xue and the gang, "That 'Hypocrite' is trying to trouble us once again, let's go and show him some 'colour', shall we?"

"Yes! Awesome idea!" Wei Yan Er was excited to let some steam off. She had been focusing on her studies very hard these days. As she had been looking at books and homework, she had not logged into the game for days! Her playful nature was screaming out for her to let loose!

Other than Wei Yan Er, Lost Dream, and Galileo were also players who lusted for battles. Everyone else seemed to be very excited about it!

"Let's go!"

# Chapter 357: Mining Cave Defense Battle

---

Hundred Shots immediately summoned all the top-tiered players of Lone Desert Smoke and made arrangements to gather them at the Mining Cave as soon as possible. After some days of progress, the Sub-Guild had accumulated enough guild experience points to be eligible to use the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order]. Then, they upgraded the Sub-Guild up to a Level 2 guild, increasing the limit of the players that they could recruit into their guild, up to 20,000. In just a short period of time, they had also almost hit the maximum limit of members of the guild!

Approximately 20,000 top-tier players of Lone Desert Smoke were roaming close to the entrance of the Mining Cave.

Zhang Yang and his party members arrived at the hilltop nearby the Mining Cave. They had a vantage point on the only path that led straight to their Mining Cave.

All nine of them already possessed their very own [Battle Mounts]. Endless Starlight and Lost Dream were having slightly inferior [Battle Mounts] of Gray-Silver grade. It was even worse for Fatty Han, he was still riding on a large lizard that was only of Green-Copper grade! Wei Yan Er laughed at him so hard that she almost fell off her own [Battle Mount].

As all of them had [Battle Mounts], so they would all be terrifyingly powerful forces, especially when it came to Player VS Player battles. When mounted, each of them would have an incredible amount of hitpoints.

Unfortunately, it was not suitable for Zhang Yang to summon his [Mythical Turtle] to battle on land. If their opponents took a few steps back, the turtle would take minutes to catch up to them!

So, Zhang Yang had to summon Whitey, boosting his maximum health points up by only 32,700. It was so unfortunate that Yellow-Gold [Battle Mount] had a really obvious difference when compared to a Violet-Platinum [Battle Mount]! Although the [Gold-Eared Bear King] had a passive skill that gave a 30% increment on the maximum health points of the player when mounted, it was still far from the 50.480 maximum health points that the [Mythical Turtle] could provide! The difference was really huge!

After a while, Zhang Yang and the gang could see a bunch of people coming up right above the horizon from afar. All of them were riding on their battle horses and battle wolves, charging towards the entrance of the Mining Cave with murderous intentions on their faces!

There were more than 30,000 of them, by the looks of it, charging over like a bunch of black ants, gushing towards the entrance of the cave!

Zhang Yang began to rouse up his guild members via the guild channel, "Brothers and sisters, the enemy is just right before us, they look thirsty! Why don't we give them something to drink! Ready and steady!"

‘Chiang chiang chiang’, every single member of the Lone Desert Smoke drew out their weapons one after another, roaring into the sky.

Zhang Yang had also pulled out his battle axe and was prepared to battle. He roared, "Charge!"

Zhang Yang led his party, with Han Ying Xue and the others right behind him, and they were followed by the large army of the Lone Desert Smoke.

The long awaited Humbly Gentleman finally appeared, leading his own army on a large grasshopper, brownish-yellow in color! The two hind legs of the grasshopper were extremely thick and muscular, and the grasshopper had a pair of extremely thin wings that constantly quivered, but it could not fly. However, it could jump over a distance of seven to eight meters!

This grasshopper was obviously a [Battle Mount], because there were no signs of [Mounts] with such of designs.

He stared at Zhang Yang with his eyes filled with extreme hate, "Zhan Yu, it's been awhile since then!"

This 'Hypocrite' has every single right and reason to hate Zhang Yang. Without Zhang Yang and his 'Lone Desert Smoke', The Dominators would have been able to go to Shang Hai and they would have been eligible to join the S-Rank Professional League Championship. Instead, they were stuck in the A-Rank Professional League Championship!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Hypocrite! So you have not learned your lesson yet, here you are trying to challenge me



again!"

Humbly Gentleman looked at Zhang Yang with cold eyes and said, "Now, Radiance also possesses a Territory as well! So it's not necessary for us to visit your Thunderstorm Castle just to use the teleportation service of yours! We no longer have to pay for your bullsh\*t! Zhan Yu! It's been a while since you've occupied this Mining Cave, I think it's time you step out of it and let the others in!"

Right after that, a few other players came forth atop their [Battle Mounts], one of them was a male human warrior with the label of 'Dragon Slayer, Level 76, {Brilliance}', "Zhan Yu, we can share the wealth, we need not have to spill any blood over this! As long as you agree to let us come into your Mining Cave to mine together with you, we would not only be on friendly terms with you, but we will also protect this Mining Cave!"

Another player said, "That's right. The battle would only bring us unnecessary loss, instead, why not work together?"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "If I went all the way to your place and demand that you share your wealth and properties, would you agree with it?"

Humbly Gentleman glanced at Zhang Yang coldly and said, "So you're saying that battle is inevitable!"

Wei Yan Er was enraged and she shouted at Humbly Gentleman, "You 'Hypocrite'! You really know nothing about shame! So,

basically, you knock on our doorstep looking for trouble, and make us look like the unreasonable batch! Your face is thicker than concrete walls! No, thicker than two or three layers of concrete walls!"

"Cut the crap, battle it is! It's just one 'Lone Desert Smoke', and there are the four of us joining forces together! What's there to be afraid of!" another player of the Beastman profession, with the name 'Kiyumi, Level 77, {Meteor Rain}' cut in and said.

All of the opposing players were coming from 4 different guilds: The Dominators, Brilliance, Meteor Rain and Death's Wish. If it was one guild against another one guild, Lone Desert Smoke was unmatched!

Humbly Gentleman humphed lightly and said, "Zhan Yu, you're the one who forced our hands!"

Although it was them who came all the way over with the intention of taking over other people's land property, but to be able to lay the blame on the 'victim' instead, as if they were the ones who were wronged, this 'Hypocrite' is indeed worthy of his name!

Humbly Gentleman raised the staff in his hands and roared, "The Dominators, charge!"

"People of Brilliance, it's time for you show your strength to your enemies!"

"Let the world know of our strength! Meteor Rain!"

"The Death's Wish is the strongest guild of all! Not Lone Desert Smoke!"

The four guild masters of the four guilds were roaring, commanding their subordinates to launch their attacks on Lone Desert Smoke!

Instantly, the roar of 30,000 men from the four guilds gushed in towards Zhang Yang and his guild like a tidal wave.

Territory, Mining Cave, Land Lease, were the 3 most profitable sources of income in {{God's Miracle}}. Among all these three so-called 'resource points', one can only acquire a Territory by using the [Territory Command Order] or [Territory Subjugation Order]. Meanwhile, Land Properties required [Land Leases] for a player to make purchases of the land. So these two did not come easy.

But the case was very different for Mining Caves. As long as there were miners going into mine in the cave, there would definitely be profit!

This has made the Mining Cave one of the most wanted 'resources'. If one guild can block the entrance of a Mining Cave, then that guild can acquire a stable stream of income by sending their members down the mines to mine! The sum of the profit from the mining activity is abundant!

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Yang also roared, "Brothers and sisters! For Lone Desert Smoke!"

"For Lone Desert Smoke!"

Everyone on Zhang Yang's side roared with vigor, riding on their [Mounts] behind Zhang Yang, while charging straight towards the large army!

The armies from two sides clashed into each other, and many players had jumped down from their [Mounts] to engage in intense battle --- most of the players did not have [Battle Mounts] yet, at the current stage of the game.

The melee profession players charged to the front, while the ranged profession players closely followed behind them. Everyone was unleashing their AOE skills, making the scene flooded with arrows, hails and rain of fire. In the midst of the crossfire, many players from both sides were instantly killed. Almost in an instant, a large number of players were turned into streams of white lights that were channeled straight to the graveyard.

"Witch Snow, follow me closely! We shall become '[Zhao Yun](#)' and '[charge seven times through](#)'!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

"... Silly Yang, you pervert! But, you look like [a spear made of wax](#)! What, only seven charges and you're done? Fatty Han could do it all day, you're way behind him!"

Fatty Han had longed to hear such words, no matter who said it. He began to grin with a perverted facial expression on his face.

"Fatty, you're brilliant!" Endless Starlight immediately praised Fatty Han.

"Of course! It's a fact!"

Still, Han Ying Xue nodded, and thumped the shell of her [Red Gold Crab], and followed Zhang Yang. The two of them forced their way into the center of their enemy!

With Zhang Yang's terrifyingly high defense currently, other than the Berserker's {Tornado Cleave}, he basically ignored all of the AOE skills from his enemies --- as AOE attacks were often weaker, and took some time to cast. For example, the {Barrage} of the hunter required 10 seconds to cast, and would barely damage Zhang Yang, if at all. Therefore, there is no way these AOE attacks would penetrate the defense of Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang charged into the sea of players, like water through creeks of a brick wall! Instantly, he switched to his [Dark Enigma Sword] and activated his {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep}, unleashing his assaults on his enemies, with wave after wave of his skills. As his [Dark Enigma Sword] triggered its special effect, the sword unleashed endless damage to the horde of enemies around him, like a radioactive bomb expanding out, reaching out to all the enemies nearby!

"Kill Zhan Yu first!" Humbly Gentleman quickly shouted to

inform everyone, "Surround him! We must not let him get back to his army!"

He knew that Zhang Yang had a skill called {Shadow of the Void} that provided him a way out of difficult situations. He did not know what it was called, though!

Zhang Yang laughed maniacally, "Witch Snow, come now, let them have a taste of our {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}!"

Although the skill required a cool down of 72 hours, that was according to the in-game time, not the real time! It has been more than a day in real-time since they had unleashed their joint attack on Stormgarde!

Han Ying Xue reached out and held Zhang Yang's hand.

{Blizzard Sky}! {Lunar's Dew}!

Immediately, the two of them became the center of the skill, and an area as wide as 30 meters of circumference was covered in hail snow which rained down from the sky. Meanwhile, the moon rose up into the sky and began to emit out waves of moonbeams into the surroundings.

The moonbeams began to shoot out in all directions.

‘-5000!’

‘-5000!’

‘-5000!’

...

Instantly, countless damage values popped up within the effective area of the skills, flooding up the entire area!

After 3 ticks of the damage, players were already beginning to die! They could not even heal themselves before they died! It was really a ‘jackpot’ for Humbly Gentleman as he had sent such a large number of troops to surround Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. Squeezed tightly together in one spot, with their own allies pushing their backs, they all were shoved into the moonlight!

"Retreat! Retreat! Stay the hell away from him!" Humbly Gentleman was almost crying like a schoolboy! Not only have Zhang Yang’s equipment become impossibly strong and powerful, he also had such a skill up his sleeve! Is the game trying to push him until he dies?

After tens of seconds, finally, no one was charging at Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue anymore.

This is the difference between players and monsters. Monsters do not care about anything! As long as their aggro bars were not empty, even if there was a sea of traps, swords and other weapons

right in front, the monsters would still charge at their targets! Players could observe and act accordingly to the situation. Since Zhang Yang was seemingly untouchable and unapproachable at the moment, everyone stopped, knowing that it was suicide!

30 seconds had passed, the {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew} had stopped. Although Humbly Gentleman had shouted 'retreat' in time, more than 1000 players were already killed by the attacks!

That number of players dead was actually pretty terrifying!

The surroundings of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue was instantly cleaned out! At least hundreds of equipment pieces glittered in Green-Copper or Gray-Silver light, all over the ground!

"Time to go!"

Zhang Yang quickly informed Han Ying Xue, and then the both of them began to retreat back to their army. At first, with the two of them activating the joint attack of {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, they had been invincible for 30 seconds! Now that the skill was over, it was time to go back. They would be overwhelmed by the numbers if they stuck around!

Of course, it could become possible for one player to go up against hundreds of players at the same time at the later stages of the game, if a player could get a full set of legendary equipment and a high-quality pet!

Zhao Yun - courtesy name Zilong, was a military general who lived in the late Eastern Han dynasty and early Three Kingdoms



period.

Charges seven times through - a famous scene in Romance of the Three Kingdoms in which Zhao Yun charges seven times through the ranks of Cao Cao's armies

Spear made of wax - looks impressive but useless.

# Chapter 358: Like Water Through A Brick Wall

---

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue's surroundings were immediately cleared. The two of them swiftly turned back to their mounts and rode to their army.

"After them! Don't let them get away!" cried Humbly Gentleman with great hatred.

If Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue managed to escape to safety, it would be a massive blow to Humbly Gentleman's soldier morale! However, during the casting of {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, all four guilds had scattered a great distance from them to avoid the attack. Now, to have them chasing after them was an incredible tough task. Furthermore, both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had mounts! A majority of the enemy soldiers were still running on their two feet! How could they run after a person who on a mount!? It was impossible! Not even a hundred foot soldiers could chase after them, all they could do is eat the dust that was flung onto them.

"Boss! Sister Snow and you were too cool! That's bloody sick yo!" said Endless Starlight in the party channel.

"Was that the Paired Skill?"

"Yeah...that's the Two-In-One Skill! Fu fu fu!" said Fatty Han after he shot an arrow and smile a V-shaped smile.

"AIYA! Noon tank! How could you be picky! I also want to be one with you!" said the little brat with a straight face, without any signs of her being shameful.

Zhang Yang stopped attacking immediately and almost slipped and fell when he heard what Wei Yan Er just said. "You stupid fat-f\*ck! Can you please be a little more decent!? Please don't be teaching that kind of stuff to a little kid!"

Fatty Han did not respond, but instead, Wei Yan Er struck the earth with her axe and glared at Zhang Yang. "Hey! Who are you calling a little kid?!"

"Who else!? Stop stopping and start killing!"

Everyone around the vicinity laughed at their comical act and continued killing. Even without Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue's Paired Skill, Lone Desert Smoke's combined attack force was naturally above the combined forces of all four guilds. During recruitment, Zhang Yang had a specific standard for players who wanted to join the guild. Because of that, the war between the guilds was leaning towards Lone Desert Smoke. He could not claim that each of his members could take on ten men at a time, but he was sure that they could handle a few opponents at once all by themselves!

Lone Desert Smoke players' average level and equipment strength were better than the majority of the opponent guilds. In truth, they were supposed to be overwhelmed by the sheer number

of enemy, however, the entire battle did show any signs of that! After all, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had gallantly performed a powerful attack on the enemy and had killed a large number of them, the enemy had already lost motivation!

Never underestimate the power of morale in a war. In large numbers, morale played an important role to determine the outcome of a battle! With Lone Desert Smoke burning with vigor, they had successfully pressurized the opponents, causing them to drop their weapons as the deaths continued to pile up.

However, even with Lone Desert Smoke's superiority in war, both sides were suffering huge casualties. Zhang Yang turned his sight on Humbly Gentleman and said, "I'll be right back. I need to kill that hypocrite!"

Destroy the leader, and the gang will collapse. Zhang Yang wanted to do just that. Since the morale of the enemy was already rock bottom, killing the leader would definitely be the final step in winning the war. Zhang Yang activated {Dig} and headed underground towards Humbly Gentleman. The best thing about this skill was the fact that he could have a clear view of what that was happening above ground and would never be detected nor blocked by anyone! Naturally, mounts would be left out during the activation of the skill.

Without much time wasted, Zhang Yang arrived at where Humbly Gentleman was. This man was a p\*ssy to be blunt. He had never taken the reins and led his troops in the front lines. As a low-defense Spellcaster, he felt safest barking orders from far behind.

"Heh." Zhang Yang scoffed.

BOOM!

Zhang Yang broke the earth underneath Humbly Gentleman and stabbed him like a real ninja!

{Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

Shoosh! A bright light flashed, followed by a shadow that emerged out from Zhang Yang to form a man wielding a sword. The shadow then cut into Humbly Gentleman's body.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

After three pops, Humbly Gentleman dropped dead! The mount he was currently on was only a Gray-Silver tier that only increased his maximum HP by 11,000 which only gave him a total of 28,000 HP!

Pew! A quick gleam of gold jumped out in the air from Humbly Gentleman's body. With lightning speed, Zhang Yang swiped the boots and stashed it in his inventory. Confused and disoriented, Humbly Gentleman had no idea on how Zhang Yang was able to

kill him! To prevent any infiltration of Thieves, Humbly Gentleman had set up a perfect barricade around himself. He had placed members around him, forming a perfect ring. Even though Thieves could be invisible with their Stealth mode, they could not phase through living objects. He had completely lowered his guard and had paid for it with his face kissing the dirt, along with his dignity and his Yellow-Gold boots!

Naturally, Zhang Yang had planned it all out. This battle had to be cut short/ Thus, he had no need of saving his ulti {Dance of Heaven and Earth}. If he had not used it, that man would have the time to activate {Ice Frame}, leaving Zhang Yang open to attacks! Or worse, Humbly Gentleman could have escaped!

Now that he had started the fire, it's best to pour oil to spread the fire! This time, Zhang Yang changed his target to Kiyumi, the guild master of Meteor Rain. He then activated the Ring of Beastman's Ancestor and summoned an old orc from the ring. He then pointed his magic staff towards Kiyumi and started chanting a spell.

Pew! A long, white, electric burst out and shot towards Kiyumi.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

With three hits, similar to Humbly Gentleman, Kiyumi suffered a

huge burst of damage and dropped down. Even though Kiyomi had a Gray-Silver mount like Humbly Gentleman, he was still killed within 3 seconds by the old orc's {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}.

In less than a minute, Zhang Yang had killed two of the enemy's leaders!

Even though anyone could easily revive after running back to the body in their soul form, or simply be {Revived} by a Priest, the morale of the entire army was greatly affected. Zhang Yang's brave and bold feat had sent down a cold shiver to the enemy. Inversely, Lone Desert Smoke was massively invigorated, knowing that their boss had single-handedly defeated two leaders! With them removed from the battle ground, the enemy's morale had dropped to a new level and was clearly faltering.

From the corner of the battle field, came a loud commanding roar. "Kill Zhan Yu! Do not let him live! Kill him now!"

The loud roar belonged to the guild master of Brilliance, Dragon Slayer. After all that had happened, that man still wanted to be [Zhao Zi Long](#)! He thinks he can remain unscathed from this?

Zhang Yang laughed at his idiocy and activated {Shadow of the Void}. His entire character slipped into another dimension, rendering him invisible to others.. 20 seconds later, he had reappeared at the furthest distance possible for him to travel.

"Praise the guild master!"

"Long live Zhan Yu!"

"Victory for Lone Desert Smoke!"

"In the name of Zhan Yu, we kill!"

"In the name of Lone Desert Smoke, we shall kill them all!"

"For glory!"

"For titties!"

"Please refrain from using indecent context in your speech. This is your first offense. There will be no further chances given," said Hundred Shots amidst the cheers.

With the raging morale from all Lone Desert Smoke members, victory was just an inch away, the moment Zhang Yang had slain Humbly Gentleman and Kiyumi. The battle continued on and the results were extremely obvious. Victory was already considered to be in hand. The delay was due to the fact that there were still unrelenting players from the opposing side who still believed that they could still turn the tables around.

Zhang Yang smiled and rode his bear away from the battle. He had done his part and decided to let the rest of the guild take care of the scraps. Without pausing, Zhang Yang rode towards the



## Altair Flatlands.

In the party channel, Hundred Shots had been constantly reporting on what was happening on their side, from how many enemies killed, to total equipment collected. Even though Lone Desert Smoke had suffered many casualties, with players losing their experience points and equipment, the end result was still a major profit.

Unlike the grand canyon that had not seen the lights of days, Altair Flatlands was a complete inverse of that. This place was brimming with light that it could be said to not have seen the stars in the night sky, excluding the sun which was a star. During the day, it would be the same as your everyday brightness. However, when night falls, the place would be filled with light from the corner of the horizon, glowing with such radiant colors and brightness.

Zhang Yang had come here to search for the fifth descendant of the seven generals, called Eins Brook. According to the quest description, the NPC lived in Lake Basilock, in the west region of Altair Flatlands. Other than the name provided, Zhang Yang had to find his physical location by himself. Luckily, Zhang Yang was familiar to Altair Flatlands. If he was not, Zhang Yang could have taken a full day to search for Lake Basilock.

In two hours or less, Zhang Yang had arrived at the lake. Although the lake was not as large as Great Lake Valla, it was still huge. At least, Zhang Yang could still see the land on the other side of the lake. There was a small island...or rather, large rocks that formed a small tiny island in the middle of the lake. Perhaps, when

it rains cats and dogs, the rock will be completely submerged by the rising water.

Zhang Yang started to think. With the lake being so huge, where should he start searching for the NPC? After some thoughts, he decided to start by searching around the lake. As simple as it should be, the journey was just too long to complete. By the time he was only halfway through, the war between Lone Desert Smoke and the four armies had already come to an end.

In conclusion, Lone Desert Smoke had 18,326 casualties, 3,906 losses of equipment, and had killed a total of 32,982 members! They had even collected a total of 5,389 equipment!

Zhang Yang was extremely satisfied with the results of the war. He then tasked Hundred Shots to distribute the equipment obtained from the war to all members, based on their achievements, and reimburse the players that had lost their equipment in the war. In a minute, there was a flood of messages filling up the guild channel. Everyone in the guild had probably received the news from Hundred Shots' announcement.

As they were celebrating, Zhang Yang was frowning in dismay. He had made a complete circle around the lake and had found nothing. There were nothing, but deserted land at the side of the lake. It was a thick forest, yet there were no traces of any human activities. Zhang Yang had wasted a total of 5 hours!

Zhang Yang frowned and decided that he should just start with the lake instead. He then summoned the Mythical Turtle and dove underwater. The Mythical Turtle shot through the water like a

torpedo and was only leaving a trail of bubbles behind its tail.

The search of Eins Brook was clearly a long and arduous quest. Zhang Yang had spent 3 days searching the entire lake, and had only managed to cover 75% of it! Naturally, Zhang Yang had not wasted his time to search all the way, he had also managed to collect countless [Devil's Algae], which was considered to be a small consolation prize for him.

On the fourth day, Zhang Yang had arrived at a different island within the lake. It was a rather huge island that was filled with sky-scraping trees, that measured close to a hundred meters! The leaves on the tall trees were so tightly compact and spread, that Zhang Yang could roughly estimate that the shadows cast by the tree could take up as much as 10% of the entire lake. While the sun rays could still seep through the tiny gaps of the leaves, it had made the island truly mystical and serene.

Within the thick forest, there was a man-made pathway that headed straight into the forest. From where Zhang Yang stood, he could roughly see a white colored building. Zhang Yang unsummoned the turtle and called out the bear. As he rode further and deeper into the forest, he had a good feeling of reaching his destination, because for the past few days of lingering in the lake, he had only encountered beasts and not human tracks!

Soon after, Zhang Yang had arrived at a small village. There was a huge white stone statue erected at the entrance of the village. The white colored building that he had saw back then was this statue.

Just when he was standing and looking at the statue, many villagers had surrounded Zhang Yang, pointing weapons at him and looking rather hostile.

"Outsider! How dare you remain on your horse and not bow down to Lord Eins Brook!" said a villager that behaved like the chief villager of the group.

Zhao Zi Long, or as commonly known as Zhao Yun, courtesy name Zilong, was a military general who lived in the late Eastern Han dynasty and early Three Kingdoms period. In the novel Romance of the Three Kingdoms, Zhao Yun had never been wounded in battle before, so there were no scars on his body.

# Chapter 359: It's All About the Reputation

---

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I'm not on a horse. This is a bear!"

Zhang Yang was expecting some rude comeback, but the villagers were obviously not programmed to have a sense of humor. They had only screamed angrily at him and demanded him to get down from his mount.

[Fanatic Follower] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500

Defense: 80

Note: They are the most loyal followers of Eins Brook.

As they were all normal tiered, Zhang Yang would not have trouble facing thousands of them! However, that was if he were to attack them. The NPC name tags were all in green! Which meant that Zhang Yang could only take a beating and not return any!

Zhang Yang sighed and moved towards the entrance of the village. However, when the bear was about to enter the village

border, it was stopped with such a sudden force, as if it had just hit an invisible wall! The huge force nearly threw Zhang Yang off!

Zhang Yang finally understood. For him to enter the village and meet Eins Brook, he has to follow the rules! In Russia, do as the Russians do!

Zhang Yang got down from the bear and smiled as politely as he could. "Please. Everyone. There's no need for a fuss. Let's talk it out! Honestly, I am here because of my overwhelming admiration of Eins Brook!"

"That's Lord Eins Brook!"

"...Lord...Eins Brook."

The villagers then lowered their weapons. One of the villager that had the name "Solace" walked to the front and said, "Young man. Lord Eins Brook is the Son of the Fire God! He is the only man who can listen to the Fire God's words! You have no right to meet him!"

[Solace] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 86

HP: 85,000

He was the only elite tier NPC among the crowd. It seemed like he was the village leader.

Zhang Yang asked. "What could I do, to have the opportunity to have an audience with the great Son of the Fire God?"

Solace observed Zhang Yang from top to bottom with discerning eyes and said, "First, state your name and origin."

"I am but a lowly adventurer from White Jade Castle. My name is Zhan Yu. During my days adventuring in the wild, I had accidentally obtained news of...Lord Eins Brook's miracle. To express my admiration to him, I have traveled far and wide!" Kissing people's butt was free, besides, it seemed that the situation might really need it.

Hoping for the best, Zhang Yang was rewarded with a large smile from Solace. The villagers were also so happy that they were smiling from ear to ear. That kind of smile was something that you would not see when you praise someone.

With a smiling face, Solace's expression softens and was warmer. "Young man, you have made a wise decision. Ahh...Praise the Lord Eins Brook, for he is the son of the Fire God! He shall be the prophet of the Lord. To listen and convey His every command and deliver His judgment to us all! To have the opportunity to serve His

grace, that is a certain blessing from the previous incarnation!"

Incarnation? This game is based on a western culture! How was there such a thing as reincarnation? Don't all westerners believe in eternal lives of peace in heaven? Reincarnation was a really eastern concept!

Zhang Yang hurriedly interjected Solace. "Blessed be upon thee! Please tell me, how do I have an audience with His grace! For I wish to fulfill my wish!" That was a load of crap. Zhang Yang true wish was to have "His grace" beheaded, and swipe the fifth piece of the Dimensional Key Fragment, and be done with it.

If Solace knew what Zhang Yang was about to do, he would have marked Zhang Yang as an "Infidel," and have the entire village murder him. IF they could.

Solace nodded his head in satisfaction. "Lord Eins Brook will open the Worship Altar every month and announce the words of the Lord! However, only the most loyal followers shall have the qualifications to join such holy event. Zhan Yu. From here on out, you must steel your beliefs and serve the Lord's wishes! Only then, you shall gain His blessing!"

‘Ding! You have unlocked a new Reputation: Son of the Fire God. Current Reputation Level: Neutral!’

‘Ding! You can only meet Eins Brook after obtaining the Reputation rank: Revered!’



If Zhang Yang could scream and yell, he would have. Farming Reputation points was the most boring thing to do! He could almost feel the vomit surging out from his mouth when he recalled farming Reputation points for the Centaurs!

However, a quest was a quest. He had already gather four pieces of the Key fragments, he could not just stop halfway through. Besides, if collecting key fragments would be such a nuisance, the last reward for completing the quest should be extremely luxurious! At least, it would surely be so much better than any of the previous rewards from all the previous quests that he had already completed.

There was a blue color exclamation mark hovering over Solace's head. It indicated that Solace now had a repeatable quest for Zhang Yang to complete.

Zhang Yang then talked to Solace over again and accepted a bunch of scrap quests, like killing tigers to protect the village, collecting exotic fruits and giving them to Eins Brook as an offering, and chopping some wood to resupply the village. Almost all of the quests offered by Solace were ranked D. Naturally, it was not hard, thus the Reputation points rewarded were rather measly. One quest completion reward was only at 250 points. Luckily, the in-game time was set to be 3:1, so he could invest some time in farming for those points.

The next problem was the fact that the quests had daily limits. He could only complete each quest once a day! Solace had 10 daily quests for Zhang Yang. One quest completion would reward him with 250 Reputation points. In two days, he would have reached

Friendly. In four days, he would have reached Respectful, nine days to reach Admired, and 17 days to reach Revered! That meant that it would take as long as 6 real days for him to complete the requirements for him to meet Eins Brook!

That was the main problem with Reputation points! It could not be done in a flash!

Sighing heavily at his fate, Zhang Yang left the village and started clearing all his daily quests. All of the 10 daily quests had Zhang Yang running all around the place like Hermes the messenger. None of the quests were concentrated at one spot! The developers had it that way just to toy with the players and waste their time!

As Zhang Yang went around the world, he had roughly gauged the center of the entire island. It was about a 7 to 8 cubic kilometer square of the area that he could never enter. The place was blocked by an invisible wall that could not be breached, even with {Dig} or {Shadow of the Void}. The developers were smart enough to seal all the possible loopholes to prevent players from "cheating" their way in.

Even though the farming of Reputation points was a boring, dead task, Zhang Yang was lucky that the island had an abundance of Herbs and monsters lying around. As he cleared the quest, he had also collected herbs and killed monsters to gain some experience points. Zhang Yang had accepted the Reputation points farming since it had not drastically affected his leveling speed.

After 2 hours, Zhang Yang had finally completed all the 10 daily quests. He went back to the village and had his Reputation raised

to Neutral: 2,500 / 3,000

This time, Zhang Yang had a thought. Players would eventually stumble across this place, and not because of the Dimensional Key Fragment quest. The system would never set up a map solely for Zhang Yang alone, for the sake of a single quest. Since it had to be that way, the Reputation points that Zhang Yang had farmed should have other uses, besides meeting the son of the Fire God! There should be a Reputation shop!

Zhang Yang went back to the village and search for the NPC. It was a little longer than expected, since the Reputation shop NPC was called the "Priest of God".

[Maltus, the Priest of God] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500

Defense: 80

After having a short, meaningless conversation with the NPC, he opened the shop menu.

Zhang Yang nodded in satisfaction when he noticed there were quite a number of useful items, such as Enchanting Gemstones, the

Pet skill book {Sprint}, and a few Professional recipes!

Enchanting Gemstones were special. They could be used to further upgrade all kinds of Gemstones that were socketed in the equipment. For example, Zhang Yang's [Level 3 Vitality Gemstone] had a 50 Vitality bonus. After having the Gemstone "Enchanted" it would increase its specs from 10% to 100%.

Similar to Gemstone, Enchanting Gemstones will have a failure rate, ranging from 10% to 100%. The chances were completely random. If players wished to have 100% Enchanting rate, they would have to keep on enchanting the equipment with the same [Enchanting Gemstone].

Enchanting Gemstones require a specific rank of Reputation. However, it did not mean that with Reputation, you could acquire it, players would still need gold coins to purchase them!

To put it blatantly, it's all about money.

On the side note, the skill {Sprint} was extremely well sought for. It allowed the mount of a pet to gain a double movement speed burst in a short period of time. It was extremely useful for both chasing and running away!

So far, Zhang Yang's Professional Alchemy was the only Profession that required recipes. As such, he had taken a liking to one of the recipes that were for sale. The [Level 4 Natural Resistant Potion]. The potion will grant players, a strong and useful 5,000 bonus to Natural damage resistance for the next 2 minutes.

Surely but sadly, all of these good items would only be sold to players with a Reputation rank of Revered. With such a good cake, Zhang Yang had to share this piece with everyone. He then contacted Han Ying Xue and the rest of his friends and informed them about the news and had them farm Reputation points with him. Truth be told, he had indirectly dragged them down the waters with him. In truth, farming Reputation alone in the fields was just too boring.

Zhang Yang posted the Reputation shop item descriptions and drew in everyone else, like cats to a fish. While the others had taken quite some time to arrive, the easiest and fastest was Han Ying Xue. She had asked Zhang Yang to put on the Lover's Charm to allow her to teleport to his side instantly.

The moment Sun Xin Yu arrived, she walked up to Han Ying Xue and thrust her hand out coldly. "It's about time now. Can I have the thing you borrowed from me?"

Han Ying Xue scoffed coldly back at her and turned away. "Hmph! The Lover's Charm was not yours to begin with! Why must I return it to you?"

Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. "Woman, how old do you think you are? What are you trying to pull by acting all cute and immature? Are you trying to be like a little girl now?"

He was no psychologist, but it does not take a Ph.D. certificate to know that there was something going on between the two females.

Zhang Yang did not want any internal conflict between his own members and had decided to act out.

Sensing that Zhang Yang was at her side, Sun Xin Yu smiled smugly and turned her gaze to Han Ying Xue. "That's a gift from Zhang Yang!"

"Please. That's what you said! Back then, Zhang Yang had only passed it to you to help him claim the Territory! It was a tool to only allowed you to pass the final wave! It's not like he had given it to you as a gift! Stop trying to be presumptuous!"

The smile on Sun Xin Yu faded and was replaced with a sulk. "Give it back!"

"No!"

The two females then bumped their voluptuous chests against one another, trying to assert dominance over the Lover's Charm. Zhang Yang could swear that only he could see an electrical spark flaring between the two tigresses.

"Erhm..." Zhang Yang tried to speak but was immediately interjected by the two females.

"Shut up!" said both of them simultaneously.

"I think..." Zhang Yang tried to speak again.

"Who do you think should have the Lover's Charm?" asked the both of them.

Zhang Yang frowned. Logically, Zhang Yang felt that the Lover's Charm should be on Han Ying Xue. It would surely come in handy to have a healer on standby for he is a tank. He could have an emergency call for help to kill any sudden boss. However, Sun Xin Yu had been extremely helpful. Even though having a healer would be helpful in boss fights, Han Ying Xue would only be useful in boss fights! Sun Xin Yu was extremely helpful during the Territory War, and the day when he went to the Japan-Korean Region to farm for the Monster Attack Order! It's nail biting to not be able to make a clear decision here.

The problem now was the fact that they were fighting over it. It's a female fight! If a man suddenly jumped in to solve the problem, he might end up being chewed out by them, or something worse...

The smartest way to do was to turn around and run. However, as the party leader, the guild master, and their friend, he had to take the responsibility! Both of them were main assets!

Zhang Yang thought of a strategy and tried it out. "Why are you even quarreling over a piece of accessory?" What best, but to demean an object, so that they would not view it as a precious item! "It's just a piece of a badge, just pass it to whoever who needs it. Isn't that simple?"

"NO!" both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue screamed

simultaneously. For Han Ying Xue to scream every now and then was normal, but for Sun Xin Yu to raise her voice like that, it was extremely rare.

"In that case, how about a game of scissors, paper, stone? The winner takes it all?" said Zhang Yang.

"Fine!"

The two of them pushed against each other, squishing their breasts together, but it was impossible since the both of them had the chests of inflated airbags! There was no way for them to have a moment like men who could easily bump their foreheads together physically!

"Hehehehe. Noob tank! You're one sly, two timing pig!" said Wei Yan Er as she stood behind Zhang Yang, watching the entire scene. If there were some popcorn on the side, the little girl would definitely be munching on them happily.

Zhang Yang sighed tiredly. "I'd say, you could have spent some of the spare time you have to read some books and filled your empty brain with some knowledge. Yet, you're here, standing behind, me smirking like a crazy girl, hoping the worst to happen."

"Excuse me? What are you saying? It's 3am here! How could I study in the middle of the night! That's ridiculous!" Wei Yan Er pouted in defense.



"Hmm. Have you actually thought of going to any special schools?"

"Please...this young lady is as smart as Einstein, of course, it would be one of those top tier institutes."

During their little casual conversation, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were still busy throwing out their fists in an intense game of scissors, paper, stone.

Stone vs Stone!

Scissors vs Scissors!

Sun Xin Yu Paper won over Han Ying Xue's Stone!

"Grrr...3 matches!"

"Ok!"

The game continued on but Han Ying Xue was completely crushed by Sun Xin Yu after 2 consecutive losses.

"...5 matches!"

"Ok!"

...

"7 matches!"

...

"9!"

"21...!"

The two of them continued to haggle over their winning conditions. It's not like Sun Xin Yu was losing, but Han Ying Xue was still holding the Lover's Charm. Even if she won the match, Han Ying Xue would only further increase the match count until Sun Xin Yu could win it fairly and squarely! After some time, Wei Yan Er was already yawning. Zhang Yang quietly nudged the bored little girl.

"Let's go. I'll collect some herbs while you farm some Reputation."

"Ok."

The two of them walked away, leaving Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue puffing at each other. Without having the final decision settled, Zhang Yang was at a loss. He only knew one thing; from that day on, whenever Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue encounter each other, they would continue their match, probably till the end of time...

As time passed, everyone's Reputation points had accumulated and rose from Friendly, to Respectful, and Admired. Since everyone had started farming from the first day together, their Reputation growth was the same, since they could only complete the quests, once a day. On the 19th of March, everyone came together and completed the last Reputation quest. Everyone glowed with a bright green light and gained the Reputation rank of Revered.

At the same time, Zhang Yang had reached Level 81!

The experience point required to level up during Level 80 to Level 90 was roughly 20% more than the experience points required to level from Level 70 to Level 80. At Zhang Yang's grinding speed, he had needed at least 10 days (real world time) to gain just one level!

"Congratulations!" Solace clapped his hands and expressed his gratitude. "You have passed each and every one of the tests! I am proud to bestow upon you, the name, the honor, and the rank of the most loyal followers of Eins Brook! Walk tall and proud with the name. I have but one more good news for you. Due to your unrelenting selfless acts, Eins Brook was proud of your deeds and has granted you the permission to have an audience with him."

Finally! After so many days of tirelessly farming (and picking herbs), Zhang Yang had the chance to kill that s.o.b.

Zhang Yang was so excited and he could feel the tears falling

down. "Brother Solace, where is Lord Eins Brook?"

"The Lord is in the Fire God's Altar, waiting to hear the words from the Fire God himself!" said Solace. "Go forth! You mustn't let the Lord wait for you!"

# Chapter 360: A Time To Counter

---

"How fortunate! He has the chance to meet with the great Lord Eins Brook!"

"ARGH! I'm so jealous!"

"I know right?! The great Lord will only agree to meet one follower every month!"

Right after the moment when Solace had dropped the news about how Zhang Yang and the gang had obtained the privilege to have an audience with Eins Brook, they were in shock, surprise, astonishment, and the kind of expressions you would expect when someone announces that they had just won the lottery.

Zhang Yang pretended to be as excited as well. After the ordeal, Zhang Yang and the party went on to the Reputation shop to get themselves the Enchanting Gemstone and {Sprint} pet skill book. After spending their gold coins, everyone proceeded to learn the skill, recipes, and they waited until everyone was ready to use the Enchanting Gemstone.

Under normal circumstances, the most common outcome of Enchanting would be a 30% increment in stats. Obviously, it is hard to get a better Enchanting result. Endless Starlight was fortunate enough to obtained 90% Enchantment results in just two tries. However, being a little greedy, he wanted to keep on Enchanting until he could obtain a 100% Enchantment result. However, after Enchanting for 10 consecutive turns, he had only

managed to obtain a 60% Enchantment result. The little guy was left speechless.

Zhang Yang did actually learn from the other person's mistake, and he was not greedy in the first place. As long as he could get a 50% Enchantment result, he would stop there. He knew that Level 2 or Level 3 Gemstones were not really that powerful in the first place. The difference between 50% and 100% would be 200 Vitality points. Zhang Yang would not put much attention and effort just to gain that little amount of HP.

[Sprint]: Increases 100% movement speed of the mount for 15 seconds. Cool Down Time: 10 seconds.

After Zhang Yang gave his advice, everyone followed his footsteps and were satisfied with 50% or higher Enchantment results. They knew that they should not hope for 100% perfect results unless it was a given. Still, even though they no longer strove for perfection, they had already spent close to 1,000 gold coins, each! That would be the same as 1,000 [RMB](#)! If they were to try and push themselves to roll for the best result, they would have to spend more than that! It all depended on luck! Zhang Yang advised them not to seek perfection in their Enchantment since they were only in the middle stage of the game! Each time they changed their weapons, they would need to re-socket their Gemstones, which leads to a re-Enchantment of their Gemstones. The amount of spending would sky-rocket, and even Bill Gates would cry!

The team rode their way back leisurely to the village. Along the way, they cracked jokes about the way how the game burns a hole

in their pocket. Some mentioned Bill Gates, while others mentioned Donald Trump!

After reaching the village area, Zhang Yang led the way to the altar to face their "lord". Zhang Yang came to a pathway that led outside the village, into the forest, and towards the center of the island, where Zhang Yang had stumbled across before. After pushing their Reputation rank to Revered, the invisible barrier was miraculously removed from the area and they could enter the place normally.

The entire altar was made of a type of white colored stone structure. With nothing but the white shade and a little gray here and there, the altar was made to look extremely majestic and grand. Right in front of the altar was a huge white statue that was crafted to look like a Fire God. Its feet were made to look like it was standing on fire. Its expression was crafted to make it look angry and blazing fire out of its mouth. This image of the Fire God was probably by the design of the villagers.

Zhang Yang rode closer and saw there were 10 huge men clad in armor, standing near the entrance of the altar. Their posture and the number of fallen leaves on their wide shoulder suggest that they had been standing there for quite some time, not to mention their commitment to...standing. Zhang Yang approached them and one of them called out. "I believed that you're the visitors who have just arrived on this island?"

[Eins Brook's Personal Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

Note: Eins Brook loyal personal guard.

Zhang Yang nodded. "That is correct sir. We are here to worship..L-Lord Eins Brook. Please notify his grace that we have arrived."

The NPCs were all green tagged. That meant the NPCs had yet to detect Zhang Yang's real motive.

"Follow me." Said another guard. He then took Zhang Yang and his gang into the altar. When Zhang Yang got closer to the altar, he took note of the construction of this mystical building. The altar looked more like a huge church. Inside the mega structure was a hall that was built over 24 pillars that supported a large dome shaped ceiling. Like the Sistine Chapel, this altar had paintings on the ceiling. Instead of angels, the ceiling was painted with pictures of what seemed to be the Fire God battling all sorts of enemies.

In the huge hall, there were many followers holding hands together, standing 2 meters apart. They were all holding hands and chanting something with their eyes closed. Zhang Yang could not understand the language they were using, but it seemed to



resemble the monks in Tibet.

The deep and low chanting of the follower was not the typical Gregorian holy chant. In fact, it had made the entire ordeal feel like it was some sort of a requiem. The problem was not of the atmosphere of the hall. From the looks of it, it seemed that there were at least more than thousands of followers, with each of them being Level 85 and at elite tier. Having more than 85,000 HP, these monsters could pose a threat to the party if they were to attack all at once. On a side note, Zhang Yang was extremely pleased, despite the fear. If he could somewhat, kill all of them, how much experience points would they amass?! Yes, it would be difficult, but not when Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had the skill {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}!

They moved forward on and saw a large throne, with a middle-aged man sitting at the deeper part of the altar. The man was sitting leisurely on the throne, with one hand supporting his forehead, as if he was in deep thought. The man was just a regular jack on the streets. He was not special in any way or so. He was not muscular, nor skinny. He was just average, in both his physique and his appearance. The best term to use to describe this man was, an average Joe!

[Eins Brook] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 86

HP: 8,600,000

MP: 4,300,000

Defense: 2,400

Note: "The son of the Fire God". The savior of all.

Zhang Yang smirked. Finally, he had the chance to see the fifth descendant of the seven generals!

The guards that had lead Zhang Yang to the throne bowed to Eins Brook. "Your grace, the outsiders that you summoned have arrived."

"Well done. You may leave," said Brook without batting an eye.

"Yes, your grace." The guards took several steps back while still bowing and left the throne. Only after a good distance, they stood upright and walked away normally.

Brook then turned his gaze at Zhang Yang and the party. His complexion suddenly turned sour as he bellowed. "How impudent. You dare greet the son of God without bowing?"

Zhang Yang answered his wrath with a laugh. "Eins Brook. It seems that you have gotten used to playing the act of...whatever it is that these gullible villagers think of you. I'll have you know. We

are not dumb."

Brook widened his eyes when he heard how Zhang Yang had accused him. Instead of getting enraged, the man smiled. "Indeed, it seems that you're not as dumb and gullible as the villagers here. As expected of the adventures that roamed the world. Hahaha! Do you know how these villagers came to believe that I was the son of the Fire God?"

"How?" asked Wei Yan Er. The little brat had always like to poke around things that she should not have.

"These close-minded pets had never encountered a single Spellcaster in their life. When I had casted a fire spell, they had thought that I was the offspring of the Fire God! After I made up some lore about my past, they had truly believed that my power was the evidence of me being the son of the Fire God!"

He stood up. "For the past few days, I have been observing you. Indeed, I must say, that you have the capabilities. I do not know the purpose of your arrival, nor do I care. But I could guess it could be something of money and authority! Hence, I have a proposal for you lot. As long as you promise to serve me, under my league, I will provide you with an inexhaustible source of wealth and power over the villagers. When the time is right, I will lead an army and roam the great lands, and finally, restore the rights and glory of my ancestors!"

Zhang Yang was surprised. This NPC knew about his own ancestor's past. That would mean that among the seven descendants of the seven generals, he was the only person who

knew about their ancestor's identity!

Zhang Yang continued to laughed. "Ah, so it is because that no one in this villager has ever seen a Spellcaster! That is why you were able to trick them in the first place! Who do you think you are? Just because you have ruled over a few people in the island, do you think that you can rule over the land? Do you even know how big the world is? You couldn't even be compared with a band of bandits! How are you to conquer the land with your power? You are clearly over your big, inflated head."

"Nyehehehe. Well said noob tank!" said Wei Yan Er as she snickered away quietly from behind.

There was an angry flare in Brook eyes. With a loud call, Brook bellowed. "Silence!" The voice echoed through the entire hall. In response, all of the followers stopped their chanting and dropped their hands in unison.

"Imbeciles! Insolent! Heretic! Begone with you! To hell shall you go!" cried Brook. He then lifted his arms up high and screamed. "These people are heretics! They were brought here by the fallen gods to deceive us with their lies! Kill them!"

In a flash of a second, the boss, the followers in the hall, and all their name tags were instantly flashed from green to the hostile red!

"Kill the heretics!"

"Death to heretics!"

"Kill the sinners! In the name of Lord Eins Brook!"

More and more followers started to fill the halls from all entrances. As more and more numbers started to pour into the hall, the number of monsters had already far surpassed several thousand!

If Zhang Yang had not procured the skill {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, how would they win this fight...

Frantically, Zhang Yang scanned the hall for something. He spotted two stone rooms at the side of each corner and immediately formulated a plan of attack. Each room entrance had the width of only 2 persons. If Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight could block the entrance, they could force the monster to squeeze into the entrance and defeat them via the bottleneck strategy. That or, they could all die once, and pull the monsters out of the hall after reviving and split the monster into two separate groups, with one tank each.

Either way, both methods were too slow...

Everyone started to panic as the thousand over monsters rushed towards them.

Zhang Yang finally stopped contemplating and decide to use what he had at the moment. "Snow B\*tch! To me! It's time for

another {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}!"

Han Ying Xue jumped to his side and grabbed his hands. However, they did not immediately activate the skill. Since the skills had a 30 seconds activation duration, when the monster could get a little closer, they could buy a little more time. However, even when the enemy got extremely close to them, Zhang Yang still waited.

10 meters.

"Erhm...Dummy...?" said Han Ying Xue. Her voice was a little shaky.

"Not yet." Said Zhang Yang with a straight face.

5 meters.

Wei Yan Er screamed from behind. "Hey! Are you guys activating the skills or not?! We are going to be killed!"

3 meters.

"Dummy! It's now or never!"

2 meters.

"Not yet!"

1 meters. The followers were only an arms reach away from attacking Zhang Yang when he screamed.

"NOW!"

"KYA!"

{Blizzard Sky}! {Lunar's Dew}!

Shush!

In a split second, the temperature in the hall dropped to a sub zero temperature. Uncountable flakes of snow started to materialize in the air. The ground was filled with snow as the glow of the moon filled the ceilings. With that, damage texts started to pop out.

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

If they were playing the game using the old standard PC, even using the latest 2017, GTX 1080Ti graphic card with the best i7 CPU, they would surely be faced with tremendous lagging! The sheer amount of graphic demand in this scene was the same as during the monster attack on the Thunderstorm Castle!

"Woah! This skill is awesome!" said Wei Yan Er in awe. "Noobie tank, could you get me a Paired Skill as well?"

Zhang Yang could not move, attack, and had to maintain the channeling posture. However, he could still talk. "That's fine. When I have the chance that is."

"What's that? There's no sincerity in your words! You're messing with me!"

"Woah woah woah! Since when did the little girl know how to detect sarcasm!?"

"Woah woah my \*ss! Noob tank! You're always pulling my nerves! I'll tell you what I'll do. I'll turn off the heater when you're taking a bath! Hah! I'll see how you enjoy taking a bath in cold water!"

"Oh! That reminds me. Little Yang, how are you? Did you do a \*little somethin' something\* if you know what I mean..." said Fatty Han with a perverted smirk on his face.

Both Lost Dream and Endless Starlight started to eavesdrop when



they heard Fatty Han's pervert topic.

Zhang Yang sighed. "You guys....Could you at least be a little serious?"

"Nyehehehehe" the group of three perverted wolves snickered.

With the activation of {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, the HP of the enemy were dropping at a tremendous speed. Though it may seem fast, they still had to take at least 17 hits from the skill to deplete their 85,000 HP. At the same time, Wei Yan Er and the rest of the team had jumped into the fray and started killing as swiftly as they could. On average, each monster would take at most 15 seconds to kill.

1. The author finally uses RMB! That's Ren Ming Bi, the currency of China.

# Chapter 361: Eins Brook

---

Like withered leaves during autumn, the monsters dropped gracefully into the pile of snow. The enemies behind the first group that had fallen came taking over the empty space in the front. One by one, they continued to fall over and over.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Fanatic Follower. Obtained 9,494 Experience Points (50 points Party bonus)!’

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Fanatic Follower. Obtained 9,494 Experience Points (50 points Party bonus)!’

...

Like popcorn, the popping sound of the system notification continued to ring in everyone ears. As for their experience points, it was going up so swiftly that they could practically see the experience bar slowly filling up!

An elite monster will grant 10 times the experience points of a regular normal tier monster. Since they were killing so many elite monsters like they were flies, Zhang Yang and everyone else’s experience bar was filling up like a cup full of beer in a free-for-all buffet.

30 seconds later, after the skills ended, the entire hall was covered in dead corpses and a few Fanatic Followers that had

entered the hall a little later. As they say, the early bird gets the worm, but the second mouse gets the cheese. However, the problem was, this cheese, bites back. Zhang Yang and the party cleared the entire hall and made sure there were nothing left. They had only taken less than a minute to kill every last monster. On the other hand, like all MMORPG gamers would feel, killing was easy, but the looting, would take up most of the time.

As expected from the OP, super imbalanced skill!

The crowd worked together to collect all the loots. They had collected so many [Silk], and more than 10 Gray-Silver equipment. Upon entering Level 80 maps and higher, almost all Gray-Silver boss was only treated as Green-Copper tiers. Basically, they were worthless. That being said, there were still a few equipment that could be sold for a few gold coins, especially those that had a set equipment set effect.

[Rhino's Hide Boots] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +67

Strength: +34

Dexterity: +76

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

Rhino Guard set equipment set effect: <Rhino's Hide Coat> , <Rhino's Hide Gloves>, Rhino's Hide Boots.

3 Set Effect: 100 Dexterity bonus.

The thousands of elite monsters had produced a total of 11 Rhino's Hide Boots, 9 Coats, and 8 Gloves. In precise, they had farmed a total of 8 complete set equipment. Now that they had several completed sets, selling them at a few thousand gold coins per set would not be a problem.

Wei Yan Er rubbed the coat with her tiny little fingers and said, "Why is the set effect is called Rhino's Guard, when the equipment were made from Rhino's hide. It should be called Rhino's Butcher!

The question was asked by Wei Yan Er, however, everyone turned their head towards Zhang Yang in unison.

F\*ck!

Zhang Yang ignored the crowd. It was a stupid question, and answering it would only be wasting his saliva.

Brook did not participate in the fight, instead, he remained standing at his throne even after every single Fanatic Follower had been killed. The boss had already "exited" the story mode, and now fell into the open-world category. It would only attack when players enter his aggro range.

Everyone waited in suspense. Zhang Yang stared at the boss, and everyone asked the same question.

"What's the plan?"

In the presence of a Violet-Platinum boss, there was a certain pressure. Everyone did dare to try anything at all. After all, it was the strongest boss they had faced so far. In truth, Zhang Yang himself did not fight this boss in his life. He thought for a while. "I think we should all withdraw outside. We'll kite him out there and fight there. At least we can fight while riding the mounts."

Fighting while on a battle mount would increase a player's lifespan, as in HP. It could also provide a certain degree of attack power. Unlike Zhang Yang and other Hunter class players, if the rest could unmount their mounts and have their pets battle together with them, it would be efficient. At least range class would not need to be in melee range to have the battle pets participating.

Everyone agreed with Zhang Yang's plan and withdrew towards the entrance of the altar.

Zhang Yang patted Fatty Han's shoulder and said, "Yo Fat\*ss,

control your pet, and kite the boss out!"

Fatty Han turned his head swiftly. With crocodile tears, Fatty Han cried, "Bro...why me?"

"Because you're my bro."

"Bro, that's cheating."

Knowing that he did not have much choice, Fatty Han controlled his white bear cub towards the inside of the altar. In truth, he wanted to mimic Zhang Yang's style and had purposely went on the hunt for a white cub. However, unlike a Rare Battle Mount, the white bear cub that he had tamed was only limited as a pet. It could not be used as a mount nor a battle mount.

A Hunter could summon both a pet mount and a pet in the same instance. They had one benefit, if one or the other died in battle, it would not affect the cool down time of the other. While other players would have to wait for a 10 minutes cool down time to re-summon the battle mount.

"Your sacrifice will be remembered, little cub," cried Fatty Han when the little white bear cub had entered the boss's aggro range. The girls were all "owwww~" when they saw the little, clumsy, cute, and adorable mammal trying to make its way to the boss. The boss noticed the bear and immediately got up from his throne to give chase to the little bear.

Immediately, Fatty Han controlled the bear to turn around and frantically run back to him. Although the boss' movement speed was much faster than the cub, it was slightly delayed since the pet had quickly gotten out from the attacking range of the boss. However, after 2 to 3 seconds, the boss had reduced the distance between him and the cub to 20 meters! The boss immediately stopped and started to cast its spell.

Casting {Fire Missile}!

0.5 seconds...1 second...1.5 seconds...Pak!

The spell which needed more than 2 seconds of casting time failed the moment the cub managed to run out of the boss' attacking range. Brook had to stop casting and start chasing again. The biggest problem with A.I controls was the fact that they did not think about the future or act in response to player's tactics. It will only move, attack, and cast skills based on its original programming. This boss was programmed to chase and attack the target when it was in its range. It did not run up closer to the cub, but instead, it ran until the cub was at the 20 meters casting range, which was the maximum range of the boss. This has led the little white bear to have sufficient time to run away from the boss and prevent it from receiving any attacks from the boss!

The little pet had escaped safely and returned to Fatty Han's side unscathed. Everyone was surprised and a little jumpy when they saw that the bear was completely unharmed.

Fatty Han patted the little bear and laughed. "Hahaha! As expected from my own pet! It's stronger and better than the

others!"

While the rest was standing by, Zhang Yang was already on his Mythical Turtle, waiting at the front for the boss to arrive. Once he got the boss in sight, Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} to draw the boss' attention.

‘-3,385!’

Brook received the damage and immediately stopped chasing the bear. He stopped where he was and started chanting a {Fire Missile} at Zhang Yang.

What was the worst enemy a Guardian could face? Magic type. Zhang Yang immediately jumped down from the turtle and dashed towards the boss.

{Charge}!

Sliding on the white floor, Zhang Yang knocked into the boss and hacked the boss with his one-handed axe.

‘-2,177!’

This time, the boss had finished its chant and blasted a fiery projectile towards Zhang Yang.

‘-13,426!’



Countering Zhang Yang's 4 digit damage with a 5 digit attack, Zhang Yang had taken a huge damage. A Guardian would lose all meaning of its immense physical Defense since a magic type attack would be affected by Magic Defense. Not even {Block} was useful in this situation!

If the boss could deal over 13,000 damage every 2 seconds, not even the super healer like Han Ying Xue could handle the support! Still, while facing a Violet-Platinum, boss, her superb equipment and mana control was profound enough to handle the battle, though it would take a lot of effort.

Luckily, Zhang Yang was well prepared, with many survival skills!

"Endless Starlight! Try and gain more aggro! If I can't handle the pressure, I'll clear my aggro with {Shadow of the Void}. Try your best to catch hold of the aggro!"

"Aite boss!" said Endless Starlight. In this party, his role was to be the secondary tank. If he could not take up the role, there was no further reason to keep a useless, non-attacker, and non-healer player in the party!

The Mythical Turtle was slow but it had managed to get close to Zhang Yang to allow him to jump on his back. Once Zhang Yang got on, his HP limit was shot up to 128,190! To put into comparison, the Gray-Silver mount that Endless Starlight had was only to provide a measly 32,480 HP max-limit to Endless Starlight!

The difference was truly heaven and earth!

It could not be helped; Endless Starlight was only Level 77. The equipment he was wearing were a mix of Level 60, and Level 70 Yellow-Gold equipment. There were no Violet-Platinum equipment pieces on him! However, even though his HP was considered to be low, others might not be able to compete with him; not unless they could procure themselves a Violet-Platinum battle mount like Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately took control of the fight and everyone could relax and concentrate on attacking. It was lucky that the boss level was at Level 86. Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party were mostly between Level 77 and Level 78, the damage they could deal was not fully reduced due to the Level penalty. The attack output was even stronger when Zhang Yang had stacked up to 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}. Those that had battle mounts enjoyed it the most! The damage their (battle mounts) could provide were rather significant!

"Fools! Death be upon you! You cannot hope to win the son of the Fire God!" cried Brook. With a loud burst of explosion, there were a total of 9 {Fire Balls} that burst out from Brook's wand and shot towards everyone.

‘Ding! Eins Brook has used {Mass Missile}!’

Usually, skill attacks could only be blocked by defensive skills. Since the party did not know about the nature of the skill, they did not use any defensive skill and took the attack head on.

‘-15,000!’

‘-15,000!’

...

Instantly, other than the two tanks, the rest of the party had taken 15,000 damage.

"OH COME ON!" cried Han Ying Xue in a fit of anger. Puffing with steam, Han Ying Xue cursed all sort of vulgarities under her breath and swiveled around to cast all sorts of mass-healing skills to heal the party.

"Little Yang, next time, try and recruit Fantasy Sweetheart into this party. Since there's one slot empty, might as well fill it in. It's better and safer to have two healers, innit?" said Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang laughed. "Tell the truth. You want her in, to heal you, or to be with you?"

"Nyehehehe."

"So how are you with Xiao Wei lately?"

"Hehe! Just wait for the invitation to the wedding dinner!"

"Eh?! Fatty! You're getting married?!" cried Wei Yan Er in pure shock. "Which sister in this world had knocked herself to the wall and have her brains all messed up?"

That was a little too much, even for Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang defended his brother-in-arms and said, "Come on. Don't say that. Our Fat\*ss here has a few good points to him, you know?"

"Like what?" asked Han Ying Xue out of the blue.

"Yeah! Like what?" said Fatty Han as he turned his face to Zhang Yang.

"Well...I erhm..." Zhang Yang stumped. To find good points about Fatty Han would be the same as finding the chances of survival while fighting a Violet-Platinum boss, while wearing nothing but Gray-Silver tier equipment.

Everyone laughed at Zhang Yang's silence. Only Fatty Han was smiling bitterly, shrugging resignedly. "Oh well."

Brook's {Mass Missile} attack could be cast without a warning. The skill was a nuisance since it could target everyone within the vicinity! When players did not have the time to defend against the skill, the party's healer, which was Han Ying Xue was having a bad time! Luckily, almost everyone had battle mounts, and coupled

with Zhang Yang {Vitality Aura} that provide a 16% bonus Vitality, they could endure two shots of the skill without being killed. This had provided Han Ying Xue sufficient time to heal them!

Still, Brook's attack was strong. Even with Han Ying Xue the super healer in the party, Zhang Yang was forced to use one surviving skill, one [Healing Potion (Grade 9 Transmutation)] and still suffered from great HP loss!

# Chapter 362: The Fifth Dimensional Key

## Fragment

---

As always, Zhang Yang’s party total attack power was not to be underestimated. The boss was strong, but so was the party. They had managed to hack down Brook’s HP down to 75% in less than a minute.

During that time, Brook lifted his wand and cried out, "Spirits of Fire! I summoned thee to assist me!"

In a split of a second, eight Fire Elementals appeared on the battle field. They had miraculously been formed roughly 40 meters away from the boss. Slowly, the elementals moved towards the center where they spread out to where Brook was at. The elementals were only as tall as half of a man’s height. Burning in the air, they hovered a few inches above the ground, like the glowing orbs of ghosts.

‘Ding! Brook has used {Summon Fire Spirits}!’

[Fire Spirit] (Elite, Summoned)

Level: 85

HP: 100,000

Immediately, Zhang Yang switched his targets and call out. "Aim for the minions!"

Usually, when the boss summons something out, they would target the players and chase after them. Their roles were simple, to either immobilize them or damage them. The player could simply move away and kill them before any bad stuff happens. This time, the summoned elementals were all moving towards the boss! That must be a hidden agenda behind their movements! Also, their slow movement speed had practically given the players a chance to destroy them. Like the previous bosses that Zhang Yang had encountered, the summoned minions might buff the boss or even heal him! By any means necessary, it would be wise to kill them before they could do anything at all!

The rest of the team understood, without having Zhang Yang to point it out for them. Melee players pulled the reins of their mounts and headed to engage them. Ranged players stood from afar and attacked from there.

After a few experimental shots, it was just as Zhang Yang had guessed. The elementals would not attack the player, much less even pay any attention to them. Unfortunately, the elementals would not be affected by any status effect skills. They would just continue on, at a constant, uninterruptible speed, towards the boss.

Everyone's combined attack power, coupled with the battle

mounts that they possessed, had managed to kill one of the Fire Spirits with relative ease. Shortly after that, another one dropped and turned into ash. Following next was the third. And then the fourth...

These Fire Spirits were so slow that they had needed more than 30 seconds to travel a short distance of 40 meters. Thus, with Sun Xin Yu and the other attacking class had a luxurious amount of time to terminate them.

That being said, it would still be impossible for them to kill all of the Fire Spirit within the stipulated timing. Each of the Fire Spirits had 100,000 HP and were widely spread across the battle field. After killing one, the players would have to travel a short distance to kill the other. That travel time alone had provided the Fire Spirit the opportunity to move closer to the boss!

Zhang Yang started calculating and if the situation continued on, at least two Fire Spirits would successfully have made it to the boss. Though he may not know what would happen if they did, it could not be pretty.

Zhang Yang hesitated for a while before he jumped down from the Mythical Turtle and ran towards the empty spot where the Fire Spirit was killed. He wanted to lure the boss away to extend the distance for the Fire Spirits to travel and provide more time for the team to kill the remaining Fire Spirits.

Although his plans and execution might be flawless, Brook was not stupid enough to be "trick". Or rather, Brook did not chase after Zhang Yang even when he had the aggro. The system might



have set the boss to be stationary when Brook has summoned the Fire Spirits. He had to remain stationary until they had come to him or if they were killed off.

Zhang Yang quickly went back to his original position. There could be a chance that the Fire Spirits might heal Brook, and if that was the case, Zhang Yang had to be in place to make sure that {Destructive Smash} is on the boss.

Zhang Yang came to him, dealt a clean {Destructive Smash} and the two remaining Fire Spirit had arrived to the boss.

Brooks laughed and pointed his wand at one of the Fire Spirits. "Let the Fire Spirit cleanse your sins!"

Foom!

The Fire Spirit exploded into a large fiery wave that spread to all directions. The initial wave was so strong and powerful that the fire could even reach the end of the island!

‘-100,000!’

Immune!

‘-100,000!’

Transferred!

Absorb!

...

It was during this time, everyone is tested for their intuition and speed.

Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream had disappeared the moment the wave struck them and had evaded the attack via the I-Frame. Daffodil Daydream used {Ice Frame} to render herself immune to all attacks. Endless Starlight used {Sacred Protection}. Zhang Yang used {Sacrifice} to protect Han Ying Xue and had activated the Titan's Chest Plate's extra effect to protect himself.

Sadly, that was the only survival skills that were used. Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, and Wei Yan Er were killed instantly. None of them had any life-saving "immunity" skills.

When everyone thought that the worse was over, Brook pointed his wand to the other remaining Fire Spirit and repeated the same line again, releasing another intense blast that spread all across the battle field.

‘-100,000!’

‘-100,000!’

Both Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream were immediately sent out of stealth and died.

Immune!

Immune!

Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight both still had their "invincibility" skill active, so they were unscathed.

Transferred!

Zhang Yang's {Sacrifice} was still active on Han Ying Xue and he had taken all the damage on her. At the same time, the Titan Chest Plant effect was still active, and was able to further absorb more damage before it breaks. In fact, the Titan Chest Plate effect could absorb a total of 300,000 damage! There was a surplus of damage that could not be absorbed.

‘-12,904!’

After the grand attack, Zhang Yang's team was only left with five members, leaving Daffodil Daydream as the only person capable of being the attacker.

How could they continue the boss fight when the boss' own normal attack was overwhelmingly strong?! Even with Zhang Yang's iron clad defense and Han Ying Xue's super healing capabilities, they could not last until the boss was defeated. They

could only throw in the towel at this point. Especially since the team was left with just one attacker, or even two, if you take Zhang Yang as one of the main damage dealers.

"Noob tank. I think we should kill all the minions before they reach the boss. Or else, they will explode and kill us all," said Wei Yan Er after a long silence.

The party kept quiet when one of them accidentally cough out a laugh.

"...You'll make an Isaac Newton. Really...I mean it. It's just, why didn't you say it 300 years ago!?"

"That's because I wasn't born 300 years ago, dummy!"

As expected of the little girl, she was still new at detecting sarcasm. Knowing that continual struggle would be meaningless, Zhang Yang ordered everyone to give up the fight and start it over. Everyone allowed the boss to burn them to death and they regrouped.

"Those Fire Spirits are the main problem."

"I agree. But I feel that our DPS was a little too weak."

"You're not wrong, though. In fact, we might not make it if we rely solely on DPS. The boss summoned those fire thingies at 75% HP. I fear that it might summon those things again at 50% and at

25% HP."

"How about this, when dealing the first wave of minion, take a bottle of {Power Potion}, in the second wave, use any skills that can increase attack damage. Kill the third wave of minions normally. If there's not enough time, kill them with {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}. However, I must warn you, that skill is our trump card. God knows, the boss might go berserk later. Do not use the skill unless it's really necessary!"

"Roger."

Everyone revived and healed themselves back to full health, and had a lively chat until all their skills were ready to be used. The pets that had been killed in the battle were also revived. The team could not proceed on without them. After 6 to 7 minutes, everyone was ready to go.

Fatty Han sent his little white bear cub into the altar and lured the boss out again.

The battle took off smoothly without using any strong skills. They all waited until the boss summoned the minion, and then only used all their skills in one lump sum.

75%...

"Fire Spirits! I call upon thee to assist me!" cried the boss and the same Fire Spirits were summoned.

Zhang Yang knew that the boss would not attack, hence he ignored the boss and jumped down from the Mythical Turtle to attack one of the Fire Spirits. Everyone else consumed a bottle of [Power Potion], gaining a 20% increase in attack damage and attacked the minions.

Slightly faster than before, the party had killed the first, followed closely with the second and third. At the 29th second after the boss had summoned the Fire Spirits, the last Fire Spirit was only one step distance away from the boss before it was killed in time.

It was a pity that the active skill of the Titan Chest Plate had a 4 hour cool down time. Since it would be a long time since it could be used again, Zhang Yang could only rely on all his other skills to survive. However, when the boss had over 57% HP, Zhang Yang had reached his limit.

"Endless Starlight! Prepare to take over!" Zhang Yang cried.

"Ok boss!"

Zhang Yang immediately activated {Shadow of the Void} and slipped into the other dimension. After getting to a safe distance, he sat down to eat recovery snacks.

Before the battle had even begun, everyone already knew what they were supposed to do and not to. Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream whom did not have any aggro clearing skill started holding back to make sure they did not OT Endless Starlight,

which might lead them to be killed the moment Zhang Yang left the battle. At the same time, Endless Starlight had used {Dance of Heaven and Earth} to increase the damage deal on the boss to increase his aggro value on him. Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han had their own aggro clearing skills and had easily done so.

After healing, Zhang Yang came back to the boss, hopped onto the Mythical Turtle and regained the aggro target. Zhang Yang tried his best to get the boss to attack him and to make sure no one dies in battle.

50%...

"Fire Spirits! I summon thee to assist me..." The same call, the same speech, and the second wave of Fire Spirits was summoned again.

Everyone changed their targets and attack the minions. All skills, accessory effects, anything that could increase their damage were activated to deal with the second wave.

Their speed gradually became faster, and the monster were all killed in just 28 seconds.

"That's great! Keep it up, guys!"

Endless Starlight might be the future top tanks in China, but his talents were not truly demonstrated in the face of a Violet-

Platinum boss. Right now, Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue were the only two players in the party who had more than a full set of Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment. Sadly, Endless Starlight's equipment were just too weak!

At 31%, Endless Starlight had used all his survival skills and had unfortunately died. The boss had immediately switched to Zhang Yang after Endless Starlight's death. Zhang Yang's own DPS of 3,200, coupled with the Mythical Turtle 3,600+, were able to grab the aggro successfully! Furthermore, the passive skill {Shield Oath} had provided an extra 20% aggro generation on each attack that allowed Zhang Yang to ace the aggro list.

Now that Zhang Yang was taking the helm, both Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream had no need to hold back any longer. Even after Endless Starlight had died, it would not affect the overall damage output. He had done his job as the secondary tank, and he had done it flawlessly.

25%!

Brook had summoned the third wave of minions. This round, everyone's skill and potion were still in their cool down status. The only thing they could do was attack as furiously as they could.

One by one the minions were taken after, but it was the same as the previous fight, there were at least two more minions that they could not defeat in time.

"Fatty! Use {Dance of Heaven and Earth} to kill that one! I'll take



care of the other!"

"Ok!"

Both brothers activated their skill and instantly killed the remaining Fire Spirits, leaving the boss alone!

"Heretic! Blasphemy! Death! Death be upon you!" cried the boss crazily.

22%, 16%, 11%...

Zhang Yang had already used {Rearm} to reset all the skills. Besides {Shield Wall}, and {Vanguard's Aggression}, all other important skills were already used twice! Finally, the boss had reached 10% HP!

As expected, the boss glowed with a bright reddish light and gained a huge size increase. He had entered Berserk state.

"I am the son of Fire God! I am Invincible!" bellowed Brook.

‘Ding! Eins Brook has gained the power of Fire. Gained a 100% increase in attack!’

"Everyone! To me!" cried Zhang Yang.

Everyone pulled their reins and rode towards Zhang Yang. After gaining a huge boost in attack, the boss could easily kill everyone, except for Zhang Yang.

Pew!

With increased speed, Brook threw out his wand and blasted a series of {Fire Missile}.

Before the attack landed on Zhang Yang, he had managed to protect everyone with {Vanguard's Aggression}. A huge bubble had formed around him and formed a protective light barrier.

"Everyone, use {Dance of Heaven and Earth}!"

At the same time, all six remaining members of the party used {Dance of Heaven and Earth},

Shush! Shush! Shush!

One by one, shadows formed and entered the boss' body, dealing huge damage to him.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

At the same time, Zhang Yang had been recovering nonstop ever since he had activated {Shield Wall}. It was all because of the Titan Chest Plate's special effect that granted a 10% HP healing each second.

After 10 seconds, Brook's HP was left with 24,000 HP!

...

10,000!

4,000!

o!

'Ding! You and the party members around have killed Eins Brook! Obtained 1,075,050 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!'

The moment the boss dropped, everyone received a luxurious amount of experience points. All, except for poor Endless Starlight. At the very least, they had killed the boss.

"Me! Me! Lemme! I want to pick!" Excited like a child on a sugar rush, Wei Yan Er jumped down from her Chocobo and proceeded to pick up the loot on the floor. It was not just Wei Yan Er, in fact,

everyone else was eager to see what the boss had dropped for them. After all, it was a Violet-Platinum boss!

Zhang Yang found a piece of a silver-metallic object on the floor and picked up the fifth piece of the Dimensional Key Fragment.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 4!’

Zhang Yang had collected the fifth piece. With only two pieces left, Zhang Yang could form the final Dimensional Key to open the path to the Imperial Heaven's Empire!

# Chapter 363: Party Summon Order

---

As Wei Yan Er skipped happily towards toward the loot of the boss, everyone could not help but smile, especially those who did not have any Violet-Platinum equipment.

[Party Summon Order] (Violet-Platinum, Accessory)

Use: Summons your party (Maximum 10, including Party Leader) to your side. Cool Down Time: 1 Hour.

Leve Requirement: 80

Everyone exchanged a look and raised an eyebrow. What kind of item would not increase attack, defense, or any stats, but summons a bunch of people to one's side?

While everyone was extremely confused, Zhang Yang was the only person who was laughing happily. Since no one expressed their desire for the item, Zhang Yang took the item and kept it. "Hey guys. It's not as bad as it looks. If anyone could get their hands on a Group Summon Order or an Expedition Summon Order, that would be nice."

In 'God's Miracle', 10-man parties are the basic party built system. 5 of the 10-man parties would form a 50-man Group. 20 of the 50-man group would form a 1000-man Expedition. There are Expedition Summon Orders and Group Summon Orders, both in

which could respectively summon 999 players, or 49 players to the user's side.

It was an incredible item to hold on to. If a few Thieves could smuggle themselves into an enemy territory, they could use the Expedition Summon Order to call out a few thousand players to their side and easily topple over the Territory. It could also be used to eliminate an important enemy NPC boss.

That is, if they could get their hands on several Expedition Summon Order! Since the usage of the item was too good to be true, the item drop rate was extremely rare. Party Summon Order's drop rate was rare but it's not impossible to obtain one. On the far side of the scale, Expedition Summon Orders were so rare that it could take the luck of a thousand men to farm it. Zhang Yang had only known about the item's existence in his previous life. However, to whom it belonged to, was unknown to him.

Wei Yan Er continued to reveal another item.

[Leve 3 Guild Upgrade Order] (Violet-Platinum, Usable)

Use: Upgrades the Level 2 guild to Level 3.

Requirement: Guild Master position.

If they could smile harder and wider without tearing their lips

apart, the party would gladly do it. This piece of upgrade order had been on their radar for as long as they had been a Level 2 guild.

"It's finally out!" cried Fatty Han.

"Finally shot it out?" said Endless Starlight with a perverted smile on his face.

"Oh, I'll 'shoot' your sister!" Fatty Han gave him the finger.

"Sadly, I don't have any sisters. How about you shoot one out for me?" said Endless Starlight laughing. Fatty Han fell silent as he could not come up with any comeback.

Zhang Yang picked up the guild upgrade order and bellowed proudly. "We, the Lone Desert Smoke shall be the first guild in China to be a Level 3 guild!"

"Yeah!" Everyone cheered. The guild's strength was their strength, the guild's pride was their pride. The guild was like their home, their country, their homeland. With their guild standing stronger than ever, every member of the guild would have their standards increased! Even the common members too, would feel a certain level of pride to walk in the game, having the name tag - Lone Desert Smoke hanging over their heads.

Zhang Yang then opened the guild upgrade window and prepared to use the Level 3 Upgrade Order. Lone Desert Smoke had long since reached the maximum experience points to reach Level 3, the

last step they needed to take was to obtain the Level 3 Upgrade Order!

‘Ding! Lone Desert Smoke has fulfilled the conditions to upgrade to Level 3. Proceed to upgrade Lone Desert Smoke to Level 3. Will consume one [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order]. Proceed?’

Heck yea!

‘Upgrading...’

‘10%...30%...50%...70%...100%!’

‘Ding! Congratulation! Lone Desert Smoke has been upgraded to a Level 3 Guild!’

Every member of Lone Desert Smoke heard the notification bell. Within seconds, the guild channel was instantly filled with words of gratitude by almost all the members.

‘Server Announcement: Congratulations to guild Lone Desert Smoke. They are the first Level 3 Guild! All members of Lone Desert Smoke will receive a 3 days benefits: 100% Bonus Experience Points, 50% discount on equipment repair fees, Gem Socketing fees, and Item Identifying fees.’

The benefits of becoming a Level 3 guild was the extra benefits upgrade! The maximum member limit had been increased to 30,000. Furthermore, the 20% bonus experience points gained



from grinding and completing quest had been increased to 30%! Either benefit was a huge help to further strengthen the guild's prowess.

Right after the system notification was released, other guild masters like Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, Crimson Fire, and Sky Shaman had sent their congratulations to Zhang Yang. Unexpectedly, even One Sword Stroke had sent his regards as well! Perhaps, he was trying his best to resolve the conflict between the two guilds.

However so, the two guilds had already formed a deep, intense sense of enmity. The conflict between the two guilds could never be resolved with a few simple words! Even then, Zhang Yang would never find peace with One Sword Stroke, as long as Liu Wei stood with Imperial Sky!

[Holy Gauntlet of Justice] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +282

Strength: +81

Intelligence: +40

Equip Effect: Absorbs 162 damage on attack.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

This gauntlet was a Defender's specific equipment. Zhang Yang could use it nonetheless, but he would be wasting the 40 Intelligence points. Now that the party had a Defender, it would only be fitting to hand it over to him.

Smiling from ear to ear, Endless Starlight took the item and rubbed it against his face. Though he was not Level 80 yet, he was excited to have finally obtained a Level 80 Violet-Platinum equipment.

The remaining equipment Wei Yan Er had drawn out were seven counts of Yellow-Gold equipment. Even though right then, Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment were still extremely rare, Lost Dream and many others did not set their sights on the equipment, since they had already had Violet-Platinums as their targets.

Fatty Han sighed heavily and said, "What a tiresome day. We have been fighting this boss, not to mention the bloody Reputation farming! The only person benefiting from this conquest was the Starlight brat! Sigh..."

Zhang Yang was not as depressed as Fatty Han. He knew, that no matter how strong the equipment was, they would eventually be discarded after 10 to 20 levels. On the other hand, the [Party

Summon Order] and the [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] would forever retain its value!

Zhang Yang smiled. "Hey fatso, at least you got one Yellow-Gold equipment out of the pan, don't be too greedy! Appreciate what you have!"

"Ah...hah...You're right."

Since killing Eins Brook was not a quest request, they had no need to search for an NPC to complete any quests. Since they had been lingering in the small island for quite some time, the party wanted to go back to the main city.

"Wait guys, we did kill the fake son of god...Would the NPCs in the village be angry at us? Would they stop selling stuff to us?" said Wei Yan Er just when she was about to tear her [Teleportation Scroll]. Skill books and recipe were one-time items that can only be bought once and never again, however [Enchanting Gemstones] were different. Those items were used to upgrade equipment and would definitely continue to remain relevant in the future. If killing the boss and had jeopardized their relationship with the villagers, it was possible that they could no longer buy those items!

Now that it was out there, everyone started to have thoughts about it. They stopped and went towards the village and check the situation. Luckily, the villagers seemed completely oblivious about that, they were still treating Zhang Yang's party with the same friendly attitude, all the while spouting the same nonsensical words of worshiping the son of the Fire God.

Now that everyone was the same as before, everyone calmed down and went back to Thunderstorm Castle. Everyone except for Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er wanted Zhang Yang to use his [Teleportation Scroll] and use the [Party Summon Order] to summon them to White Jade Castle. They wanted Zhang Yang to have a taste of using the summoning order. In truth, they just wanted to save some gold coins!

After a long period of grinding, Zhang Yang felt a little bored. Instead of continuing the search for the pieces of Dimensional Key Fragments, Zhang Yang took his time to do some other activities. The last key would require him to reach Level 90 before he could visit the map, and since he is only at Level 81, there is still a good 9 Level gap for him to take his slow, sweet time. Right now, Zhang Yang did what he found to be his favorite past time activity, that is to concoct potions, while anticipating any "prizes" that pop out. Having a transmuted potion as a bonus felt like he was obtaining a rare loot from a boss, or so he thought it was.

The problem was that, he was still lacking one important herb to concoct the [Level 4 Natural Resistant Potion]. He then visited the auction house to do a little shopping and at the same time, checked for goods that others might have left out.

They say that those unwise shoppers were aplenty in the streets, it's either luck for him to stumble into one. This time, Zhang Yang was pretty lucky himself, he had purchased himself a good pet skill book!

[Madness]: Increases your pet attack speed by 50%, whilst

granting a 10% chance in each attack to restore 30% HP. Last for 10 seconds. Cost: 50 Focus. Cool Down Time: 10 Minutes.

Zhang Yang pondered over it for a little and finally decided to let the Mythical Turtle learn the skill instead. So far, almost all bosses had been fought with the Mythical Turtle. On the other hand, the Gold-Eared Bear King would be used to kill small monster and mini-boss, therefore, with or without a power boost, it would not matter much.

He bought half a stack of [Paralytic Flower] from the auction house, and empty potion bottles from the Alchemy Shop. After gathering the materials needed, Zhang Yang started to concoct the [Level 4 Natural Resistant Potion]. Half a stack was not the usual amount of which Zhang Yang did his purchasing. In fact, he would buy even more than just a single stack, if they were available in the market. [Paralytic Flowers] were rare, thus the supply in the market was extremely scarce. Currently, Zhang Yang was probably the only person in the city to be capable of concocting the potion. When the recipe becomes more widely available to others, the number of herbs in the market would drop even lower!

[Level 4 Natural Resistant Potion]

Use: Adds 5,000 Natural Resistant. Lasts for 2 minutes. Cool Down Time: 2 minutes.

Level Requirement: 70

The transmuted bonus of the Natural Resistant Potion could increase the effect by 10% to 100%. That meant that, if Zhang Yang was lucky enough to concoct a Grade 10 Transmutation, the Nature Resistance value would be 10,000!

The night went by and Zhang Yang logged off to make dinner for the girls. After having their meals, Wei Yan Er sneaked away to her room to read the news on her PC. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were left in charge of cleaning up.

"Eh? Sis, noobie, the official site posted something about a guild war coming up in the next few days," cried Wei Yan Er from her room upstairs.

Zhang Yang was stunned. He had never heard of any guild wars in his previous life.

Wei Yan Er came down running and sat on the sofa, which was directly adjacent to the kitchen where Zhang Yang was. "Noob tank, what's the guild war?"

Zhang Yang frowned and sighed heavily. "Hey kid. I am here washing up after you. Besides, you just read the post yourself, didn't you? Why are you asking me for!"

"Tch." Wei Yan Er clicked her tongue, which made Zhang Yang slightly irritated. "You're the one who claimed to be a beta-tester! You're supposed to know everything there is about the game!" said Wei Yan Er while pouting her lips.

"Oh god..." Zhang Yang facepalmed himself.

Wei Yan Er shook her legs while waiting for Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue to finish cleaning the dishes.

"You done?" asked Wei Yan Er when she saw Han Ying Xue wiping her hands dry with a cloth. "The guild wars is as the name describes. It is a competition where two guilds will have a face off with each other. Just like the Soaring Swords Competition! However, this match will not host an offline competition. The champion guild will be rewarded with a +3 Level to all members of the winning guild! They will also get a Gray-Silver battle mount! Crimson Flaming Horse!

# Chapter 364: Guild Wars

---

A sharp shiver went up his spine.

Even though Zhang Yang had a Yellow-Gold battle mount, and a Violet-Platinum battle mount, a majority of Lone Desert Smoke members had not yet still owned a battle mount! Especially the normal members! Even Fatty Han's battle mount was still a Green-Copper giant lizard!

If Zhang Yang wins the competition and gives everyone in the guild a Gray-Silver battle mount, his entire guild would become very powerful indeed!? Zhang Yang shivered with excitement with that thought alone.

Wei Yan Er snickered happily when she saw Zhang Yang's reaction. "Haha! Noob tank! Are you actually be that greedy? Why are you getting so excited about getting a free Gray-Silver mount?"

Zhang Yang laughed along. "I am excited! If you think this is how I get excited, you should see how I am when I'm REALLY excited!"

Wei Yan Er cocked her head in confusion which did not last long, as she had lost interest in what Zhang Yang said.

"Oh ho! I would definitely love to see you jerk it off when you're excited!" said Han Ying Xue as she wanted to join the dirty talk.

Sensing a domino effect coming along, Zhang Yang hurriedly



switched back to the topic. "What about the second place? Or the third place? Are there no prizes for them?" Zhang Yang was thinking about the second Lone Desert Smoke guild.

"Erhm...the second place will reward all members +2 levels and a Green-Copper battle mount. The third place will reward all members +1 level and a Black-Steel battle mount." Wei Yan Er rubbed her hands together evilly and said, "I really wonder how a Black-Steel tier battle mount looks likes."

Everyone went up to the computer and read it slowly. Han Ying Xue promptly said, "I think we should hurry up and fill up the guild as soon as possible."

The coming Guild Wars did not have any member limit restrictions. Thus, making Lone Desert Smoke, being the only Level 3 guild, the guild with most numbers! As such, even if Zhang Yang had no need to consider about the member's talent, he could still win the competition solely by numbers. It's 30,000 members vs 20,000 members! He had a 50% extra attack force right there!

Fortunately, Wei Yan Er was on same track as them. She understood the numerical advantage of a Level 3 guild. "Haha! Victory is ours!"

...

Unlike Soaring Swords, the Guild War was announced out of the blue! There were only 3 days of preparation for them! The announcement was made 3 DAYS prior to the event! The

competition is categorized by local regions, any guild from Level 1 to 3 could enlist themselves as a participant.

Zhang Yang quickly summoned Hundred Shots and had him hold a recruitment drive to "fill" up the guild member slot to its limit before the competition starts. That said, Zhang Yang had specifically instructed Hundred Shots to not forsake the standards of players solely to increase the member count.

The competition was not held at the battle arena. There's no way to fit in 50,000 players in a small stadium and have them battle it out. Instead, the system had generated 3 types of terrain to suit the competition. There were the Flatlands, Mountainous Regions, and City Scapes. The terrain of the competition will be selected randomly. The winner of the guild war will be determined via a demerit system, whereby with each member's death, the guild will lose one point. There were no death penalties during a player's defeat, they would not suffer from any experience point loss nor item drops. After death, they would only be kicked out of the map.

Each guild war will last for 1 hour. Both sides will start with 20,000 points and after 1 hours, the winner will be decided, depending on the points remaining. In cases where there is a draw, the guild that had the lower number of members originally participating shall win the match. Thus, having many members also had its drawbacks.

However, there could be a situation where a small group of 30 could play hide-and-sneak and delay the entire 1 hour duration. According to the rules, the average loss of members would determine the winner, creating a situation where a player could

skip the fight and win the match.

Naturally, when two large forces meet, it would not be a matter of quantity, but quality, to take down the enemy in one clean sweep. The more participants a guild had, the lesser contribution a single member could make. The best way to win the war would rely on strategy and command.

Zhang Yang had a problem. Currently, Zhang Yang had not found any suitable candidate to be a war commander. Hundred Shots was suitable to be a management personnel. He could organize the guild members and other miscellaneous matters but not handle any "military" management. It could be said that he does not have talent in that sort of field.

...

On the 25th of March, the Guild War competition officially started. The event would start at 9 pm, until 5 am the next day. Since the game could be played while players were asleep, the period where most players would be asleep had become the most active period in the game.

To maintain the level of excitement of the entire competition, the officials had selected two seeded guilds for every major city in the China region. Before the top 16 finals begin, the 16 seeded guilds would never be meeting each other!

Without any surprise, Lone Desert Smoke was by far, the strongest guild in the entire China server, so they were

automatically selected to be one of White Jade's seeded guild, the second seeded guild fell to none-other than Crimson Rage.

‘Ding! The match between Lone Desert Smoke VS Battleship Holysheets shall begin in 5 minutes. All members of Lone Desert Smoke, please proceed to the battle field to make your preparations!’

After a short wait, every member of Lone Desert Smoke received the system notification. Everyone fractionally opt to immediately be teleported to the battle field, and was sent to a limitless flatlands. As far as a thousand meters away from where they stood, players with blue flags sticking to their backs, appeared one by one.

Zhang Yang turned his back and noticed that a red colored flag was hovering behind him. The flag was some sort of realistic hologram that could only be seen but not touched. This would allow players to have a free range of movement and not to be affected by the physics of the flag.

The top right of Zhang Yang's control U.I showed a 4 minutes and 34 seconds count down before the match started. Both sides had 20,000 points allocated. The total number of participating member of both guilds were 19,423 for Lone Desert Smoke, and 12,198 for Battleship Holysheets.

Zhang Yang had zero confidence in commanding his guild. After a moment's hesitation, he simply ordered everyone to spread out and surround the enemy, and attack from every direction. This technique was learned when Zhang Yang was playing Starcraft

back when he was in university. To attack from several directions was much better than to attack in a concentrated formation, or so he thought. It was time to bring the Zerg Rush into the battlefield

Before the match officially began, there was an invisible wall blocking both sides from proceeding any further. At the last-minute count down, both guilds had stopped increasing. Lone Desert Smoke had a total of 26,721 members, and Battleship Holysheets had 19,876 members.

Based on the sheer numbers alone, Lone Desert Smoke was already destined to win the match. Even the average individual strength of each member had far exceeded that of the opponent's. However, Zhang Yang would not dare to let his guard down. He knew clearly that with a good strategist and commander, they could use 300 soldiers to defeat an army of 10,000!

10 seconds...

Zhang Yang gripped his axe harder and his shield closer. Everyone was already standing by with their own weapons raised in the air as they waited for the wall to disappear.

00:00! Battle starts!

"Go!" Zhang Yang shouted at the top of his lungs, inducing a strong and violent fervor to all members! With the horns of war blown, the two armies started to run towards each other like waves!

It seemed that the opponent had neither the intention to withdraw nor defend. The opponent shared the same vigor in their battle cries as they got closer and closer.

As the front line players had finally made contact with the enemy, the mass murder had officially begun.

Since there were no death penalties during a guild war, players were more than willing to take chance to slay as many foes as possible, knowing clearly that their survival did not matter. Thus, they could fully experience a full-fledged battle of ancient, fantasy war.

Zhang Yang held back before rushing into the mass to observe the tide of war. It seems that the opponent had no particular strategy and was charging blindly into the crowd without a plan. There was nothing to predict and nothing to counter. Zhang Yang came to a simple conclusion. This match was a match of numbers and individual bravery. If that was truly the case, Battleship Holysheets had no chance to overthrow Lone Desert Smoke!

Having close to 50% surplus forces over the opponent, Lone Desert Smoke had surrounded the enemy and started to unleash hell from above. Zhang Yang smiled as he observed the opponent's points on his U.I module dropping.

12,431!

9,831!

7,341!

4,198!

1,782!

341!

o!

Within 20 minutes, Lone Desert Smoke had emerged victorious with a complete massacre of the opponent. They had won with a complete kill, while only having a 4,310 player loss. Although Lone Desert Smoke might have won the match, their strategy was not invincible, in fact, the opponent had charged in thoughtlessly. In a match where they were seriously outnumbered, either their guild master was thinking with his groin, or they were not even trying at all.

Everyone was pleased with winning the first war. In the past, Zhang Yang and his own gang were the ones who have always been fighting for the guild's name. This time, this war, everyone had contributed their share. Each and every one could finally stand tall, without shame, and say, "I am a member of Lone Desert Smoke!"

After half an hour, Fatty Han shared the news. The sub-guild had also emerged victorious and had moved on to the next match!

On this night, Lone Desert Smoke would participate in two guild wars. Their next opponent was surprisingly, Pride!

Without holding back, Zhang Yang led his army and slaughtered their opponent mercilessly and won the second round.

On the next day, officials from 'God's Miracle' had released the next round of guild names. 1,024 guilds in China that had survived two rounds and were qualified to compete in the third round. Those famous guilds in China had remained strong and resilient. None of them had been dropped out.

After sundown, the guild wars continued. In the first match, Zhang Yang had won without a hitch. However, on the second round, Lone Desert Smoke was pushed to its limit had nearly lost the match!

Their opponent was a guild called "Path of Calamity", a second rated small guild from Wild Willow City. It was a known name, but not too famous or strong, compared to a first rate guild like Crimson Rage or Sky High. The main cause of trouble for Lone Desert Smoke was the skills of the enemy's commander.

With him taking the command, Path of Calamity was able to direct their players from left to right, and all around the map. The guild fully utilized the Mountainous Region and had a hit and run battle with Lone Desert Smoke. Every time the guild appeared, it would always have the upper hand and will somehow, manage to deal significant damage to Lone Desert Smoke before disappearing again!



Half an hour into the battle, Lone Desert Smoke points dropped down to 17,234, while Path of Calamity had over 18,114!

In this situation, Lone Desert Smoke had finally faced a challenge. It was like Lone Desert Smoke was Goliath, and Path of Calamity was the tiny little David. Quick and sneaky as ever, Lone Desert Smoke was never able to counterattack properly, while Path of Calamity had always managed to deal a little damage. The problem grew worse as the countdown drew closer. If the situations remained the same, Lone Desert Smoke will lose!

Zhang Yang searched for Han Ying Xue and quickly said, "Woman, we have to run into their main attack unit and unleash {Blizzard Sky}, and {Lunar's Dew}."

"Okay!"

Han Ying Xue nodded. Both of them rode as fast as they could into the large group.

Since their opponent were mostly running instead of riding mounts, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had entered their center force without trouble.

"T-T-That's Zhan Yu! Lone Desert Smoke guild master!"

"If we kill him, Lone Desert Smoke's morale will drop!"

"Haha! Awesome! We're killing their King and Queen!"

During a guild war, all players would have their profile information automatically revealed to the public, allowing the opponent to easily identify Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 365: Pandemonium

---

"Wait! Something is not right! Why would they run up with just two players?! Hey! Don't go in such large group! We might not know what are they planning!" In the guild channel of Path of Calamity, a player named "Mountain Mover" kept on advising the guild members to think before they act. "I suggest we send a Group of 100-men to attack them. Even if it is a trap, we would only lose 100 points!"

Sadly, his words meant nothing, as no one paid heed to him. Everyone else was already intoxicated by the thought of obtaining the pride of killing China's number 1 man! Neither one of them were willing to allow the honor to slip past their hands! Not even for their own guild mates!

"Stop them now! Guild master!" Mountain Mover urged the guild master of Path of Calamity to subdue his own guild members.

Sage of God Killer smirked. "Mover, that guy is the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke. There's a myth saying that he has never lost a match. If we kill him here and now, winning or losing this guild war would only be a bonus reward!"

Sage of God Killer had almost zero confidence in his own second rated guild members. However, the idea of killing Zhan Yu, the most powerful man in all of China region was extremely tempting. Who would not want to have a free advertisement saying: "We are the guild that killed China's number 1 tank!" Imagine the glamor they could fish with that feat.

Mountain Mover knew that it would be futile to continue persuading his guild master from doing such foolish move. Under his breath, he muttered, "Dumbest, smart person that could do the dumbest dumb move ever!"

To grasp what killing China's number 1 man meant to them, the Path of Calamity had 2 to 3 thousand players rushing towards Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. Although a handful of them noticed Mountain Mover shaking his head in dismay, the attacking guild members refused to back down. Everyone wanted to be the person to kill Zhan Yu! With that thought in mind, no one would willingly spare any brain power to listen to Mountain Mover's words.

"Let's do this!"

Zhang Yang held out his hand to Han Ying Xue, and the both of them held their hands together, casting {Blizzard Sky}, and {Lunar's Dew}.

This ultimate skill was used in public, only during the defensive war of the Mining Cave back when four guilds allied themselves, led by The Dominators. Being the prideful person, Humbly Gentleman would never want to expose his defeat, in order to prevent the world from knowing about his own loss to Zhang Yang. Thus, the ulti was not known to the general public. That was, until now. After the current war with Path of Calamity, every other guild will surely get hold of the words about Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, allowing them to take preventive measures against those two.

Snowflakes started to form in the sky, as the land was instantly covered in a pale white snow. The wind started to blow and the enemy players started to receive damage.

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

Uncountable numbers of damage text popped out among the enemy’s crowd. In just two ticks, there were already massive deaths! Somehow, during chaos, human will only act based on their own instinct. In this case, those players of Path of Calamity were behaving, just like that of an NPC army! They knew that their own army were being slaughtered but they had still pushed further, not even knowing what killed the front members! Players from behind pushed themselves to the front, and got themselves killed. The biggest, idiotic behavior was that, the players in the back were still moving forward!

Path of Calamity had begun to suffer a major loss in points. In just 30 seconds, their accumulated points dropped from 18,114 to 15,341!

"F\*ck! F\*CK!" screamed Sage of God Killer from the top of his lungs. The smug grin on his face, before the attack had started, had morphed drastically into a raging sulk. He turned to Mountain Mover and screamed at him. "You knew this would happen! YOU KNEW! WHY DIDN'T YOU WARN ME!"

Mountain Mover kept quiet. He no longer had the patience nor energy to deal with his nonsense. Did not warn him? He had been screaming, begging, pleading on his hands and feet, figuratively, trying to stop his guild mates from doing such foolishness! Disappointed with his guild master's behavior and attitude, he opened the guild option window and quit the guild promptly.

Losing their talent "war general", Path of Calamity started to suffer in the chaos. Without a proper guide, none of them could act as a part of a large contraption, thus turning the entire battle to a one-sided-massacre.

After obtaining victory, Zhang Yang tasked Hundred Shots to find out the commander of the enemy. After getting off the battle field, Hundred Shots immediately return to Zhang Yang with the news. Zhang Yang then sent a friend request to Mountain Mover. He was the talent that Lone Desert Smoke lacked currently. If Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had not used their paired skill, they might have already perished under the strategic attacks of Mountain Mover. That said, since Mountain Mover was not prominent in the guild, no one was willing to respect him as the commander.

"Zhan Yu?" Right after accepting the friendship request, Mountain Mover immediately sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

"Hmph. You had us nearly tasting defeat!" said Zhang Yang.

Mountain Mover scoffed. "I had. If only my stupid guild mates had listened."

Zhang Yang took the provoking tone and said, "Yes. I strongly believed so. That is why I am here to recruit you to join Lone Desert Smoke. I want you to join us and be our Strategist!"

"Please. It's not like I'm in need of money." Mountain Mover replied coldly.

Zhang Yang laughed. "I believe that you are a talented strategist. I believe that you truly desire an absolute authority, the position, and rank where you could lead an army into war! That, I can give you. I offer you my complete trust and support. I will never interfere you in battle strategies, and will always provide utmost cooperation!"

There was a long silence after Zhang Yang's reply. His temporary silence had indicated Mountain Mover was seriously considering about Zhang Yang offer. Zhang Yang took the chance to continue pestering him.

"After the event where players enter the Chaos Realm, there will be a large scale war between Regions! Think of it. Don't you want to have an iron-blooded army, to invade other enemy's city and to show off the power of China?!"

Mountain Mover remained silent. However, there was a ragged breath coming from the communicator.

"How about it?" Zhang Yang asked after a few seconds of silence.

"...I...hmm...I can join Lone Desert Smoke. There, you can observe and evaluate my talents yourself. In the same time, I will observe and evaluate Lone Desert Smoke's capabilities and the trust in me," said Mountain Mover as he finally gave his verdict.

"Deal!" Zhang Yang roared happily.

Zhang Yang immediately recruited Mountain Mover into the guild and announced it in the guild channel himself. "Our newest member, Mountain Mover will be our guild's war strategist! In any large scales battle from now on, his words are my words. Whoever who wishes to disobey him may leave the guild now."

Everyone was stunned at the sudden announcement but took his words literally. No one quitted the guild.

The next day, at the third-night guild war, Mountain Mover had joined the battle with his first debut as a war strategist. He had only sortied 5,000 elitists and successfully defeated the enemy's 18,000 army. With that accomplishment, he had proven himself to be a strong strategist.

On the other side, Lone Desert Smoke sub-guild, led by Fatty Han had not encountered any formidable foes. In fact, Zhang Yang had "cheated" in the event. He had repeatedly transferred Mountain Mover between his guild and the sub-guild, back and forth as many times necessary to allow him to command the two guilds in their war. Mountain Mover himself did not feel any trouble in doing so,



since he had a knack of commanding army.

Taking Zhang Yang's method of cheating, the entire guild war event had several loopholes that could be exploited and abused. It was not meant to be a long-termed event. Thus, after this event, there probably would not be a second guild war anymore. Zhang Yang had never encountered any such event hosting during his previous lifetime.

Zhang Yang was extremely impressed at Mountain Mover's performance. In fact, Zhang Yang himself did not need to step into the battlefield during the wars on the fourth day! As a result, Mountain Mover had proved his worth to everyone in the guild, and brought the guild to the next stage effortlessly.

29th of March, Zhang Yang had reached Level 82. On the same day, the guild had 20 players that had reached Level 80. Majority of them had relied on the Level 3 Guild reward experience bonus to reach Level 80 in such a hasty manner. They were the first guild to produce a party qualified to raid the latest dungeon, the Pandemonium.

After winning the guild wars, Zhang Yang led the other 19 players to The Abandon Vale at the Altair Flatlands. The entrance to the Pandemonium dungeon was just at the entrance of the Vale.

Everyone gathered and entered the dungeon.

‘Ding! You have entered the Pandemonium (Hardcore Mode)!’

There were four types of species ruling over the vale. They were Vampires, Werewolves, Humans, and a Stone Golem. Other than the Stone Golem, Vampire, Werewolf, and Humans were races with large communities. Only the Stone Golem Sulga was the only being of its species. It was also the last boss of the dungeon.

In terms of landscape, Vampire, Werewolf, and the Human forces were positioned in a triangle. They were all located at the far side of each other, all surrounding the center where the Stone Golem Sulga was situated. The lore of the dungeon depicted that all three forces wanted to invade Sulga's residence to claim the ancient treasure that resided there. However, due to their mutual hatred to one another, none of them were able to proceed.

All three forces had constructed a Gateway. Only through lighting up the holy fire at all three forces, a Gateway would open, which would lead you to where Sulga resides.

A player could freely choose on where to start their attack, which was not limited in any specific order. As long as the players fulfilled the requirement, that was, to light up all three holy fires at three different places, they could enter the final stage and battle with the last boss, Sulga.

Zhang Yang believed that, based on their current equipment, Zhang Yang's own gang could easily raid the dungeon, relying on all sorts of skills and potions! As for the reason why Zhang Yang wanted to take along other members along, he did not want to waste the free skill points obtained from the First Clear Achievement. Not everyone could easily receive main story quests or hidden quests to obtain free skill points. As the saying went, the

grass that grows during the night would make a horse strong! A person could only get stronger by taking the extra effort.

Zhang Yang's 20 men party stood at the entrance of the dungeon. There were three routes splitting apart, which led them to three different camps, the Vampires, Werewolves, and Humans.

"What sort of nonsense is this...We're clearly standing in the wilderness, how can we not use our mounts!" Wei Yan Er sighed.

"Of course you can't. It would be unfair. Having a mount in the dungeon could change the difficulty of the raid! That is why, to prevent any exploits or bug abuse, the developers had decided on one final implementation, and that is to restrict players from using mounts in all dungeons!" said Zhang Yang. He was not making that up. In his previous life, he had listened to the news where a news reporter had interviewed one of the game designers who had explained about the dungeon's concept.

"What a bloody idiot!" Wei Yan Er shrugged.

The party took the route to the further right and came to a camp. Outside, standing at the entrance of the encampment, were four guards. They were equipped with weapons and were standing guard ever so vigilantly.

[Werewolf Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 450

Elite tiered monsters in a dungeon had always been stronger than monsters in the open-world field. The monsters that stood in front of them had HP that was far stronger than the Yellow-Gold boss in the Level 80 maps! It was made that way on purpose. The monster in a dungeon was designed based on the number of participant in the paid. Since the Pandemonium was a 20 men dungeon, the long HP would be justifiable. If they were to only have 18,000 HP, would they not be killed in an instant?

"Endless, you're up!"

"Okie dokey!"

Endless Starlight took the preemptive strike and used {Shield Toss} from a good distance. The shield ricocheted off three of the Werewolf Guards before bouncing back to Endless Starlight. As aggro works in an area, all four of the monsters there growled and rushed towards their attacker.

Endless Starlight activated {Sanction} and {Hammer Drop} to fully lock on to the monsters' aggro. Only then, the party started their attack. After having their HP below 50%, the monster began

to metamorphosis into their full beast forms, changing from a humanoid appearance into large werewolves! In that form, the monster gained a 20% bonus attack power. However, having Endless Starlight as the strong tank, the monsters could not do much with their boost of power, and were defeated without much struggle.

The party moved on forward and killed their way towards the first boss in no time. The first boss was a beautiful werewolf who was still in her human form. Her name was Aica. This boss was just a mere Gray-Silver tier. Zhang Yang had not needed to move a muscle, as even Endless Starlight could easily overpower the boss solely based on his equipment! Even though Aica may have plenty of skills, and even killed a few members of the party, the boss was not able to withstand the combination of Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, and the main party attacking force. Both tanks took turns to activate {Vanguard's Aggression} to completely negate the boss's ulti and ended the battle in just 1 minute.

This match was won, not by skill, but by the sheer power of their equipment. All they did was to simply hack and whack.

After distributing the loot, the party continued killing their way towards the second boss. By then, everyone's skills were already ready to be used again and after a flashy scene of ultis, the second werewolf boss crumpled to the ground. Just like that, they had cleared the Werewolf section of the dungeon.

After lighting up the holy fire in the Werewolf encampment, the team proceeded to clear the Human, and then the Vampire encampment and opened the Gateway leading to Sulga.

After 10 minutes or so, the team had reached to the final boss, Sulga.

The boss was, as the name suggested, a 70 to 80 meter tall stone-made giant golem. Sulga was completely motionless. One could even mistake it as a statue instead of a living being. There was even a thick layer of moss growing on its body! If it was not for the name tag hanging on its head, Zhang Yang would have already skipped over the boss!

[Stone Golem Sulga] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Being)

Level: 85

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,000

"What the hell!? 10 million?! My god. This boss is much stronger than a Violet-Platinum boss!" cried Fatty Han in a fit of rage.

Zhang Yang explained, "This is a 20-man dungeon. It's normal for the boss to have that much HP. If it was a 5 men dungeon, the boss would have roughly 2,500,000 HP!"

"B-But...This is a Yellow-Gold tier!"

"Yeah! And the first Yellow-Gold dungeon boss at that!"

"Level 80 maps are practically "owned" by Violet-Platinum bosses. That is why the dungeon will have a Yellow-Gold boss. I did mention this before, didn't I? The open-world bosses will always be one tier higher than dungeon bosses."

"Enough talking! You better start thinking of a way to fight this boss!"

Zhang Yang started to think. "Let's just give it a try. Reserve {Dance of Heaven and Earth} until the last 10% HP. That, or any important situation."

"Understood!"

Zhang Yang actually knew the way to defeat the boss. He just did not want to reveal it to the party. Since there were no other players were racing to raid the dungeon and claim the First Clear Reward, Zhang Yang decided to train the party's response rate. One way or another, it's good training for them.

Zhang Yang had been using the Gold-Eared Bear King in this dungeon. As the Mythical Turtle's movement speed on land was so slow that even a grandmother could walk faster, it was not suitable for traveling.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins on the bear and rushed towards the boss.

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-3,198!’

A sudden quake struck the land and the boss moved. There was a crack on the golem face and it revealed the golem's eyes and mouth. The gap opened wider and out came a low, deep voice that echoed throughout the area.

"Insolent fools! The ancient secret is sealed for good! None shall obtain it! Greed shall be punished with death! Begone, foul creatures!" Sulga moved extremely slowly as the calcification of its outer layer started to crumble. Step by step, Sulga started to walk faster. Bit by bit, as the rocks "peeled" off its surface, Sulga's movement speed started to gain speed!



## Chapter 366: Easy As Pie

---

Once Zhang Yang got the boss' aggro, all the other melee fighters rushed straight for it. The other ranged fighters remained further back, while maintaining the furthest attacking range. Before the final boss, everyone had taken their time, slowly hacking and slashing the bosses without a sense of urgency. Since the previous bosses were just Gray-Silver difficulty, none of them felt pressured, and had easily defeated the previous obstacles. However, when it came to the last boss, everyone kept their guard up, knowing clearly that the boss was a Yellow-Gold boss.

With their broad range of "seriousness", the damage dealt on this different occasion differed greatly.

Players who were part of Zhang Yang's permanent party had superior equipment, skills, intuitions, and coordination. Their overall attack damage was much better and "sharper" compared to the rest of the party members. Especially Sun Xin Yu! Her main weapon, the Snake's Spur, could ignore up to 700 Defense value, and coupled with Zhang Yang {Cripple Defense}, Sun Xin Yu's attack was only affected by 300 Defense of the boss!

The main point was her main and secondary weapon, which granted her a whopping 6,000 DPS. Her attack damage was practically double that of anyone else in the party!

"Your greed shall be your doom!" Sulga bellowed. Cracks started to form over of its main body. As large rocks and stones fell down, the part that split apart from the main body were its hands. Now having a proper humanoid form, Sulga slammed its hands onto the

ground. A progress bar appeared on the top of its head, with the name {Rocky Spear}.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

‘-5,000!’

It’s 5,000 damage a second to anyone who were attacked by the skill. The progress bar on the boss’ head was still going on, despite the skill already being cast. It seemed that this skill was a channeling type, which would last for 10 seconds! Anyone else, besides a tank would surely die if they take all 10 strikes.

That is, if the player was a complete novice. The {Rocky Spear} had a rhythm and pattern to its attack. The skill could be easily evaded right at the moment when the rocky spear bursts out of the ground. Those who were recruited by Zhang Yang had a certain degree of prowess, naturally, none of them were dumb. Although some of them might be a little sluggish, their response rate was fast, after taking two to three of the attacks.

Out of the 20, 4 of the party member were healers. As the skill {Rocky Spear} continued to attack, Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart, and the two other healers were busy healing for a living. Two Priests and two Sacred Knights were sufficient enough for the party to easily handle any kind of threat.

Best of all, Zhang Yang had not needed any sort of healing!

Even though Sulga was the last boss, it was just a Yellow-Gold boss, despite having such a long HP. The attack from a Yellow-Gold boss had a certain border and could not exceed that line. On average, the normal basic attack would be at most 12,000. Smashing on Zhang Yang, the final damage would only be at, most 6,000!

Even though Zhang Yang was unable to ride on the Bear King, Zhang Yang's own tanky HP was good enough to tank the boss close to 20 seconds before Zhang Yang would need emergency healing. In a situation like this, the healers only needed to heal him once in a blue moon. Priests would only need to maintain the {Regeneration} on him while the other two Sacred Knights would only need to directly heal him once in a while.

It was as expected. Zhang Yang had half of his body clad in Violet-Platinum equipment! He could even tank an actual Violet-Platinum boss! Why would he even be nervous of a Yellow-Gold boss?

That was just Zhang Yang. After all, a Hardcore Mode is still a Hardcore Mode. The danger was not just targeted to the tank alone. Having loads of skills and attack pattern, it could kill off the attackers and the healers, which would eventually lead to the entire party's downfall.

After a series of chaotic events, everyone managed to survive the {Rocky Spear} ordeal.

Wei Yan Er giggled playfully. "This is fun! Let's do this again!"

Throughout the entire attack, Wei Yan Er had unleashed her athletic skills, she made it seem as if dodging bullets would be easy for her.

On the far side of the scale, Fatty Han performed the poorest. Still, he had only taken 3 counts of attacks from the {Rocky Spear}. Panting with anger and fatigue, his fat flaps bobbed around as he moved away to a safe place. "Fun!? Please! I'm practically sodomized!"

"Ah ha? You mean...your butthole got poked?!" said Endless Starlight with a surprised expression.

Lost Dream laughed uncontrollably. "Starlight! What would be the first thing you'd do if one random morning, you woke up and found out that you have turned into a woman?!"

Endless Straight straighten up and put on a serious face and said, "The first thing I would do. Is to let Fatty Bro do me!"

Fatty Han made a weird face where different parts of his face would cringe and twist. "Please don't. I appreciate the kind gesture of it, but just the thought of it."

After 20 seconds, Sulga slammed his hand into the ground again, triggering {Rocky Spear} for the second time. Everyone was sent into a crazy dance, but since they had the experience before, everyone was getting the hang of it. Even Fatty Han was only struck once!

90%...

After the ordeal, everyone concentrated their firepower and dealt a series of attack.

"The sins of Greed shall bring none but death!" bellowed Sulga. "Rolling Rocks! Smash them to bits!"

‘Ding! Stone Golem Sulga has used {Rolling Rocks}!’

Thump! Thump!

Materialized almost instant, there were a total of 36, one story house sized-giant rocks rolling from out of nowhere, in a well-organized, 6 x 6 pattern. Like a wave, the rocks rolled in unison at a slow pace. The mass of rocks was so heavy that the earth trembled vigorously. If one would be rolled over by it, what would the damage be? It could even cause instant death.

However, all boss’ skill in the dungeon would never create a situation where none could survive it. There is and always will be a way of dodging it. If it was un-dodgeable, then it would depend on the player’s equipment. Zhang Yang glanced around and he found a way to evade the skill. There was a tiny gap, roughly the size of one human’s width, in between the rocks!

The problem was that, the rocks were too big, making all 36 rocks cover most of the battle field. It was not possible for one to run out

of the skill's effective zone. The only way of surviving was to slide through the tiny gaps between two rocks! The gap was so small that it would require pin point accuracy to make sure that the rock does not smudge you across the floor.

"Get ready guys! Jump in between the gaps among the rocks!" said Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang raised his concentration to another level to multitask his way through the fight by tanking the boss and positioning himself through the gaps at the same time. Just when he was at his limit, he heard Sulga's bellow. "Greed shall be the death of you!"

Boom! Boom! Boom!

{Rocky Spear} was unleashed and spears made of rocks pierced through the earth.

Great! Two skills at one time! That's what you call as being attack by a tiger from the front, and a wolf from the rear, leaving one a hard choice on whether to attack or withdraw.

Only during the worse of scenarios, one's ability could be truly displayed. Players like Sun Xin Yu, those that were part of Zhang Yang permanent party, displayed an outstanding performance albeit the chaos. They could easily dodge one skill, while preparing for the other with less difficulty. While Sun Xin Yu and the others were doing just fine, the newly added party members were unable to perform as the same. Their reflexes were slightly sluggish and

could not multitask as well as the others. While paying attention to the {Rocky Spear}, they had missed out the {Rolling Rocks} and vice-versa.

As seen from before, the {Rocky Spears} were painful but not fatal. Whereas the rolling rocks dealt 100,000 damage a hit. If Zhang Yang was not prepared for it, he would have died. Smudged all over the floor!

As the rocks continued to roll, two of them had actually phased through the boss and were only destroyed after rolling to the edge of the mountain. In this wave, a total of four players were crushed to death. Two players had used their skills to gain an invincible effect to escape death.

"What the hell!? Hiding behind the boss was not even safe!" cried Fatty Han in a fit of anger. He had thought that he could be safe from the boss' attack by using the boss as a shield. No one had known that the rocks could actually phase through the boss. As a result, he now lay flat on the ground.

The boss had killed four players, including Fatty Han, one of the main party members! Zhang Yang was disgruntled at the fact that Fatty Han had died before using the skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth! What a huge waste!

80%...

Sulga unleashed another wave of {Rolling Rocks} and {Rocky Spear} at the same time. It seemed that both skills were set to be

used at the same time to purposely give players a harder time. As expected, in this wave, three players had died. Two of them were the same players who had used their skills to grant them momentary invincibility. Since the skills were still on cool down, they could not rely on them and had died due to carelessness. The remaining player that died as he was too focused on avoiding the rocks, and was pierced to death by the rocky spears.

70%...

Another wave of {Rocky Spear} and {Rolling Rocks}, casualty: 1.

60%...50%...40%....

As Sulga's HP dropped, it had only used these two skills over and over. Though it may seem boring, it was still able to kill many more players. At the last 30% HP, the surviving players remaining on the battle field were Zhang Yang's permanent party member of eight, Galileo, and Fantasy Sweetheart.

Even the strategist, Mountain Mover had also died. His ability in coordinating the party during the war was better than good, however, his skills in the dungeon were only average. At best, he was at the same level as Fatty Han!

Knowing that, Zhang Yang had still recruited him for this dungeon raid with the intention of gearing him up. In the future, when he leads a team during battle, he would not need to stand in the front lines. However, he would definitely be targeted by opposing Assassins. Having lousy equipment would only be



assisting in the kill!

After 30%, there were no longer casualties in the party. All the survivors were soon to be China's top tier fighters, naturally, they had already gotten used to the boss's strategy.

20%...10%...

‘Ding! Stone Golem Sulga has gained a 50% increase attack buff due to extreme anger!

A familiar, bloody-red glow appeared on Sulga's stone body.

This time, the {Rolling Rocks} unleashed by the boss were even larger in size. The gap between the rocks had become so small that evading had become impossible.

Zhang Yang immediately screamed. "To me! Don't bother dodging the rocks! I'll use {Vanguard's Aggression}. When the boss enters the Berserk state, it will continue to cast {Rolling Rocks}. There's no way to survive this unless we use surviving skills to rush for the kill. Consume a power potion and use all your skill, at no expense! If you have {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, use that as well!"

Right after that, Zhang Yang activated {Vanguard's Aggression} and consumed a bottle of [Power Potion]. Since all skills had a global cool down of 1 second, Zhang Yang chose to use the [Ring of Beastman's Ancestor] ring. Hang Ying Xue and the others gathered

closely to Zhang Yang, each took a bottle of [Power Potion] and casted [Dance of Heaven and Earth].

‘-12,000!’

‘-12,000!’

‘-12,000!’

‘-12,000!’

...

Shadows emerged from everyone who used {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and formed into swordsmen. The figure leaped towards the boss and started its attack.

9%...8%...7%...The boss’s HP dropped down like an open fire hydrant, dropping at such fast pace that the speed of the HP bar was one of the fastest Zhang Yang had ever seen! That was the combination of 8 instances of {Shadow of Heaven and Earth}! It was a total of 1,080,000 damage!

Boom rolls rolls

The rolling rocks landed on the players at the same time. Having Zhang Yang’s protection over them, even though the boss had gained a 50% damage boost, it could only deal roughly 15,000

damage to everyone.

3%...2%...1%...0%!

Sulga growled in a deep husky voice and crumbled.

# Chapter 367: Unsealing The First Magic Circle Seal

---

‘Ding! You and your party have acquired the Pandemonium (Hardcore Mode) First Clear Title, as the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your name will be published on the list of the First Clear title, allowing the world to praise you!’

Once Sulga died, Zhang Yang received the system notification immediately. He let out a sigh and then keyed in those advertising words. Luckily he was a shareholder of Silky Soft Holdings now, so he did not feel as embarrassed as before.

Suddenly, the server was flooded with plenty of their First Clear notifications. Besides that, Zhang Yang and his 20-man party members were entitled to rewards of 10 gold coins, 1 skill point, and 500 alliance reputation points.

Zhang Yang added the skill point into his {Warrior's Will} and maximized the level of this skill. Now, it had only a one minute cool time duration! However, Zhang Yang had taken his newly acquired [Titan's Chest Plate] into consideration, knowing it would be a good choice if he prioritized maximizing his {Shield Wall}'s level. That was an extra 150% of HP!

The party members were grinning as they were entitled to reward of a skill point and got to be enlisted in the First Clear rankings. This was especially true for the irregular party members, they were extremely excited! In fact, there were not many 20-man party dungeons. There was only Level 20 Marzerway's Lair, Level 60 Poison Fireland and now, Pandemonium!

No one could ever be faster than Wei Yan Er when it came to picking up the loot dropped from bosses. Wei Yan Er's actions were very fast, once the boss had died, she had bent over to pick the loot.

First, she picked up 12 pieces of gold coins and put them into her backpack, before she started picking up other loot.

[Vortex Gauntlets] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +134

Intelligence: +123

Spirit: +54

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

It was a heavy armor with the additional attributes of Intelligence and Spirit, so this must exclusively be for Sacred Knights. This heavy armor was distributed after the two Sacred

Knights in the party bid on it.

[Carrion Cutter] (Yellow-Gold, Two-Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 1,570–1,970

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 466

Equipment: Every time the target is struck by this weapon, there will a chance of cutting the target's carrion and cause 2,100 physical damage to the target.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

Wei Yan Er was still using a Level 60 axe, therefore, she quickly bid for it without hesitation and won the two-handed axe. But, compared to the previous Alps' drop, Death Blade which was a Violet-Platinum and two-handed sword, it was so much better than [Carrion Cutter] which also made little brat regret it for so long.

[Devotion Boots] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +120

Intelligence: +138

Spirit: +61

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

After some bidding, the equipment was taken by a Spellcaster who was named "Destroyer". Both Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream had more chances to obtain the equipment, so they willingly stepped back.

Except for the three pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, the rest of the equipment were Gray-Silvers which were also distributed to the party members.

Mountain Mover said, "This system is very stingy, there is only a Yellow-Gold boss in this dungeon and it only dropped three pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment. It will take very long for all the party members in a party to gather whole sets of Yellow-Gold equipment!"

"This wasn't that bad, at least we still obtained some Yellow-Gold equipment, which is much better than defeating Gray-Silver bosses!"

But then again, the difficulty of the final boss in this Hardcore Mode was pretty high, therefore, not many equally leveled players in other guilds could defeat this final boss. As a result, it was unrealistic to universalize the Yellow-Gold equipment! Conversely, Gray-Silver equipment were already universalized.

Zhang Yang and his party could easily clear the dungeon, only because they had the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}. This marvelous skill had carried them past the boss' hardest Rage Mode! If it was any other party, at least three tanks would have been needed to take turns using {Vanguard's Aggression}. Even so, it was not easy to withstand 15,000 points of terrifying damage, which also tested the healers' ability!

Zhang Yang did not immediately disband the party, but continued searching in the canyon as his [Mysterious Sword Hilt] still needed Margery as a guide in the subsequent quest. This might also need another battle, so Zhang Yang kept everyone with him.

After hundreds of meters, Zhang Yang saw an old woman who was wearing a scholar's gown, and the name on top of her head was Margery!

[Margery, the Greatest Historian under the Sky] (Normal,



Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000

MP: 4,000

Defense: 80

Zhang Yang quickly walked over and said, "Scholar Margery, I'm an adventurer from White Jade Castle and I have something to ask of you!"

Margery used her staff like a crutch and looked at Zhang Yang with her poor eyesight then said, "To think that you can actually find me, even though I live in such secluded area! Alright, since you are here, I will grant your wish!"

Zhang Yang took out the [Mysterious Sword Hilt] from his backpack and handed over to Margery then said, "I inadvertently got this sword hilt, and according to Smithing Master Banderash, there are three magic circle seals carved on this sword hilt, I would like to ask you, how can I unseal these three magic circle seals?!"

"Inadvertently..." Han Ying Xue pursed her lips.

Margery took over the sword hilt, looked carefully then said, "These are magic circle seals from ancient times, full of endless mysteries. It's not easy to unseal them!"

Margery mentioned that it was not easy, not impossible!

"Great scholar, please elaborate more!" Zhang Yang said.

Margery closed her eyes, pondered for a while then said, "These three magic circle seals are interlocked with each other. I can only see the first magic circle seal, while the mysteries within the other two magic circle seals can only be discovered after the first magic circle seal has been unsealed!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Refer to Margery for information!’

Margery slowly paced for a few steps and said, "If you want to unseal the first magic circle seal, you are required to defeat Lord of the Myriad Ghosts as it has an [Ancient Magic Stone]. After that, you are required to search for a [Millennial Heroic Soul], as this can protect the impact of the [Ancient Magic Stone] from destroying the sword hilt!"

‘Ding! Margery has a quest for you: Unseal the first magic circle seal. Will you accept?’

Of course, Zhang Yang would accept the quest!

"Come back to me when you have found both of these ingredients. I also would like to take a look at the remaining two magic seals. These could be useful for my research!" Margery gave the order.

Since everything had been resolved, everyone tore their [Teleportation Scroll] and returned to Thunderstorm Castle. Zhang Yang returned to the same route where he came from as he planned to gather all the ingredients to unseal the first magic circle seal. He could take advantage of the empty dungeon, he did not need to clear the monsters once again.

[Unseal the first magic circle seal] (Difficulty: S)

Quest Description: You got a clue of unsealing [Mysterious Sword Hilt] from Margery. What are you still waiting for, take action now! You are required to get [Ancient Magic Stone] from the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts and a [Millennial Heroic Soul]! It was said that Lord of the Myriad Ghosts is in the westernmost of Grand Canyon of Eternal Night. While it is rumored that Honduras in Killua Castle, which is located in Black Feather Forest, snapped a photo of a [Millennial Heroic Soul] three years ago. You better pray that he has not used it yet!

Progress: Obtain [Ancient Magic Stone] 0/1, [Millennial Heroic Soul] 0/1

Zhang Yang felt helpless, as he was at Altair Flatlands now, but the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was located at Grand Canyon of Eternal Night, while Honduras was located in the Black Feather Forest. Therefore, this was another time-consuming quest which

would require Zhang Yang to run around!

Well, complaining was useless, Zhang Yang decided to start the journey at once!

Zhang Yang exited from the dungeon, rode on Whitey and rushed towards Grand Canyon of Eternal Night.

Five hours later, Zhang Yang entered Grand Canyon of Eternal Night's map, where he continued rushing to the west, and after another two hours later, he reached the Tomb of Despair.

Level 80 map was very huge!

However, if compared to the Chaos Realm's map, this Grand Canyon of Eternal Night's map was not that huge! Chaos Realm's map was different from the maps below Level 100, each main city had their own respective maps at every 10 levels. However, the level spans of Chaos Realm's maps were huge, for example, Siccory Mountains started from Level 110 to Level 140, which spanned by 30 levels!

The bigger the level span, the bigger the maps! Besides, after Level 100, the penalty of level gaps had increased from 10 levels to 30 levels, which encouraged the players to challenge stronger monsters!

Zhang Yang was familiar with Tomb of Despair as in his previous life, he had completed quests at this place and he still remembered

there was a quest that rewarded a Gray-Silver accessory. Besides, this was definitely good news for most of the players who still had not yet occupied their accessory slots!

This Tomb of Despair was located within the mountains, and its entrance was very narrow. If the players did not pay attention, no one would think that there was another world there!

The entrance was very dark, and Zhang Yang walked blindly, without any light for a long time before he finally saw lights that looked like burning torches slowly appearing in front of him. The closer he walked towards the torches, the clearer he could see.

There was no monsters at the dark area in front of Zhang Yang. But there were hunchbacked skeleton soldiers wandering back and forth close to the burning torches. They made cracking noises as they moved.

[Skeletal Soldier of Tomb of Despair] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 83

HP: 83,000

Defense: 450

Lord of the Myriad Ghosts must be in the deepest part of Tomb of

Despair. Zhang Yang took out his [Goblin's Head Lobber] and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the frontmost skeletal soldier and started the battle.

An elite monster certainly was no threat to Zhang Yang, but when the skeletal soldier's HP dropped to 50%, it suddenly took out a sharp bone from its rib cage and stabbed at Zhang Yang's chest!

‘Ding! You are stunned, due to the effects of Skeletal Soldier of Tomb of Despair's sharp bone and you will lose 2,000 HP every second. Lasts for 5 seconds!’

This effect directly deducted 2,000 HP not deal 2,000 points of damage! Even though Zhang Yang's defense was strong, this effect totally ignored Zhang Yang's high defense!

Zhang Yang quickly activated {Warrior's Will} to remove the stunning effect, so that the HP deduction effect could be removed as well! After that, Zhang Yang defeated the minion with ease.

Luckily he had maximized his {Warrior's Will}'s level so the cool time duration was only one minute! Most of the tanks at the moment had not even maximized {Block}'s level, how could they have the extra skill point to add to {Warrior's Will}'s level? {Warrior's Will} would not help much if its cool down duration was 10 minutes!

# Chapter 368: Rhine Wildhammer's Quest

---

Zhang Yang struck like a hurricane, the elite monster could only live for 10 seconds under the combined attacks of Zhang Yang and Whitey! However, even with {Rearm}, Zhang Yang was still forced to take quite an amount of unnecessary damage. As Zhang Yang had quickly burned through two {Warrior's Will}'s effects, he needed to withstand the sharp bone stunning effect and lose 6,000 HP in the progress. (Zhang Yang's [Heart of the Death Knight] helped to reduce 50% of status restriction duration, thus, 5 seconds of stunning became 2.5 seconds to him, and he only suffered 3 seconds worth of damage). In the end, the elite monster still caused sizable damage to Zhang Yang!

In order to save time, Zhang Yang did not eat health recover cakes after defeating the monsters, but drank [Level 4 Healing Potions] one after another. Also with the effect of transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion], was sufficient to support Zhang Yang. He did not need to take any breaks to recover his health condition.

There were tombs at the left and right sides of the passage, and there were many minions near the tombs which made it very suitable for training. But Zhang Yang wanted to complete the quest, so he did not waste time on these minions. He looked around each tomb and only moved forward if there were no minions.

However, the quest description never mentioned that the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was in the deepest part of the Tomb of Despair, and it was just Zhang Yang's own guess. On the other hand, there might be more than just the boss, Lord of the Myriad Ghosts. It would be good as Zhang Yang could have extra income if Zhang

Yang met other mini-bosses. Besides, there might be the appearances of treasure chests!

There were many floors within the Tomb of Despair. As Zhang Yang was clearing the minions on his route at the bottommost floor, he saw a boss blocking his way.

[The Sobber, Heiminus] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 84

HP: 840,000

Defense: 900

"Wu wu wu" Zhang Yang could hear boss' sobbing sounds from afar. When Zhang Yang came closer, the sobbing sounds became clearer. The sobbing sounds were echoed endlessly in an unobscured passage, clear and sorrowful sobbing sounds, full of resentment which could actually horrify anyone in the middle of the night!

Heiminus was all but the skeletal remnants of a sorrowful existence, with green burning flames in its eye sockets, unable to even shed a drop of tear. But, it still covered its cheeks with both of its hands and wept terribly.



Zhang Yang switched his battle mounts and summoned Mythical Turtle, as Mythical Turtle was more powerful when fighting the boss!

Zhang Yang used {Spear of Obliteration} to pull the boss' aggro.

‘-2,986!’

"Wu!" Heiminus wept with grief, looked up at Zhang Yang, the green burning flames danced within its eye sockets and it shouted, "Abominable human, are you going to hurt me again? I won't let you do as you please this time, I will fight back, I really will fight back!"

The boss chased after Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! You are affected by Sorrow Aura and your damage is reduced by 10%!’

Heiminus had a peculiar aura which immediately reduced Zhang Yang's damage by 10%. It was very annoying.

Pa!

The boss swung its bony hand at Zhang Yang, but the first attack was negated with {Block} which gave him 30 Rage.

After Zhang Yang added 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss,

he immediately fought back.

97%, 95%, 92%... Although Zhang Yang and the Mythical Turtle's attacks were reduced by 10%, their total damage was still very strong. Just within 30 seconds, they successfully reduced boss' HP to 75%!

'Wu!' Heiminus suddenly screeched, and Zhang Yang suddenly had a sad feeling that he could not even describe. He could not even raise his hands when his tears automatically started flowing from his eyes.

'Ding! You are affected by Heiminus' Sorrow effect, and you cannot control your own behavior. Lasts for 10 seconds!'

F\*ck, this emo boss not only loved to weep and sob, but it was getting contagious, this was getting too annoying!

Zhang Yang quickly used {Warrior's Will} to remove this effect, while Mythical Turtle had no choice but to lie on the ground and shed tears silently.

Zhang Yang continued fighting the boss.

Another 30 seconds later, Heiminus activated its Sorrow Aura once again but Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will} was still under a cool down period, therefore, Zhang Yang could only receive 5 seconds of the ([Heart of the Death Knight]'s effect)! Luckily, Heiminus was just a Gray-Silver boss, its attacks by hand just caused about 3,000

damage to Zhang Yang, and within 5 seconds only deducted Zhang Yang's HP by 9,000!

When the third time of Sorrow effect was activated, Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will} was ready.

30 seconds, 60 seconds, 90 seconds, 120 seconds... the Boss' HP dropped drastically and was almost depleted.

Zhang Yang used {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} which additionally recovered 150% of his HP, and then directly defeated Heiminus! Starting from Level 80 maps, Gray-Silver bosses were equivalent to Green-Copper bosses and were no longer as strong as they once were. Not to mention, Zhang Yang was already equipped with almost a full body of Violet-Platinum equipment, which was much stronger than Heiminus!

Also, {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} had only a few minutes of cool down duration. After killing a few minions, {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} were ready once again and did not have to spend money! Besides, a bottle of [Level 4 Healing Potion] in the current market could be sold for 100 gold coins!

After Heiminus was killed, it dropped four pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, which was quite stingy. However, it still dropped two [Chaos Gems], and helped Zhang Yang extend his backpack space to 120 slots, so that he could put more herbs and potions.

Zhang Yang continued moving forward, although the tombs were very dark and very chill, they spawned a kind of herb, called

[Zombie Moss] which could be used to concoct [Zombie Potion]!

[Zombie Potion] was very interesting, after using it, it allowed the players to "Scam Death"!

After the player who drank [Zombie Potion] died, the player could tentatively turn into zombies and continue the battle, lasting for 30 seconds! During this period, the player would ignore any damage but could not ignore status restriction skills. However, after 30 seconds, the player would still die! But if it was in PvP, 30 seconds of damage ignoring were sufficient to defeat the opponent who were close to death. However, if the grade of equipment for both sides were different by a lot, even 10 minutes of [Zombie Potion]'s effect would still be pointless!

On the other hand, [Zombie Potion]'s effect was also good when defeating the boss, the player allowed to continue fighting 30 seconds. When the number of players was high, the damage input to the boss was still powerful!

Nevertheless, [Zombie Potion]'s recipe not easily dropped and [Zombie Moss] also not easily collected! [Zombie Moss] only grew in Level 80 and above tomb's environment, besides, its re-spawn time was 72 hours. Also, less than 10 [Zombie Moss] were growing in each tomb!

After Zhang Yang cleared two floors of Tomb of Despair, he successfully obtained four [Zombie Moss] which was terribly low amount! Luckily, only a [Zombie Moss] was required to concoct a [Zombie Potion]. Thus, these four [Zombie Moss] could concoct four [Zombie Potions].

An hour later, Zhang Yang reached the second floor of Tomb of Despair and fought the second boss, Cassandra.

[Cassandra] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 85

HP: 850,000

Defense: 900

The boss' flashing green light eyes asides, Cassandra would definitely be a top beauty, she had a slender and voluptuous body figure, tear-drop shaped breasts, a plump booty and a curvy waistline.

She was wearing black tight leather, which totally displayed her voluptuous body figure. But her face was too pale, like some kind of sickly beauty.

The boss was holding a sword, and blood still dripped from the tip of the sword. Her pink tongue kept licking her red lips, which gave a completely femme fatale vibe!

Zhang Yang summoned the Mythical Turtle once again and

threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, and then rushed towards the boss using {Charge}.

"Here comes another prey!" Cassandra excitedly screamed and raised her sword in readiness, "What an aromatic, delicious smell of blood!"

After Zhang Yang pulled the boss' aggro by throwing {Spear of Obliteration}, he started stepping backward until Mythical Turtle was able to engage the boss. Both Zhang Yang and Mythical Turtle bombarded the boss' HP. It was just a Gray-Silver boss, how powerful could it be?

Cassandra's attack power was similar with Heiminus, but she had a few offensive skills, thus, her overall damage was much higher than Heiminus! But, she did not have the aura that reduced player' attack power, and she did not even have status restriction skills. As a result, Zhang Yang and Mythical Turtle's damages were much higher now!

Other than using {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall}, Zhang Yang also drank two bottles of [Level 4 Healing Potion] before successfully defeating the boss. Besides, other than a few pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, Zhang Yang obtained two [Chaos Gems] and instantly, his backpack space became 140 slots!

Zhang Yang went on to the third level of the Tomb of Despair!

After fighting his way for a period of time, Zhang Yang suddenly stopped, and then doubled back a few steps, turning around to look

at a tomb on his left side.

Eight skeletal soldiers were attacking a red bearded dwarf, and at that moment, the battle almost ended. When Zhang Yang started moving towards the battle, the dwarf already fall defeated, groaning in pain, dropping his big hammer.

Once the dwarf died, the eight skeletal soldiers also instantly disappeared, and the nearby of the tomb also became empty.

Zhang Yang sighed. He was too late!

That red-bearded dwarf was the NPC who offered accessory quests. As long as players passed by and rescued him from the monsters, and helped him get the "treasure chest" behind the fourth boss, Briggs, players would be entitled accessories as the quest reward.

This pitiful NPC would continually be attacked by the monsters, and if no players passed by, then this NPC would die for many times! If there is a counter for the number of NPC deaths in God's Miracle, this dwarf would surely top the list!

However, if players had completed the quest, this dwarf NPC would no longer spawn, this was called a "mirror" technology in this game.

Five minutes later, the dwarf re-spawned, along with the eight elite skeletal monsters!

[Rhine Wildhammer] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 100,000

Defense: 450

Note: Claiming himself as a great explorer, but the others usually call him a grave robber.

"Damn it, why are there so many spectres here! God of Titans, please, quickly send someone to save me this pitiful Rhine!" the dwarf raised his big hammer to meet his foe as he grumbled.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, patted his Whitey to dash into the tomb chamber and said, "I thought I heard a coward crying for help!"

"What, you dared to call the great explorer as a coward? Mortal, let's fight a duel!" Rhine roared angrily, giving one of the skeletons a particularly good thump.

"Hey, is that how you to talk to your rescuer?" Zhang Yang waved his sword, launched {Blast Wave} and stunned all the eight skeletal



soldiers, and then rescued Rhine immediately!

"Alright, human kid, since you have helped me, I can forgive your rudeness, but you have to compensate me!"

"Roar!" the eight skeletal soldiers awoke from their stun and started attacking Zhang Yang.

While Rhine Wildhammer did not help Zhang Yang a hand but hid away and put on a bandage to recover his HP. However, the times taken for NPCs and players to put on bandage were different, the bandage progress bar under the NPC's tag moved extremely slowly. Obviously, the NPC would not help immediately, but would instead wait for Zhang Yang to clear all the monsters. The other case would be if Zhang Yang got close to death. The NPC too would help out.

In terms of attack power, the eight skeletal soldiers were pieces of cake for Zhang Yang. But when these monsters were reduced to 50% HP, they would use sharp bone paralyze effect. If these monsters took turns to use this status restriction skill, it would be very troublesome for Zhang Yang!

Therefore, Zhang Yang switched targets repeatedly until all the monsters were at 51% of their HP.. After that, he used {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep} to reduce all eight monsters' HP to 50%!

The eight skeletal soldiers initiated sharp bone paralyze effect together on Zhang Yang!

‘Ding! You are stunned due to you are affected by Skeletal Soldier of Tomb of Despair’s sharp bone paralyze and you lose 2,000 HP every second. Lasts for 5 seconds!’

‘Ding! You are stunned due to you are affected by Skeletal Soldier of Tomb of Despair’s sharp bone paralyze and you lose 2,000 HP every second. Lasts for 5 seconds!’

"..."

All of sudden, the system notifications rang around Zhang Yang’s ears, nonstop.

‘{Warrior's Will}!’

All the debuffs were removed!

Zhang Yang immediately bombarded the eight monsters without hesitation and worries, while using {Shield Wall} and {Berserker's Heal}.

"Hey, human, you are kind of powerful, huh!" Rhine stopped putting his bandage and his HP bar became full. Rhine gazed at Zhang Yang with narrowed eyes, "Since you are helping me, I will not fuss over your rudeness earlier on!"

Luckily, the NPC had not helped Zhang Yang out just now, otherwise, Zhang Yang would not be able to precisely control the monsters’ HP, and be unable to remove the eight sharp bone

paralyze effects at once by using {Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang smiled happily as there were two extreme combinations, some dwarves were kind and honest; while some dwarves were greedy and cheapskate. Rhine Wildhammer definitely was the second type of dwarf, which was greedy and cheapskate. That was why Rhine fooled away Zhang Yang's kindness of helping him.

However, it was pointless to fuss with an NPC.

"Dwarf, I have something else to do, stay safe!" Zhang Yang said.

"Wait a minute!" Rhine blocked in front of Zhang Yang and said, "Warrior, you look capable, I can give you a task! Help me enter the fourth floor of Tomb of Despair and search for a useless box, and I will give you a sacred treasure of our Dwarf race!"

'Ding! Rhine Wildhammer has a quest for you: This is just a little favor. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang did not accept the quest immediately but equipped [Party Summon Order] and then activated it.

Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream, Fantasy Sweetheart, Lost Dream, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and Endless Starlight appeared around Zhang Yang within one to two seconds. Wei Yan Er asked in the party channel, "Noob tank, why did you teleport us there? Do you know [Teleportation Scrolls] are very costly?!"

# Chapter 369: This Is But A Small Favor

---

[Party Summon Order]'s teleportation was consensual.

When someone in the party used a [Party Summon Order], a dialogue box would pop-up in the rest of the nine party members' interface, to give them the option to accept. The players could choose to accept, or reject, or even ignore the dialogue box but the dialogue box would last for only a minute. after a minute, the system would reject the summoning automatically.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er loved to be garrulous with Zhang Yang as they knew that Zhang Yang would not summon them for fun, so both of them only appeared around Zhang Yang after three to four seconds later. Besides, Zhang Yang had to reimburse them the "ticket" back to the city!

Zhang Yang pointed at Rhine Wildhammer and said, "Talk to that NPC to receive a quest!"

Everyone talked to that dwarf and received the quest, "This is just a little favor".

[This is just a little favor] (Difficulty: B)

Quest Description: Help Rhine Wildhammer to get the treasure! You must ensure that Rhine Wildhammer survives. If Rhine Wildhammer dies, this quest will be deemed a failure.

Progress: Help Rhine Wildhammer get the treasure 0/1

Quest Reward: [Dwarf's Blessing]

[Dwarf's Blessing] (Gray-Silver, Accessory)

Use: Removes all the effects that restrict a player's action. Lasts for 10 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

This accessory was born for PvP, as it could remove all the status restriction skills. However, it was not as useful as {Warrior's Will} which also could remove DoT damage effect, or give an invincible effect like {Sacred Protection}. However, this NPC gifted the players an auto ability of anti-status restriction effect, which was also quite good!

Especially when fighting against Thieves, an extra anti-status restriction effect ability would also increase the survivability!

This was why Zhang Yang summoned everyone here for the quest.

"Hey, you guys have to work harder! As I'm rewarding you guys our Dwarf race's precious treasure. If you guys cannot protect me, then you guys should just slit your necks up with a knife to commit suicide!" Rhine said with his cheapskate's face.

Luckily, everyone was used to dealing with the cheapskates Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, so they did not bother about the NPC.

After everyone had received the quest, Rhine started walking in front of everyone.

When Zhang Yang was alone, he had already swathed a path through the various monsters, and now that there were so many of them, it was even easier to defeat all the minions along their way. Half an hour later, they reached the third boss, Brighton.

[Brighton] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 86

HP: 1,720,000

Defense: 1500

It was a huge and tall man with a ferocious face, his top was bare and full of scars, and some parts even exposed his internal organs and bones! For spectre, bones were their fundamentals, while blood and flesh were not necessary for their survival, therefore, their physical injuries would not be recovered automatically.

The party no longer needed to be extra careful when fighting against Yellow-Gold bosses. All of them rushed towards the boss and launched vigorous attacks.

Brighton was a gatekeeper boss, although his HP was low, he must be harboring an ulti! Unfortunately, he was only the third boss, although he was stronger than the previous two Gray-Silver bosses, he was still no match to the party. A minute later, he was killed by the party!

Brighton dropped two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, both of them being cloth armor. The gloves were given to Fantasy Sweetheart while the helmet was given to Daffodil Daydream. Besides, the boss also dropped three [Chaos Gems]. It seemed that all the bosses here would drop [Chaos Gems].

Zhang Yang did not even win a [Chaos Gem]. However, he had already taken four [Chaos Gems] previously, so he did not feel particularly bad about it.

After killing the third boss, the party continued moving forward and rushed into the fourth floor of Tomb of Despair.

"I smell my lovely precious!" Rhine sniffed, about, his huge brandy nose twitching. He sped up and moved forwards.

Everyone quickly followed closely, as if the NPC died, they would have to run back to the same place and receive the quest once again.

All of them defeated the minions easily along the way, and half an hour later, they reached the front of the fourth boss,

[Briggs] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

MP: 870,000

Defense: 1,500

This was a magic-type boss. This boss had a hunched back, wore black robes, held a dark green staff, was barefooted, and had the bones of its toes exposed.

"My precious treasure!" grave robber Rhine saw the boss like a pervert seeing a naked beauty, the excitement shone in his eyes, he shouted and rushed towards the boss with his greedy face, as if he would sacrifice anything for the treasure.

Zhang Yang and the rest immediately turned to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. The resemblance was uncanny!

Wei Yan Er fidgeted uncomfortably and asked, "Why are you



guys looking at us?"

When everyone heard her ask so, they immediately burst into laughter.

While at this moment, Rhine had already initiated the battle, and both of these NPCs had already started fighting each other.

Although Rhine received a boost and mysteriously grew stronger upon seeing his Rhine, as a mere elite monster, he could not be the boss' opponent. So, Rhine was in pain as his HP dropped drastically. He quickly yelled, "You guys, hurry up, come over to help me, I'm your employer!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and raised his [Goblin's Head Lobber] and then rushed towards them.

This quest's difficulty was B which also means that the boss was not hard to defeat. The true fact also was shown, under the crowd's powerful crushes, the boss was quickly defeated.

Once the boss was dead, Wei Yan Er quickly ran over the boss' corpse to pick up the coins, while Rhine excitedly rushed towards the back of Briggs' corpse for a stone chest. Rhine broke the stone chest and took out a fiery red colored hat.

Rhine held the red hat like his baby and even gently stroked the hat against his face obsessively.

Wei Yan Er stood beside him, similarly stroking the gold coins in her hands!

After some time, Rhine only put the red hat on his arms then came to the front of Zhang Yang and his party members. After that, he threw a piece of silvery white small pendant at everyone and said, "You guys did a good job, here are your rewards, I'll take my leave then!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: This is just a little favor. Obtained 2,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: [Dwarf’s Blessing]!’

Rhine went off quickly without saying anything, as if he was afraid that Zhang Yang and the rest would snatch away his "treasure".

After everyone distributed Briggs’ drops, they continued moving forwards and immediately reached the final floor of the Tomb of Despair. They were there for the final boss, Lord of the Myriad Ghosts!

If the first two bosses were a Gray-Silver grade, the third and the fourth bosses being a Yellow-Gold grade, then the fifth boss would most probably be a Violet-Platinum grade!

Everyone had been bored of fighting against Yellow-Gold bosses, but Violet-Platinum bosses were not common encounters yet!

They cleared the monsters along the way, and after they had cleared the fifth floor of monsters, Zhang Yang had already collected 10 [Zombie Moss] in total. Unfortunately, the [Zombie Potion]'s recipe was not dropped so easily, so Zhang Yang would have to keep waiting.

There was a wide space in the middle of the mountain in the deepest of the fifth floor of Tomb of Despair. It was chilly here and the cold wind actually made people shiver!

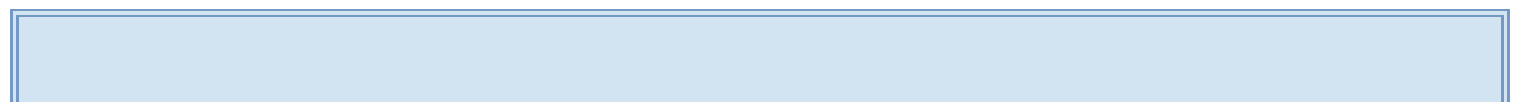
A monster which was hidden by the black fog appeared in front of the party, its body size was huge, reaching up to eight meters tall. They vaguely saw its skeletal skull and two green evil flames burned in its eyeholes.

"Ah!"

A head stretched out from the monster which was covered by the black fog, uttering a cry with a terrified expression, but it seemed to be held back within the black fog by something else!

"Ah!"

From these screams, one after another, more heads stretched out from the black fog, but then disappeared in the black fog again. It seemed like countless of wraiths stayed in this body.



[Lord of the Myriad Ghosts] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 88

HP: 8,800,000

Defense: 2,500

Note: The King of Spectre of the Tomb of Despair!

"Yo, this boss is scary!" Wei Yan Er complained.

"Little brat, I thought you are not afraid of anything?"

"My cousin said, I'm a big girl after 18 years old, I have to learn to be demure and lovely, only can I trigger men's desire to protect me, and also to control them!" Wei Yan Er said flippantly.

After hearing those words, Zhang Yang and the rest were speechless, but Han Ying Xue only sighed.

"What's the plan?" everyone looked at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulders, as there was the Fastest Dungeon Raid Level Clearance Ranking for the dungeon's bosses, therefore, many players would come up with tactics for the

optimal party class combinations and tactics. But there were so many open-world bosses, and the bosses did not re-spawn as swiftly as a dungeon boss. So, only a few famous open-world bosses would have comprehensive tactics available against them, from intensive research.

Those open-world bosses were hardly defeated, but there were many members in a strong guild, so strong guilds could just use their numbers to defeat the open-world bosses. So at this point, tactics have become pointless!

Zhang Yang did not fight against this Lord of the Myriad Ghosts before so he did not know the corresponding tactics.

Zhang Yang simply answered, "Just do what feels right. We're not racing for time. If worst comes to worst, we die once, and start again from the scratch!"

Zhang Yang summoned Mythical Turtle and directly dashed towards the boss.

"A live one? Here?" Lord of the Myriad Ghosts uttered in a weird tone that sounded like a chorus of voices. The boss looked at Zhang Yang with its burning green flames eyes, and suddenly, its body inflated as if someone had blown gas into it, and it instantly became hundreds of meters tall!

"Become part of the king's body!" the boss uttered again with the voice of the thousands of thousands of people screaming, and a black light suddenly emerged from the black fog that formed a

huge palm which tried to grab hold of Zhang Yang!

When they looked carefully, the palm was made up from countless of faces; all the faces showed terrified expressions and screeched continuously!

# Chapter 370: Lord Of The Myriad Ghosts

---

The devilish boss manipulated everything an ancient devil!

Within the black fog, countless of faces continuously moaned and screamed in pain in a terrifying image of sorrow! This scene exactly looks like the end of days!

That huge palm came at Zhang Yang, but Zhang Yang immediately raised his shield and activated {Block}. At the same time, he also lifted his axe on his right and hacked at terrifying evil palm.

‘-1,000!’

‘-1,000!’

...

12 ‘-1,000’ damage texts floated on top of Zhang Yang’s head continuously. At the same time, Zhang Yang’s axe chopped nothing but air!

The party members saw that Zhang Yang had the boss’s attention, so all of them surrounded the boss and started launching attacks, while ranged attackers also threw fire arrows and fire balls from afar. But their attacks also hit nothing like Zhang Yang. These fire arrows and fire balls phased through the black fog, until the maximum 30 meters skill range, where fire arrows fell on the

floor and fire balls were automatically extinguished.

"This is not from the boss' body, look for the actual target!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted loudly and continued rushing towards the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts' huge body!

As the boss received attacks from the ranged attackers, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream, The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts roared with the voice of the thousands and thousands of people shouting, and three masses of black fog emerged from the boss' body and turned into three evil palms which raced towards Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream. The palms were made up by countless of anguished screaming faces!

‘-1,000!’

‘-1,000!’

...

Multiple ‘-1,000’ damage texts floated above these three persons' heads. When the boss kept its evil palms, each of their HP bars had already lost 12,000 HP!

Zhang Yang was frowning, as this boss caused 1,000 damages to all types of classes, which made his pridefully high defense useless!

He quickly referred to the battle record to check what type of



attack he had received, 'You have lost 1,000 HP due to the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts' bite!'

It was "Lost" instead of "Being Hurt", these two words produced the same outcome, but they had totally different algorithms. "Being hurt" would be affected by defense, magic resistant, passive immune and equipment absorption effect, while "Lost" would directly deduct the HP, ignoring any resistance effects, even ignoring "invincibility" skills and effect!

It was like the sharp bone paralyzing effect that Zhang Yang encountered from the skeletal minions previously, which directly deducted 10,000 HP within 5 seconds, without any discount!

In this scenario, the tank's only remaining advantage over the other classes would be his high HP.

Zhang Yang rushed towards the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts, within a 10 meters range, and activated {Charge}!

Shush!

Zhang Yang was like a speeding arrow, he struck against boss and the [Goblin's Head Lobber] on his hand crunched into the boss once again.

'-1,942!'

This time, the attack finally dealt damage to the boss.

Lord of the Myriad Ghosts screeched, the black fog emerged from its body once again then turned into evil palm, and whacked towards Zhang Yang. Previously, everyone was attacking the boss' "invincible" evil palms and did not deal any damage to boss, therefore, the boss' aggro list became disorderly, so the boss had launched counterattacks to the four persons who attacked it before. At this time, the boss' body only received damage from Zhang Yang, thus, the boss' aggro list was back to normal.

Zhang Yang received another 12,000 damage and his rage bar became full. He immediately added 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss which activated the signal to lay it all out.

Every party member quickly read the situation and started attacking the body directly. The melee attackers also went around to the back of the boss to launch their attacks. The ranged attackers were standing in a group, but were separated by three meters to allow the healers to heal without much difficulty.

Lord of the Myriad Ghosts' attacks seemed weaker than other Violet-Platinum bosses as it dealt only 19,000 damage at once, but its attacks ignored any defensive skills, while also launching an attack every two seconds. Each strike was a guaranteed hit, and its DPS totaled up to 6,000. It was still a Violet-Platinum boss through and through!

Fortunately, this time, Zhang Yang had brought along two healers, which were Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart. They were the top healers in Lone Desert Smoke. Both of their abilities were sufficient in healing all of the party members' HP!

Although this Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was not a magic-type boss, it caused Guardian's strongest defense skill, {Block} to lose its role which also prevented the use of {Shield Bash}! As Zhang Yang already had the five piece effect of the Titan set equipment, his {Shield Bash} did not require rage anymore, and its damage was doubled. When this {Shield Bash} struck on the boss with 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense}, it could actually cause 4,830 points of damage to boss, an impressive amount of doubled damage!

However, when fighting against the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts, Zhang Yang only had his higher HP to rely on!

"Mortals will eventually be swallowed up by death!"

"Death is the beginning to eternal life!"

"Mortals, become part of the body of the king, and you will all be immortals!"

Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was attacking them as it uttered these words. Each line was uttered with the chorus of a thousand voices, it was bone-chilling!

After Zhang Yang had stabilized the boss' aggro, the boss targeted Zhang Yang alone. The two godly Priests were in charge of healing, even though Zhang Yang lost his immune ability, he still happily withstood the boss' attacks.

90%, 80%, the boss' HP started to reduce steadily.

"Foolish mortals, give up on your mundane ideas, and allow the king to devour your flesh and souls!" Lord of the Myriad Ghosts angrily shouted. After that, the boss swung its body and countless of heads dropped from the black fog, all over the ground!

This scene was extremely bloody and terrifying which could actually scare off a weak-willed person!

"Oh my god!"

The first person who screamed was not the timid member of the party, Fantasy Sweetheart, but Fatty Han!

Everyone was speechless and Han Ying Xue was curious and asked, "Sweetheart, why aren't you afraid?"

"I love to watch horror movies, so..." this little beauty with a baby face and plump bosoms shyly answered.

Zhang Yang laughed and asked, "Fatty, why are you screaming?"

"You guys, don't you feel that this is scary?" Fatty Han answered with his half-opened mouth.

Endless Starlight laughed evilly and said, "Brother fatty must have gotten f\*cked in the ass!"

When they were talking, the soil on the ground wiggled and formed into headless clay figurines! These clay figurines reached out and picked up the heads on the ground, and stuffed them on their necks, it was like magic, instantly a clay figurine army was formed!

[Restless Spirits] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500

Defense: 80

These spirits look ferocious, the spirits even constantly uttered the same frightening screams as they lifted their hands, moved their clay feet and slowly moved towards Zhang Yang. There were about four hundred of them!

"Damn, why do I have the feeling of watching zombie movie?!" Lost Dream yelled loudly.

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "Starlight, move to the ranged attackers' position and kite that monster that are after them, and I will pull the monsters at the melee position!"

There were too many monsters to be squashed into the players' AoE skill range, therefore, it was pointless to pull the monsters into a group but to at least kill 50 of the monsters first.

"Roger that!"

Endless Starlight quickly kept his war hammer and moved backward to protect the ranged attackers.

Normal monsters were totally harmless to the well-equipped tank, but these monsters were still threatening to the other classes, especially in such a high amount of monsters! Endless Starlight had already prepared his {Vanguard's Aggression} and could be used at any time.

The spirits didn't move very quickly, but there were so many of them that they slowly surrounded the party like a zombie attack in horror movies!

Zhang Yang changed his weapon to his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and launched {Horizontal Sweep}!

Suddenly, a wide cloud of '-6,000' damage texts floated across the monsters' head, along with a few critical strikes which dealt up to 13,000 points of damage, and some spirits were killed instantly! The special effect of [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was activated and immediately launched another sword of shadows!

"Ah!" the spirits screamed in pain and started moving towards

Zhang Yang.

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang wielded his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] once again and launched a conical-shape shock wave. Suddenly, those areas of monsters were all stunned and more than 10 '-1,264' damage texts popped-up!

The special effect of [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was activated, as when fighting against so many monsters, even a 1% chance of special effect activation would also be easy to trigger!

Pa! Pa! Pa!

The spirits were just the normal monsters, even though they were in high amount, they quickly fell defeated!

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang trampled on the ground, and then another series of damage texts popped-up!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest did not stand by idly, and also helped to clear out the horde.

The pitiful minions' basic attack was only 1,700, even when attacked Zhang Yang from his back, they also caused nullified

damage! ‘-o’ texts popped-up when the spirits put their hands on Zhang Yang!

Less than a minute later, the minions at the melee position was all cleared! There were still a hundred monsters after the ranged attackers, which showed that Zhang Yang’s sword was peerless in AoE attacks!

Unfortunately, this special effect was greatly weakened after Level 80, otherwise, they would have killed all the minions even faster!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest turned around to help Daffodil Daydream and the others. Zhang Yang was still tanking the boss and Endless Starlight was steadily pulling the minions. He did not require Zhang Yang’s help!

In a short time, the minions at the ranged position were also cleared. Everyone headed back to the boss and vigorously launched attacks towards the boss.

70%, 60%...

After a while, the boss dropped countless of heads once again to form another clay figurine army which then lumbered towards Zhang Yang and his party members.

Previously, everyone did not use any long cool down skills. This time, they cleared the minions with ease, obtaining plenty of



experience points!

# Chapter 371: Blood Rage Armor Set

---

Fatty Han could not help but feel content for the moment, "Little Yang, let's slow down the pace for a little bit and kill some more monsters. We can get more experience points!"

Wei Yan Er laughed out loudly at Fatty Han and said, "Wretched fatty, you just don't want to engage with the scary ghost boss, am I right?"

Fatty Han sunk into shame and blushed as the gang continued teasing him! Everyone was laughing at him for being afraid of ghosts!

56%, 53%, 50%!

"Argh --- No! No! No!" Lord of the Myriad Ghosts let out a thunderous roar and collapsed down to the ground. The black mist that was surging through the body of the boss had also dispersed through the surroundings, followed by countless hideous faces crying miserably, while rushing towards the gang in a ferocious manner!

‘-1,000!’

‘-1,000!’

...

It was an AOE attack, nothing more. Zhang Yang and the gang were inflicted by the attack and lost quite a number of health points. Basically, each of them had lost approximately 20,000 of health points! If it wasn't for the Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment that they were wearing, and the one or two pieces of Violet-Platinum grade equipment at hand on some of them, and also the {Vitality Aura} that Zhang Yang possessed, which boosted each of their health points beyond 25,000, that wave of AOE attack would have wiped them out clean for good!

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly healed everyone up. Because if the boss used any more powerful skills, one more wave of attack would be enough to instantly-kill every single one of them, as they were already low on health!

Boom!

As the boss smashed heavily onto the ground and the black mist completely dispersed, a gigantic skeleton of a head appeared right before them. The size of that gigantic skeleton can be compared to the size of a house! The flesh and blood of this skeleton seemed to have decayed into dust completely, and the skeleton was only left with two large holes of eye sockets that ignited with the evil flame of the undead, from within the two sockets!

"So this is the real form of the boss?"

"Haha, there's only a head without any limbs or body! Let's see how it fight!"

The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts spread its mouth opened and let out a solid and husky voice, "Damn you, bastards! You bastards smashed all the souls to disperse, all the souls that I've collected! Do you have any idea how much effort was needed to collect so many souls! Damn you! Damn you! You forced me to use my body that has yet to recover to its former state!"

The ground began to tremble! Boom!

As the boss was talking, the surface of the ground had begun to tremble and the rumble began to roll across the ground, like an earthquake followed by an avalanche!

Boom!

Boom!

Two large arms of a skeleton emerged from below the ground, followed closely by a large torso of a skeleton that appeared right before the gang! Then, two legs of a skeleton that emerged from the ground! The sole of one foot was already the size of a large bus!

This gigantically sized skeleton had all four limbs attached to its body, except for the skull. But as the entire body had emerged from the ground, the gigantic skeleton reached it's armed to that skeletal head of Lord of the Myriad Ghosts, picked the skull up and attached it right to the neck joint! It was like attaching a piece of lego head onto the top of a lego body!

A dark aura then surged and surrounded the gigantic skeleton. Lord of the Myriad Ghosts cracked its neck, and then the rest of the joints and knuckles like it was trying to adjust itself to a newly formed body!

[Lord of the Myriad Ghosts (Complete Form)] (Violet-Platinum, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 8,800,000

Defense: 2,500

Note: The completed form of The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts!

"Oh f\*ck sh\*t! The boss is at full health again!" The gang was all screaming in dismay.

"You pitiful weaklings, I shall smash you all into pancakes!" The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts roared out like thunder from the sky it self and reached out with its large skeletal hand towards Zhang Yang. It gave him a large, boney slap!

{Block}!

‘-1,304!’ Reflect damage of {Block}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield up not because he wanted to, but because it was his natural response that caused him to raise his shield up to protect himself from harm! But no one had ever thought that after the boss entered its complete form, its attack patterns and effects were changed as well! The attacks could not be blocked, just like any other regular melee boss!

He immediately bashed out a {Shield Bash} on the boss!

‘-10,432!’

An unexpected value of damage was inflicted onto the boss! The {Shield Bash} scored a critical strike, apparently!

Initially, {Shield Bash} could only inflict a basic damage of 2,608. But after being blessed with the additional effect of the 5 pieces of [Titan Armor Set], the damage output of the skill had been doubled! With a critical attack, the damage output of the skill could reach up to 4 times higher than the initial damage value!

That was awesome!

The rest of the gang were shocked to see that high amount of damage!

The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was enraged, as it pulled its right hand back over its skull and gave another Zhang Yang another

bash!

‘-11,634!’

This time, Zhang Yang could not use his {Block} again right after he had used it once, so all he could do was to endure all the impact of the attack. But his defense, his damage immunity and his damage absorption of his equipment were all activated! The basic attack of the boss was reduced from 19,000 down to 11,000, he had negated almost 40% of its damage!

Everyone was stunned for a second there after seeing it, and then they resumed their assaults on the boss as hard as they could at the moment. Everyone knew that it would be pointless for them to complain even if the boss healed itself, so the best thing for them to do at the moment was to bring down the boss as soon as possible, speed is the key!

Truth be told, although this Lord of the Myriad Ghosts looked imposing and all in it's Completed Form, it's damage output had actually decreased! It could only inflict a total damage of approximately 12,000 in 2 seconds, and the damage value was further reduced down to approximately 4,000 after Zhang Yang's {Block} and the damage reduction passives on his equipment. That was a reduction of 50% on the boss's initial damage output of approximately 6,000 per second!

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were much more relieved on their role in healing the gang, and according to the current situation, Han Ying Xue alone was enough to support the entire party! After reaching Level 80, she had managed to equip a Violet-

Platinum grade staff, turning her into the super saiyan of healers! The only thing that she lacked off now was a long MP bar. As her MP usage on activating healing skills is massive, her current amount of MP she had at the moment is not sufficient for her to heal at will. She would need to coordinate carefully and time correctly to heal effectively.

98%, 96%... the health point of the boss had begun to reduce again.

90%!

"Enough of this nonsense! Stop these futile struggling, you imbeciles!" The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts halted its assaults on the team, and suddenly, white spikes made of bones sprouted out of its body, covering the entire body. And shoof shoof shoof! The white spikes of bone were shot out in all directions from its body!

‘Ding! The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts has unleashed {Reign of Bone Spikes}!’

‘-19,800!’

‘-19,980!’

‘-19,960!’

...



Instantly, everyone was inflicted with damage that almost reached 20,000! Fortunately, they had entire sets of Yellow-Gold equipment, at the very least, and also the {Vitality Aura} from Zhang Yang, so they had about 25,000 HP. If it weren't for all these, they would have been instantly-killed by the 'rain' of attack!

‘-5,312!’

Wei Yan Er did not even give a sh\*t, because she knew that someone was healing her from behind. So, she furiously charged forward and unleashed her worst as she was gaining rage points exponentially! She bawled out and slashed at the boss, however, the boss did not receive any damage and instead, she was inflicted with a value of damage!

"The boss has damage reflect now!" the little girl was shocked and she immediately informed everyone about it. It was really lucky for her to have a very high health points. As she was left with more than 6,000 health points after the boss's assault, she had not killed herself after receiving the reflected damage, leaving her with less than 1,000 health points!

[Reign of Bone Spikes]: Reflects all damage, last for 10 seconds.

Right after it happened, everyone noticed that there was an additional special buff on the boss. However, it was not a buff that would benefit them.

Everyone halted their assaults on the boss. Zhang Yang. Fatty

Han and Hundred Shots had to command their pets to stop their attacks as well. For that period of time, only the boss could unleash its assaults on everyone around without having to worry about being attacked!

10 seconds had passed quickly. Everyone rounded up the boss once again and continued on their attempt to take down the boss.

88, 84%...

Whenever the health points of the boss reduced by 10%, the boss would unleash the {Reign of Bone Spikes} once and gain the damage reflect effect. By doing so, the boss gained an opportunity to inflict great damage to the players around and also restricted the damage output of the players. If players were careless, they might end up killing themselves after taking the reflective damages from their effort to attack the boss, while the buff of reflective damage is still effective!

Luckily, there were no idiots in this party. Even Fatty Han had learned his lesson after being 'taught' for so many times by experiences. He had grown wiser, even though he is still not a professional player, at the least, he won't repeat simple mistakes such as this one!

When the boss was left with 50% of health points, everyone stopped as they did not know if the boss would immediately transform itself into another form like a 'Transformer'!

... No it did not!

There was only a {Reign of Bone Spikes} raining down towards the gang inflicting them with massive damage. It was still manageable for Han Ying Xue, but the MP bar of Fantasy Sweetheart had almost met the bottom!

"Increase your damage output! Everyone!"

Zhang Yang took a glance at the two healer's MP bars and frowned a little bit. Too bad, they just came out from the 'Pandemonium' not long ago, so their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} were all on cool down! Even if they wanted to, they could not increase the speed in killing the boss!

40%, 30%... the health bar of the boss was reducing steadily. Zhang Yang had to make do with it. What he was focusing on was to activate his {Vanguard's Aggression} every time the boss unleashed it's {Reign of Bone Spikes} to reduce the stress on the two healers! Although he was unsure of whether the boss would go into Rage Mode in the later stages of the battle, but if they can't even overcome the situation now, what could they do about Rage Mode then?

20%!

15%!

10%!

"Undeads from the deepest dark abyss, come forth and show your allegiance to the king!" The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts did not go into any sort of Rage Mode when its health points hit 10% low. Instead, the boss activated a powerful skill!

Following the roar of the boss in a low pitched voice, the entire ground shook and cracked right open, a large crack appeared right in the middle of the ground and there were vague signs of burning flames igniting up by the crack!

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The crack was getting bigger by the moment, and in just a brief period of time, the entire ground was torn into pieces, as streams of raging flames sprouting through the cracks all over the ground, just like hot springs of water gushing out from the ground! Zhang Yang went on to touch the flame to test out on the damage those flames would inflict. Instantly, he was inflicted with a ‘-6,226’!

‘You were inflicted 6,226 fire damage by the {Unleash of the Earth Core’s Flame} (2,000 damage immune, 1,774 damage absorbed)!’

Zhang Yang took a look at the battle log record and said, "Don't let the flames touch you! The basic damage of the flame attack is about 10,000 points! And it's a fire attribute attack!"

As the ground was trembling violently, suddenly!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Skeletal hands emerged from beneath the ground one after another through the cracks, and all of the skeletal hands were almost as huge as the boss's hand! What closely followed were large white skeletons emerging from beneath the ground, crawling their way out of the cracks. All of them were holding scythes in their hands that were about 10 meters long. They looked exactly like Grim Reapers!

[Death Collector] (Elite, Undead)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Only monsters that were 20 levels higher than the player would show '???' on their level status, that would only mean that these newly spawned elite monsters were at least Level 100!

Zhang Yang quickly kited the boss around using some tactical movement of his. He tried his best to avoid all of the Death Collectors while he was on it, "These monsters are obviously too strong for us now, everyone, just focus on the boss! Kill the boss, and all these monsters should vanish! If not, it would be illogical

and unwise for a game company to spawn so many super powerful elite grade monsters!"

Everyone understood and agreed as they went around all of the spouting flames of 'spring fountains' from the crack holes on the ground. Then, they began to focus their firepower on the boss!

9%, 8%, 7%... the health points of the boss was reducing while these Death Collectors were pursuing Zhang Yang and the gang tightly from behind! But their movement speeds were extremely slow, allowing the players to avoid them with ducks and rolls!

However, there are still flames spouting all around the area. One small careless mistake would cost 10,000 health points. Therefore, the entire gang was fully focused on getting the job done!

At that moment, the scene was really messy and chaotic!

5%, 4%, 3%!

Everyone gulped down [Power Potions] to power up on their strength to attack, and they activated the best skills that they had! But it was really an unfortunate thing for them as their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} were all still under cool down period at the moment. If not for that, they could have unleashed hell onto the boss when the boss was left with 10% HP and didn't have go the worst and dangerous stage of the battle!

2%!

1%!

0%!

"Argh --- " The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts let out a miserable and raging cry, then it's body smashed into the ground and shattered into pieces. Instantly, the pieces turned into a pile of shattered bones on the ground!

Boom!

That gigantic skull-head of the boss did not shatter into pieces, instead, it fell right down to the ground and smashed heavily among the pile of shattered bones. The impact was thunderously loud!

"You imbeciles of the living, do not take this as your victory over me, I shall return!" The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts spoke out its final words before the flames within the two eye sockets on the skull flickered and vanished. Everything went silent for a moment.

"If you dare to return, we shall return you to dust one more time!" Endless Starlight growled at the pile of bones.

"You mother of something!"

The moment when Lord of the Myriad Ghosts died, the elite

skeletons with no level stated on them went crawling back to where they came from, the cracks one after another. Crack crack crack! The cracks closed together and the ground became one piece once again, and the streams of spouting flames had also stopped. The entire area had finally returned to its peaceful state.

"Finally, we beat it! I'm so tired!"

It was still simple at the beginning of the battle, but the final part of the battle, when the boss was left with only 10% of health points was really hard and tiring. They had to dodge the spouting flames and the elite monsters, and at the same time, they were required to keep their damage output on the boss at a high rate! It was indeed a tiring battle! After slaying the boss, everyone could feel a heavy large boulder lifted from their shoulders, and the harder the battle was, the more excitement and joy could be felt by the players when they finally stand victorious!

Wei Yan Er was the first one who went up to collect the coins among the loot. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang went up to pick up a piece of shiny black stone from among the loot.

[Ancient Magic Stone] (Quest Item)

Description: This is a magic stone that has been passed down from the ancients, it contains powerful magic power!

Zhang Yang was smiling with a satisfied expression on his face as



he placed the item into his backpack.

After Wei Yan Er picked up the coins, she turned her focus on the equipment.

[Kroll, The Axe of Devastation] (Violet-Platinum, Two-Handed)

Attack: 2,356 - 2,956

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 699

Equip: 21% rate to ignore all defense of the target for 10 seconds when hitting on the target.

{Unidentified}

Level required: 80

"Mine! Mine! It's mine!" Wei Yan Er widened her eyes, as it has been at least a month ever since she had longed to get a good quality Violet-Platinum grade two-handed weapon that had an attack interval of 3.8 seconds. Immediately, she hugged the shining piece of weapon piece, with strange bright lines on it, without

fearing that she would be cut by the sharp edge of the weapon.

Among the whole party, only the little girl can wield a two-handed axe. So, the rest of the members had to give up on the fancy piece of weapon to that little girl and selected the ‘cancel’ button on their screen.

Seeing that little girl was still drooling at her ‘new toy’, Zhang Yang took over her ‘job’ in looking through the loot.

[Blood Rage Chest Plate] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Agility: +378

{Unidentified}

Required Profession: Thief

Level Required: 80

Blood Rage Armor Set (1/8): {Blood Rage Mask}, {Blood Rage Necklace}, {Blood Rage Mantle}, {Blood Rage Chest Plate}, {Blood Rage Gaunlets}, {Blood Rage Greaves}, {Blood Rage Boots}, {Blood Rage Ring}

3 Pieces: Increase 500 points on agility.

5 Pieces: When you activate {Vanish}, immediately recover 100 points on MP.

8 Pieces: When attacking a target, there is 1% chance that you will acquire the 'Light of Perception' and summon an ancient thief to fight by your side!

# Chapter 372: Killua Castle

---

After the guardian and the priest, the third Armor Set for a profession has appeared!

But, there was only one Armor Set for DPS Profession, unlike guardians and berserkers, priests and pastors, the differences between these were like two different professions already! And each of them had their own Armor Set!

Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream are both in need of this equipment, so they agreed on to decide by tossing the dices. Sun Xin Yu threw out a 21-point as the first toss, and just when she thought she was not fated to be the owner of the [Blood Rage Chest Plate], who would have thought? Lost Dream threw out a 12-point roll only! Who would have thought Lost Dream was so out of luck on that day!

[Song of Victory] (Violet-Platinum, Accessory)

Equip: Every time a Critical attack triggers, there is a 10% rate to activate a victory cry, boosting one of the attributes of strength, agility, intelligence attributes by 300 points for all party members (Maximum 10 members) (Boosts the attribute of the player that has the highest points), last for 10 seconds.

Level required: 80

The gang were looking at each other discussing about this piece, this little piece of accessory was indeed a little overpowered, somehow! But, it doesn't matter who took it, as it was a fine piece that provides benefits to everyone. So, as long as they are in the same party, everyone could still enjoy the perks of the additional buff this small piece can offer!

And of course, there was no doubt that this accessory should go to a Thief!

Thieves wielded two weapons, and a number of attacks that thief can do within a set period of time, let's say within 10 seconds, was the highest among all of them! Furthermore, thieves had the highest agility attribute value, and their critical rate was also quite high, it would be easier for them to trigger the effect of the accessory!

As Sun Xin Yu had already taken the [Blood Rage Chest Plate]. Of course, it was natural that this piece of fine accessory should go to Lost Dream. It wasn't a bad deal. Although this accessory had a little smell of 'the spirit of serving the people wholeheartedly', but it could still be activated even if the player went solo. It would still be a fine piece!

300 points of attribute boost might not be much for one player, but it would become a boost of 3,000 points if there were 10 players, and the effect would make it worthwhile!

Other than the three pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment, the boss had also left six pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment behind. However, only two pieces of them were taken by the gang, the

remaining four pieces will be sold at the Little Merchandise.

After they were done with the boss, everyone tore their [Teleportation scrolls] and teleported back to the main city. Of course, mainly because they had just gotten some new equipment, so they would want to take them back to identify them.

Zhang Yang was dragged along by Wei Yan Er to help her identify her new weapon. So, after paying 200 gold pieces, this magnificent piece of a Violet-Platinum weapon finally revealed its true form.

[Kroll, The Axe of Devastation] (Violet-Platinum, Two-Handed Axe)

Attack: 3,494 - 4,094

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 998

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Equip: 30% rate to ignore all defense of the target for 10 seconds when hitting the target.

Holy mother of lord, the range of the basic attack of this weapon has already exceeded the attack of Zhang Yang which already accounted his strength value in it!

So when Wei Yan Er switched the weapon on, her melee attack reached into a terrifying range of 8,311 - 8,911! When the special attack of the weapon activates, she can inflict a high damage of approximately 8,600 in a single attack on a high defense boss! That is just wickedly awesome!

Just by comparing the damage in one single attack, it has already gone up to no just two times of Zhang Yang's attack!

Zhang Yang felt a little envious of the little girl after seeing this. Now, he is currently equipped with a Level 70 Yellow-Gold weapon. When it is compared to a Violet-Platinum weapon, of course, the difference between the two weapons would be like miles apart!

However, he believes that this quest 'Mysterious Sword Hilt' would definitely reward him with an impressive one-handed sword. If not, then this quest won't be limited to only warriors, knights and thieves these three professions only --- it doesn't matter which type of thief profession you picked, there is no way a thief profession of any kind can lift up a two-handed sword!

So, next item to be collected would be the [Millennial Heroic

Soul]!

However, Zhang Yang did not travel straight to the Killua Castle in Black Feather Forest immediately to find Honduras. The reason is simple. It would be unwise to begin another main quest right after completing one. Zhang Yang knew that he needed to restock and prepare himself first before setting onto another main important quest, so he did not have any intention of starting any quests with a higher difficulty. Because this [Millennial Heroic Soul] would not be easily earned, he had to prepare for another tough battle!

He then concocted a number of [Potions] until the next morning, before he went offline to go for a morning jog.

After buying breakfast and heading straight back to the house, he saw that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were just placing their feets on the ground from the bed. Then, the three of them went on a 'war' on who was the best eater of the deep-fried dough sticks dipped in soya bean, and they really made a mess with joy! After finishing up with their breakfast, Han Ying Xue sent Wei Yan Er to school, while Zhang Yang went to the company by public cab.

It's really a joke that he would still be taking a cab to his company even after he had become a CEO of a multi-billionaire company, even after he has personal properties that were worth hundreds of millions! If this routine of his was to be spread out to the public, people would laugh at him, hard!

Well, might be time to buy a car, then!



Zhang Yang arrived at the company, and he was greeted by the secretary on duty with a cup of hot coffee, and a deep line of very obvious cleavage, plus the very upturned curve of a round butt! She attempted to seduce Zhang Yang with all she got before she removed her presence from the office, and she threw a wink right before the door closed. This kind of life is quite good. He could enjoy the pretty view of pretty ladies all around him, play online games whenever he wanted to, he can even tackle girls whenever an opportunity presents itself! More importantly, Zhang Yang did not have any big and great dreams ahead of him, so this kind of life suited him very much.

Of course, there was the two poisonous cancer tumor lurking in the dark, making him feel uneasy! There is no sign of that Liu Shu Yan, and Liu Wei had been quiet for too long already, god knows what he is planning in the dark! It was just too disturbing to just even think about!

Putting on the game helmet, Zhang Yang logged into the game.

The [Dimensional Key Fragment 6] can be located within the Black Feather Forest, while the [Millennial Heroic Soul] was somewhere deep in the forest as well. However, these two quests have nothing to do with each other. The sixth descendant of The Seven Generals is called Culonca. He was currently living uphill somewhere by the Snow Peach Mountain, a totally different region from the Killua Castle, located tens of thousands of kilometers away from the castle itself!

After giving some thoughts on it, Zhang Yang decided to leave for

the Killua Castle as a start.

Even if he managed to get the [Dimensional Key Fragment 6] now, it would mean nothing, without all of the fragments collected together in one place to form the complete piece of the [Dimensional Key]. But, it will be a totally different story if he can get the [Millennial Heroic Soul]. After getting it, he can just travel back to meet Margery, and hand over the ‘Mysterious Sword Hilt’ and unseal the first seal!

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey and began his journey to the Black Feather Forest.

Now that he had his hands on a [Party Summon Order], whenever he encounters a boss that he cannot handle, he can just summon his party members to aid him. This piece of [Party Summon Order] is definitely a god-like piece in saving lives!

After a long seven to eight hours of journey, Zhang Yang finally entered the last map on the Level 80 Black Feather Forest region.

How Black Feather Forest got its name, was because of the countless dried trees seen in the middle of the map. All these dried trees were thousands of meters tall, and the treetops covered over tens of thousands of area in kilometers. Because of the dark-inked green of the leaves, looking from afar, it's like seeing a land of black feathers covering the forest.

Therefore, the name Black Feather Forest.

Zhang Yang was riding Whitey, while traveling on a familiar road, and they traveled all the way up to the west side of the Black Feather Forest. They could already see a large castle from afar. By sight alone, they started heading for it!

A flag with a golden griffin symbol painted on, stood high up on top of the castle, fluttering in the wind, giving out some flapping sounds. The castle had a deep moat surrounding it, serving as a protection facility for the castle. The moat was approximately 50 meters wide, and there was a hanging bridge connecting the two sides of the land that allowed people to enter the castle. The door of the castle was wide open, and there were four fully-armored soldiers, standing guard, by the entrance. There was also a general sitting high on a battle horse, in metallic armor.

[Brunoss The Ranger] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Defense: 1,500

On the other hand, the four guards were all Level 82 elite-grade NPCs, with 82,000 HP. They were similar to any other elites in the game.

These NPCs were all labeled as green-name monsters which mean that attacking them would only bring disaster to oneself, it would definitely be a stupid decision to pick a fight with them. Zhang Yang tapped on Whitey and went up to them.

"Hold it right there, outsider!" Brunoss raised up his long sword in his hand and stopped Zhang Yang from going into the castle.

"Why would you stop a fellow adventurer from entering the castle, honorable General Ranger!" Zhang Yang halted Whitey from making another step.

"Bring your name and your intention to my ear, outsider," after being buttered by Zhang Yang, Brunoss became so much more friendly than before, his face showed it all!

"Zhan Yu, an adventurer from the White Jade Castle. I have business to attend to with a person named Honduras!"

"Honduras? The trader that turned into a traitor that sold his soul to the devils?" Brunoss suddenly trembled in anger, as both of his eyes were burning with murderous aura looking straight at Zhang Yang, "Guards, bring this outsider into custody! It's hard to say, this outsider might also be a devil's man sent here to spy on us!"

"Yes, Sir Brunoss!" the four guards rounded up on Zhang Yang and pointed their weapons at Zhang Yang from four directions. If Zhang Yang showed any sign of resistance, they would undoubtedly launch their attacks on him!

If the labeled names of these NPCs suddenly changed from green to red, then Zhang Yang would definitely have launched his assaults on them without having second thoughts! However, the five NPCs, including Brunoss himself still had green names! They were still friendlies!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought, and he did not resist in the end. Instead, he flipped down from his [Battle Mount] and unsummoned Whitey.

After taking Zhang Yang into custody and putting him in a jail within the castle, the four guards left him after locking up the door to his cell. Well, there were basically only five jail cells in the entire jail. Other than Zhang Yang's cell, there was only one more cell that held someone in it, the other jail cells are empty at the moment. Even before looking at the name labeled on top of the head, Zhang Yang knew for sure, that it must be Honduras sitting in the next jail cell!

[Honduras The Great Trader] (Normal, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500

Defense: 80

This NPC seemed like a 40 years old middle age man. Although the NPC appears as a prisoner at the moment, the clothes that he wore were still fancy and grand. He had a big belly that pushed the clothes out tightly, and he had that look of a rich, crooked, trader! He looked at Zhang Yang and turned his face over, sighed like he was having a real bad luck, frowning very hard.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Honduras, what devilish deed have you ever done to deserve such treatment? I only mentioned about looking for you at the front of the castle and I have been put here without any chance to plead for myself!"

Honduras turned over to Zhang Yang, looked at Zhang Yang more closely and said, "You were looking for me? Do I know you?"

"I heard that you have made a purchase of a [Millennial Heroic Soul], and I would like to make a purchase of that item from you. That's the main reason for me to travel all the way from White Jade Castle to look for you." Zhang Yang expressed his real intentions to Honduras, "Allow me to introduce myself, I'm Zhan Yu, an adventurer from the White Jade Castle!"

"An adventurer?" Honduras looked at Zhang Yang for awhile in silence, and suddenly, his eyes were widened and he was pleading for help like a person that was about to drown pulling on a grass, "Zhan Yu! Please help me! If you can get me out of here, I will give the [Millennial Heroic Soul] to you for free! Real, for free!"

After waiting for awhile, there was no sign of any notification

from the system. Zhang Yang felt weird about not receiving any notifications!

He could only follow the script to uncover the truth behind all these. So, he took out his [Goblin's Head Lobber] that he had kept in his backpack for awhile, ready to throw a powerful swing at the door to the jail cell.

"Stop ---" Honduras quickly stopped him, "Adventurer, let's not be hasty! If it's that simple to leave this place, I could have left anytime I want!" As he was speaking, a bunch of shiny keys appeared right on his hand as he took them up and shook them in front of Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 373: Rescuing Winchester

---

Zhang Yang was shocked to see the keys, "How did you manage to get the keys to the jail cell?"

"Haha, my friend! You have underestimated the power of gold and coins!" Honduras laughed hard, but he quickly frowned again and said, "I can escape, but my daughter, Adele will suffer a worse fate. And I have only one daughter, nothing must happen to her!"

It was actually unbelievable to see this crooked trader turning out to be a good loving father.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Then, how can I help in such regard?"

Honduras sat down and began to explain, "Let me tell you the entire story from the beginning till the end!" He paused for awhile, trying to find the best way to tell the story, and finally began. "I, Honduras, am the best trader there is in Kullia Castle, and also the richest man! 20 years ago, I married the prettiest girl in Kullia's Castle, haha! Every man in the city envied me! No exception!"

Zhang Yang laughed and reminded Honduras to get back to the topic, "Honduras, just before you get way over your head, kindly consider the current situation that you're in right now!"

Honduras was shocked and he went into silence for a moment, and then he lowered his head down with his hands on his ears and said, "Although I am all wealthy, all that wealth could not save my



wife from disease! 3 years ago, my wife had left me and my precious Adele and went on to meet the gods in the heaven, all on her own. And now, Adele is the only family I have left, she is all that I have left of my life! A few months ago, the younger brother of the baron of Killia Castle proposed, saying that he wanted to marry my Adele and take her away! This Winchester is already same age as me, and he still dares to marry my daughter!"

He punched the ground revealing his raging face, "3 days ago, Winchester went out on an expedition and was ambushed by demons. Ever since then, there was no news about his whereabouts, at all! Back here, Leonardo accused me of making a deal with the demons and betraying Winchester! That's his intention, his scheme all along! He wants to take my Adele, and my property from me, so he framed me on purpose!"

Is this the game-version of the governor versus the rich?

Zhang Yang then reacted, "Honduras, so you need my help to prove your innocence, right?"

"That's right!" Honduras nodded and said, "If I'm all on my own, I can just leave everything behind and get a new fresh start in other places! But my Adele is still here! And she visited, and told me that the prick Leonardo threatened her with my life, and wanted her to marry him! Pui! Luckily my daughter is bright and rejected him. If not, I would have died of a heart attack! If I am to die and he manages to marry my daughter, then all my wealth would go to him! Every single dime!"

Honduras paused for a moment again to reorganize his words,

"Leonardo has placed people to monitor Adele, and she has no chance at all of leaving this city! So there it is, my warrior, this is why I must prove myself innocent and walk out of here, upright! I will not pull my daughter down to mud! My precious daughter!"

Then he looked at Zhang Yang and said, "And, I don't believe that this Winchester would die so easily! He's a great warrior, a strong one! Demons will not stand a chance against him! Warrior, I require you to look up for Winchester and bring him back! If Winchester lives to come back and tell the truth, that will definitely prove my innocence! Also, I suspect that this prick Leonardo is the traitor who betrayed Winchester because it's been so long since he wanted to become the baron to this castle!"

'Ding! Honduras has given you a quest: Rescuing Winchester, accept or decline?"

Obviously, to get the [Millennial Heroic Soul], Zhang Yang had to get Honduras out of the jail. So to get him out of the jail, he must first find Winchester. And he knew, he cannot skip or take shortcuts on this, he must do the quest step by step.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and accepted the quest. Nothing comes by easy, no shortcuts!

[Rescuing Winchester] (Quest Difficulty: A)

Description: Winchester has been ambushed by the demons and his whereabouts remains unknown. You must quickly find him and bring him back to Killua Castle to prove Honduras's

innocence!

Hint: Winchester was ambushed by the Malin Bridge, there might be some clues left there. Malin Bridge is located on the east side of the Killua Castle.

Completion: Rescue Winchester 0/1

Honduras passed the bunch of keys over to Zhang Yang, "Adventurer, I'm counting on you!"

Zhang Yang took the keys over, opened up the door to the jail cell and passed the keys back to Honduras, "Just sit tight and wait for the good news!"

He walked out of the jail like a boss, and it was obvious that the game system did not plan for players to engage in battle in the city area, so there were no guards at all at the entrance of the prison. Zhang Yang summoned out his Whitey and left the premises in pride.

The guards by the entrance of the Kullia Castle had already changed their shifts, so the new guards did not recognize Zhang Yang. So, they did not stop or interrogate Zhang Yang as he was passed through the main gates of the castle.

After leaving the castle, Zhang Yang headed east for about half an hour, and then he saw a stream of rapid rivers. The water current was rapid and strong, and the sound of the water flowing, was loud

and clear as a waterfall. He searched by the two sides of the river and discovered that there was a visible bridge not far from where he stood. He patted Whitey's head and headed over to the bridge.

No long after, he arrived at the bridge, and all he could find were the dead bodies of some humans and some demons where limbs had been torn apart, the scene was just bloody disgusting! The red blood belonged to the dead humans while the black blood belonged to the dead demons.

From the abandoned, dead, torn up bodies and weapons in the surrounding, the battle between Winchester and the demons had begun right on top of the bridge, and the battle went on to the small forest by the east side. As Zhang Yang followed the trail, the amount of blood splashes on the ground was getting lesser and lesser. That could only mean that the battle was about to end at that location.

After just a brief moment of walking, there was no longer any sign of blood on the ground, but there were signs of footprints walking straight into the thick forest, right before Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang went straight into the forest, following the trails and signs there were left behind, hoping that he was getting closer to Winchester.

About half an hour later, Zhang Yang arrived at a small mountain ridge, and following the mountain ridge forward, he could see dozens of demons wandering at the entrance of a cave, as they were growling and giving out who-knows-what sounds.

Was Winchester in that cave, waiting for someone to rescue him?

Zhang Yang asked himself that as he approached the bunch of demons.

[Raging Void Dweller] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 83

HP: 83,000

Defense: 450

Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the Raging Void Dweller at the upper-most side among the horde. But as soon as the attack landed on the monster with a '-2,914' damage, the rest of horde suddenly charged over at Zhang Yang, obviously, the aggro of the monsters were linked!

He quickly moved in strategical movements, while kiting the monsters around. With his skills {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Striker}, {Heroic Leap} in restricting the movement of the monsters, he took his own sweet time to slowly torture them to death.

In less than 5 minutes, the horde of Raging Void Dwellers had

fallen under the axe of Zhang Yang.

After picking up all the loot on the ground, he went up to the entrance to see if Winchester was in the cave.

There was a middle-aged man with a deep wound in his abdomen, standing with his sword. The man was sturdy and tall, with a stern and frosty face of a superior that looked regal! Even after he witnessed Zhang Yang slaying all the monsters one after another, he did not lower his guard down against Zhang Yang. He was still gazing at Zhang Yang vigilantly, like he was afraid that Zhang Yang was trying to trick him by slaying his own fellow monsters before giving him a final, fatal blow!

[Winchester] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 86

HP: 10,233/ 1,720,000

Defense: 1,500

"You're Winchester, right?" Zhang Yang began to talk to the man, "I received news from Honduras that you were ambushed not long ago, so I have been sent here to aid you!"

Winchester looked at Zhang Yang with doubt and asked,

"Honduras? Why would he send you here to help me? He and I are not really friends to each other, we hardly know each other!"

Zhang Yang said, "Ever since you were ambushed by the demons, a man named Leonardo had accused Honduras of making a deal with the demons to betray you. So now he's being imprisoned! To prove his own innocence, he would like me to escort you back safely, alive to clear his name!"

"That little piece of prick Leonardo! Curse that son of the beach!" Winchester suddenly let out an outburst of anger, his eyes were ignited with murderous aura, "That bastard, he could actually make a deal with the demons to betray his own brother, his own blood brother!"

He looked at Zhang Yang once again with much lesser vigilance, "Warrior, I'm badly wounded, and I am even struggling just to stay awake, barely... I cannot engage in any battle at the moment, at all! If we are to return back to Kullia Castle now, Leonardo will definitely take the advantage of this and attempt to murder me, then he will just find another man to carry the crime --- such as yourself!"

Zhang Yang followed the script and asked, "Then, what do we do?"

"So now we must heal me from my wounds before we can take on that bastard Leonardo!" Winchester said, "I have been inflicted with the demon's venom, only the purest blood, the unicorn's [Blood of Purity] can cure the demon's venom! Warrior, please help me, bring me a bottle of the unicorn's fresh blood."

‘Ding! Winchester has given you a quest: Blood of Purity, accept or decline?’

Accept.

"Warrior, you must hurry, the demon's venom is spreading, eating through my flesh as we speak. I can't hold on much longer!" Winchester was struggling to finish his words.

"Rest assure, I will bring you the fresh blood of the unicorn in time!"

"I shall leave everything to you."

After leaving the cave, Zhang Yang mounted onto Whitey and he brought up the quest list to check on the new quest given to him. He checked to see if there were any hints on the location of Unicorns.

[Blood of Purity] (Difficulty: A)

Description: Winchester requires you to bring him a bottle of [Blood of Purity] from a unicorn to purify him of the demon's venom! You can find Ai Carlo The Unicorn in The Valley of the Wind by the south side of the forest.

Completion: Acquire the unicorn's [Blood of Purity] 0/1



With a specific direction to go to, things became simple and easy!

Zhang Yang went towards the south direction on Whitey for two long hours before he arrived at a large valley. There were huge trees that were outstretched to the heavens, all around the valley, and there was a lake right in the middle of the area. The lake wasn't big, and the surface of the lake rippled constantly, making the scene beautiful to look at.

However, searching for a unicorn in this valley would still be like searching a needle in a haystack, even after he reaches the location stated in the quest description! It's just extremely annoying and hard!

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and decided to stay in one spot, to wait for the unicorn to come to him naturally!

It would obviously be unrealistic and stupid for him to search the entire valley for the unicorn. And it would make sense that an animal, beast or no beast, would need to drink, because water is essential to every living being! So, all he needed to do is to just sit nearby the lake and wait for the unicorn to come forth for the water! So it's just a matter of time before that happens!

After making that decision to stay put, Zhang Yang is in no rush. So he rode on Whitey and began to wander around the lake to see if he could discover anything interesting while he was waiting.

As he was currently free and doing nothing, and there were many

herbs around available for picking, he decided to do something useful with his free time. Since he is in a 'treasure trove', why not make the best out of it and gather some herbs?

# Chapter 374: Unicorn

---

After wandering across half the lake, Zhang Yang spotted a white shadow flashing by his eyes. It was a extremely handsome white horse, as pale as lightning, arriving at the side of the lake. The horse lowered it's head down to the surface of the lake and began to drink the water. The hair all around the body of the horse was so white and glossy that it glimmered in the light, enunciating every muscle, every defined curved of its body, it was an enchanting sight!

Most importantly of all, there was a single horn that was about half a foot long on top of its forehead. The horn was sharp as a spear, giving off gleams of cold light!

[Ai Carlo The Unicorn] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

Finally, found it!

Zhang Yang was so delighted after he spotted the unicorn, because other than this quest which required him to search for

[Blood of Purity], he still had a quest - 'Materials for the Instrument', a Main Story Quest which he accepted when he was Level 10. The quest required him to get a [Horn of the Mythical Unicorn], [Heart of the Black Dragon], and the [Book of the Damned] of the undead!

For the [Book of the Damned], he could only get it when he can enter the Chaos Realm, where he can equip the [Friendship Jade] and wade over through the homeland of the undead and summon his fellow party members over to walk in and 'steal' it! If he can get his hands on one [Horn of the Mythical Unicorn], then he would only need to worry about finding the final item, the [Heart of the Black Dragon]!

In just an instant, a quest that seemed impossible to complete was just one step from being completed now!

But, Zhang Yang could not understand some part of it. A Mythical Unicorn should be at least a Level 150 super boss! That would mean that this kind of boss would be, at least, an Ethereal grade, how can it just be a Level 85 elite beast! It's just not right at all!

Well, with that in mind, Zhang Yang still rode on Whitey and charged towards the unicorn.

It only takes around ten to twenty seconds to charge through a distance of a hundred meters atop Whitey. In just a brief moment, Zhang Yang has already arrived the side of the unicorn. Shoof! Whitey began to use {Wild Charge} and slammed solidly onto the body of Ai Carlo!

One second later, Ai Carlo recovered from the stun effect and turned its sharp and pointy horn towards Zhang Yang. It began to defend itself and swung its horn at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

It was just a Level 85 Elite anyway, Zhang Yang can subdue this beast with ease!

"Human, why are you attacking me!" Ai Carlo suddenly opened its mouth and began to speak like a human, in human language.

Zhang Yang was shocked, so that's why they are called Mythical Creatures because they can speak human language! That's why they were graded higher than Elite! He spun his sharp axe around and said, "I need a drop of your blood to save a man, if you can just stand still and let me get just one drop of your blood, I will spare you!"

Ai Carlo let out a roar of rage as if it was heavenly insulted! The horn right on its forehead began to glow vaguely as Ai Carlo launched its assaults at Zhang Yang.

The battle grew fierce for a moment as they continued to attack each other in a blaze!

80%, 50%, 20%... the health bar of Ai Carlo was reduced steeply under the oppressive assaults from Zhang Yang.

"Human, stop!"

A stream of white light suddenly shot from the forest nearby the lake. As swift as a sudden clap of thunder which leaves no time for covering ears, it landed on Zhang Yang and formed into a large ball of shield that trapped him within! This ball of shield is very strong and infinitely tough! No matter how Zhang Yang tried to break it with his powerful strikes, the shield could not be even scratched!

Well, you can't expect such a quest to be completed so easily after all! God damn it!

Zhang Yang gave up on struggling and turned his sight towards the direction where the light came from.

Dozens of elven beauties walked right out from the forest. One of them held a staff in her hand, wearing a snowy-white long dress of a priest. The rest of the elves were holding swords in their hands, and they had bows and arrows hanging by their backs. All of them had really short leather skirts around their waists, revealing much of their fair limbs, looking very sexy.

Zhang Yang only focused his eyes upon the spellcaster type NPC that was walking in front of them all, "Priestess Thea - Moon Glory?"

This was the NPC that Zhang Yang met earlier on when he had rescued 'Merlinda - Song of the Forest'. During that quest, she had become the ancient priest of the elves! So, according to the story of

the game after that quest, she should have brought Merlinda and traveled back to the Chaos Realm to let Merlinda to carry on as the new Moon Priestess. So the question is, why is she here?

Could it be that... that the princess had been held captive by someone or some monsters again?

Thea pointed her staff and touched Zhang Yang gently, and the spherical shield disappeared almost in an instant and Zhang Yang regained his freedom. She began to talk, "Warrior, please don't hurt Ai Carlo!" She waved her staff again and touched Ai Carlo very gently. A stream of white light surged through the unicorn and Ai Carlo's health points recovered swiftly.

Meanwhile, that unicorn was staring at Zhang Yang with unease, and it pawed its hooves against the ground for awhile, while puffing out streams of air from its nose. It was obvious that it was still angry at Zhang Yang! Well, it's understandable. If someone takes a knife and poke your ass while you're drinking water by the lake, wouldn't you feel mad about it? At least, that's what Zhang Yang thought to himself.

So Zhang Yang ignored that unicorn and turned his attention towards Thea, "Priestess Thea, haven't you all returned to the Chaos Realm already? Why are you still here?"

Thea let out a soft sigh, "As we were passing by this valley, it was not our intention of stopping by, but as Merlinda noticed that Ai Carlo's mother was being rounded up and attacked by a horde of demons, she put herself into battle. Although we managed to fend off the demons, she was badly wounded and she's on the verge of

loosing her life!"

Ai Carlo revealed a sense of guilt on its face just like any human can, "If Merlinda did not shield me from a powerful blow, then she would still be alright now. Now, she's dying because of me! If only I was full-grown, then mother would not have to stay to protect me, and Merlinda would not have been wounded so badly because of me!"

As expected! That woman is nothing but trouble, no matter where she goes! Although she is not being held captive by anyone this time, she is suffering a worse fate than that, she's about to lose her own pitiful life! However, the doubt that Zhang Yang had in him had been cleared out. No wonder Ai Carlo is just a Level 85 elite beast, because it has still not yet grown to adulthood!

So, that's why it's named 'Ai Carlo The Unicorn' but not, 'Ai Carlo The Mythical Unicorn'.

Zhang Yang quickly said, "Priestess Thea, can't you save Merlinda with your heavenly skills?"

"She's wounded too badly!" Thea shook her head and revealed a helpless expression on her face, "I have already sent men to search for the [Fountain of Life]. Only a relic item such as that can really heal Merlinda! Zhan Yu, it's not a coincidence that you appear here today! You're a great and powerful warrior, a mysterious adventurer! Please aid us in search of the [Fountain of Life]!"

'Ding! Priestess Thea - Moon Glory has given you a quest: The



Search for Fountain of Life, accept or decline?’

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to pause for a moment, this so-called [Fountain of Life], is it the same thing as the hundred over bottles that are now laying quietly in his backpack? Is it the same thing as the thousands of bottles that are stored in his guild warehouse?

So he accepted the quest to check on it, "Priestess Thea, I'm a friend of Merlinda, I will not sit by and do nothing!"

[The Search for Fountain of Life] (Difficulty: A)

Description: The new Moon Priestess, Moon Priestess, Merlinda - Song of the Forest has been badly wounded and in desperate need of [Fountain of Life] to heal her. Brave Warrior, please depart immediately! You can find the [Fountain of Life] by The Valley of the Miracle within the south site of the forest. Please be cautious, powerful creatures are probably guarding this kind of miraculous fountain. It would be wise to bring along some friends. Of course, bring along some empty bottles as containers, or else you will not be able to bring it back, even after you defeated the powerful creatures around! You can acquire the empty bottles from the Alchemy Shop.

Completion: Acquire a bottle of [Fountain of Life] 1/1

Huh? It actually works!

"Warrior, thank you!" Thea thanked Zhang Yang with all her heart.

Zhang Yang took out a bottle of the [Fountain of Life] and passed it over, "Priestess Thea, I have acquired some mysterious items thorough my adventure! Rumor says, that this bottle of [Fountain of Life] has unbelievable ability to heal life. You can try to use it on Merlinda's wound and see if this works for her!"

Thea revealed a sense of disbelief on her face and took the bottles into her hands, as she popped the cap opened and took a sniff, she was so delighted with shock and joy at the same time, "Warrior, you are really an amazing person! This is the [Fountain of Life]! This is indeed the [Fountain of Life]!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The Search for Fountain of Life, acquired 3,000,000 experience points!’

... this is the easiest quest that Zhang Yang had come across in his entire time in the game, and the fastest one to complete as well!

"Come, let us go to Merlinda at once! I wonder if one bottle is enough to cure her!" Thea quickly rushed into the forest. Wait a minute, her words shook Zhang Yang for awhile. If he was to go through all the trouble, come back and had to go back to the fountain to get more, that would just be annoying! But now that he still had hundreds of bottles in his backpack, there was no need to worry at all!

Ai Carlo stared at Zhang Yang without even blinking, "Human,

although you hurt me before, but you have cured Merlinda, and you're a friend of hers, I will not hate you any longer. Besides, if that bottle of [Fountain of Life] can really cure her, I will give a bottle of my blood to you as a token of gratitude!"

After finished talking, it turned around and followed Thea and the others and went into the forest as well.

Zhang Yang began to have thoughts, should he torture and slay this tiny young beast before it hits adulthood? If he waits for this little beast to grow into an Ethereal-grade boss, then he shall have lots of trouble fighting it in the future if their paths cross!

Zhang Yang was conflicted with his own good and evil thoughts in his mind, while riding on Whitey, following those NPCs from behind. After passing through a few layers of trees and bushes, they arrived at the temporary camp site. There were hundreds of tents set up within the premises.

Thea went into one of the tents with the [Fountain of Life], but the tent she went into was a little smaller than the others. The tent could only fit a few people inside, plus there were a bunch of guards staring at Zhang Yang with those vigilant eyes of theirs. So he knew it would be impossible for him to enter the tent.

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

After awhile, white lights were flashing out from the tent and in another brief moment, Thea walked out from the tent, followed by a female elf with pointy ears, with round and a prominent pair of

boobs, a curvy waist wrapped in tight clothes. That's Merlinda!

"Merlinda, you're well again!" Ai Carlo cheered in joy and went up to the side of Merlinda. And what happened next was Ai Carlo burying its head in between Melinda's two round and prideful pair of boobs!

Legends say, unicorns are the symbol of purity, and they will only get near to kind souls of virgins! But what Zhang Yang just witnessed was that this unicorn with that horn on the fore head, was definitely a horny creature! And just by looking at where the head was shoved into, it's indeed the symbol of the 'purest' that picks only virgins, as virgins are clean and untouched!

Merlinda filled her face with a smile and hugged the neck of Ai Carlo gently, "Thank goodness you're safe, Ai Carlo!"

After the girl and the unicorn had a warm reunion, Merlinda turned her attention towards Zhang Yang with her pair of shy eyes, "Zhan Yu, you have once again saved me!"

'Ding! Your relationship with Merlinda has increased!'

Increased further? Is the system going to put him into an actual relationship with an NPC?

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed, it's just a coincidence! For so many times when Merlinda's in trouble, he was the one who helped her. The number of times of him helping her has qualified

him to be her personal knight!

He simply said, "It's my greatest honor to be able to serve the great Moon Priest!"

Just by Merlinda's side, there are Thea and the Elvish warriors lining up to become her personal knight! Zhang Yang would not want to get ganged up and beaten up by them for trying to take up that place! However, does this mission only increase the relationship with Merlinda? Although Zhang Yang did not have to put much effort into it, but this is an A-rank quest after all, so there must be some reward that would make things worthwhile, right?

Merlinda gave Zhang Yang a pleasant smile and said, "I have never imagined that I would see you here! Zhan Yu, you improve in god speed, I believe I will see you play an outstanding role in the literary world of Chaos Realm and become a legend. Everyone will sing your names in songs and poems!"

Ai Carlo then took a few steps forward to Zhang Yang and said, "Human, I promised that I would give you a bottle of my blood if you can save Merlinda's life."

Merlinda heard about what had happened previously and she was shocked, "Zhan Yu, why did you hurt poor Ai Carlo?"

Zhang Yang explained himself, "I have a friend who is inflicted with the demon's poison, and only the purest blood of a unicorn can cure him of it. So, I can only apologize to Air Carlo for what I

did earlier on."

"Come on!" Ai Carlo closed its eyes and raised its rump at Zhang Yang, ready to be poked! For the blood of course.

What the hell! Of all parts, why must it be the butt? It did not matter much, as long as Zhang Yang could get the bottle of [Blood of Purity] back to cure Winchester.

Zhang Yang took out his [Dark Enigma Sword], because it will be more convenient to use a sword when it comes to pricking for blood. He emptied out a bottle of potion and served the bottle as the container for the unicorn blood. After getting enough fresh blood of the unicorn, Zhang Yang looked at Ai Carlo for a moment and saw the unicorn's miserable face as if it was suffering excruciating pain. He thought to himself, that he was really lucky that the unicorn did not kick him with its back legs!

Suddenly, a thought passed by Zhang Yang's mind. As Ai Carlo is still a youngling of a unicorn, so it is basically still not yet 'Mythical'. Even if he kills it and cuts the horn off, it would not mean a thing! But the mother of this beast was a real Mythical Unicorn, and since she is dead, the horn would serve no purpose by just being left there. It would only be a god damn waste!

Zhang Yang walked up to Merlinda and asked, "Do you know where did they bury Ai Carlo's mother?"

Merlinda was shocked, "Zhan Yu, you are not trying to take advantage of the body of Ai Carlo's mother, are you?"

Bingo! Clever! But, if she's really so clever in guessing things, why is she still getting caught by bad people for so many times?

Zhang Yang told her with just, "How could that be possible, I just want to pay my respects to the mother!"

Merlinda bought his words and told him where the body was buried.

Ai Carlo's mother was buried within a forest in the valley, not far from the forest. After everyone had paid their respects, Thea gave the order to depart from the valley. Most probably, she could smell the electrical current between Zhang Yang and Merlinda. On the other hand, Ai Carlo hated Zhang Yang very much and couldn't wait to leave that man behind so that Merlinda would only focus her love on itself. Pretty obvious, by just looking at how the young unicorn stared at Zhang Yang every single time.

After bidding farewell to the elves and waiting for them to remove themselves from his view, Zhang Yang quickly took out his [Goblin's Head Lobber] and used it as a tool to dig, then he began to dig the ground.

In just awhile, he finally dug out the deadly wounded body of the Mythical unicorn. The body was pure white even though it's already dead, and the horn on its forehead reaches up to 2 feet long. There was some blood stain on it, black blood, should those be from the demons themselves!

"I'm really sorry, please rest in peace. Please forgive me, please forgive me..." He repeatedly apologized for what he was doing to a dead body.

Zhang Yang then cut off the horn of the Mythical Unicorn and shoved it into his backpack. As he did that, the quest assistance taskbar showed that under the 'Materials for Making the Instrument', the [Horn of the Mythical Unicorn] has been obtained, leaving the mission to be completed by 1/3!

He then quickly buried back the body of the dead mythical unicorn and destroyed any evidence of him digging up the grave. Or else, it would certainly be a 'great' news that will definitely reduce the relationship between him and Merlinda, if she ever finds out about this! Ai Carlo will definitely challenge him to a death battle! That's its mother, no matter what!

Riding on Whitey, Zhang Yang left the 'crime' scene and went back straight to Winchester. After curing Winchester, he should be able to bring the NPC back to Killua Castle and rescue Honduras, to get the [Millennial Heroic Soul]. By then, he should be able to unseal the first magic circle seal of the sword hilt!

So, after having him go around in a big circle, this mysterious sword hilt better be some kind of a heavenly weapon or equipment, if not, it would have made Zhang Yang look like a fool, going through all sorts of annoying troubles!



# Chapter 375: Returning To Kullia Castle

---

Charging all the way back like a thunderbolt, Zhang Yang arrived back at the cave where Winchester was resting by.

Fortunately, the NPC was still there. Zhang Yang was very worried that the demons would have launched their assaults on poor Winchester after he left, and they might kill him just like that, and Zhang Yang would have failed the quest!

"Warrior, you return so soon! Good news or bad news?" Winchester looked at Zhang Yang suspiciously. Following the normal quest flow, players should have located the unicorn first, activated the side quest where players need to go on searching for the [Fountain of Life], before finally returning here. So, it should be impossible for players to return in such short period of time.

Zhang Yang took out the [Blood of Purity] and passed it to Winchester, "Let's cure the demon's venom coursing through your veins first!"

Winchester took the bottle and popped the cap open to have a smell of it, and then only he was relieved, like he just put down a very heavy burden off his shoulder, "Looks like I made the right choice to trust you, you are indeed a capable man, with a good soul!"

He took off the clothes on his abdomen, which revealed a very deep and obvious wound. The wound was extremely deep, as anyone could vaguely see that his intestines were about to pop

right out from the wound! What was even scarier was that, there were dark colored tissue and skin all over the wound, obviously, they were signs of the demon's venom spreading into his body!

Fortunately, Winchester was a major character in the game, or else, anyone inflicted with this kind of venom would have been dead long ago!

Winchester poured the [Blood of Purity] onto his wound and in an instant, a stream of pure holy light channeled through the wound, followed by an unholy stench in the cave. Drops of dark liquid were dripping rapidly out from the wound, as they were purified by the [Blood of Purity], and turned into ashes when they touched the ground.

The process took exactly 3 minutes before the wound of Winchester was completely healed. He was finally cured of the demon's venom and ready to go back with Zhang Yang!

Winchester laughed and turned to Zhang Yang, "Warrior, do you have something to eat? I'm hungry!"

If he could ask for food, that should mean he is all cured from the venom, already!

Zhang Yang took out some snacks from his backpack and passed them over to Winchester.

After Winchester took the snacks, he chewed everything and

swallowed them down like a hungry wolf. His health points were recovering back as Zhang Yang stared at it with his own eyes!

So basically, the [Snacks] that Zhang Yang gave the NPC would not heal the health points immediately, it should work by healing 50,000 health points within 20 seconds. So if this NPC needed to heal himself back to full health state, that would require him to take about 30 to 40 [Snacks]! But such characters in the game could not be measured based on the basic rules of the game. Winchester only took 3 [Snacks,] and his health was already back to full.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Blood of the Purity. Obtained 3,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a reward: Ring of Hope!’

[Ring of Hope] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +67

Strength: +61

Equip: 1% rate to recover 1,000 health points when hitting your target.

{Unidentified}

It was not too bad at the least, this quest has given Zhang Yang a reward, although it was just a Yellow-Gold grade equipment. But it has always been harder to acquire rings, necklaces, and accessories in this game. So, this [Ring of Hope] should cost a substantial amount. If he meets some rich buyers, he can definitely sell it out at a price that is higher than any of the regular Violet-Platinum equipment pieces!

Winchester walked out of the cave and looked in the general direction of the Killua Castle, "Warrior, let us travel back to Killua Castle together, and give a big 'surprise' to Leonardo!"

'Ding! Winchester has given you a quest: Return to Kullia Castle, accept or decline?'

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I believe Leonardo will definitely have to pick his eyes and jaw off the ground when he sees you!"

"Hahaha!" Winchester laughed together with Zhang Yang.

[Return to Kullia Castle] (Difficulty: A)

Description: Winchester wants you to travel with him back to Kullia Castle. Caution, Leonardo will definitely not admit defeat so easily. He will be doing everything in his power to kill Winchester. Warrior, you must protect Winchester and make sure that he

returns to Kullia Castle in one piece!

Completion: Escort Winchester back to Kullia Castle 0/1

Winchester is a Yellow-Gold boss, so it was actually very hard to tell, who is escorting who now!

After coming out from the cave, Winchester summoned a handsome horse that neighed loudly in pride. This magnificent black [Battle Horse] let out a powerful puff, and took off towards the direction of Kullia Castle like a black thunderbolt.

Zhang Yang did not dare to be left behind as he must make sure that Winchester reaches the castle in one piece. So, he also summoned his Whitey and pursued Winchester from behind.

A horse and a bear charged forward at lightning speed, everything else around seemed to be flowing backward and the wind from the front was really strong, blowing their faces to the point that Zhang Yang could feel his tongue coming right out from his mouth and his saliva dripping! After just awhile, they already had the sight of Kullia Castle in their view! They were already not far from there!

Shoof!

Suddenly, tens of arrows were shot out right from rocks from both sides, left and right. The arrows pierced through the air sharply as they flew towards Zhang Yang and Winchester!

‘-434!’

‘-3,512!’

Zhang Yang and Winchester were hit by the arrows, and they were both inflicted with damage. However, the defense and the damage immunity of Zhang Yang has far exceeded the Level 80 Yellow-Gold boss! Winchester was inflicted with a damage of approximately 3,500, while Zhang Yang was only inflicted a damage of not more than 500 points!

"Hahaha! Winchester! I predicted that you wouldn't die so easily! Sir Leonardo sent me over to stand guard at this location until you show yourself here!" a man with a two-handed sword jumped right out from behind the rock and shouted at Winchester.

[DiCaprio] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: One of the Seven Generals serving Leonardo.

"Humph! One of the dogs of Leonardo! When did you get the courage to show your sword right before me!" Winchester did not hold himself back as well, not even looking at his opponent.

DiCaprio was enraged and he cried out loud, "Winchester! You are nothing but a weeping dog who weeps in failures! What is there to be proud of! Brothers! Kill these two men!"

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

Another wave of arrows flew from behind the rocks at the two of them, Zhang Yang and Winchester!

"Warrior! Let us clear out these annoying pests first!" Winchester smiled and let out a laugh, and then he rode on his horse and leaped over the rocks.

This horse is obviously a [Battle Horse], as Winchester is on the horse, but could pull out the sword from his back and swing it around. In almost an instant, splashes of fresh blood were visible, and countless miserable cries were heard from behind the rocks.

Zhang Yang could not just stand aside and show that he could do nothing, so he immediately patted on Whitey's head and charged to the other side of the rocks. Then, he launched his fierce assaults at the soldiers that had let loose the arrows at him earlier on! These soldiers were all Level 83 elites. After encountering Zhang Yang and Winchester in close quarters, they began to abandon their bows and arrows and pull out their swords from the sword

hilts tied to their waists to engage in melee battle!

"Winchester! Your time is over! If you were clever enough to hide your real name and stay quiet in the dark, you might have had the chance to leave out your remaining days quietly! But now, you have only one choice, death! I will not let you destroy Sir Leonardo's magnificent plan!" DiCaprio swung his two-handed sword over his head, at Winchester.

"Hahaha, if Leonardo is so capable of doing everything, then why does he need to make a deal with the demons to ambush me! Humph! For power, he would rather sell his own soul to the demons. To pass the title 'Baron' to a traitor like that, no doubt, the entire castle and the people in it will suffer a fate far worse than being burnt alive!"

As their truth and beliefs were not on the same page, the two Yellow-Gold bosses began to engage into a fierce battle.

Zhang Yang kited the remaining soldiers around into one spot and switched to his [Dark Enigma Sword], and then activated his {Blast Wave}!

In just less than a second, every single one of the soldiers within his attack range was inflicted with 1,000 damage points. At the same instant, the special effect of his [Dark Enigma Sword] was activated, and another two rounds of damages were inflicted upon the soldiers! When his assaults stopped, he acted, and continued to strike!



{Horizontal Sweep}!

In about two to three minutes, the soldiers were taken care of and every single one of them fell before the sharp blade of Zhang Yang and the deadly claws of Whitey.

Zhang Yang could not afford to waste his time on picking up the loot all around the ground, so he quickly flipped onto Whitey and charged towards DiCaprio, and began his full assault on the boss.

Although bosses like this DiCaprio are Yellow-Gold, the truth is, these kinds of bosses would only have a higher amount of health points, and normally would not have any deadly skills, or even any special skills that would bring devastating damages. So, this DiCaprio is only designed to only attack blindly like a wild boar. How would he able to go up against a battle against Zhang Yang and Winchester joining hands together?

In less than a minute, DiCaprio had to face his own demise and collapsed onto the ground without any chance to even moan.

This boss only dropped two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment and a few pieces of Gray-Silver equipment. The two Yellow-Gold equipment were a set of leather greaves and a pair guardian's gloves.

As Violet-Platinum bosses were beginning to appear within Level 80 dungeons like a new species being discovered within a new area, it's impossible for any of the bosses to drop equipment pieces of armor set! If they did, then the value of defeating a Violet-Platinum

boss would decrease!

"Pui! Traitor!" Winchester spat on the dead body of DiCaprio with contempt, "Warrior, let's continue with our journey! But be warned, this might be the first ambush that Leonardo planted along the way back to Kullia Castle, but it will definitely not be the last one!"

The two of them rode on their [Battle Mounts] towards the direction of Kullia Castle.

As expected, after traveling for merely two to three minutes, another platoon of soldiers revealed themselves and blocked their way.

"That imbecile Decaprio, he still let these two slipped through even he brought so many men with him!" This time, the leader of the platoon was a spellcaster with a weird looking staff in his hands. He looked like a 30-year-old man, clad in a light red robe, with a face filled with disdain.

[Claudier] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Mana: 850,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: One of the Seven Generals serving Leonardo

So, this boss is a spellcaster type, and it would be natural that he has an army of spellcasters as his minions, and all of them were Level 83 elites. This battle will be much more difficult than the previous one. When engaging into battle with spellcaster type monsters, the defense of Zhang Yang is nullified against magic type attacks, and he cannot duck and roll to avoid most of the magic damage.

Winchester went straight up to Claudier without having second doubts.

Zhang Yang knew his own capability, so he did not kite too many monsters in one attempt to keep the situation under control. If he kited too many monsters at once, he might need to use consumption items such as [Fountain of Life] and [Healing Potion]. But it is in his best interest, that these items are to be spared until desperate times, before consuming them! Zhang Yang also let Winchester sustain some of the monsters' attacks. Since he's an NPC and his health bar was freaking long, as long as he does not die, Zhang Yang can just 'heal' him back to his full health just by tossing some [Snacks] over to him.

After taking out every single monster around him, Zhang Yang engaged the boss battle with Claudier with the intention to aid

Winchester in winning the battle!

Spellcaster type monsters were indeed impressive! In just a short amount of time, Winchester had lost about 300,000 health points after being attacked by those 'minions' of the boss! If Zhang Yang had not rushed in to help, Winchester would definitely have died upon being ganged up by Claudier and these elite-grade 'minions'!

The main reason was also that of the aggro system in the game. The boss would just engage in battle when a target is detected within the aggro range. If not, Winchester could have begun by slaying all the 'minions' first before engaging Claudier, giving him a higher chance to win the battle!

But as players join in later, it totally turns the battle tide! Zhang Yang came in and slaughtered all 'minions' that were poking around Winchester, reducing the damage received by Winchester. On the other hand, the situation had turned into hell for Claudier! Instead of overpowering Winchester in the earlier battle, now the boss is being raped by Zhang Yang and Winchester, with their continuous strikes to the point that Claudier was actually crying out miserably! Claudier's health bar was reducing like an avalanche crashing down the hill, and in just a brief moment, he knelt down in defeat.

# Chapter 376: The Hunt Of The Evil

---

Claudier had actually dropped some good items!

[Amateur God Oil: Light as Feather] (Usable)

Use: Enhances your boots, permanently increase movement speed by 10%.

[Beginner God Oil: Light as Feather] would only grant a 5% bonus movement speed. Ever since Zhang Yang and his friends had dominated the Cave of Bones, the supply for [Beginner God Oil] was able to meet up to his demands. It was by luck that Zhang Yang could finally stumble upon the [God Oil] that would grant him 10% movement speed.

The boot that Zhang Yang was wearing now had a 5% movement speed bonus. However, he was eager to put on the Titan set equipment instead. The [Amateur God Oil] would best be kept for the Titan boots instead of using it on his current one.

Besides [God Oil], the rest of the loot was not worthy of mentioning. None of the Yellow-Gold equipment in the stash was up to his standards. All of the loot were dumped into his inventory and would be sold in the Little Merchandise Shop.

The two of them proceeded forward and met with Leonardo's generals. All of them were killed separately instead of fighting them as a whole. Zhang Yang was extremely grateful that the story had set the bosses to be separate and to be killed one by one. If they

were to gang up to fight together, Zhang Yang and Winchester would surely be killed without even having to lift their weapons.

Still, it was surprising, yet expected to be. After all, they were playing a game. The developers would surely have needed to provide some kind of leverage for the players to grind or to kill the boss monsters. If the developers had placed a Celestial tier boss right in Beginner's Village, how would anyone get past that?! If the bosses in the first few dungeons had the ability to kill everyone in the raid, being overpowered to an unbelievable level, who would want to continue playing such a game?

Right now, naturally, Zhang Yang was strong enough to solo a dungeon or even an S rank quest, but so strong that he could solo kill a Violet-Platinum boss. He could, but the chances of him dying would be extremely high. Zhang Yang had hoped for Leonardo to have several more generals for him to kill. Seven Yellow-Gold bosses had already dropped him a mountain of Yellow-Gold weapon. Although he had no inclination of using them himself, he wanted to get them to sell them off in his Little Merchandise Shop. The equipment could be off to players which will earn him lots of gold coins!

After a lot more hacking and slashing, the two finally arrived at Killua Castle.

"T-That's...That's Lord Winchester!" Standing at the entrance of the door was Bronoss The Ranger with his mouth gaping wide open. Surprised, delighted, and relieved, Bronoss leaped off his horse and knelt before Winchester. "Thank the gods for your safety!"

Winchester nodded. "It all thanks to this brave warrior. I could have never escaped from the demons without his help!"

Bronoss turned to Zhang Yang and raised an eye brow. His eyes widened suddenly and cried in surprise. "Didn't I throw you in prison? How did...eh? It seems I'm confused."

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Ranger, don't think too much of it. All you need to know is that, I am not with the rebels!"

"Lord Winchester. Honduras, who had betrayed and framed you were imprisoned! However, we still lack enough evidence to have him on trial! Now that you are here, you can personally identify the man that had made the deal with the demon!" said Bronoss.

Winchester sighed and shook his head. "You're wrong. Honduras was not the person that had betrayed me! The real culprit is none other but my own brother! Leonardo!"

"What!?" Brunoss jumped to his feet. His eyes lost focus as he started to tremble at the revelation.

"That's is the truth! He was the one who betrayed me! It was all for the ownership of the castle!" said Winchester. "Brunoss, as a ranger of justice, you need to make your decision now. Would you serve me, or follow the man who had made a deal with demons?"

Brunoss calmed down and stood up high and tall. His eyes were

now focused and serious. There were no longer traces of fear and doubt in them. "Lord Winchester. I am yours to command, and I would never doubt you!"

"Well said. Gather every ally in the castle. We shall overthrow Leonardo's evil reign!"

"Yes, my lord!"

Brunoss the Ranger saluted Winchester and rode away towards the castle.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Return to Killua Castle. Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!’

Winchester turned to look at Zhang Yang. "Warrior. We are getting closer to victory. If we fight harder, we can capture and bring Leonardo to justice!”

‘Ding! Winchester has a quest for you: Hunt of the Evil. Will you accept it?’

Why do such quests always throw decisions at the players? It's not like Zhang Yang would walk away from the quest. Plus, Zhang Yang had to know what kind of rewards could he have by killing Leonardo!

[Hunt of the Evil] (Difficulty Level: S)



Quest Description: Defeat Leonardo and obtain victory! Leonardo is located at the main chamber of the castle. Assist Winchester in delivering the last blow!

Participation Limit: 10 men (Shareable)

Progress: Kill Leonardo 0/1

Quest Reward: Titan's Necklace

[Titan Necklace] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +202

Strength: +58

Equip Effect: Absorbs 116 damage on attack.

Equip Effect: Grants an additional 10% aggro generation on an attack, if a shield is equipped.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

Zhang Yang was both happy, yet sad.

The good news was that he would gain another Titan equipment. The bad news was that the equipment effect on the necklace was too bland! The additional 10% aggro generation was actually useful for other tanks! But for him, he already possessed incredible firepower which could generate enough aggro! What could he do with the 10% bonus? The boss would only attack him!

Zhang Yang sighed and accepted his fate. At least, he could secure another Titan's equipment, and that was the most important factor.

Zhang Yang noticed the quest was shareable. He immediately had an idea and quickly informed everyone else. "Yo! Come along. I've got a good quest here!"

Just as he finished talking, Zhang Yang equipped the [Party Summon Order] and summoned the part to his side.

"Noobie tank, what's so good about the quest? You summoned us so quickly, I was actually busy doing something!"

Zhang Yang kept quiet and smirked. He promptly shared the quest with everyone and was rewarded with a loud gasp.

"It's my set equipment necklace!"

"God d\*mn! This is good sh\*t!"

"Awesome!"

Everyone was extremely pleased. Zhang Yang's reward was the Titan's Necklace, but the rest of the party member had a different reward. Their quest reward was their own respective set equipment necklace.

"Alright guys, follow that NPC. He's our god of fortune! Cover him, and do not let him die!" said Zhang Yang pointed at Winchester who was already halfway to the castle riding his horse. Everyone promptly summoned their rides and chased after him.

"My lord!?"

"Lord Winchester!"

As Winchester ride by, the castle residence bowed down in respect to him. From afar, it seemed that Winchester was a mighty lord when he was still reigning. Without much time, everyone reached to the entrance of a big and glamorous castle.

There were eight guards that stood guard at the entrance. When they saw Winchester approaching them, Winchester was greeted with the similar surprised expression, followed by them kneeling down. "Hail the lord of the castle!"

"At ease," said Winchester with a certain noble tone to his voice.

"The castle has been infiltrated by demons, no thanks to Leonardo. I want to bring justice and to punish those who had committed the crime. Everyone, to arms, and follow me into the castle, to exterminate the evil!"

The guards were confused. They thought that they had already captured the betrayer, the greedy trader, Honduras. Why and how did the betrayer title shift to Leonardo?

"Do not listen to his words!" cried a middle-aged man who shared a similar look to Winchester. The man turned to Winchester and bellowed. "This man is not a man! He is a demon who is impersonating my brother! My brother, the previous lord of the castle Winchester is already dead! This man! Is an imposter!"

[Leonardo] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 86

HP: 1,720,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: The younger brother of Winchester.

This time, Brunoss had arrived and brought along a large group of followers. He and everyone else had heard what Leonardo had

just said and started to fall into a state of confusion. To their knowledge, demons were masters of deception. Winchester had been lost for a number of days! It was hard to differentiate between the real and the fake!

Winchester bellowed angrily. He pulled out his sword and raised it up, high to the sky. "I am me! Winchester Rein Alocain, son of Damian Rein Alocain! The Lord of Killua Castle and the Whisperer of Wind and Fire!"

"Demon! Stop your foolish attempt! We shall not be deceived by you!" Leonardo started down to Winchester. "Not only you have killed my brother, you have the nerve to take up his face and to mock his name! My fellow citizens, warriors of Killua Castle, kill this demon and bring peace to my brother's soul!"

Both soldiers from both sides started to accused of each other of siding themselves with the demon. Oblivious to the real truth, both sides stood at an impasse as they continued to throw slanderous words at each other.

Wei Yan Er got annoyed and stomped her feet the ground. "You bloody idiots! Are you deaf?! That guy knows that he is exposed, which has led him to start throwing the blame to the other guy as a demon in disguise! What are you still standing around for? Start killing already!"

The little brat was just adding more wood to a fire. Since she was just using pronouns instead of the actual person's name, both sides have just become more and more confused!

Winchester scoffed. "Leonardo, you and I are born with the same flesh and blood! You have always loved to have a quarrel with me at any occasion! However, you are fated to be a loser! You cannot win over me! Ever! You are my brother, and I can tolerate your wild ambitions, but this? This dream of yours to hand the castle and its people to the demons, that I shall not permit!"

Winchester took in a deep breath. "Come at me. None shall interfere. We shall decide this ourselves!"

"As you wish! Demon!" cried Leonardo with dignity. From his tone and speech, he was careful not to confess to the identity of Winchester and would only address him as a demon.

KLANG!

Two NPC rushed towards each other and parried each other's sword strikes.

"Hmm...Something is odd. How could this quest be an S rank when the boss is only a Yellow-Gold tier..." said Zhang Yang as he sensed something was odd. The map he was in, was not the same as the previous map that he had explored. Yellow-Gold bosses were easy to defeat, and even having a Violet-Platinum boss in the quest was not enough to qualify the quest as an S rank. If that was the case, then, what's the real difficulty?

"Dummy dear. Why are you so reluctant to accept the truth? Couldn't the quest be a little easier?" said Han Ying Xue

seductively.

Zhang Yang frowned. "It's not that I'm reluctant. I'm afraid that the quest might be harder than we think."

"Could there be a sudden change in the quest?" asked the party, as they stood by and witnessed the two bosses having a go at each other.

# Chapter 377: Demon Portal

---

Both of them were cinematic NPCs, but Winchester was winning by a landslide!

By the time Winchester had over 30% HP left, he had already managed to bring Leonardo down to his knees. Victory was just a sword slash away!

"It looks like the quest WAS that easy!" everyone agreed.

"Lord Wakala! Help me!" Out of a sudden, Leonardo cried in terror.

Winchester scoffed and pointed his sword at Leonardo's throat. "Give up your foolish dreams, Leonardo. From the moment you raised your sword against humanity, you were destined to have this ending."

Winchester lifted his sword up high. When his blades fall, Leonardo's head will roll!

BOOM!

A cloud of black gas seeps out of Leonardo's body and formed a large hand that grabbed hold of the sword as it came down, stopping the blade from slicing off Leonardo's head.



Winchester was shocked. He pulled back his sword and jumped back. Horror filled his face as he screamed, "T-This...this is demonic power! Leonardo! What have you done?! You have brought a demon into the castle!?"

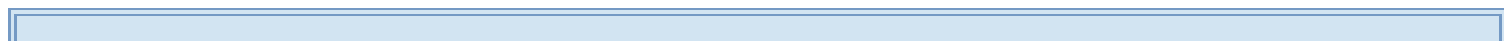
"Hmm...haha..HAHAHAHA!" As the situation had developed to this extent, Leonardo had no use to pretend anymore. He laughed loudly and said, "Winchester! I may never be an equal to you! You have always had the upper hand ever since we were kids! That is why I have kept a trump card against you! Lord Wakala! Reap the fruits of your victory!"

"Imbecile..." A deep husky voice was heard out of Leonardo's body. To be accurate, the voice came from the necklace that he was wearing.

Shiing!

A black light blasted off the necklace and formed a portal. A pair of eerie red hands that looked like the claws of an eagle first reached out to grab the edges of the portal, followed closely by the face of a demon. Twin horns grew out of his forehead and a pair of bell-shaped eyes glowed with a dark flame.

"Urgh..." the demon growled as he dragged his massive body out of the portal. He had a massive body, measuring over 10 meters. A dark, bloody red colored skin and a pair of bat-like wings stuck out of his back. He also had a long devilish tail that was pointy at the end.



[Demon General Wakala] (Violet-Platinum, Demon)

Level: 88

HP: 8,800,000

Defense: 2,500

When the demon appeared, it brought along a sickening aura that awakened inner anger, causing everyone to have a strong bloodlust. They could easily kill each other for the sheer fun of it!

Until this point, the truth has not been clearer. Every NPC had pointed their weapons towards Wakala. Some were ready to start the fight, and some were trembling in fear.

The demon glanced around the field, looking down at everyone as if they were nothing but rodents waiting to be crushed. He then turned to Leonardo and spoke in a deep demonic voice. "The portal is yet to finish. You imbecile. How could you reveal everything before that!"

Wakala sighed disappointingly. "Two days! Two days! You're such a bloody waste! Such a simple task, yet you could not do it properly. You're such a disappointment."

"Lord Wakala, I am not at fault here. It's all because Winchester

had suddenly shown up! I can only do so much before..."

"Excuses!" said Wakala coldly. He then turned to Winchester and smirked.

"Winchester...Winchester...Did it ever cross your mind that you will be betrayed by your own brother! Thanks to him, I could infiltrate the castle! All of your defenses were for naught!" Wakala laughed. But his laughter was accompanied by Winchester as well!

"Hahaha...you're so wrong...Demon, you came here alone. Do you really think that you could defeat me? No matter how strong you were, you shall die right here and now! Right after I kill you, we shall prepare for a counter attack! Without you, we can easily eliminate the demon army!"

"Such boldness! Hahaha! That is indeed a good plan! But, I seem to detect a major flaw in your plan of attack. That is, I will be the one who kills you instead!" said Wakala with a sinister laugh. "I had never attacked this castle, thanks to your magic cannons. But now, what can you use against me?! Hahahaha! Furthermore, even though the Teleportation Circle has yet to be done and could not be used to do a mass transport, it could still be used at a limited capacity!"

Wakala then cast some sort of summoning skill. He thrust out his hands, causing the necklace that was hanging on Leonardo's neck to snap off and fly into his hands. Wakala murmured a few words and chanted a spell. The necklace glowed with a dark light and a black portal formed right beside him.

In no time at all, a pair of blue colored hands appeared out of the portal. Like pulling oneself out of a pool of mud, the pair of hands grabbed the side of the portal and dragged the blue body of a blue colored Floating Apparition.

Winchester cried out bravely, "Everyone! Destroy that portal! Do not let the demons into the castle, or many others will die!"

‘Ding! There has been a change in your quest: Hunt of the Evil. You must complete the following: 1, Kill Wakala. 2, Destroy the demon portal within 30 minutes. 3, Winchester must stay alive throughout the ordeal. If any of the conditions are not met, the quest shall be deemed a failure!’

Everyone in Zhang Yang party received the quest changes notification. They were unable to move due to the quest cinematic sequence. Only now did they regain their mobility.

Zhang Yang immediately laid down the first command. "I will tank the boss. You guys attack the portal. If there are monsters, Endless Starlight, hold them off!"

"Roger!" Everyone nodded. Things had gone out of control.

The boss had gained a buff, restoring 4% HP every second, that would last until the portal is destroyed. Even though Sun Xin Yu and the rest had immense firepower, they could not deal a strong enough damage to cause a drop of 1% HP every second to cope with the healing buff, even with {Destructive Smash} on him. They had

to destroy the portal first!

As for Leonardo, he was simply sitting by the side. Since he had been defeated by Winchester, leaving him with only one bit of HP left, he had been kneeling down by the sidelines. However, he had an invincible status effect which rendered unkillable.

Zhang Yang rushed to the front of the boss and got his attention with a {Spear of Obliteration}. The quest demanded that Winchester is to remain alive. Right then, Winchester had only over 30% HP left, which was over 500,000 HP. Facing the Violet-Platinum demon boss would put him in grave danger.

"Human! Succumb to the power of the shadow!" Wakala swiftly took out a pale silver axe and swung it hard towards Zhang Yang. The blade of the axe cut through the air, giving out a scary whistling sound! Zhang Yang tried his best to hold off the boss while diverting part of his attention towards the portal. What a troublesome boss! All Violet-Platinum bosses are like that! If he could, Zhang Yang could pace himself and carry out the fight at leisure. The problem was due to the fact that the quest demanded the portal to be destroyed within 30 minutes! 30 minutes was a long time. An S-ranked quest wasn't that kind, the portal must have a monstrous amount of HP!

[Demon Portal] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 50,000,000

Defense: 1,000

Bloody hell! 50 million?! If it were just the rest of the party attacking, they would take roughly 20 minutes and more just to destroy the portal! That was not counting monsters that will occasionally appear from the portal! Since the party would need to invest a few seconds in defeating the monsters, they will be delayed by the monsters! There's no way that 30 minutes would be enough!

Now they understood why the quest was set to be S rank!

Zhang Yang frowned harder than he had ever frowned before. Facing such a high HP portal, {Dance of Heaven and Earth} has lost its prowess! How could they possibly damage a 50 million HP portal with just 100,000 damage?!

"F\*ck it! Use all your ultis! Consume all potion that could increase your attack! Use the [Power Potion], even the ones with Grade 10 transmutation!" Zhang Yang ordered.

Everyone looked closely at the portal's HP and understood Zhang Yang's order. They knew that the quest had demanded them to perform beyond their limit. No one argued and took potions of their respective classes, and used skills that could increase their damage for a short time, and a bottle of [Power Potion]!

[Beginner Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] (Usable)

Use: Increase 20% attack power. Due to the transmutation effect, a 20% increase in attack power will be granted. Lasts for 15 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

As expected of a Grade 10 Transmutation, it had increased the potion effect by 100%!

Everyone braced themselves and use [Dance of Heaven and Earth] without even thinking twice!

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

...

Although {Dance of Heaven and Earth} was not a long-term skill, and could not have its attack increased by a player’s equipment or other levels, it could be affected by buffs and debuff of the enemy! Nine players took their potions, increased their attack power to the best they can, and used {Dance of Heaven and Earth}! Zhang Yang had even used {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}.

In just 10 seconds, the portal had received more than 2,000,000 damage! However, the damage was done with nine counts of {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and one {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}! Like a wooden sword, it cannot be used again after one simple sparring match!

The rest of the NPC were restless, as they strived to destroy the portal as well. By then, the blue colored Floating Apparition had managed to pull itself out of the portal. It immediately growled and attacked one of the NPC soldiers who was standing closest to it.

Endless Starlight then kited the monster and attacked it, along with the rest of the party. The Floating Apparition was a Level 85 elite tier monster. Once the number gets high, even Endless Starlight might have trouble tanking them. It's best to kill them as fast as possible. With haste, the team quickly turned the monster into grind meat, giving the party a tiny bit of experience points.

When the first monster emerged out of the portal, the portal did not stop functioning. Instead, it immediately started to transport another monster. This time, it was an elite tier succubus!

Zhang Yang kited the boss as far away as he could, as Wakala would occasionally use {Tornado Cleave} which will cause more than 20,000 damage to all targets within 20 meters away from him. If the boss had not used the skill, Zhang Yang would not have kite the boss away, since no one else was attacking him! He could at least join the fight in destroying the portal and occasionally attack the boss to keep the aggro on him high.



Despite that, Zhang Yang would throw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the portal every 10 seconds. Even though he could only deal over 3,000 damage to it, it was still damage!

"Make haste o demon's force!" cried Wakala as he opened his hands wide. A black light ray blast off his chest and onto the portal.

Instantly, the portal gained a buff. "Transport Speed Increased by 100%!"

The buff was as described. The speed of which the succubus emerged from the portal increased dramatically. Right then, more than half of her body had already come out!

Zhang Yang leaped down from his bear and commanded it to attack the portal. His HP then dropped to a staggering 76,730! Still, he had no worries of being killed by the boss! Since the boss carried a recovery buff, having the bear with him would be like slicing water with a knife! It was a pity since the battle had started abruptly. Zhang Yang had no chance to swap his battle mount to the Mythical Turtle, or else he would have gained a tremendous boost of attack power!

"Human! Give up! This world shall be ruled by the darkness! Bow down and surrender your fate to the shadow!" Wakala kept on using the same provoking sentences to Zhang Yang as he attacked.

"Do not falter over mere words, warrior! Demons are the race of

deceit! Look at Leonardo! He has fallen to such a grade, for he had succumbed to the demon's temptation!" cried Winchester in response.

Zhang Yang laughed at Wakala and said, "Wakala! If you're willing to be my underling, I might even consider joining the dark side!

"Foolish human!" Wakala bellowed angrily at Zhang Yang and smacked him with his massive palm.

"Demon! Begone! This is not your place!" cried Winchester as he stopped attacking the demon portal and attacked Wakala with a quick jab of his sword.

"Imbecile! With the power of darkness in my hands, you have but only to serve the greatness of it! Now, bow down to me!" Wakala scoffed and hurled another palm towards Winchester. With a loud thud, the demon had managed to deal more than 16,000 damage on Winchester.

If the quest had not demanded Winchester's survivability, Zhang Yang would not have minded having one or two more extra meat shields to take the boss' attack. Instead, he could only coax Winchester to give up attacking, "Winchester, please lead the attack on the destruction of the portal! Let me handle it here! You had said it yourself, destroying the portal is the number one priority!"

Winchester spat a mouthful of blood and wiped away some of it

from his lips. He glared at Wakala disgruntledly and said, "Then, I shall take your word. Warrior, you must prevail. Until we have destroyed the portal, we shall join you to defeat this evil!"

Finally, this quest NPC could work for his life!

Even though the speed of the portal transporting the demon was faster by two-fold, it was not as fast as it seemed to be. Once it got out, they would be killed by Zhang Yang's party and the NPC soldiers around. Among their attacks, Winchester and Brunoss were Yellow-Gold bosses! Even though their remaining HP was so pathetic, their attack power was as strong as before!

"Make haste O demon forces!" Wakala bellowed again as he blasted another dark ray towards the portal, increasing its speed to 200%!

As obvious as the sun in the sky, the buff could be stacked on indefinitely!

If they do not destroy it as soon as possible, the speed of which the demons were transported will be increased to the point of no return!

# Chapter 378: Destroying The Portal

---

Time is of the essence. Right now, time is a luxury none of them had! For each passing second was vital and could not be wasted on anything else!

Zhang Yang's party had used their utmost best to damage the demon portal, and within 10 minutes, they had already dealt enough damage to hack down the portal to 56% HP! In the first 10 minutes, they had relied on their {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and Zhang Yang's {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} to deal damage. Luckily, they were not greatly affected by the monsters that were coming out of the portal!

For every passing minute, the boss would turn around and send a dark beam to the portal, and cast a {Haste}-like buff on it to add 100% of its transport speed. At the beginning of the battle, everyone was able to pace themselves, with nothing but the portal to focus on. However, after 10 minutes, the party was beginning to struggle. Before they could kill the first demon, the second demon had already come out of the portal. If this piles up, there was no longer any meaning in defeating the monsters that come out of the portal! The monster would only keep piling up before they could even kill them, and eventually overwhelm everyone.

Zhang Yang come to a final decision and said, "Ignore the monsters, let the NPC take care of the monsters. You guys handle the portal! Endless Starlight, attack the portal, unless the monsters start attacking our own party member! If the number of monster exceeds your power, activate {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Sacred Protection} to protect everyone. Both Han Ying Xue and I will pair up to use {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew} to clear everything."

"Ok boss!"

Everyone else nodded as well. Even though the situation had indeed turned south, as long as Zhang Yang did not falter, everyone would follow and steel their mentality, as if Zhang Yang was their beacon of hope!

1, 2, 3...18...46 monsters!

As the battle dragged longer and longer, the number of monster piling up in the field increased. Since the party did not spare any time to attack the monsters, causing the monsters to attack the NPC and forming a battle of their own. Occasionally, there will be a few escapees breaking off from the crowd and attacking the party members. Endless Starlight will then kite the monster away from the party and into the crowd of NPC soldiers.

Whenever possible, he would lead them directly to Winchester and Brunoss, since the two Yellow-Gold NPC had AoE attacking skills. As long as Endless Starlight could drag the monster into their attacking range, the NPC's attack will "splash" on them and the monster's aggro will be diverted to them instead.

The number of NPC soldiers was extremely limited. Although they were also the same tier as the monster's, they could not endure the never-ending attack of the monsters that would only increase in numbers! When the battle entered the 20 minutes threshold, the NPC soldiers were nearly wiped out. The only survivors were just the two Yellow-Gold boss and seven soldiers

that were at their limit.

"Boss! I can't handle this no more!" cried Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang nodded and ran towards Han Ying Xue. "Hey b\*tch! Time for our show!"

"Wuuuu! If only I can combine together with noob tank to make some skill. That would be so much fun!" said Wei Yan Er enviously.

"...Yan Er, what are you always tailing Little Yang? Come and combine with me!" said Fatty Han with a tease.

"No!" Wei Yan Er rejected him instantly.

Fatty Han sulk sadly and said, "But...why?"

"You're too ugly!"

Fatty Han kept quiet.

{Blizzard Sky}! {Lunar's Dew}!

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

A storm of snow and gale engulfed the entire battle field, damaging all monsters within the region, effectively killing them all! One by one, the elite tier demons dropped like flies, after a good aerosol spray! 30 seconds later, other than the two new demons that had just emerged out of the portal, the rest of the demons were completely wiped out.

"No! This cannot be!" Wakala bellowed angrily. "Despicable humans! I will crush you! I will obliterate you!"

The situation was so frantic that the party member had no time to be impressed at Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's paired skill. While the skill was killing all the monster, everyone had dug deep into their very souls and started attacking as fast as they could.

8%... Which was 4,000,000 HP!

While there were still demons lurking out of the from the portal, the NPC soldier were all battered up! There was no hope in depending on them to suppress the incoming demons! The battle was at a crucial stage, nearing it end! Even though 8% was a small number, it would still require almost 2 minutes for the party to destroy it! In 2 minutes time, how many demons would have already emerged out of the portal?

If they could ignore the demons and solely focus on the portal, things might be a little different!

Zhang Yang decided to act. "Everyone! Focus on the portal. Let me handle the monsters from the portal!"

He then threw a {Spear of Obliteration} towards the monster that came out from the portal and shared the load of Endless Starlight and the NPC soldiers. As such, the amount of stress Zhang Yang had to handle now was immense!

2...4...10! More and more monsters were being dragged away by Zhang Yang!

Just when the number is right, Zhang Yang activated all sort of skills!

{Blast Wave}!

{Thunder Strike}!

{Heroic Leap}!

All status effect skills were unleashed, and none were kept on standby. When he was almost killed, he would restore himself with {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} auto recovery effect!



He will stand strong!

He will not fall! Until the end!

5%...3%...1%...

"Fight on guys! We can do it! The portal is almost destroyed!" everyone cheered.

300,000! 200,000! 100,000!

BOOM!

As Wei Yan Er delivered the last strike, the portal crumbled into pieces of light which dissipated into nothingness!

"Oh yeah!"

"Don't be too happy just yet! There's still monsters and the boss!" Zhang Yang scolded the party as they started to cheer and forget about the battle they were in. They stopped cheering and started cleaning up the monsters on the field.

"Despicable! You have foiled what I have been planning for 3 years!" bellowed Wakala after the portal was reduced to nothing. As the flames grew larger and violent in his eyes, Wakala let out a deafening roar. "DEATH TO ALL HUMANS!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "You, who have been addressing us as nothing but imbeciles. I shall give you one in return. Your grand scheme, that you have planned for 3 years had been foiled easily by a bunch of lowly humans. Clearly, your level of intelligence is much lower than mine!"

Lost Dream laughed. "Hey yo Zhan Yu! What's with you taunting the boss?"

"Hehe, to make it even!"

Winchester walked up to the boss after defeating the last monster in the field and said, "Wakala, you have nothing to support you now! I would like to see how do you plan to walk out of this castle!"

Wakala cracked an evil smile and said, "You think a few pests could stand up against a mighty demon general?!"

"What an egotistical demon!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue and swung her giant axe towards the boss, landing the first strike, after hitting him with {Charge} first.

"Be gone to whence you came from,!" Brunoss drew his bow and fired arrows at the boss. He was a Wind Ranger, a class that was capable of both ranged and melee attacks. It was said to be a combination of both Thief and Hunter.

Now that all the monsters were cleared, it's players and NPC against one boss!

This time, the recovery buff on the boss had disappeared. He was nothing but a regular Violet-Platinum boss, with a slightly higher attack and HP! However, facing Zhang Yang and his party, what was the use having a higher attack or HP? Wakala was nothing but a piece of meat waiting to be chopped down to bits!

Right then, Zhang Yang was certain that the quest difficulty lay with the destruction of the portal. Now that they had accomplished that, the boss was nothing but a bonus that would grant them a few Violet-Platinum equipment!

Jackpot...?

90%...80%...like an open hydrant, the boss' HP dropped quickly. The attacking team consisted not only of Sun Xin Yu, but also Wei Yan Er and the others. There were also the two Yellow-Gold bosses, Winchester and Brunoss! With such a powerful force attacking, Wakala could only delay his inevitable death! Within 3 minutes, Wakala flapped his bat-like wings crazily, flying up a few meters in the sky before slamming down with a loud crash!

"No! This...cannot...be...!" At the moment Wakala died, Leonardo stood up instantly. He then screamed like a girl being surrounded by 10 hungry wolves!

"Leonardo...what am I to do with my brother..." said Winchester, as he paced slowly towards Leonardo.

"No! Winchester! You are my brother! Your only brother! You

cannot kill your own blood and flesh!" screamed Leonardo with panic and terror reflected in his eyes.

"That's where you're wrong, kiddo. My brother, Leonardo has died, a long time ago!" said Winchester with a solemn tone in his voice. He took out his sword and laid the killing blow.

With that, all conditions of the quest were met!

Winchester walked back to the crowd. He then flicked off the blood that was staining his sword before return it to its scabbard. He bowed to everyone and said, "Fellow adventurer, I give you my thanks for saving Killua Castle. You have saved the citizens of this castle from being engulfed in the shadows and rule by the demons! I, Winchester represent all people in this castle, and give you the utmost respect and gratitude!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Hunt of the Evil. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained a reward: Titan’s Necklace!’

Besides Zhang Yang, everyone else was wearing a long smile on their faces. The quest was extremely good, the equipment rewarded from the quest could be worn without having it Identified!

As such, the only equipment that Zhang Yang was lacking to complete the Titan set were the Titan Gauntlets and Titan Battle

Boots.

"Winchester, please give the order to release Honduras!" Zhang Yang had not forgotten to complete the other quest! That was his main purpose in coming here, in the first place!

Winchester nodded and spoke to Brunoss. "Brunoss, please visit the dungeon and release Honduras from prison. That man is not only innocent, he had also contributed to this victory!"

"Yes, my lord!"

Zhang Yang hopped onto his bear and followed Brunoss to the castle dungeon.

With haste, the two of them arrived at the prison, where they met up with Honduras the trader.

"Warrior, you've succeeded?" said Honduras when he saw that Zhang Yang was with Brunoss. Zhang Yang did not look like he was being escorted back to prison, which gave Honduras hope of being released.

"Luck was on my side!" said Zhang Yang with a smile.

Brunoss then announced. "Honduras, Lord Winchester decreed that you are to be released from prison! You have risked your life to save Killua Castle! Your deeds shan't go unrewarded. My lord will see to your reward!"

"Bless the gods!" Honduras smiled till his eyes were closed tight. He then took out the keys to the prison and unlocked the door. That alone had angered Brunoss to the extent that he could pull out his bow and unleashed hell on the man.

"Oh! My baby daughter Adele! I'm coming back to you!" said Honduras, as he slid out of the prison door. Zhang Yang hurriedly chased after the man, he still owed him a Millennial Heroic Soul!

# Chapter 379: Sword of Purging Devourer

---

Honduras ran at such speed, that Zhang Yang wondered that whether he was really true to his heart about meeting his daughter, or is that he wanted to actually skip town to get away from Zhang Yang!

Luckily, Zhang Yang's mount could keep up with anything on two feet. No matter how fast Honduras ran, Zhang Yang was always able to chase after to him. He never had to worry about losing him.

Honduras ran a good distance and turned back, only to see Zhang Yang was smirking at his futile attempt to flee. Finally giving in to his fatigue, Honduras panted and walked with a slower pace. He knows that no matter how fast he ran, he could never outrun Zhang Yang and his bear. His actions had only proved that he wanted to con Zhang Yang!

The duo finally reached a town and went around a few streets before coming to a large building.

"Master...!" Standing near the entrance were two gardeners, When the saw Honduras walking towards them, they exclaimed in surprise.

"I'm back!" Honduras nodded. "Where is my daughter!? Where is Adele?"

"The mistress is in the flower garden, sir!" said the two gardeners

in unison.

"Oh! My beloved daughter Adele!" Honduras rushed to the back of the mansion. This time, he definitely missed his daughter.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins and rushed to follow him. He crossed a small river inside the mansion and came to a large flower garden, with flowers of all kinds that radiated a perfume-like fragrant scent. The place was extremely grand and pleasant, like the garden of Eden. At the side of the garden was a small stone pavement, with a small stone table and bench. Sitting sulkily alone was a beautiful little girl with lush, dark hair.

[Adele] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 81

HP: 8,100

Defense: 81

"ADELE! MY DAUGHTER! MY BABY GIRL!" cried Honduras in a melodic tone as he rushed towards Adele with his arms wide open.

"Father?! FATHER!" The sulky, solemn face disappeared, and was immediately replaced with relief and joy. She jumped down from the bench and skipped towards Honduras.



With the father and daughter reunited, the long talk started immediately. Questions about their health, places that they had been and other et ceteras popped out.

For a minute, Zhang Yang was happy for the both of them. But that did not mean that they could just leave the man's savior standing at the side! Zhang Yang moved closer and coughed softly to remind them of his presence.

Honduras ignored Zhang Yang's attempt and continued to have the father and daughter conversation with Adele. Zhang Yang had coughed even louder, yet Honduras continued to ignore Zhang Yang. On the other hand, it was Adele who took notice of Zhang Yang and broke off from her father. "I've heard. You're the hero that rescued my father! I thank you, honorable warrior Zhan Yu. Thank you for saving my father. You have my utmost gratitude."

"The honor is mine to have! I am pleased to be able to meet such a beautiful young lady," said Zhang Yang as he bowed down. He then reassumed a rude stance and turned to Honduras. "Hey. Do you want to be called a lying trader for the rest of your life? Where's my reward? I'm an adventurer, a mercenary at best. My service cannot go unrewarded."

"Aiyah! What a greedy bastard!" Honduras finally stopped pretending and revealed his true nature.

Zhang Yang was troubled, he was called a greedy person by a dishonest trader. How would Zhang Yang respond to that? In any

means necessary, Zhang Yang put on a stoic stance and said, "Honduras, you gave me your word! You will give me the Millennial Heroic Soul in exchange if your freedom! I'd say, business is all about trust! You must really want to be a dishonest trader for the rest of your life!"

"Hmph! That's where you're wrong!" said Honduras, ready to refute Zhang Yang's statement. "My words were for you to save me! My freedom was granted by Lord Winchester! Not you! You have done nothing!"

Zhang Yang could really faint from what he said. He had met a few people that he could not argue with, but to argue to this extent was extremely rare! Zhang Yang clenched his fist so tightly that he could swear that he could punch him right in his throat and be done with it. He could simply ransack the entire mansion if he wanted to! Instead, he pulled out his Goblin's Head Lobber and smirked.

"Listen here, dishonest trader, do you know the name of this axe?" said Zhang Yang with a heavy killing aura.

"...What does it have to do with this matter?" said Honduras, unfazed.

"Hm. Hm. Hm. This axe is called the Goblin's Head Lobber. I have beheaded a few monsters with this wonderful blade. Now, I could easily kill a few monsters without much trouble. Do you think I can behead a single human?"

Hoping to scare Honduras, Zhang Yang brandished his axe in front of it. However, Honduras remained unfazed. It appears that Honduras was a man who willing to take a beating than losing his fortune.

"Father, you have given your word to Mr. Zhan Yu. It's best for you to keep your word." Adele interjected. She was slightly upset and nudged her father. "Have you forgotten about mother's words? That the most important virtue is honesty!"

Adele plea got through Honduras and he started to twitch and twist. "My baby girl. Do you know how much did I spend to buy the Millennial Heroic Soul?"

Honduras sighed heavily and turned back to Zhang Yang. "Fine! I'll take it that you actually helped me out! I will give you a chance! I spent over 20,000,000 gold coins to buy that Millennial Heroic Soul. Now, you can have it for only half it the initial price! For 10,000,000 gold coins, you have it! You must know this, if it's not for my daughter, I would die before I lose 10,000,000 gold coins!"

10,000,000 gold coins!?

Even though there were two more Territory had appeared, part of Thunderstorm Castle fees were earned from players that had reached Level 50 and more. Since the number of player that travel in between maps had risen, the profits had only risen continually! Just on the travel fees alone, Zhang Yang had earned more than a million gold coins on daily basis! Honestly, it was not even hard for him to fork out 10 million gold coins.

However, the main point was that, there was no quest ever that had required a player to pay 10 million gold coins! It just meant that this NPC wanted to mess with Zhang Yang!

"Father!!" Adele was already on the edge. "I have seen the accounts! That Millennial Heroic Soul had only cost you 5,000,000 gold coins!"

F\*ck! He spent 5 million and plans to sell it for 10 million!? What a good trade! If it wasn't a cheat!

Honduras nearly cried. He turned back to Adele and patted her on the head. "Oh my sweet sweet Adele. Who are you supporting here?!"

"Hahahaha!" Zhang Yang laughed to a point where he was sure to have a stomach ache. "Miss Adele. I see that you're a girl of culture. In fact, if you succeeded over your father's business when you're a little older, you might actually be able to save your father from being called a dishonest trader!"

"Thank you! Respected warrior!" said Adele with a large smile on her face.

Honduras shook his head and sighed heavily. "With that attitude, you would surely be losing business! Aiyayaya! I might as well live for only a few more years. Fine! Warrior! You win. I give up. You can have the Millennial Heroic Soul for free. Just, promise me, that you'll leave here and never come back! Don't let me catch you

socializing with my baby daughter!"

"Father..." said Adele with a face blushed with the pink of a mildly abashed person.

Honduras brought Zhang Yang into his mansion and towards a hidden chamber. There, he commanded Zhang Yang to wait outside as he went in to fetch the Millennial Heroic Soul. He came out later with a red box, about the size of a regular shoe box.

"Here. Take it. Inside this box, is the Millennial Heroic Soul. Now, leave. Don't let me catch you doing any funny business with my Adele!"

Zhang Yang took the box off his hands and opened it. Inside the box, he examined the object that shared a similar appearance with a ginseng root. It was only one foot long and was entirely green. As he held up the Millennial Heroic Soul, he could feel a powerful aura emitting from it.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Winchester. Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Millennial Heroic Soul!’

During the time when Zhang Yang was arguing with Honduras, all the way to his mansion, and obtained the Millennial Heroic Soul, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party members had long left the castle and went to train their own levels. Zhang Yang got away

from the mansion and headed towards the Altair Flatlands. It's easier to go directly to Altair Flatlands from Black Feather Forest than to travel from Thunderstorm Castle. That way, Zhang Yang would not have to waste a [Teleportation Scroll], saving him a few gold coins and time!

After a long ride, Zhang Yang arrived at Altair Flatlands and entered the dungeon - Pandemonium. Ever since the in-game time was altered, the dungeon refresh rate had remained loyal to the real time. A 20 man dungeon would take 3 days (real time) to refresh. It was 9 days in the game. Since the dungeon was not yet ready for other parties to raid, there were no monsters inside the dungeon when Zhang Yang entered the Pandemonium. He ran effortlessly, all the way inside and towards Margery.

"Ho! Adventurer! I see you have found the 2 items that I asked," said Margery, as she hobbled towards Zhang Yang with her magic staff which she used as a walking stick.

"Scholar Margery. Yes. I have found them." Zhang Yang took out the Ancient Magic Stone and the Millennial Heroic Soul, and passed the Mysterious Sword Hilt to Margery.

After she obtained all three items, she nodded as she examined the items. "Hm...These items are the right ones indeed. Now, I will start channeling the spell to break the first seal. Adventurer, please be patient, while I try to break the seal."

She then held the hilt in her left hand while placing the Ancient Magic Stone and the Millennial Heroic Soul on a marble desk. She pointed her magic staff at the items on the desk and started

chanting in some weird language. Without a word of warning, a bright, radiant light burst out of the Ancient Magic Stone. The bombardment of light was so blinding that Zhang Yang had to close his eyes shut and turn away.

The entire process took close to 3 minutes!

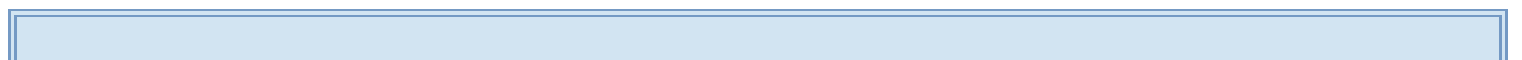
After that, the light started to dim down and eventually went out completely. Zhang Yang turned back and saw that the Ancient Magic Stone and the Millennial Heroic Soul on the marble desk were gone. On the other hand, there was a 3 foot long sharp sword, with a purplish glow in Margery's hand.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The Mysterious Sword Hilt. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!’

"Adventurer! Please take this. This is the ancient godly Sword of Purging Devourer. This sword contains the power of untold possibilities. I'm certain that this sword will be of much use to your adventures in the future," said Margery as she placed the sword into Zhang Yang hands.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Sword of Purging Devourer!’

Zhang Yang was extremely excited. Although the sword's quest duration and length were not as long as the Dimensional Key Fragment's quest, he had spent a great deal of time and had always looked forward to the reward!



[Sword of Purging Devourer, the Mystery of the Ancient Legend] (Violet-Platinum, One Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 2,219 – 2,619

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 864

Special Effect 1: Consumes another weapon Special Effect. Can only be used once.

Special Effect 2: Lowers the Level Requirement of the weapon by 10 Levels.

Note: Unlock the first seal!

Bound.

Consumes another weapon special effect? What is that?

Could it be that Sword of Purging Devourer could copy the Dark Enigmatic Sword's skill?

Furthermore, the sword was a Level 90 sword! Yet, it could be worn right away at Level 80! This would immensely support Zhang



Yang as a low DPS Guardian!

The best of all, the Sword of Purging Devourer had only unlocked at the first seal! How much stronger would the sword be when the other seals are broken?!

# Chapter 380: The Search for the Sixth Key Fragment

---

What a load of surprise!

Margery smiled kindly and said, "Adventurer, I have discovered the means to break the second seal! For the next step, I need you to collect three items. They are Zinc Alloy, Dark Magical Fruit, and Light of Miracle.

‘Ding! Margery has a quest for you. Breaking the Second Seal. Will you accept it?’

After breaking the first seal, the Sword of Purging Devourer was so strong that it could be a bug! If all the seals were broken, just how strong would the sword be!?

However, here comes the problem. Zhang Yang knew that all the items that Margery has just asked for can only be collected after Zhang Yang reaches Level 100! It has been made clear that after breaking the second seal, the Sword of Purging Devourer would evolve into a Mythical tier! If Zhang Yang could have guessed that, after breaking the third seal, the sword will evolve to Ethereal tier!

Even though the process of breaking the seal is troublesome, the end rewards would be outstanding! In the future, Zhang Yang would no longer the need to swap swords between boss fights or regular monster fights!

Without wasting much time, Zhang Yang readied the Dark Enigmatic Sword and activated the Sword of Purging Devourer special skill.

‘You have activated the skill of Sword of Purging Devourer. Please select the weapon that you wish to absorb. Please be advised, the weapon that will be selected has to belong to you. The weapon that is selected for absorption will be destroyed in the process!’

Zhang Yang selected the Dark Enigmatic Sword in the pop out.

‘Ding! You have selected "Dark Enigmatic Sword". The effect that will be absorbed is: Grants a 2% chance to replicate a previous attack." The selected "Dark Enigmatic Sword" will be destroyed. Confirm selection?’

Confirm!

Ping!

A bright light burst out and the Dark Enigmatic Sword started to age and waste away as if time had sped up for a thousand years. The sword then crumbled into many rusted pieces as the Sword of Purging Devourer glowed intensely for a brief second.

[Sword of Purging Devourer, the Mystery of the Ancient Legend]

Weapon Attack: 2,219 – 2,619

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 864

Equip Effect: Grant a 2% chance to replicate a previous attack.

Special Effect: Lowers the Level Requirement of the weapon by 10 Levels.

Note: Unlocked the first seal!

Bound.

For the three items that Margery has asked for, Zhang Yang had little to no recollection of it. He knew the location of the items, but not the specific position or how to obtain them. He moved out of the dungeon and checked the quest log for a clearer explanation.

[Breaking the Second Seal] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: You have obtained confirmation from Margery herself, the means of breaking the second seal. You can find [Zinc Alloy] at the Skeletal Spirit Mining Cave of the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster. You can find the [Dark Magical Fruit]

at the Gunma Volcanic Island of the Camaro Islands. You can find the [Light of Miracle] at the Siccory Mountains of the Radiant Canyon.

Progress: Zinc Alloy 0/1Dark Magical Fruit 0/1Light of Miracle 0/1

As expected, no matter the locations, they were all located in the Chaos Realm, a place where a player can only enter after reaching Level 100.

Right now, there was no way Zhang Yang could complete it now. Zhang Yang sighed and calmed himself down. He then tore a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] and moved to Thunderstorm Castle. Even though the Sword of Purging Devourer had already been Identified, it still lacked the necessary upgrade. The Sword of Purging Devourer still had two empty sockets and Rune Stone enchantments.

He then made his way to the Gem Shop and purchased two [Level 3 Gem Stone], and had them socketed in. After that, he requested Han Ying Xue for Rune Stones and had the two new Gem Stones enchanted to 50% and 70%. After that, Zhang Yang replaced the Goblin's Head Lobber with the Sword of Purging Devourer. His basic attack power has increased from 2,914 – 3,334 to 3,863 – 4,263!

Hehehe! A Level 90 Violet-Platinum sword was strong!

...

Today's guild war had come to a conclusion and had produced the top 8 contenders. In three days, the final champion will emerge victoriously, and Zhang Yang hoped that Lone Desert Smoke would be the champion. However, as obvious as it seems, the Guild Wars competition was not as greatly welcomed as the Soaring Swords Competition. Thus, the officials had not made any vigorous attempt at bringing up the heat of the competition. After this, the competition would not be held again.

In the evening, Lone Desert Smoke faced Storm Riders. Under the guidance of Mountain Mover, Lone Desert Smoke sliced through the enemy like a hot knife through a butter. As they were not in the top 4 guilds, after two more battles, they would win the championship!

Even though Mountain Mover had only joined Lone Desert Smoke for a few days, he had already gotten used to commanding the guild and made himself memorize all the members' classes and strengths, allowing him to craft up all kinds of counter measures and attack strategies in the nick of time. Everyone was highly impressed by his ability and obeyed his commands as the word of god himself. This level of cooperation made Mountain Mover most pleased.

A good soldier and a good strategist go hand in hand. All soldiers would want to work with a good strategist, and a good strategist would want to command a cooperative and powerful army. In this case, Mountain Mover was the good strategist, and Lone Desert Smoke the finest army that he could ever command. Even if he was to be chased away by Zhang Yang, Mountain Mover would plant his feet down in the earth, would never give up his soldiers.

Unless everyone possesses a Paired Skill like Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, it was impossible to win a war, without a powerful and insightful strategist that could turn the tides of war with a simple plan! After Zhang Yang was done with the guild war and the Team Battle League Competition, Zhang Yang took his leave and rode towards the Snow Peach Mountain at the Black Feather Forest, in hopes of finding the sixth descendent of the seven generals, Culonca.

The geographical landscape of Black Feather Forest was mostly flat, yet there were plenty of mountainous regions scattered all over the land. The Snow Peach Mountain was located at the North-East section of the entire map. As the name suggested, Zhang Yang could feel a cold breeze, accompanied by white snowflakes that slowly drifted in the wind.

The quest logs had only revealed that Culonca was located at the Snow Peach Mountain. As usual, a quest will never reveal the objective precise locations, Zhang Yang had to depend on himself to search for Culonca.

Zhang Yang had spent some wandering around the Snow Peach Mountain, and after half an hour, he saw four players grinding some monsters at a spot to his north. He was only slightly shocked to saw actual players grinding their levels here. Players that come to this map should not have any other motives, besides questing! It may not be Level 80, but it should be at least Level 77 or 78, and above!

"Yo! Warrior dude!" Zhang Yang walked to the side to avoid confronting the lot. Yet, after walking a few steps, one of the

players noticed his presence and called out to him.

Zhang Yang stopped his bear and turned around. Among the four players, the one that had called out to him, waved his hands vigorously as he ran to his side. His IGN was Treasure Water and his class was a Sacred Knight. His guild was...He did not have a guild, as well as the other three players that were with him. Truthfully speaking, with their current level, they could easily earn a good position in any possible guild that would take them in! Thus, the reason why levels were so important in any given MMORPG!

Treasure Water was able to recognize Zhang Yang as a warrior due to him carrying a shield on his back, not to mention the presence of the Rage gauge.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Is there anything I can do for you?"

Treasure Water smiled back kindly and said, "Sorry to bother you. Originally, we were a group of 5 players trying to do some quests here. We came across a boss and was about to defeat it when our tank had some matters to attend to, leaving us unable to defeat the boss. So, we wanted to come here to grind some monsters and be done with it. Until we saw you!" Treasure Water gestured at Zhang Yang.

"I had never thought that we could stumble upon another player, and a tank at that! Since this place is as deserted as the Sahara Desert, we've actually given up on continuing the quest! So how about it? We ask of you to join our party and do the quest together and help us take on the boss. Bro, I'm telling you, the quest reward



is rather awesome!"

Although Zhang Yang had no intention to sidetrack, the man had been rather friendly towards Zhang Yang and presented no hostility towards him. Zhang Yang felt that killing a boss might not take as long as it should, and he nodded. "Alright. Count me in!"

In a moment, a player called Thinking Five Million had sent Zhang Yang a party invitation which Zhang Yang accepted in a heartbeat.

"Oh yeah! I was right!" said a Thief player named Blizzard General. "Wait a second! 111,260 HP!? What the papa pucking pickiddy puck! Is this guy a player or a boss!?"

"Hey guys, Kindling had only over 20,000 HP! Have a load of this guy! If I tell him that we found a tank that had over 100k HP, he will surely be asking us not to drink so much!" A player named Bleeding Tornado cried out.

"Zhan Yu!?" One by one, they too noticed Zhang Yang's IGN and were left dumfounded. Treasure Water laughed and said, "Looks like I have unintentionally recruited China's number 1 tank!"

"China's number 1 tank! So that's why he has such high HP!"

"Woah! You're already at Level 82! You must be wearing a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment! That explains the high HP!"

"Bro...Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipments are only ok. He must be wearing Violet-Platinum!"

Everyone started to argue about the topic of equipment tier and HP bonus.

Zhang Yang smiled and clapped his hands hard to gain their attention. "Guys! Are we going to discuss about equipment or are we going to kill a boss? Either way, I'm fine with it. I'm just saying..."

"Hahahaha. You're cool bro. You're cool."

The four players were obviously good friends, like Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party. As they talked and chatted about, Zhang Yang realized that they too were friends in real life.

The team was led by Thinking Five Million and reached to a flattened side of a hill. On the other side of the hill, everyone could see a gigantic, mechanical puppet that was attacking a large boulder with both its mechanical arms. Like an engine's pistons, the puppets arms struck the stone with his fist with such force that the residual shock shook the entire mountain, sending tremors and quakes.

[Optimus Prime] (Yellow-Gold, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Defense: 2,000

Everyone stopped as Treasure Water tried to explain the situation to Zhang Yang. "We had actually stumble upon this quest when we were grinding some monsters. We found an S.O.S bottle which was sent out by an NPC called Culonca. In the bottle, the message said that he was trapped at some place and requested to be rescued. The reward would be a fantastic ring, but in your case, I don't think that you'll even want the ring. Zhan Yu."

Culonca? Zhang Yang had never thought that this sudden encounter would only help him to find Culonca!

While Zhang Yang was in his thoughts, Treasure Water shared the quest to Zhang Yang.

[Someone Help Me] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: You have incidentally found an S.O.S bottle in the stomach of a white deer. In the bottle, there was a map scribbled poorly, along with the word "Someone help me!". You have traced the drawing of the map and found the target was located at Snow Peach Mountain of the Black Feather Forest. Brave warriors! Heed the call and save a man in need! Be advised, the

quest is likely to be dangerous!

Progress: Rescue Culonca 0/1

Quest Reward: Ring of Grandiose

[Ring of Grandiose] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +67

Strength: +27

Equip Effect: Absorbs 74 damage on attack.

Level Requirement: 80

Zhang Yang was right. The quest was about Culonca, the sixth descendent of the seven generals! One thing that he agreed with Treasure Water was that Zhang Yang had no interest in the ring reward. After all, both of his current rings were of Level 80 Violet-Platinum tier.

Zhang Yang did not swap out the Mythical Turtle and had used the Gold-Eared Bear King to take on Optimus Prime. Before Zhang Yang had come in, Treasure Water's party did not have a tank, thus, even though they had a healer in the party. They knew that

the boss fight was out of their league. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was a special case. Alone, he could easily overpower the boss. Now that he was in a party, the extra damage of the Mythical Turtle could be foregone.

‘-3,982!’

Zhang Yang tossed a {Spear of Obliteration} to gained the boss's aggro and dealt a strong amount damage that had left the rest of the party member flabbergasted.

"Are you sure that he is a Guardian? From the looks of it, he could be a Berserker with a shield!"

"Yeah! He's right. Zhan Yu's {Spear of Obliteration} basic damage was already at 4,000! That means his weapon damage has already reached beyond 4,000!"

"What power...Hah! Kindling will surely be jealous to the high heavens when he sees how powerful this tank is!"

"YEAH!"

Everyone laughed and cheered, yet none of them slacked in their attack. Everyone was cooperative, and performed their roles of their character classes.

The boss took the attack from Zhang Yang and turned his entire metallic body towards him. When he turned to face Zhang Yang,

everyone could see a number of holes on his chest and body. It appears that if Optimus had gone through numerous battles. The original blue and red color scheme on his metallic body was mostly dyed in rust black. One of its arms was in such a bad shape that it looked like it could fall off anytime. Black oil was spilling off his damaged arm like blood. With one fully operational arm, Optimus attacked Zhang Yang, making loud metal clanking noises as the arm thrust towards him.

"In the name of high heavens and the gods above, kill that bucket of rust!" whilst attacking the boss, a voice suddenly rang out from the bottom of the pile of rocks and dirt. Zhang Yang turned his head quickly and glance through. In the small gap of the rocks, he saw a man's head.

[Culonca] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 9,999 / 82,000

Defense: 450

The NPC name tag was green! That only meant that Zhang Yang cannot resort to brute force to get the Key Fragment!

The battle started for a while now yet Optimus had not made any

speech besides the loud, annoying metallic crashing sound at every movement. Since the start, Optimum had only attacked the party with its fully functioning arm. Every time the metallic arm crashed onto Zhang Yang, it would sent a mini quake to the ground, making it hard to stand firm.

Still, no matter how bombastic its movement or how awesome the after effect it made, a Yellow-Gold boss, will forever be at a Yellow-Gold level difficulty. Zhang Yang had no trouble to deal with a Violet-Platinum boss, what more a Yellow-Gold? Within two to three minutes, the boss crumbled down into a pile of mangled scrap metal.

At the moment the battle was over, the party checked on their damage report and found that Zhang Yang had contributed 42% of the entire damage output. It was close to half! The rest of the three attacking class player had to feign ignorance to this fact or it will be extremely shameful to face Zhang Yang. Treasure Water was the only player who did not bother to check the damage report, as he was a healer since the beginning of the game. It had become a habit for him, to not be bothered about damage.

Everyone was so impressed at Zhang Yang, and was praising him for having the ability to take on the boss single-handedly. For them to be nearly bystanders, they were extremely satisfied to have the ring as the reward and wanted Zhang Yang to claim all the battle loots.

Now that is what they say, 'You scratch my back, I'll scratch yours.'

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Don't be that way. If it weren't for you guys, I would not have killed any boss in the first place. Since everyone is part of the party, let's skip the formality and move on to the sharing. I'll have you know that you guys had saved my \*ss big time. I was here originally to find this NPC Culonca. If it weren't for you guys, I'd be wandering like a fool around the entire Snow Peach Mountain before I find this bugger! How about this? I'll take one equipment and you guys take the rest? Seems fair?"

Everyone exchanged a happy look and nodded their heads.

It's extremely hard to find someone as kind and generous as Zhang Yang these days.



# Chapter 381: The Return of Megatron

---

Zhang Yang had proactively taken only a pair Gray-Silver boots and moved to one side.

Treasure Water and his friends had understood Zhang Yang good intentions to give them all the equipment and felt extremely grateful for his actions. Unlike Zhang Yang, they had high demands of Yellow-Gold equipment.

"Hey guys? Could you speed things up at the part where you're supposed to help me?" cried Culonca. During the boss fight, the boss had not crushed the spot where Culonca was stuck. The attack from the boss had only managed to loosen the land around and made the small hole into a long crack in the earth. However, the gap was only as large as his head and Culonca could only stare from the inside.

Zhang Yang and the rest of the party member went towards the gap and forcefully pulled Culonca out by his hands.

"My word. I am but an old man. You, young lads, could have been a little gentler with me!" said the 60 years old man. Although the man was already an old text book, he was in amazing shape. He must have been a strong man when he was younger.

Culonca dust of the dirt on his clothes and turned to the party. "Still, I am grateful. Thank you for saving me from that wretched giant robot there."

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Someone Save Me. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Ring of Grandiose!’

Even though Zhang Yang had treated the ring as another item that was meant to be tossed into the Little Merchandise Shop, Treasure Water and his party treated it very much differently. Besides Zhang Yang alone, the rest of the party were smiling happily as if they had just won the lottery, while Zhang Yang had just drawn a dud.

While the party was chatting about the reward they had just obtained, Culonca walked towards the boss’ dead body and pulled out a glowing crystal forcefully from Optimus’s chest. "Hey. You guys seem strong. Would you like to help me on some errands? I will reward you handsomely!"

"What about it?" Thinking Five Million replied Culonca immediately. The first quest reward was already a Yellow-Gold ring, how would the next reward be after escalation?

Culonca smirked. "I need you to travel to the Crumbling Valley and search for a similar Mechanical Servant, called Megatron. Take this Energy Crystal and revive him, and bring him back here!"

‘Ding! Culonca has a quest for you: Revive Megatron. Will you accept it?’

Everyone accepted the quest without thinking twice.

[Revive Megatron] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Culonca wants you to find the deactivated Megatron at the Crumbling Valley. Use the Energy Crystal that Culonca has given you to revive the Mechanical Servant and lead the machine to Culonca. The Crumbling Valley is located to the North of Snow Peach Mountain.

How weird! The subsequent quest was lowered to C tier!

However, Zhang Yang did not give it much thought of it. He also did not care about the quest reward. The most important reason was that he only cared about triggering the quest that would lead him to the Dimensional Key Fragment. By any means, it's best to complete the quest and let it run its course.

Zhang Yang and the rest of the party summoned their mounts and took off. By then, the drop rate of a battle mount was still a scarcity. Among the four merry friends, only Blizzard General had a battle mount, the rest of the party only had normal mounts which were available for purchase at Level 40.

After descending down Snow Peach Mountain, the party headed north and after 20 minutes of traveling, they arrived in a cold, abandoned valley. Everything around the valley spoke of the aftermath of a great war. Rocks, pebbles, and a barren landscape illustrated the great history of what that had occurred there.

Crack!

As the party moved forward, a skeletal monster broke out of the earth and bared its fangs towards the party, displaying hostility. The skeletal monster was completely battered. Just like the Crumbling Valley, the monster had broken bones, tattered wounds, rotting flesh, and many other features that had given off a feeling of ancient war.

[Tattered Skeleton Soldier] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 84

HP: 84,000

Defense: 450

Up till this point, Zhang Yang had finally felt the annoyance of Spectre monsters. Anywhere he went, they would surely be a nuisance and would not let him be!

Zhang Yang unsheathed the new sword he has just obtained and sliced the enemy with a clean downward slash. At the same time, his shield was held up high and had blocked off another monster attack.

‘-3,989’ Normal attack.

‘-4,246!’ {Shield Bash}.

Although they had already witnessed Zhang Yang prowess from the boss before from before, they had not yet gotten used to seeing such a devastating damage coming from a player, and a Guardian at that!

"Boss Zhan Yu, how are you able to deal such high damage? That was just a normal sword attack and {Shield Bash} correct? Kindling, that s.o.b had only managed to deal 1,500 damage with his {Shield Bash}! How are you...What did you do?!" Everyone asked.

After having interacted with Zhang Yang for a short period of time, all four friends had already fallen for Zhang Yang, hard. One by one, they started calling him "boss" and "big bro". From the manner of their conversation, Zhang Yang recognized that they and the unknown player called "Kindling Justice" were second-year high school students who were living together in a dorm. From the way they address each other, Zhang Yang knew that they shared a strong bond with each other. Naturally, they would be playing together.

Zhang Yang posted the properties of the [Titan Chest Plate] into the group chat, explaining why Zhang Yang's {Shield Bash} was so strong, as if he had permanently triggered a Critical strike.

All five of attacked simultaneously and killed the Tattered Skeleton Soldier.

"I have been meaning to ask, why haven't you guys join a guild? You do know that joining a guild will grant you some extra bonus experience points?" Zhang Yang asked. He had judged and evaluated these four players, and felt like they possess some sort of prowess to them.

"We did. But, most of them were really strict. That's why we left. For the past few months, I think we had already joined and left at least 13 guilds? Guys?"

"Nah...At least 16!"

"Bro, I think we've nearly hit 18!"

Zhang Yang started to twitch. Even though Zhang Yang would agree that there were a few guilds that were famous for being extremely strict, but quitting 18 guilds would only prove that these lads were a problem. With that thought, Zhang Yang was a little worried and never mentioned anything else about guilds.

The party went on and encountered many more Skeleton Soldiers which dropped some gold coins, experience points, and occasionally, a few equipment. Which was nice. The party killed their way quickly and entered the deepest part of the valley.

Deep in the valley, there was a huge lake. The lake was extremely calm and clear, yet in the center of the lake was a huge mechanical servant's head. One of the mechanical eyes was blackened while the other was clear, yet dark. The head alone was big enough to be

a house, or a restaurant! Zhang Yang stood closer to the edge and could make out the rest of the massive body of the servant through the crystal-clear water.

"Are we supposed to revive that thing?" everyone asked. Since there were no name tags nor any clue to indicate its name, everyone could not be sure that it was Megatron.

"Let's try it out!" said Zhang Yang. He then summoned out his Mythical Turtle.

"Woah! Boss! Is that an Underwater Mount? You even had that?!" Treasure Water cried out in amazed. But when everyone saw the tier and the mount's HP, they could not say another word.

These guys had yet to even battle a Violet-Platinum boss, and yet Zhang Yang was already riding a Violet-Platinum mount! No wonder people will always say that there will always be someone better than you!

Zhang Yang hopped on the Mythical Turtle and jumped into the water. Like an arrow, Zhang Yang shot towards the massive servant and headed towards the head. He then aimed at the broken eye and shoved the Energy Crystal in it.

**BOOM!!**

A powerful shockwave blasted out in all direction, sending the waters off the lake. The shockwave continued and create a huge

tidal wave that dried the lake. Not just the lake, in fact, the entire valley started to vibrate and shake in a dangerous manner that sent stone and dirt off the top of the peaks.

As if they were standing on a woman's vibrating dildo, their vision started to degrade tremendously, unable to focus on anything or anyone.

"I think!" one of the screamed, trying to overlap the massive loud noise. "I think something is about to happen!"

"YOU THINK!? EVEN A BLIND PERSON COULD SEE THAT!"

"IDIOT! HOW WOULD A BLIND PERSON SEE!"

...

While the four of them were busy having their menial argument, the gigantic servant glowed with an intense brightness, creating an even more violent surge of shockwaves.

BOOM!

With an even bigger shockwave, the servant's eyes glowed like a miniature sun, that was too blinding to see, even when they had already squeezed their eyes shut!

Shush!



The servant stood up, creating yet another massive tidal wave that lowered the water level of the lake by several meters. Thud! Thud! Thud! The servant got out of the water and moved towards the land. Water droplets the size of a pickup truck splashed down from above. The light in its eyes dimmed down and turned into a blood red color. After standing still for only a few seconds, it turned its head to a certain direction and started moving toward it.

[Megatron, Alien Lifeform] (Yellow-Gold, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 1,760,000

Defense: 2,600

Alien lifeform? What is that? Does that mean that this machine was from outer space?!

Everyone exchanged a worried look. This contraption could have weighed a few million tonnes, easily, judging from the massive quake it made, every time it took a step. If it does not listen to the party, how do they bring back the servant back to Culonca?

By the time they were thinking of a method to draw its attention,

Megatron had already covered a good distance away from the party. Everyone summoned their mounts and chased after it.

Luckily, the direction where Megatron was moving towards was where Culonca was, and only then did the party relaxed.

Although Megatron movement speed was extremely fast, like nothing Zhang Yang had ever seen, they were still able to chase after it since the body of the servant was extremely huge, allowing Zhang Yang to see its figure, even though they were left far behind. By the time Zhang Yang had returned to Snow Peach Mountain, they were surprised at the sight of Megatron standing still at a place, completely motionless as if someone had hit the shutdown button.

When Zhang Yang approached closer, he could see Culonca was already climbing onto its shoulders with a big smile on his face

"You're late!" cried Culonca. He then did something to Megatron's chest plate and the servant's chest opened like a cockpit in the all-time famous, Japanese iconic symbol of mechas, mobile suit Gundam. Culonca jumped towards the cockpit and entered the contraption.

"Sorry, there's some trouble along the way!" said Zhang Yang from the top of his head.

Thinking Five Million immediately cried out, "Yo! We have brought Megatron back! What about our reward?"

"HAHAHAHAHA!" Culonca laughed maniacally. "What a bunch of stupid adventurers! Are you daft?" Culonca then went into Megatron and closed the hatch. A robotic voice echoed out of Megatron, "I merely gave you a few scraps and you're as obedient as a dog! Did you really think I would be that generous?! HAHAHAHAHA! Do you think I would even care about a few obnoxious adventurers? I had only used you to help me obtain Optimus Prime's Energy Crystal and travel to the dangerous land of the Crumbling Valley to revive Megatron!"

# Chapter 382: Foil the Plan

---

"F\*ck! What a sh\*tty NPC!" cried Bleeding Tornado.

Even though the NPC had obviously turned against the player, his name tag was still in the color of green. Zhang Yang and the other players could not attack him just yet.

Zhang Yang tried to trigger something to initiate the battle. "Culonca, just what is that servant?"

"HAHAHAHA! Now, that is the question I wanted to hear." His sinister laugh echoed through the cockpit. "This machine is a living mechanical being that came from outer space! For it possesses an immense power, strength, and the ability to transform! According to my extensive research, these aliens were divided into two factions! They are the Autobots and the Decepticons. The previous enemy that you had just defeated for me was the leader of the Autobots! He was the last of his kind! It was a pity that when I had revived him, he was still conscious and I was unable to control him!"

Culonca continued. "It was only later when I had found the body of Megatron, the fallen Decepticon. At the same time, I had also found out the hidden secret of controlling these mechanical servants. I had used that method and cast a spell on the body of Megatron which will allow me to control him, after his resurrection!"

Culonca started laughing maniacally. "However, the only Energy

Crystal was already used on Optimus Prime, and without it, I could not revive Megatron! Never had I thought that the leader of the Autobots was so strong that he had trapped me in the earth! That is, until you fools had freed me from my peril! Now that I've said it, I should be thanking you for it! Not only have you freed me, you have also brought me Megatron!

Zhang Yang had been bamboozled by the system again!

Culonca was a typical villain. After gaining massive power or the means to topple the hero, he will start monologuing, revealing all his plans to everyone as if he would have died if he had not.

"Do you know why did these mechanical servants had come to our world? They were here to search for a power source called the Allspark, an ancient artifact that could create mechanical life. Be it the Autobots or the Decepticons, they were both born from the power of the Allspark! To think that the precious treasure had fallen into our world! Haha! Now that I have gained control of Megatron, I could finally start searching for the Allspark! I shall use the power of the ancient artifact to create an indestructible army to dominate the world! I shall reform the earth as to how my ancient ancestors would want!"

"Ah.." Blizzard General clapped his hands as he had an epiphany. "Transformers!"

"I see it now! D\*mn! It's Optimus Prime and Megatron! How could I have forgotten about them!" cried Treasure Water.

"How nostalgic! How many years has it been since they had made the last movie?"

Everyone started to discuss the years when they had watched the movies and the cartoon animation of the Transformers series.

"I, Culonca must thank you for your contribution to my conquest. Now, you can die without having any regrets!" Culonca bellowed and the name tag "Megatron" turned red.

‘Ding! The quest: Revive Megatron, has been deleted!’

‘Ding! You have received a quest: Foil the Plan!’

[Foil the Plan] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Culonca has managed to gain control of the alien mechanical lifeform, Megatron. Planning to search for the ancient artifact Allspark, Culonca wants to dominate the world by creating an army of mechanical servants. Warrior! You have to stop his plans and save all of life’s creations. The fate of the world lies in your hands!

Progress: Defeat Megatron 0/1 Kill Culonca 0/1

Everyone’s quest log suddenly popped out and displayed a change in their original quests. Zhang Yang had not cared about it one bit, as long as he could kill Culonca and obtain the Dimensional Key Fragment from him forcefully.

"Guys, roll out!" Zhang Yang laughed at his own attempt at mimicking Optimus Prime's voice and battle call.

"Submit to the power of the Decepticons!" cried Culonca from the inside of Megatron chest. The movement of the giant mecha was rather rigid and slow, which automatically told everyone that Culonca was just a novice at "piloting" the machine. He then controlled Megatron's arm and thrust it towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang raised his shield to intercept the attack. With a loud crashing sound, Zhang Yang was pushed deep into the ground, making a meter-sized crater from where he was standing. Right then, Zhang Yang's strength was already off the charts, yet he had still been pushed back. With all the power he had, Zhang Yang forcefully repelled the attack and managed to parry Megatron's massive metallic arms back.

"Ho...Impressive! I have never assumed that you possess such brute strength! However, could you hold up forever with a mechanical servant?" cried Culonca as he taunted Zhang Yang. The machine then drew back its arm and thrust another punch at Zhang Yang.

‘-5,978!’

The attack had landed on Zhang Yang and dealt only 5% of Zhang Yang long 100,000 HP! The rest of the party did not stand by in awe, instead, they started their attack as soon as they had the chance. Everyone upheld their class roles; attackers attack, healers

heal.

"Urgh! Annoying pests! Death be upon you lot!" Culonca growled and left Zhang Yang be. He then moved Megatron towards Blizzard General and smashed him with the massive mechanical palm.

‘-12,073!’

When the massive damage dropped on Blizzard General, he panicked. Colors started to fade from his face as he has just realized that he had lost close to one-third of his HP! He managed to survive, as he was riding on a Gray-Silver battle mount, or else he would have lost more than 50% of his original character HP!

After one attack on Blizzard General, Megatron left him and switched his target to Thinking Five Million. Similar to all his previous attacks, Megatron smashed him with his massive palm.

Something was odd. The battle with Megatron was extremely different compared to any other battle that any player had ever encountered. The boss seemed to be immune to the aggro system! It will attack anyone, and anytime he wanted!

Based on damage alone, Zhang Yang would take the lead in rank and position. Also, as a Guardian, the amount of aggro generated by him would have made sure that no one in the party could ever OT! However, the situation now begged to differ!

They checked the aggro list and found out that everyone's aggro



value was changing faster than a traffic light could! Even when those players had not made any attack on Megatron would have their aggro surged up to the maximum, whereas Zhang Yang, who was attacking furiously from the start had his aggro value dropped to the lowest!

Was there a bug in the system?

Zhang Yang could not help but think of an explanation.

"Megatron is just a servant! Who he attacks is determined by Culonca! Since Culonca is hidden inside the machine, he could not take damage, and would not have his aggro controlled! He can freely attack whoever he wants!"

The rest of the party started to panic when they heard Zhang Yang's explanation.

Zhang Yang quickly added. "Blizzard General! Use {Vanish} and leave the battle! Do not think of continuing the fight. The three of you! Hide behind me, I will try to move around to prevent Megatron from attacking you!"

"Hohoho! Feel the power of Megatron!" Culonca taunted. "Think about it! No sooner after this, I will create more soldiers just like this! I will create an empire far larger than the Imperial Heaven's Empire! No matter who it is, be it the Spectres, the Demons, Humans, all Demi-humans alike shall bow down to my reign!"

"Hmph. Just because you have obtained a little bit of power, you think you can rule the world with it?" Zhang Yang scoffed. This Megatron contraption was just a Yellow-Gold boss entity. Even if Culonca could create a million more like it, a Celestial tier boss could easily wipe everything out of existence with just a lift of its finger! Even Princess Serena, a Mythical tier entity could easily wipe out every living being in the land with her sword!

"I am the descendant of the mighty Luis Kant Muer Witwicky! I will re-create...NO! I will make a new glorious empire, far better and stronger than any empire had ever existed! My name shall forever be etched in the walls of history!" Culonca screamed as if he was greatly offended by Zhang Yang's menial scoffs, which led to several consecutive attacks on Zhang Yang.

"Hm...I know now why people say that a tank must have an annoying, punchable face! Big bro Zhan Yu is sure is strong! Not only does he have the skills, but he also has a face that could endure a good punch!"

"Haha! Yeah! He could grab the boss aggro when the boss had no fixed aggro to begin with! Go Zhan Yu!"

"Guys, it's not just the face. Big bro Zhan Yu has also a poisonous mouth that could literally make any person, in this case, the boss angry!"

"As expected from Zhan Yu boss! Go Zhan Yu Go!"

Everyone slapped Zhang Yang on the back enthusiastically,

which left him wordless. If he could, he would have paused the fight for a while to give them all a good slap on the face before continuing the fight.

No wonder these guys have always been jumping guilds! It was probably because of their loud blabbering mouths! Perhaps, a good number of players were sick of them!

"Stop yapping! Attack the boss!"

Due to Zhang Yang's consistent verbal insults on Culonca, the boss had only attacked him. From the looks of it, verbal assaults were especially effective at gaining aggro, since Culonca is a man of pride. He thought highly of his own ancestors and would never accept insults to them. Now that most of the aggro was on Zhang Yang, everyone else could lower their guard a little and attack the boss.

Truthfully, Zhang Yang could easily take on the boss without a hitch. However, now that the other party members had joined the fight, he would have to play his role of the tank and protect his teammates. Instead of improving the battle, their presence in the battle field had only affected Zhang Yang's performance. Still, it was only this special boss.

In just three minutes, Megatron's HP was cut down to only 100,000.

"No...! No! This cannot be!" Culonca started to panic. "Impossible! It's not possible! You could not defeat me! You would

not defeat me!"

"It's time to face reality, Culonca!" said Thinking Five Million with confidence. Everyone else laughed at his taunt. Just when the rest of the team want to pitch in their share of insults, a sudden loud noise was heard.

WOOOOOOONG.....

A sudden glow in the one eye of Megatron shone and its entire mechanical body stopped, as if the machine had just run out of power!

"GRAH! Move! Move and kill these bastards for me! Piece of trash! I revived you! Move! Aren't you but nothing but a piece of rusting tin can!?" Culonca voice could be heard from outside the cockpit.

Immune!

Immune!

...

The party had not stopped attacking even when the machine had stopped moving, however, their attacks seem to have no effect on the machine. Their attacks were only responded with the word "Immune" as they attacked.

Megatron opened its mouth and cried, "None shall insult the great Megatron!"

The chest plate hatch opened and reveal Culonca inside the cockpit. Megatron forcefully grabbed Culonca from inside and tossed him to the ground.

"I AM MEGATRONNNNNNN!!!!" cried the machine as it extended out its arm and legs. He then stomped on Culonca and bellowed, " I am King! I am the strongest! No one can control Megatron!"

"GUUAH!"

Culonca spat blood as he was being stepped on. A sudden "ding" was heard and a silver piece of metal fell off his body.

Zhang Yang focused on the item and realized it was the Dimensional Key Fragment!

Just when he was about to move towards it, he realized that he was frozen in place!

He had been forced into a cinematic scene!

# Chapter 383: Search and Destroy the Allspark

---

"Dimensional power!?" said Megatron as he noticed the key fragment. He then held out his palm, and the key fragment somehow moved on its own and flew into his palm, as if Megatron had the power of telekinesis, despite being a mechanical being.

"Marvelous! With this power of Dimensional Travel, I can finally complete my search for the Allspark! Beware my words, Earth Dwellers! For now, I am wounded! You shall live for another day! But I will be back! And I will lead an army to dominate this pathetic world!"

Beep Beep Boop Ching Klang!

The mechanical servant transformed and folded itself into the shape of a jet. He then took off at an intense speed, leaving the airspace with a loud sonic boom and disappeared in the air. Megatron flew like a jet, but would be possible to chase after him with a flying mount. However, right now, there were nothing Zhang Yang and the rest of the party could do but stare blindly at the Megatron leaving, with only a fraction of his HP left, with the Dimensional Key Fragment at that too!

Everyone regained control of their character only after Megatron had disappeared.

‘Ding! Megatron has obtained a piece of the Dimensional Key Fragment! He will use it to complete his search for the Allspark!

His intention to the entire land is naught but dire threat! Warrior!  
You have to stop him!’

‘Ding! You have accepted the side quest: Search and Destroy the Allspark!’

[Search and Destroy the Allspark] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Zhan Yu, you must search and locate Megatron before he locates the position of the Allspark and summons an army of mechanical soldiers! You have to find him and kill him. The Allspark must be destroyed in order to foil any future threats to the land. Tips: Dimensional Key Fragments will resonate with each other!

Progress: Destroy the Allspark 0/1

Zhang Yang was stunned. He quickly turned to the party and asked, "Have you guys obtain any new quests?"

"Nope!" said the guys with a straight face.

Zhang Yang finally understood what was happening. The side quest that had just triggered was only given to players with the original quest "Meteor Sword". For any other player, the quest would be concluded as soon as they were done with the quest "Foil the Plan". As for Megatron and the Allspark...if he had directly tried to invade any major city, he will be killed instantly without any chance of resistance. There are many other Celestial tier

bosses in each of those cities!

Culonca had received a major strike from Megatron but he had not died just yet. From the looks of his HP bar, he was just one clean sword strike away from being sent to the graveyard. Wrenching in pain, Culonca spat out a mouthful of his own blood while still monologuing on his own, "Impossible! There's no way! I've worked for more than 10 years for this! I will never accept this ending! Never!"

"Oh! Just die already!" cried Blizzard General as he laid down the final blow, successfully ending Culonca's life.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Foil the Plan! Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!'

Zhang Yang sighed at the reward the quest had given. Nothing but a luxurious amount of experience points was the least of what they had expected. The four merry friends cried all sort of insults at the dead body of Culonca, cursing him to come back alive so that they could beat the crap out of him again!

The game utilized some sort of player's lens perspective; in cases where an NPC had died, the player who had just completed the quest will never again see him! If the quest did not belong to a hidden quest or a special quest, other players could still trigger the quest, but not the same player that had already completed it.

Culonca was just an elite tier monster, naturally, he would not drop anything special but a few [Silk] and coins. Zhang Yang had



not even bothered to look at the drops, lest being the other four players.

Zhang Yang opened the world map and noticed a small blimp at the northern part, far from where he was. Even though it was far away, this was the first time a quest had provided the location for where Zhang Yang needed to go next! Zhang Yang jumped on his white bear, bid everyone goodbye and rode towards the bleep on the map.

After riding for a least 2 hours or so, Zhang Yang left the grassy plains and found himself in a huge wasteland, covered in ice and snow. Not far from where Zhang Yang stood, he saw a huge hole. Zhang Yang approached the hole. Immediately, he had a bad intuition, and tried to test the depth of the hole by throwing a piece of rock into it and waited. He waited and waited until god knows how long but there was no sound of the rock reaching the bottom of it!

If Zhang Yang did jump into the hole, he would probably be jumping straight to the domain of Lucifer! At least, Zhang Yang had a way to prevent death, for he had the skill of the Heart of the Death Knight, which would grant him 10 seconds invincibility to nullify even falling damage! But the main problem was the fact that the hole devoid of light! There was no way for Zhang Yang to even know if he is to about to reach the bottom!

Jump? Don't jump? Or jump on another day? Zhang Yang kept on contemplating hard. He then thought to himself, right then, it was impossible for any player to possess any Flying Mount! As far as the system goes, it would never allow a player to jump to their

death, when clearly the situation calls for it! If that was the case, then...could there be a lake at the bottom of this bottomless pit?

Zhang Yang ruffled his hair into a mess. Frustrated at his indecisiveness, Zhang Yang made sure that there was no one around the area before he let out a frustrated scream.

"F\*ck it!" Zhang Yang said. If he dies, then so be it. It's not like he would lose any experience points or level. A mere 10% loss of equipment durability is nothing, it's not like it would burn his pocket to fix them anyway!

Zhang Yang unsummoned the bear and took a deep breath.

"LEEROY JENKINS!!!!!" Zhang Yang screamed as he jumped into the hole. The sound of the wind brushing across his ears was so loud that he could not even hear his own scream! The speed at which he gained started to have a piercing effect, and Zhang Yang felt a slight painful pull from the side of his cheeks.

Shush!

At the speed of him falling down, Zhang Yang could have sworn that he would be the fastest man alive! Still, he was still gaining speed! The giant hole was so deep and dark, and Zhang Yang felt a great nervousness at the beginning of his fall. However, as the time dragged on, Zhang Yang was still falling, eventually, he felt bored and irritated. Nothing but the sound of the wind accompanied him as he fell. There was nothing, or rather, due to the absence of light in the hole, it was just darkness and wind.

1 minute...5 minute...30 minutes! Zhang Yang had been falling for 30 minutes, and still counting!

Since he was playing the game in his sleeping state, however bored he became, he would not feel tired. He then decided to call on Wei Yan Er and teased her for the fun of it. This little brat was a real fun to tease!

Hmm? Finally!

A bright blinding light pierced Zhang Yang's vision like a sharp needle. As he got used to the presence of light, he began to see what lay beneath the hole! As he approached the bottom, he finally saw a blurry reflection of himself. It was a huge lake!

Splash!

Like a bullet hitting the water, Zhang Yang prepared himself and made himself fall feet first, while crossing his arms. He remembered it well, as an experience he had at a water theme park's water slide. Since the speed of which he entered the water was too quick for any human eyes to catch, the splash was not any regular splash, Zhang Yang had dived down at such tremendous speed that he had made a tsunami of the lake! Even though it was water that he was crashed into, the massive repelling force was still too strong that it was not dampened so easily! Zhang Yang had forcefully taken a huge damage, his HP dropped from 78,440 to only 7,241! And that was Zhang Yang we were talking about. If it were someone else, the sheer repulsive force of crashing into the

water at that speed would easily kill someone!

Still, anyone could easily survive that with survival skills that could grant damage absorption, or temporary invincibility.

It took some time, but Zhang Yang managed to swim his way back to the surface of the water. Once he managed to get a breath of air, he summoned the Mythical Turtle and shot his way to land. Zhang Yang got himself out and was immediately dried up. He felt a little relieved for surviving such a fall and felt like Wei Yan Er could have fun at this place.

From where he stood, Zhang Yang noticed that there was nothing but one circular wall at the edge of the lake. He turned and saw another exit besides the hole from where he jumped in. The exit was a small ledge which could lead him out of the lake and into a huge hill.

Like the movie "Journey to the Center of the Earth", Zhang Yang felt a euphoric moment of discovery. The place was practically a rain forest with plants and grass all over the place. The source of light that Zhang Yang saw early was emitted from a fiery ball hanging on top of the "sky". The ball of fire was not the sun, but it was still shining brightly and spreading heat across the land.

The forest was filled with beings of various size and shapes, similar to what you would see in a rain forest in the real world. However, due to the different environment, the animals here had undergone a different kind of living process. Of by which, the only major difference Zhang Yang could observe was their size. They were huge! There was a bug the size of a real-life bull and a bull the

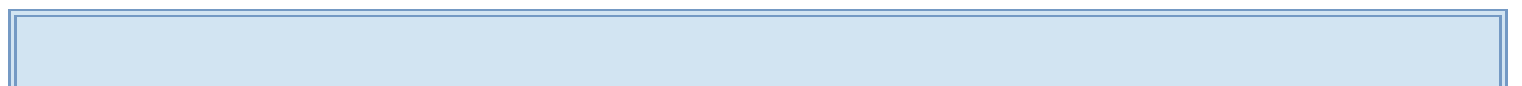
size of a 6-story building! There was even an eagle so big, that each side of its massive wing could measure at least a hundred meter long! Just when he thought that Megatron was huge, he was nothing but a regular human size mechanical robot when he dwells among these colossal beasts! And Zhang Yang was nothing but an ant! In fact, an ant could probably be bigger than he is, in this amazing world.

Naturally, size was nothing when judging the power they held. Zhang Yang had even encountered three Celestial tier boss that were no bigger than you and I. The only difference they had was the immense power they held.

Zhang Yang opened the world map to check his location, but only saw a blank map with his avatar, and the bleep was at the same location. In the mini-map however, he saw an arrow that pointed Northwest from his location. It was pointing to the location of the sixth fragment of the Dimensional Key. However, due to the great distance between them, the mini-map could not be enlarged any bigger and had replaced the location with an arrow pointing to its direction. Zhang Yang summoned the Gold-Eared Bear King and rode towards the direction.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Within a few steps, Zhang Yang was already interrupted by a loud stomping noise that had sent tremors beneath his feet. At his front, he saw a ridiculously huge mountain goat rushing out of a bush, and charging towards him at great speed.



[Earth Core Berserking Antelope] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

Facing a beast as large as a building, Zhang Yang could not help but feel like a tiny little ant. However, just because the monster was incredibly huge, it did not mean it was any stronger than a regular Elite in this game!

"Meeeeeeaaa!" the Antelope bleats and lowered its head to charge towards Zhang Yang with its horns facing him. Although Zhang Yang felt intimidated by its sheer size, it was just a millisecond before Zhang Yang regained his confidence. No matter how big or scary it looked, it did not change the fact that it was only a Level 85 elite tier monster, having the same attack power as any other Level 85 elite tier monster. Zhang Yang felt a little funny, thinking that he was afraid of the Antelope that had only 5,000 to 6,000 attack power!

With a whack and slash, the Antelope fought bravely and even managed to gain a 50% attack power bonus after entering the Berserk state. However, it died in the hands of Zhang Yang. It may still fight and defeat other players but while facing Zhang Yang, the monster would only be facing death itself, with nothing but a short struggle.

The Antelope had dropped two to three counts of [Antelope Fur].

Zhang Yang proceeded on and slew a few more Earth Core Berserking Antelope and picked up a few more [Antelope Fur]. Although these elite monsters would only drop fur, Zhang Yang was not disappointed at all, because the forest he was in was filled abundance with many kinds of herbs. Although it was a shame, that the herbs found here were not rare, like the [Zombie Moss].

Along the way, as he collected more herbs, Zhang Yang headed towards the Northeast and came across a huge cave, with crystals forming on the walls! The cave was as huge as a large stadium, with a ceiling measuring at several hundred meters tall. There was literally nothing but crystal pillars in the cave. Like walking inside a kaleidoscope, the crystal forming the walls were of all sort of colors, like red, yellow, green, and all the hues of the rainbows! Due to the light reflected and refracted by the crystals, the cave was illuminated clearly, but as far as Zhang Yang could see, he could not determine the end of the cave.

Although the cave was so huge that it could probably fit Megatron in his jet form, it was still considered as an "indoor" environment. Zhang Yang was immediately ejected from the bear as soon as he set foot into the cave. Zhang Yang sighed and shrugged it off.

Tat...tat...tat...

Echoes of his footsteps could be heard resonating throughout the

entire cave.

As he walked forward, Zhang Yang thought that it would bring a huge advantage to any player who gets hold and uses the Allspark. As per what Megatron and Culonca have explained, the Allspark could be used to create countless mechanical soldiers. If a player could use it, it would summon an army at no cost, which would allow him or her to win any sorts of battle!

It was a shame that the quest would have him destroy the Allspark, making it impossible for anyone or anything to possess it.

PEW!!

Just when Zhang Yang was having his deep thoughts, he saw a green hue shooting through the cave. It was a large green-emerald crystal pillar that flew towards him like a missile!

With lightning speed, Zhang Yang lifted his shield and activated {Block} out of instinct.

BOOM!

Although Zhang Yang's speed was so fast that it could even rival the speed of sound, the peak of the crystal had hit Zhang Yang's shield at the top angle, causing Zhang Yang to lose his balance and stumble back. At the same time, a huge, red colored mechanical servant appeared in his sight. The mecha was equipped with two huge cannon-like weapons on each of his shoulders. In his right



arm, he had a long chain coiled up.

[Starscream] (Yellow-Gold, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 85

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: One of Megatron's right-hand man. A cunning war general.

What the hell? Another Transformer character?!

After Starscream's first attack was blocked, it thrust out his right arm and uncoiled the black chain. Like a long viper, Starscream sent the black chain towards Zhang Yang and chained him by the waist.

‘-6,212!’

The attack was too quick and accurate, that Zhang Yang had no time dodging it.

"Earth dweller! Was is you who attacked Lord Megatron!" Starscream shrieked. His robotic voice was truly annoying, being high pitched and loud. "Was Megatron so debilitated, that he allowed himself to be wounded by a mere puny warrior? He even lost one of his eyes! Looks like it's time for me to lead the Decepticons!"

A charging sound was heard from his left shoulder and the cannon fired a light beam which blasted Zhang Yang directly at his chest.

‘Ding! Starscream had used {Laser Beam}!’

‘-10,170!’

Zhang Yang took a great amount damage. He then immediately opened the damage log.

"You have received 10,170 Natural Damage (3,000 damage reduced, 1,830 damage absorbed) from Starscream's {Laser Beam}!"

D\*mn! What a cheating attack! The boss had a physical attack, a binding chain, and a cannon attack! How would one actually defeat it?!

Fortunately, the laser attack was strong, but it had a long cool down, so the boss could not use it consecutively. That or Zhang Yang would have already been shot down like a honeycomb.

To counter a boss with high Defense, Zhang Yang had to rely on {Cripple Defense} first, and then only laid down all his attacking skills. It was a pity that Starscream had suddenly ambushed him, or else Zhang Yang would have time to swap his bear for the turtle. Because of that, he had lost a great deal of DPS power.

With him alone, Zhang Yang would not be stupid enough to charge recklessly. The cave interior was filled with a great number of crystal pillars. He could use the pillars to take cover from the boss' attacks and restrict the boss' movement due to his colossal size!

PIANG! PIANG!

As Starscream gave chase, he had already broken many crystal pillars. This was why having a small size had an advantage. Just when the boss was about to attack, Zhang Yang had moved away and forced the boss to be blocked by one or two pillars. The boss would have to resort to attacking the pillars in order to clear a path towards Zhang Yang. Utilizing this strategy, Zhang Yang had brought out the full potential of the pillars, almost taking no damage at all! All but the laser beam was negated. Zhang Yang would still have to take a clean hit from the laser beam. Luckily, the laser attack had a 20 second cool down time, providing Zhang Yang enough time to heal himself back with [Healing Potions] and [Fountain of Life]! Besides that, he also had other skills such as the {Berserker's Heal}, and the {Shield Wall} that could easily allow Zhang Yang to cut down the boss HP to 10%!

## Chapter 384: Devastator

---

"What power you have, for a tiny little earth dweller!" cried Starscream. He wavered a little and withdrew a few steps back. Suddenly, his massive body made a huge loud crack and he then transformed into a huge jet plane just like Megatron. In this case, Starscream's jet plan was red in color. It fired its afterburner and was about to take off.

If Zhang Yang was slower by a little later, Starscream would have already shot through the cave and disappeared just like Megatron did back then. Zhang Yang could not allow it to happen. He then jumped to the front and activated {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, and the ring {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}.

The shadow formed and quickly seeped into Starscream's body. At the same time, an old orc mage appeared by Zhang Yang's side and started chanting a spell.

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

In just a few seconds, Starscream's HP dropped from 10%, all the way to 0. Starscream was able to only travel a few hundred meters when his HP was completely drained, causing him to "die" and crash violently into the pile of crystal fragments. With a loud explosion, Starscream mechanical body exploded into many parts and was sent flying in all directions.

Zhang Yang ran to the body and picked up a funny item called [Laser Cannon]. Besides that, he had also picked up two other Yellow-Gold equipment which was not worth mentioning, and six other Gray-Silver equipment.

[Laser Cannon] (Usable)

Use: Deals 10,000 Natural Damage to all targets in a 3 x 3 meters area.

Range: 30 meters.

Cool Down Time: 1 hour.

Uses left: 10/10

Level Requirement: 80

The [Laser Cannon] looked somewhat of a miniature version of the magic cannon that was etched on the walls of Zhang Yang's

Thunderstorm Castle. Though it may have the same AoE attack power, its damage was greatly reduced and had a long attack interval. It also had a limited usage, which made it a mere toy. A powerful, lethal toy at that!

Zhang Yang picked up all the loot and went on his way.

Not long, another mechanical servant came up and attacked Zhang Yang.

[Brand New Mechanical Robot] (Elite, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 800

Even though the monster's defense was strong, Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} and {Cripple Defense}. Basically, Zhang Yang would be hitting him directly, never to worry about high or low defense. Zhang Yang only needed to worry about a monster's defense when other players were around. Having the Sword of Purging Devourer, Zhang Yang took a few minutes to reduce the moving mechanical robot to a pile of scrap metal!

Zhang Yang reached out to collect the loot and picked up four

counts of [Mithril]!

[Mithril] was a type of metal mineral that can be found in maps in Level 60 or higher. The Mining Cave that Lone Desert Smoke occupies also produces this kind of minerals. [Mithril] is one of the hottest selling minerals in the game! The mineral will remain as a hot-selling item as long as new players keep coming in. Until new players stop joining in the game, the item will forever remain in high demand.

The monster did not drop any coins directly, but a single [Mithril] could be sold for 1 to 2 gold coins! It was a worthwhile trade! Zhang Yang had killed more than several hundred mechanical servants and discovered that not all of them would drop [Mithril]. Instead, they only dropped worthless [Iron Bar] and [Solid Iron Bar]. Only a few would actually drop [Refined Iron] and [Thorium]. [Thorium] is a kind of mineral, higher tiered than [Mithril,] which would normally spawn in maps higher than Level 90!

After half an hour or killing, Zhang Yang had faced six larger mechanical servants. They were slightly apart one another. One of them, which was placed at the further left, had its eyes glowing in a weird, reddish hue. While the machine with the glowing red eyes was active, the rest were completely motionless.

[Hook] (Gray-Silver, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 880,000

Defense: 1,200

Note: A mechanical part of the great war general, the Devastator.

"Filthy scum!" cried the truck with a giant hook. The truck was all too similar to the tow trucks that are used by law enforcers to tow away illegal parking cars. The truck transformed itself into a humanoid figure and weaved his right arm (without the hook) towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang remained motionless and did not even bother to use {Block} against a mere Gray-Silver tier boss.

‘-2,778!’

Zhang Yang took a clean hit without resisting and only received damage that could not even surpass 3,000!

Zhang Yang smirked confidently. He had nearly equipped himself with a complete set of Violet-Platinum equipment, on the contrary, the boss could even call Zhang Yang the real boss!

After a good whack, smack, and splat, Zhang Yang had only



traded a {Berserker's Heal} for the boss' life.

Boom.

The mechanical body of the boss exploded in flames, which immediately died down and dropped one Gray-Silver equipment and three Green-Copper equipment.

Fuuuuuooong...

As the next moment, the second mechanical servant was activated. A bright glow flashed at the head lights. However, it did not immediately start its attack. In fact, there was a progress bar appearing above its character, which indicated it required some time, a total of 20 seconds before the battle starts.

Zhang Yang quickly seized the chance and swapped out the Mythical Turtle in place of the bear. With the little time left, Zhang Yang sat down and started munching on recovery snacks to heal himself. Before, he had no time to properly judge the battle beforehand, but now, Zhang Yang knew that he had to fight a total of six Gray-Silver bosses. Luckily, the bosses did not jump on him altogether. Even though they were playing tag with each other, at least they were "polite" enough to give Zhang Yang 20 seconds to prepare for the next fight.

[Excavator] (Gray-Silver, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 880,000

Defense: 1,200

Note: A mechanical part of the great war general the Devastator.

20 seconds later, the machine was activated. After spinning around, it transformed itself into a bipedal form and started to charge towards Zhang Yang.

Shush!

The massive shovel was sent smashing downward and smashed Zhang Yang right on his head.

After another round of one-sided battle, Zhang Yang managed to defeat the Excavator even quicker now that he had help from the Mythical Turtle. In just 1 minute and a half, Zhang Yang had wiped the floor with the boss and had only consumed a bottle of [Fountain of Life]. If the environment was not an indoor setting, Zhang Yang could have gotten atop his battle mount and defeat the boss without using any healing, midway into the fight!

After clearing the second boss, Zhang Yang sat down again to heal himself and waited for the third boss to come at him.

The third battle was with a Cement Mixer, and Zhang Yang had only used a {Berserker's Heal} just when it had finished its cool down.

The fourth battle was with a Flattener, at which Zhang Yang had used {Shield Wall}, healing over 150% of his HP.

The fifth battle was with a Crusher, and Zhang Yang had used {Berserker's Heal} just after finishing its cool down.

For the last battle with a Pick-Up Truck, Zhang Yang had consumed a bottle of Grade 7 Transmutation Level 3 Healing potion and another same bottle after a minute into the fight. He had killed the boss with only 3,245 HP remaining.

Truthfully speaking, Zhang Yang had no need to consume any healing potions to fight the boss. He could have just allowed the Mythical Turtle to tank the boss for a bit and share the damage load. Naturally, the entire battle duration would be prolonged slightly. Zhang Yang had chosen not to be cheap and used the potion anyway to save some time instead. Zhang Yang had no need to save any gold coins in the first place!

After killing the boss, Zhang Yang quickly sat down to heal himself back to full health. In any event, where a wave of machines come to attack him, it would be quite an annoyance but not fatal to him.

Fuunnng! Fuuunnng!

When Zhang Yang was healing, all six dead machines glowed with an intense red color as if they were resonating with each other!

Zhang Yang had no idea what was happening, were they trying to revive and attack him in one go?

"We had underestimated you, earth dweller!" All six bosses spoke in unison. After a loud crashing and clanking sound was heard, the machine rose up and started to merge together weird shape and sizes! Like the robots combining themselves in the show, Power Rangers, the machines transformed themselves into parts that fitted to the main body; heads, hands, and even legs!

Kachack! Kang! Klang!

All six parts joined in together and formed a complete, colossal machine!

A progress bar appeared on the top of its character with a 30 seconds countdown timer!

[Devastator] (Yellow-Gold, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 1,760,000

Defense: 2,000

Note: Formed from the combination of Hook, Excavator, Cement Mixer, Flattener, Crusher, and Pick-Up Truck!

What the hell! After fighting so many bosses, Zhang Yang was actually expecting to fight something even stronger than a regular Yellow-Gold! It was actually rather disappointing for him!

However, a Yellow-Gold boss could never be compared with a Gray-Silver boss. Even though Zhang Yang had high confidence in his battle strategy to defeat the enemy, he had never underestimated an enemy's battle prowess! He used his remaining time to heal himself quickly.

After 20 seconds, Zhang Yang had recovered to full health and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss.

Immune!

Obviously, the system would not allow the boss to be vulnerable to players' attacks during the "preparation" time of 30 seconds!

...3...2...1...0!

"You have proven yourself to be among the strongest in this planet! For, it would require the six of us to defeat you!" the Devastator growled in a deep, mumble. It then thrust out his right arm and attacked Zhang Yang. After combining, the boss' mega structure was so huge, that it might be even larger than Megatron! Its fist was so huge that it could cast a gigantic shadow when it was about to smash Zhang Yang from above.

What a self-loving, narcissistic boss! So what, if it was a Yellow-Gold tier? There were many other bosses of the same tier, having stronger, deadlier, and faster attacks!

After all six Gray-Silver bosses were combined, their power had indeed gained a massive boost. Still, how strong they were, they were only a Level 88 Yellow-Gold boss. Far from the prowess of a Violet-Platinum boss, let alone a Mythical tier.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and delayed in attacking the boss. Instead, he unequipped his shield and attacked without it. He wanted the Mythical Turtle to gain more aggro, allowing it to be the temporary tank. Having close to 4,000 DPS, the Mythical Turtle's total damage output was only a little higher than Zhang Yang, and he could not use {Block} reflect damage and {Shield Bash}. As long as Zhang Yang held back just a little, the Mythical Turtle could maintain its aggro value.

After activating the Mythical Turtle's {Turtle Shell Defense}, Zhang Yang re-equipped his shield and started to attack after 20 seconds. With haste, Zhang Yang gained the boss attention and became the main target of the boss.

Zhang Yang activated the turtle's {Wild Recovery} and {Madness}, and the Mythical Turtle recovered rapidly.

Zhang Yang began to attack with all he had. After obtaining 5 pieces of the Titan's set equipment, it had granted Zhang Yang's {Shield Bash} much higher DPS. The damage output for {Shield Bash} after {Cripple Defense} was 4,696. Having 6 seconds of cooldown interval, the additional DPS it added to Zhang Yang's overall DPS was 783. If he was lucky enough to trigger a Critical strike, it would add much more DPS!

Nothing but wails of pain coming, only from Zhang Yang's enemy, the Decepticon, Devastator!

# Chapter 385: The New Servant

---

In the cartoon, Devastator was one of the savage generals of Decepticons, and its iconic combination function was extremely strong!

Admittedly, to smack around a strong villain from a childhood cartoon was a very exhilarating moment! Zhang Yang was very excited, as this cartoon was a classic, over 60 years ago.

{Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall} and [Heart of the Death Knight]'s effect were activated in succession, and Zhang Yang drank the Grade 10 Transmutation potions like a jug of water, while also drinking a health potion. Then, he used {Rearm} to reactivate {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} once again. He vigorously bombarded Devastator' HP down to less than 10%!

"No! D\*mn it, earthling!" Devastator roared as its body pivoted, its left arm suddenly falling off and transforming into Long Haul, "I will crush you to pieces! I will!"

Long Haul remained the same Gray-Silver boss that was close to death, with one HP remaining, but it carried an invincible effect which made it immune to all damage as long as Devastator still stood.

This means that as long as the main body is not destroyed, even with Long Haul having only 1 HP, it would never die!

This was another kind of a boss' berserk mode!



Zhang Yang was holding on to his {Titan's Shield}, the key to his survival! Currently, he retained only 50,000 HP, which was far from critical!

Qiang qiang qiang!

Devastator' HP was depleted by another 2%, and its right leg also suddenly became separated from its main body, which then transformed into Bonecrusher, and continued launching aggressive attacks towards Zhang Yang!

Three versus one!

6%, Devastator' left leg suddenly broke off and turned into Hook!

The boss had lost its two legs and was unable to move, but its huge hand was enough to cover the distance of 30 meters. So, if Zhang Yang wanted to continue attacking the boss, he had to also remain in the range of the boss' attacks!

With the four bosses allied and attacking Zhang Yang at the same time, Zhang Yang's HP also started to decrease rapidly!

4%!

The boss' right arm finally fell off as well, and turned into nothing but scrap. Five versus one!

Zhang Yang thought that the boss' main body was a dummy, but Devastator's eyes suddenly flashed and emitted two rays of laser that instantly dealt 8,000 damage to Zhang Yang!

{Titan's Shield} initiated!

2%! The main body part of Devastator also transformed into Mixmaster. At present, there was only Scavenger still intact as Devastator' head. To bombard the boss' remaining 2% HP, regardless of {Thunder Strike}, {Horizontal Sweep} or {Blast Wave}, any of these AoE skills could also kill the six bosses at the same time!

A Yellow-Gold boss and five Gray-Silver bosses were definitely powerful, but {Titan's Shield} could absorb 300,000 damage which was equivalent to four times of Zhang Yang's HP! Who else could defeat Zhang Yang?!

1%!

0%!

Zhang Yang finally bombarded Devastator' last drop of HP, and Devastator' huge head also turned into Scavenger's appearance!

The six Gray-Silver bosses only had 1 HP, and their invincible effect had disappeared!

{Horizontal Sweep}!’

Zhang Yang slashed them with his shiny sword, and six bosses fell defeated at the same time. A gold chest dropped from them.

Zhang Yang quickly opened up the chest. Regardless of opening whichever grade of chests, players would always be excited!

[Servant: Devastator] (Silver-tier)

Use: Summons Devastator as your servant in battle. Lasts for 5 minutes. You can only summon one Servant at a time. Summoning any Servant will cause all Servants to be in cooldown. Cooldown time: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

Binds on pick up.

Zhang Yang thought for a while, and decided to pick up the Servant directly as his original [Servant: Clear Lotus] was already outdated, and although her {Substitute} was still strong, 30 minutes of cooldown just to summon her for a {Substitute} skill was not really worth it!

Zhang Yang then summoned Devastator to see its standards.



[Devastator] (Silver-Tier Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 22,400 (25,980 with {Vitality Aura})

Defense: 2,500

Melee Damage: 4,689 – 5,289 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds, DPS: 1,663)

Skills: {Quake Strike}, {Force Blast}, {Heavy Fist}

{Quake Strike}: Beats the ground continuously with both arms, causes 2,000 physical damage every 2 seconds to all the surrounding targets within 20x20 meters. Lasts for 10 seconds. During this period, the caster must always maintain a channeling status. Cooldown time: 5 minutes.

{Force Blast}: Causes all the targets within caster's 5 meters range to be knocked back 10 meters behind and interrupts the targets' casting bar. Cooldown time: 5 minutes.

{Heavy Fist}: Uses a huge fist to strike a target, and the target will receive a melee damage equivalent to 100% of physical damage. Cooldown time: 5 seconds.

This Servant's basic damage was similar to a player who was equipped with Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment, but its offensive skills were not strong enough, which was {Heavy Fist} only. Although both {Quake Strike} and {Force Blast} were powerful skills, their cooldown times were too long.

However, this Servant was huge!

Zhang Yang was only as tall as Devastator's toe, and Zhang Yang could not imagine what happens if he summons this servant in a place where the space is not big enough!

There was nothing else of note in the chest, only two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment with mediocre attributes were found in the chest, Zhang Yang could not even find any Gray-Silver equipment in the chest! Zhang Yang assumed the Gray-Silver equipment was included in the loot from the previous six Gray-Silver bosses.

After picking up all the loot, the gold chest automatically disappeared, and Zhang Yang continued moving forwards.

The system was not designed to let the players confront with the boss so easily, and along the way, there were so many minions popping up and launching attacks towards Zhang Yang. However, it was not a bad deal, as Zhang Yang could also get experience points and mining bars along the way!

About two hours later, Zhang Yang finally reached the deepest of the cave.

The landscape here seemed more capacious, and the mini-map finally showed a blinking spot which indicated that the sixth piece of [Key fragments], just within 200 meters!

Zhang Yang looked up and he saw that Megatron was standing on a 10 meters tall hillside far away. Megatron seemed to be fiddling with something like a Rubik's Cube, and this cube emitted unusual rays towards a metal ore.

The metal ores that came into contact with the rays trembled vigorously, and then turned into mechanical servants! The huge robots were transformed from big metal ores while the smaller robots were transformed from the smaller metal ores. To Zhang Yang, they were all giants!

This must be [Allspark]!

It was amazing and it could continuously create the mechanical lifeforms!

Luckily, Megatron had just created the normal minions through [Allspark], therefore, Zhang Yang did not really bother about it! The main issue was that Megatron's eye and the scars on his whole body had been fully repaired.

What frustrated Zhang Yang the most, was that Megatron had actually turned into a Violet-Platinum boss!



[Megatron, Leader of Decepticon] (Violet-Platinum, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 89

HP: 8,900,000

Defense: 3,000

This must be the effect of [Allspark], since it could create mechanical life, curing some injuries would not be a big deal!

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang could not fight this Violet-Platinum boss alone.

Zhang Yang equipped the [Party Summon Order], called up Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the rest into the party channel and said, "Let's fight a boss!"

"Is it a Violet-Platinum boss?" Wei Yan Er excitedly asked, as although she already had a Violet-Platinum two handed axe, she still had not obtained any Violet-Platinum set equipment parts, which made her impatient.

"Stupid brat. If it's not a Violet-Platinum boss, I can simply defeat the boss myself without having to call any of you guys up, right?"

"Hmph, if not for my stupidity, how else would you be able to appear smart in contrast?"

"... That's some abstract thinking, since when were you so smart?"

After all nine people had joined the party, Zhang Yang activated [Party Summon Order], and then Sun Xin Yu and the rest instantly appeared around Zhang Yang.

"Megatron?"

"Leader of Decepticon?"

"Is this the legendary Transformers?"

Lost Dream and the rest of the guys were astounded, as all of the boys loved Transformers!

"Where is Optimus Prime?"

"He is dead, write him a note to hell if you have any questions!" Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulders as he said.

Wei Yan Er had no idea what the Transformers were, and she did not even know that Transformers represented the men's childhood memories. She swung her broad axe with murderous intent and said, "Quickly, kill the boss and drop me some set



equipment!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I will pull the boss, Starlight will tank the minions. If I can last long enough by then, let's kill the boss together!"

"En!"

Zhang Yang held his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and dashed towards the boss. Endless Starlight did not move immediately, but held his shield up, carefully surveying the crowd of monsters. When killing groups of monsters, tanks fear getting swarmed out to a point beyond their control. Also, it would be like trying to catch chickens in a chicken coop with doors open on all sides. Catching hold of them all at once would be difficult.

"Earthling, you actually had the guts to follow me here?" Megatron looked at Zhang Yang with his eyes, full of strong hatred. Megatron kept the [Allspark] and took out a red flashing sword from his back with its two hands, and then strode towards Zhang Yang, "Great, at least I can have my revenge at once!"

As the boss moved, the minions surrounding the boss were all affected by the aggro link, and instantly, the minions formed a tidal wave of robots and rushed towards Zhang Yang.

That was good, as Endless Starlight would not need to chase after the minions by himself!

"Evil b\*tchy, Fantasy, don't cast healing on me first, as now, all the minions' aggro are on me. If any of you cast healing on me, they will come after you! Let me use {Berserker's Heal} first!" Zhang Yang lifted his sword and shield.

"Roger that!"

Megatron strode forward and it waved the sword in its hand and threw a huge cleave at Zhang Yang's neck.

'{Block}!'

'-1!' {Block} reflected damage.

Before adding five stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss, even if Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} which ignored the boss' 50% defense value, with the boss' 1500 defense value, Zhang Yang could barely hurt him.

'-3,196!'

Zhang Yang quickly followed by a "free" {Shield Bash}, and this time the damage was impressive!

# Chapter 386: A Fierce Fight Against Megatron

---

"Idiots, all of you do not deserve to take possession of this world!" Megatron launched another attack and slashed at Zhang Yang, "I proclaim that this world will be ruled by us!"

"I never thought that this mechanical boss would have such a great ambition in its mechanical brain!" Han Ying Xue teased.

"Sure, everyone must have a dream!"

"Sigh!" Fatty Han sighed, "When will my little dream come true?!"

Zhang Yang smiled as he said, "Fatty, you are that eager to get married to Xiao Wei, huh? She still has not graduated from university, calm your flaps down!"

"Xiao Wei is good at everything but she is too strict with me!" Fatty Han sighed again and again, "It is my fault as I had an impulse to confess to her about something that had happened previously. So, she was worried about it and she calls my house phone every hour to 'check' on me, and if I do not pick up the phone within 3 rings, she will break up with me! Sigh, now I even fear to go to the loo. Like yesterday, I ran out off the toilet for a phone call and I did not even wipe my ass! Luckily there was no one else in my house, otherwise, people would have seen my naked \*ss!"

"Yo!" all of the girls covered their noses and mouths with their hands.

At this moment, the minions rushed towards them like a tidal wave, but Zhang Yang was already prepared and waited for them. Zhang Yang launched {Blast Wave}!

‘-1,228!’

‘-1,228!’

...

All of sudden, countless of ‘-1,000’ damage texts floated among the minions, and one after another of minions replaced those which were defeated. [Sword of Purging Devourer] flaunted the [Dark Enigmatic Sword]’s special effect like a new baby. Therefore, the scene was like fireworks, with dazzling damage texts.

As the [Sword of Purging Devourer]’s level requirement was Level 90, it meant that the 2% chance of activating special effect would only decline after Zhang Yang reaches Level 110!

Besides, Wei Yan Er also provided a {Strength Aura} during the battle, and 8% of Strength didn’t seem like much, but it actually increased Zhang Yang’s Strength attribute by 100 points, and this was a permanent Strength increment! On the other hand, if Lost Dream successfully triggered critical attacks, then [Song of

Victory]'s special effect would be activated which would also increase another 300 points of Strength attribute!

{Horizontal Sweep}!'

'-7,924!'

'-8,243!'

'-8,721!'

...

A series of '-7,900' damage texts floated among the minions once again, within the range of Zhang Yang's sword slashes, a lot of minions instantly screamed in pain and fell defeated. But they never dropped any equipment and only equally distributed 850 experience points to everyone.

{Horizontal Sweep} also immediately activated [Sword of Purging Devourer]'s special effect of cloning the attacks. The damage texts floated among the minions again and again!

Zhang Yang then summoned [Servant: Devastator], and once this huge fellow appeared, it uttered a thunderous roar, and both of its arms struck the ground and then started beating the ground continuously with both arms.

{Quake Strike} activated!

-1,980!

-1,980!

...

{Quake Strike} was a terrifying AoE skill as it dealt 10,000 basic damage within 10 seconds!

After three rounds of attacks, at least hundreds of minions were killed instantly, and this scene left Han Ying Xue and the rest astounded!

"Although I have seen this many times, that damage is too powerful. I strongly request to weaken this, otherwise, our pure attacker classes are going to look lame!" Lost Dream shook his head as he said.

Endless Starlight laughed happily and said, "Now you know that tanks could be quite capable, huh!"

"Pfft, it's not you launching such powerful attacks!" Fantasy Sweetheart pursed her lips as she said.

"Pretty sis Fantasy, you are wrong by saying so. Boss Zhan Yu and my hearts are always united, both of our souls are eternally bound

and beat as one! Thus, there is no difference between both of our attacks!" Endless Starlight said shamelessly.

Suddenly, all the girls looked at Zhang Yang together.

Zhang Yang quickly put up his hands and said, "I don't even know this person!"

Endless Starlight shyly smiled and said, "Brother Yu, have you forgotten the Little Star at the beautiful Da Ming Lake?"

Everyone burst into laughter.

Before all of the minions had been cleared, the party could not strike the boss. So, all of them launched AoE skills to kill all the minions ferociously! The thousands of minions were indecently slaughtered by party members' strong firepower, especially Zhang Yang's [Sword of Purging Devourer]!

After four minutes later, all of the minions were almost annihilated!

"Wretched earthlings, stop it!" Megatron roared again and again, and it stretched out its left arm, and a [Magic Cannon] immediately unfolded itself from its arm, and a white light flashed at the muzzle of the cannon, gradually growing in size.

A casting bar appeared on top of the boss' head: [Magic Firearm]. Casting time: 3 seconds!

Zhang Yang quickly yelled, "Everyone, back away from me! At least 10 meters, no, at least 20 meters!"

The mechanical servant was like a moving castle, and that [Magic Firearm] was a miniature [Magic Cannon]! Thus, Zhang Yang believed that the power of this [Magic Firearm] would almost be able to wipe out any average player, and that he would be able to withstand it!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest were smart enough, all of them immediately stayed away from Zhang Yang.

Shush!

Three seconds later, a ray of bright light from the muzzle of Megatron's [Magic Firearm] shot towards Zhang Yang!

Bang!

‘-30,170!’

‘-40,000!’

Two damage texts immediately floated across Zhang Yang's and Mythical Turtle's heads respectively. Zhang Yang was unable to evade as he was already locked on as a target by the boss! As for the slow-moving Mythical Turtle, it stood no chance from the



beginning!

As expected, this attack from the boss was an AoE and the coverage area of [Magic Firearm] was about 10x10 meters around the main target, and the basic damage was up to the terrifying amount of 40,000 damage!

This kind of high damage could only be withstood by a tank with the best equipment! If it was other attackers, they could only use survival skills!

"F\*ck, is this the power of a Violet-Platinum boss? That's ridiculous!" everyone exclaimed as the Violet-Platinum bosses they met generally dealt about 20,000 basic damage.

"No! All of you, look at the boss' defense value!" Zhang Yang suddenly said.

"Dropped from 3,000 to 0!"

"What's going on?"

Lost Dream slapped his thigh as he said, "Ah, I get it! In sci-fi movies, if a space battleship wants to launch the main gun, it is required to draw away all the energy around it, including the energy of the shield! Thus, the boss' [Magic Firearm] would deal high damage to the enemy, while at the same time, the boss would also harm himself. Although the [Magic Firearm]'s damage is extremely powerful, the boss' defense value has drastically

dropped as well!"

Everyone agreed and found this explanation logical.

Since the boss had zero defense value at this moment, everyone quickly launched attacks toward the boss vigorously! The boss' zero defense value gave an advantage to the physical-type attackers. Within Zhang Yang's party, except for Daffodil Daydream, the rest of the attackers were all physical-type attackers!

Suddenly, the party's attack power skyrocketed!

However, this good moment would not last long, as the boss recovered 100 defense value every two seconds. The boss would slowly recover to 500, 1,000, 2,000 until its defense bar was full, which was 3,000. This was only in theory, as in fact, half of the boss' defense value was already weakened by five stacks of {Cripple Defense}.

A minute later, Megatron's defense value recovered to full, and it stretched out its left arm once again. That [Magic Firearm] aimed towards Zhang Yang!

"Get out of the way!"

Everyone scurried away.

Bang!

A ray of bright light emerged from the muzzle, Zhang Yang and Mythical Turtle were immediately harmed by the high damage!

The boss' [Magic Firearm] was extremely powerful, if it was another tank with poor equipment, they would have been one-shotted! But, Zhang Yang had about 80,000 HP and these 30,000 damage values could not even reduce half of his HP!

Conversely, Megatron's defense value dropped drastically after it launched [Magic Firearm]'s attack.

The first time, everyone was not ready, but this time everyone was ready and immediately drank a [Power Potion] and madly launched attacks towards Megatron!

The boss increased its own attack power, but at the same time, the boss had also weakened its defense. On the other hand, this helped the party increase their attack power as well!

After the {Cripple Defense} debuffs, it only had 750 defense, which was actually similar to a Yellow-Gold boss.

"I'm Megatron, I'm undefeatable!" the boss angrily howled, and suddenly it lowered its body and beat the ground madly with both of its arms.

‘Ding! Megatron has used {Quake Strike}!’

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Suddenly, the ground was like a jittering carpet, and the party felt as if they were in a ferryboat that was being continuously rocked by extremely big waves! The rocks were all broken, and the broken stones were hitting them like bullets!

‘-14,820!’

‘-14,940!’

‘-14,780!’

...

Zhang Yang and the rest were blasted with huge damage values! Besides, the quaking ground caused them to stumble around drunkenly, therefore, they could not cast healings and attacks!

Within these 10 seconds, everybody continuously stumbled and fought to regain their footing! Luckily the damage was a one-time off, otherwise, 15,000 of damages every second could actually annihilate them directly!

Megatron attacked Zhang Yang madly, and because Zhang Yang was only buffed with two {Regeneration} skills, he lost a total of 50,000 HP! Also at that moment, Megatron’s defense value had also been recovered back to 3,000, and the [Magic Firearm] had also started charging up!

"F\*ck!"

Zhang Yang cursed the boss and activated his {Shield Wall}, while at the same time, he also commanded Mythical Turtle to initiate {Turtle Shell Defense}.

‘-6,170!’

‘-4,000!’

A bright light emerged from the muzzle of [Magic Firearm], and Zhang Yang only received 6,000 damage, while Mythical Turtle was even more powerful, with its {Turtle Shell Defense} resisting the damage by up to 90%. Therefore, Mythical Turtle only received 4,000 damage!

Finally, 10 seconds had passed!

Everyone stood up and started attacking, and casting healings.

"Little Yang, the boss' {Quake Strike} is much powerful than your robot servant!"

"... Bullsh\*t, one's a boss, and the other's a servant, whaddayathink?!"

After getting through Megatron's combo, Megatron's HP bar had

been reduced to 50%!

Now, the party had already found out the boss' attack patterns, therefore, they knew when to launch attacks and when to evade. As a result, they now had it easy!

As long as you can anticipate a boss' attack pattern, the boss could be defeated with ease. The same goes for the open-world, overpowered bosses!

40%, 30%, 20%...

Megatron's powerful damage had almost come to an end. Although Megatron's damage was still quite strong, Zhang Yang was still undefeatable in front of Megatron. Megatron's futile attacks would only be counteracted completely by Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart!

10%!

"Bastard, damn it earthlings, I want to kill all of you! I must kill all of you!" Megatron roared loudly and launched the second {Quake Strike}.

This was also the last rage mode of the boss.

They passed the boss' attack smoothly. After this, they were going to claim victory!

3%, 2%, 1%!

Bang!

Megatron’s huge mechanical body fell defeated, and then countless sparks poured out from its body and causing some exploding sounds.

"Hu, finally defeated the boss!"

Zhang Yang walked over to the boss’ corpse and picked up a shining silvery metal fragment and a cube-shaped metal block that was bigger than his brain.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 6!’

Zhang Yang kept the sixth fragment, but that cube-shaped metal block was un-lootable, and actually had a HP bar!

[Allspark] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Note: The miracle created by an ancient Great God which can create mechanical lives.

Unfortunately, players were unable to use [Allspark]!

Zhang Yang felt that it was too bad that he could not use the [Allspark], and with a heavy heart, he raised his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and brought it down on the [Allspark].

‘-4,134!’

Instantly, like a sodium compound reacting with water, the [All Spark] then ignited with a bright light and lit up the air! This process lasted for about 10 seconds, and when the flame was extinguished, the [Allspark] was only left with a fragment about a size of a little finger.

Zhang Yang was speechless as he seemed to be having an endless fate with fragments!

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Destroy [Allspark]. Obtained 5,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have successfully completed side quest. Please pick up your reward!’



Eh?

Zhang Yang's eyes shone and picked up the [Fragment Allspark], this item could only be used after it has been broken into slag?

[Fragment of Allspark] (Tool)

Use: Create Level 85 elite mechanical Servants to help you guard your territory. You must have a territory, or your guild must have a territory. Otherwise, if you summon the mechanical Servant, it will disappear automatically after 5 minutes. Mechanical Servants can permanently guard the territory, but they cannot be resurrected after death and they can only be active within the range of 1 kilometer from a territory. The number of the mechanical Servant that territory can accommodate is decided by the level of city defense. Level 1 city defense: 100, Level 2 city defense: 500, Level 3 city defense: 1,000, Level 4 city defense: 2,000, Level 5 city defense: 5,000. Cooldown time: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 80

Bound.

Zhang Yang was stunned!

# Chapter 387: Spirit Of The Flame

---

As the mining cave had been providing many different kinds of mining ore, Thunderstorm Castle had already been built up to the Level 2 city defense and they were almost reaching Level 3 city defense!

In other words, the total amount of mechanical Servants that Thunderstorm Castle could accommodate would be up to 1,000!

These were 1,000 Level 85 elites! With the help of the players, if there is another monster attack, Zhang Yang was confident that he could easily defend Thunderstorm Castle against a monster attack.

"Noob tank, did you get any good items? Your smiling so tightly that your eyes have disappeared!" Wei Yan Er said sweetly.

"Is it that bad?" Zhang Yang smiled as he asked.

"Yes! Yes!" Wei Yan Er nodded again and again.

Zhang Yang then posted the [Fragment of the Allspark]'s description in party channel, and everybody 'ooed' at it.

"Oh my gosh, our Thunderstorm Castle is going to reach Level 3 city defense, would it be possible to accommodate 1,000 robots?

"He he, if other guilds want to attack our territory, I can't

imagine their expressions when they see our elite robots!"

"Ha ha ha, it must be quite interesting!"

Everyone was laughing joyfully, while Wei Yan Er was more interested in the boss' loot. Therefore, she quickly ran over and picked up the loot.

[Titan Handguards] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +564

Strength: +378

Dexterity: +161

<Unidentified>

Class Requirement: Berserker

Level Requirement: 80

Titan Armor Set (1/8):

3 pieces: Increases your Strength attribute by 500 points.

5 pieces: Reduces {Tornado Cleave}'s cooldown time by 1 second.

8 pieces: Every time you successfully hit a target, there is 1% chance to acquire 'Blessing of Titan', inflicting serious damage to the target.

Zhang Yang was very excited when he saw [Titan Handguards] but when he read the equipment's details further, he almost collapsed! As it was the Titan Armor Set for Berserkers. These game developers were pretty lazy, they did not even bother to change the name of armor set!

Without a doubt, this equipment would go to Wei Yan Er. The little brat was extremely happy, and her beautiful eyes became crescent moons as she smiled.

[Fearless Hammer] (Violet-Platinum, One Handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 1,305 – 1,705

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 538

Equipment: After successfully hitting the target, there is 1% chance of recovering 500 HP.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

This hammer could be used by Guardians, Defenders and Bandits but Defenders had {Mace Mastery}. On the other hand, there were no Bandits in the party, and Zhang Yang already had the [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Therefore, this hammer suited Endless Starlight the best.

[Flag of Brave Fight] (Violet-Platinum, Accessory)

Use: Increases your Strength attribute by 1,000 points. Lasts for 15 seconds. Cooldown time: 3 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

"Wow! It is mine! It is mine!" Wei Yan Er smiled even happier, today must be her harvest day!

Certainly, the accessory that increases Strength attribute should be prioritized for Berserkers. Therefore, Wei Yan Er happily received the [Flag of Brave Fight]. The boss' loot was left with only six pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, and after distributing two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, the rest of the Yellow-Gold equipment was given to Zhang Yang to sell in Little Merchandise Shop.

"Let's return to the city! Let's return to the city!" Wei Yan Er could not wait for her equipment and weapons to be identified, and of course, she would want Zhang Yang to pay up for her!

Everyone was unable to walk out from this cave, therefore, they tore off [Teleportation Scrolls] and returned to White Jade Castle.

Little brat dragged Zhang Yang to the Item Identifier to identify her [Titan Handguards]. After that, Zhang Yang went to his Little Merchandise Shop to put on the equipment they had just looted for sale. Next, Zhang Yang went to the auction house to seek for some good items as this was also one of his interests.

"Come on, have a look at these!" a lot of street vendors were nearby the entrance of an auction house and obviously these people were unwilling to be defrauded of the 20% transaction fee by the auction house, therefore, they chose to peddle outside auction house. Besides, there was no better place than to peddle outside the auction house.

There were a few good items for sale there, and some Yellow-Gold equipment too! Unfortunately, Zhang Yang already had a lot of equipment and he was only interested in skill books and recipes!

"Hey brother, don't look at that Yellow-Gold equipment, you cannot afford them! Come here, look at the Level 70 Gray-Silver equipment, they are good and cheap. Let me tell you frankly, you do not have many chances to battle against bosses, thus, it is pointless for you to equip all the Yellow-Gold equipment. Gray-Silver equipment would be better as it is affordable and fulfills your requirement of gaining levels!"

When Zhang Yang was browsing around, that street vendor took the initiative to chat with Zhang Yang.

Initially, Zhang Yang did not notice who the street vendor was. When he looked up at the street vendor, he was an Orc Bandit, and equipped with nondescript equipment. He was wearing a cloth armor hat, heavy armor boots and holding a scarlet staff!

Indeed, bandits could wear cloth armor but cloth armor did not increase any Strength and Dexterity attributes, therefore, it would be pointless to wear cloth armor! Similarly, Bandits could wear heavy armor but heavy armor would not add any attributes to bandits. Same went to the staff, Bandits could equip stave,s but the staff would not add damage attributes to a Bandit.

In short, this bandit was either an idiot, or is simply trolling about!

However, the cloth armor hat, heavy armor boots, and scarlet staff the Orc Bandit were wearing and holding were all Yellow-Gold grade! Besides, these were all the top equipment at the

current phase, with Violet-Platinum equipment being a luxury equipment.

‘Big Cannon, Level 76, Male, Orc Bandit, <Mysterious Heavens Fort>.’

This Orc Bandit deserved the name Big Cannon, as he was good at exaggerating the equipment and criticized Zhang Yang when he first saw Zhang Yang! However, he was correct as ordinary players truly needed only Gray-Silver equipment to fulfill their requirement of gaining levels, and ordinary players hardly battled against bosses! But this Orc Bandit liked to bad-mouth and easily offended people.

Zhang Yang did not bother him much. Zhang Yang also hid his profile as he did not want people to recognize him to avoid causing any trouble. Because of this, some arrogant fellows would often swagger around him.

Big Cannon continued as he saw Zhang Yang smiled at him, "Brother, what is your level now? Don't worry, here I have equipment from Level 20 to 70 and these will definitely fulfill your requirement! Look at me, I'm wearing all the Yellow-Gold equipment, I look cool right?"

It's more than just cool, it was actually convulsion!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I'm not interested in equipment, show me some skill books and recipes!"



Zhang Yang had been waiting impatiently for [Zombie Potion]'s recipe as he was not able to find it, and so far he never saw anyone selling it in auction house yet.

"He he, you are seeking for the right person! Our guild just defeated a Yellow-Gold boss yesterday and it dropped a pet skill book, but our guild's main force doesn't have a Hunter, and the rest of the Hunter members in our guild do not value this good skill book, so I'm taking it out for sale. Have a look at this, this is the best pet skill book {Spirit of the Flame} and I'm only selling it for 10,000 gold coins!" Big Cannon was acting like a pimp, he took a skill book with red cover from his inventory and showed it to Zhang Yang.

{Spirit of the Flame}?

En!

Zhang Yang's eyes suddenly shone, could it be that skill? If so, I must have found good stuff!

"Fine, I want this!" Zhang Yang nodded with great satisfaction.

"Honey, my petal hasn't learned any skills yet, buy me a pet skill book!" at that moment, a Human couple appeared in front of Zhang Yang, the male's name was Overlord Prince of Dragon City, while the female's name was Rose Fairy.

The female was embraced within the male's arms as she cooed.

The female was a Hunter, and there was a floral-spotted tiger following behind her.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City patted the female's hand and talked to Big Cannon with an arrogant expression, "What pet skill books do you have? Show me the most expensive one, I have a lot of money!"

"Honey, you are so domineering!" Rose Fairy said with an admirable expression.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City lightly touched the female's chest and smiled with a complacent face.

F\*ck, that was the typical wealthy fool!

Big Cannon quickly waved the {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book towards Overlord Prince of Dragon City and said, "Overlord Prince, right? Have a look at this {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book, yesterday our guild defeated a Yellow-Gold boss and it dropped this skill book. This absolutely a godly skill book! How is it? I know that Overlord Prince, you are rich, if the price I offer is too low, it would mean that I am looking down on you, Overlord Prince. So, 50,000 gold coins it is!"

Although Big Cannon was bad-mouthed, he was good at hoodwinking people, and he successfully hoodwinked that Overlord Prince of Dragon City into confusion!

"Honey, I want this!" Rose Fairy shook Overlord Prince's arm as she said.

Zhang Yang was frowning, he did not bother how Big Cannon hoodwinked Overlord Prince, but Zhang Yang must get that {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book! Zhang Yang said, "Big Cannon, I had eyes on that {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book first!"

"Hey, who the hell are you?!" Rose Fairy stared at Zhang Yang.

Big Cannon said, "Brother, I haven't sold this skill book to you yet! I'm sorry, we are just trading for money, right? Overlord Prince, he is willing to buy this with 50,000 gold coins. Dude, please don't call this injustice if you don't have money. Nowadays, everyone looks at the money!"

This was going to be trouble!

Zhang Yang sighed as he said, "Alright, I will buy this with 50,000 gold coins, first come first serve!"

Overlord Prince of Dragon City was frustrated then shouted, "60,000 gold coins!"

"Honey, you are so imperious!" Rose Fairy supported Zhang Yang, and some females really loved to see their man flaunting his wealth for their sake.

However, Zhang Yang would not do such a thing like these

wealthy fools, even though he was very rich himself, as it was not worth it at all! But this was related to {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book, he had to get the skill book!

"70,000!" he said calmly.

"80,000!"

"100,000!"

"110,000!"

"200,000." Zhang Yang lost his patience and started adding the bid by 100,000.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City suddenly laughed and said, "Damn it, is this guy a confederate?! You really thought that I'm a wealthy fool and don't understand what you two doing?"

F\*ck, if you are not a wealthy fool, then who else is the jackass?!

# Chapter 388: The Competition

---

Overlord Prince of Dragon City could not believe Zhang Yang, and even Big Cannon also shocked, he looked at Zhang Yang as he said, "Dude, you don't make trouble just because I'm not selling the skill book to you! You are poor, because you were born in a poor family's background and you are disappointed, I get it, just don't blame society for it!"

F\*ck, Zhang Yang could not bear with them anymore!

Zhang Yang opened up Trade window with Big Cannon and keyed in 200,000 gold coins, but he never selected "Confirm transaction".

In 'God's Miracle', the amount of money keyed into the Trade window is restricted by the players' money. If the players had 100,000 gold coins, they would not be allowed to key in 100,001 gold coins in the Trade window, even an extra copper coin was not allowed!

The reason Zhang Yang did so just to prove to Big Cannon that he could pay the price of 200,000 gold coins.

Big Cannon stopped talking, regardless of who the winner of this auction is, he would be the biggest winner of all!

From Big Cannon's reaction, both Overlord Prince of Dragon City and Rose Fairy realized that Zhang Yang actually able to pay 200,000 gold coins.

"Honey!" Rose Fairy saw that Overlord Prince of Dragon City did not continue bidding, she shook Overlord Prince of Dragon City's arm again and again as she acted like a spoiled child.

"... 210,000!" Overlord Prince of Dragon City endured the pain in his heart! He must be an idiot for wasting so much money to buy a pet skill book that he was not even sure about! Although he was pretty rich, he did not reach the level that he could simply spend the money like water.

Rose Fairy was immediately contented with Overlord Prince of Dragon City's reaction and gave a snort of disgust towards Zhang Yang. For her, this is not about {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book anymore but pride!

"300,000." Zhang Yang was not going to give up {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book, therefore, he continued bidding with Overlord Prince of Dragon City and Rose Fairy. Zhang Yang sighed internally as he realized that he had acted almost similarly to the both of them.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City's facial expression had changed, and his veins on his face almost burst as 300,000 was been far beyond the limits he can tolerate.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City sent a private message to Zhang Yang, "Bastard, get out of my way immediately. Otherwise, I will order my followers to kill until your level drops to zero!"

This scumbag, did he not know that the game had already revised such a function?

Zhang Yang ignored Overlord Prince of Dragon City and talked to Big Cannon, "300,000 gold coins, and hurry up, wrap it up already!"

Big Cannon looked at Overlord Prince of Dragon City, but Overlord Prince of Dragon City avoided Big Cannon's gaze. Therefore, Big Cannon knew what to do, and he said, "Alright, deal!" the skill book that he intended to sell at 10,000 had been jacked up to 300,000, therefore, he had nothing more to complain!

Rose Fairy anxious and yelled, "Honey! Quickly, increase the bid! Bid him to death!"

"Increase my \*ss!" Overlord Prince of Dragon City got angry, turned around and slapped Rose Fairy in her face. Because PvP was not allowed in the main city, Overlord Prince of Dragon City was not able to slap Rose Fairy, but waved his hand in front Rose Fairy's face and slapped the air.

Rose Fairy turned furious and yelled loudly, "You this weakling scumbag, you cannot fight against others so you decide to release your anger on me! You son of the b\*tch, I'd rather get f\*cked by a dog, I don't want you to touch me!"

She flung Overlord Prince of Dragon City's arm away and ran away without looking back.

Zhang Yang already completed the transaction with Big Cannon and got the {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book.

He summoned Mythical Turtle and patted {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book on the Violet-Platinum Mythical Turtle, and let it learn the skill.

{Spirit of the Flame}: After activating this skill, all of the pet's physical damage will cause Fire damage. Lasts for 10 minutes. Cooldown time: 1 hour.

This was an extremely powerful skill!

Most of the bosses in 'God's Miracle' had high physical defense and low Magical resistance. Therefore, when the pet activates {Spirit of the Flame}, the pet will completely ignore the boss' defense and cause terrifying damage!

This was also similar to Zhang Yang's {Eagle Eye}!

Although {Spirit of the Flame} only lasted for 10 minutes, it is sufficient to fight against the bosses at the current phase! When fighting against minions, there would be no need of activating such a powerful skill at all.

Ta ta ta!

As Zhang Yang planned to enter the auction house to continue looking around, he saw that there were about 10 players riding war



horses towards him from the corner of the street. One of them looked high-handed, like he was some sort of famous figure.

Eh?

Zhang Yang was lightly stunned internally as the person who was leading the group was somebody he knew long ago, Rogue Bunny from Rogue Family! Those following behind him were the Bunny brothers.

"Overlord Prince, which vulgar fellow triggered your anger? We, Rogue Family, will help you destroy him!" Rogue Bunny patted his chest as he said, and his face was full of righteousness.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City laughed out loud and looked at Zhang Yang as he said, "Bastard, I already warned you! Whoever fights against me, will pay a price! How is it? I have so many people with me, now you should be afraid of me!"

Rogue Bunny walked forward and he suddenly frowned as he recognized Zhang Yang, "Why does this fellow look so familiar?!"

Bunny Bro Three also walked forwards and looked at Zhang Yang carefully. Suddenly he cried out involuntarily, "He was the bastard fellow who tricked us into saying "we are all stupid" in the beginner villages, after that he annihilated all of us!"

"He is..."

"... Zhan Yu!"

"Zhan Yu!" be it the members of Rogue Family, Overlord Prince of Dragon City or Big Cannon, all of them showed a shocking expression. Ever since Soaring Swords competition, Zhang Yang had become the China's top player and commanding the strongest guild in China, who would not be aware of this?!

Overlord Prince of Dragon City was taken aback and said, "Zhan Yu, since you are a famous figure, I will show you some respect! As long as you apologize, we are even!"

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, "Why should I apologize? I wanted this skill book first and you wanted to snatch it away from me, and now you call your people over to gang up on me? Although I don't like to make trouble, that doesn't mean that I'm a coward!"

Zhang Yang did not intend to argue with Overlord Prince of Dragon City, and since PvP was not allowed in the main city, Zhang Yang directly moved forwards into the auction house.

"Bastard!" Overlord Prince of Dragon City was extremely angry, and he pulled his sleeves and made to chase after Zhang Yang.

"Overlord Prince!" Rogue Bunny quickly stopped him and said, "Zhang Yang has Lone Desert Smoke behind his back, we can't afford to offend him!"

Overlord Prince of Dragon City calmed down a little, but he was

still angry and said, "I cannot take it! If we let him go just like this, how am I going to face people in the future?"

"Overlord Prince, calm down, there is still a chance in the future! The true man must endure a moment of anger and wait for the right timing and chance to fight against the enemy!" Rogue Bunny thought as he said, "Besides, we are not allowed to PvP in the main city. Let's look for a chance to ambush him in the open world! Although that fellow is the China's top tank, how can he fight against 40 of our people? Even the invincible King Kong will also be defeated by us!"

"Ha ha, deal! You keep your eyes on him, as long as this deal is done, I'll reward you!"

"Thank you, Overlord Prince!"

...

Zhang Yang did not find good stuff in the auction house. After searching around, he used a [Teleportation Scroll] and returned to Thunderstorm Castle. Most of the main quests at the moment could not be completed, and the last [Key fragment] could only be found at Level 90 map, Ten Barren Sea; while the second seal of [Sword of Purging Devourer] could only be unsealed when he is able to enter Chaos Realm, and the other two main quests also could only be continued after he entered Chaos Realm. Thus, he had nothing to do now other than to train for his levels.

The use of [Fragment Allspark] was very restricted, as it could

only be used in Thunderstorm Castle. Otherwise, the mechanical Servants Zhang Yang summon would disappear automatically after five minutes. Zhang Yang urged the guild members to quickly gathered the ingredients to upgrade the Thunderstorm Castle to a Level 3 city defense.

[Fragment Allspark] created a mechanical Servant every hour. Theoretically, 72 mechanical Servants would be created within a day of real time and seven days were required to reach the number of mechanical Servants to accommodate a Level 2 city defense.

The guild members of Lone Desert Smoke were pretty supportive, as all of them aggressively looked for the ingredients to upgrade the Level 3 city defense as Zhang Yang urged them. Of course, Zhang Yang would not allow his guild members to work for nothing, and he bought all of their ingredients at market price.

After a day, Zhang Yang and his guild members were to meet their semifinal's opponent in battle, which was Lone Desert Smoke's sub-guild!

Indeed, it was a battle between Lone Desert Smoke and Lone Desert Smoke!

Due to Mountain Mover's outstanding commands, the sub-guild performed with excellent competitiveness instead of performing like a low ranked guild! They continuously beat opponents and overcame difficulties, and finally, they met their main guild in the semifinals, which made a lot of people astounded with the capability of Lone Desert Smoke's sub-guild!

Of course, Sage of God Killer, the guild master of Sage of God's Path was extremely regretful!

Both sides underwent a friendly battle, and lastly, sub-guild automatically threw in the towel and quitted the battle. As a result, the sub-guild was going to battle against Imperial Sky and Radiance for the third place.

After a while, the battle between Imperial Sky and Radiance had ended and Imperial Sky finally won the battle, which caused Radiance's battle of revenge to fail. This also meant that, the finale of the guild war was similar to the Soaring Swords competition's final, which was a battle between Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky.

This finale also caused a lot of discussions in the forum, had Imperial Sky also dispatched a cyber army to criticize Lone Desert Smoke, as a Level 3 guild was being oppressive towards a Level 2 guild. Even if they win the battle, they would have won disgracefully, which would shame China's strongest guild!

Zhang Yang did not even bother about it and he would not talk about fairness with Imperial Sky. Besides, he upgraded his guild level by killing the boss and the boss dropped a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order], he paid hard work for it, why should Zhang Yang give up this superiority?

After a day, the battle between Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky finally commenced!

Previously, both of these guilds were fighting each other on a smaller scale, and they did not have a war with each other. Therefore, this guild war attracted a lot of attention, countless of players came to the audience seats and were ready to enjoy the war between two strong guilds!

Certainly, almost 90% of the people believed that Lone Desert Smoke would win the final victory. After all, everyone had seen the capability of Lone Desert Smoke, besides, the number of Lone Desert Smoke's people were more than half of the opponent. If Lone Desert Smoke could not win this, it would be doubtful whether it is a one sided contest!

# Chapter 389: Sailor Moon

---

Even though everyone had guessed the outcome of the competition, the entire process of the battle was really out of expectation.

It was totally a one-sided slaughter!

Under the tactical command of Mountain Mover, the Lone Desert Smoke exhibited their explosive battle power to the public by taking out Imperial Sky off their feet with just a snap of their finger tips! It was really lamentable to see how a large army of absolute power was broken down by one super tactician on their enemy side. The difference of just one person could really make a difference!

During the competition, Zhang Yang had also let Fatty Han and the Sub-Guild join into the main guild on purpose. The intention was to let every single one of them get their very own Gray-Silver grade [Battle Mount]!

And it really did happen, because this system of the competition was full of loop holes to exploit. The moment Lone Desert Smoke secured their position as the Champion of the competition, even the newly joined members such as Fatty Han and the remaining members of the Sub-guild obtained the rewards --- to be elevated by 3 levels and one Gray-Silver grade [Battle Mount: Crimson Flaming Horse]!

Later, Zhang Yang arranged for Fatty Han, Mountain Mover the

members of Sub-Guild to go back to the Sub-Guild with the intention for them to join the competition for the third and the fourth place that was about to start in awhile.

When Mountain Mover was leading the members of the Sub-Guild which was deemed to be much weaker in battle, it was obvious that the performance and show of strength from the Sub-Guild obviously improved by a lot! They actually won the match against Radiance by using the [guerrilla tactics](#), and secured the third place in the competition! What was said to be a waste was that Zhang Yang did not join in, and he missed the opportunity to get the reward of the winning, together with the sub-guild!

Guerrilla tactics - a form of irregular warfare in which a small group of combatants uses military tactics such as ambushes, sabotage, raids, petty warfare, hit-and-run tactics, and mobility to fight a larger military force.

It was just nonsensical!

If he knew that he would also get the reward by just being on the Sub-Guild, he would have put himself into the Sub-Guild and elevated himself to yet another level!

No wonder this was a one in a lifetime kind of competition, as there were simply too many loopholes to exploit! There was nothing fair to begin with even in the first place!

Now that the members of Lone Desert Smoke in both the Main Guild and the Sub-Guild had their own [Battle Mounts] of Gray-Silver grade and Black-Steel grade from the winnings, the entire



force of the Lone Desert Smoke had definitely crowned themselves above every other guilds in the China server! Other than the Large-Scale guild Imperial Sky, no other guilds can stand against Lone Desert Smoke, at least not in the China server!

The other guilds that can pose a threat to the Lone Desert Smoke are the top-tier guilds from the other 7 main regions! After all, no matter the Soaring Sword Competition, or the Guild War Competition, these competitions were held separately in different regions. So there were a total of 14 champions in all 7 main regions!

After acquiring the Level +3 reward, Zhang Yang had reached Level 85, but still, he is surrounded by the best players in the server!

Another 3 days have passed, the Thunderstorm Castle had been successfully upgraded up into a Level 3 territory defensive castle. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang has been busy making more than 200 elite grade Mechanical Servants. With the 100 plus Mechanical Servants left from his previous battles, the army of these Mechanical Servants had reached up to a total of 400! Zhang Yang had plans for these Mechanical Servants, to use them as an element of surprise when in desperate times. To hide the army from plain sight in order to keep them as an element of surprise, Zhang Yang purposely used his privilege as the Baron of the Thunderstorm Castle to create a secret warehouse, to store the army.

In each passing day, there would be an increment of 72 servants in the warehouse. It only took about 7 days for their number to grow up to the maximum capacity for the Level 3 Castle Defense.

Zhang Yang felt more relaxed in the coming days, because he did not have to run around completing quests, as long as he grinds his levels and crafts some potions to keep on track, he would be up to speed. Ever since he acquired the skill {Alchemist's Intuition}, he became obsessed with making potions. Always looking forward to the surprises of his random transmutations, he would never grow tired of it.

But, it's not like he can really slack off on his progress as he pleases, or just play the game casually. In other words, the game is always full of competitions and disputes.

It began a few days ago, a number of assassinations, ambushes happened on the players of Lone Desert Smoke who were sent on to the mines to gather some materials. That had caused the production of the guild to decrease steeply! Not all players signed up for the game to be top warriors and fighters. There were also players who logged in every day to live a peaceful life, mining and collecting materials at leisure, to be sold in the marketplace for gold. They did not have top tier equipment, or levels to match up to the pace of the game. Since they were such peaceful players, they were easy targets!

This situation escalated to the point where Hundred Shots was forced to arrange escorts to protect these peaceful players. But the culprits were cunning and sly, because they will just avoid doing anything and stay hidden when they come across those large group of players, while they will slaughter the players if the group is small. This kind of issue has caused major inconveniences to Lone Desert Smoke!

After all, players had to stand their own ground, with each man for himself, so even their defenders would be overwhelmed at times.

These culprits are very good in hiding, because up until now, they have not exposed themselves yet. That has presented a helpless situation for Hundred Shots to solve, he could only increase the number of players in escort.

And on this day, Zhang Yang had just made a Mechanical Servant with some [Fragment Source of Cinder] and was ready to use his [Lover's Charm] to teleport himself to Sun Xin Yu. He wanted to prevent any means of travel before going straight into grinding his level. Suddenly, he received a group invitation.

This invitation came from a player named, Sailor Moon. Zhang Yang took a look at the player's character information and realized that she was actually one of the members of Lone Desert Smoke. He accepted it immediately and joined the party of three, making it into a party of four.

Team Leader - Sailor Moon, human spellcaster, Level 62.

Team Member - Sailor Chibimoon, human spellcaster, Level 62.

Team Member - Sailor Mars, human spellcaster, Level 62

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to sweat in silence, did he

just join the 'Sailor Moon' party?

"Guildmaster! Please help us!" Sailor Moon was shouting out in the party channel, her voice filled with anger and helplessness at the same time.

Zhang Yang frowned, "What's the matter?"

"There's a bunch of people clinging onto us, saying that they just want to be friends with us. At first, we did not mind them at all, but they have been following us and harassing us, and then they began to block our path, physically! And when we were about to use our [Teleportation Scrolls], they would interrupt us. They had no intention to kill us as well, they're just blocking us from leaving. Now they are trying to force us to be girlfriends of their boss!" Sailor Chibimoon spoke up.

"These bastards are just being as\*holes!" Sailor Mars boiled with anger and said, "Guildmaster, we have just joined the guild not too long ago, and we don't know who to call for help! The first person we thought of is you! Please help us!"

Although these three girls weren't talking in order, Zhang Yang could piece up the information. Also, their voices were so similar! With just a second of distraction, one would have lost track of who is speaking at the time!

"How many are there? These people." Zhang Yang asked them.

"10!" Sailor Moon replied in an instant.

If the number is huge, then Zhang Yang will have to summon a large number of people as well, but since it's just 10... He can definitely take them on himself without a problem!

While riding on Whitey, Zhang Yang let out a short shout and charged towards the direction of the 'Sailor Moons' in high speed. He informed through the party channel, "Just hold on for a little longer, I'll be there before you know it!"

"Guildmaster, you must bring more men!"

"That's right! Kick their asses!"

"It's driving us mad!"

The three girls were talking at the same time, and Zhang Yang couldn't decipher a piece of information. All he could hear was some noise.

The Sailor Moon were not too far from Thunderstorm Castle, so it only took approximately 20 minutes for Zhang Yang to arrive. There were more than 10 male players present at the scene. They were of different professions, different races. These men were surrounding three girls in white robes. They had them trapped beside a lake, surrounded by half of a circle of men, with their backs against the lake.

These men did not attack, and they were all smiling like perverts. They would heal each other whenever the girls attacked them. And whenever the girls attempted to use their [Teleportation Scroll], they would wait for the right timing and launch an attack on the girls to interrupt the teleportation.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel shame as a man. For the first time in {{God's Miracle}}, he is actually seeing such immoral players! So, what's difference between these players and those hoodlums who take liberties on girls on the streets?

The only difference is that there are cops in the real world, but in {{God's Miracle}}, these sorts of people can do whatever filthy deeds they want without having to worry about cops!

With a closer look, these people are from that hoodlum guild, called the Rogue Family! And that filthy rich boy, Overlord Prince of Dragon City was among those hoodlums --- god damn it! Do know, that this fellow actually made Zhang Yang looked stupid in their previous engagement!

He should have guessed it right, other than those hoodlums in the Rogue Family, no other players would do such a shameful thing.

Zhang Yang patted Whitey and charged in on them, with a long leap and a "shoof"! He collided into the two healers standing at the back of the other hoodlums --- there were a total of 11 hoodlums, two of them were healers, two of them were spellcasters, three of them were thieves, two of them were hunters and two of them were warriors.

"Who's there ---" As these hoodlums were focusing their attention on the three girls, they had never thought or expect a man to charge in all of a sudden. It was until Zhang Yang's sword reached the neck of a healer, when they realized what was happening.

If it was up to an experienced and skillful player, the player would just activate {Terror Shriek} to terrify Zhang Yang with a moment of restriction effect! But, good skillful players were hard to come by these days, and these are mere hoodlums from the Rogue Family! How would it be possible to find good and skillful players in a guild like this?

‘-4,193!’

Zhang Yang swung his sword pass and the healer was inflicted with a damage. That value was one-third of his entire health bar! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had gained a total of 37 rage points. Because when he was charging over to the hoodlums, he had already activated {Blood Rage}, and now he has a total of 67 rage points on his rage bar!

Regular attacks will not trigger the common cool down of the skill sets. So Zhang Yang swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] with a {Horizontal Sweep}!

The sparks from the sword flew across the air, and the seven players from the Rogue Family were inflicted with damages ranging from 7,700 to 8,500 in the same moment. There was a critical attack on one of the spellcasters, which instantly killed the

fellow!

That was considered as a good strike! Then, the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] kicked in, and another wave of damages ranging around 7,000+ were inflicted upon every single hoodlum within the effective area!

"Argh ---"

The miserable crying continued and another three hoodlums were killed and turned into white lights, one after another.

Whitey continued to attack with its claws, causing approximately 5,000 damage in every attack. For the hoodlums who were left with only a little health points left, these attacks with such an amount of damage would prove to be fatal. One touch is already a touch of death!

"Zhan, Zhan Yu!" one of the hoodlums had finally set his eyes right on Zhang Yang's face and recognized him. As he finally identified who the attacker was, he was shocked and angry at the same time! All the mixed expression was revealed on his face! "We did not even touch a hair on your head, why would you ambush us? Don't think that you can do whatever you like just because you're the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke!"

"Hahaha!" Zhang Yang was amused, and he laughed hard. A hoodlum would actually try to appeal to his civility! It was really something to remember by!



"Stinky hoodlums!" Sailor Mars threw out a ball of fire onto Overlord Prince of Dragon City and began to cast the spell for {Explosive Flame}.

"Eat this! Serves you right!"

"Don't ever think that we girls are meant to be bullied!"

The girls all squealed out in agitation at the same time, making it hard to hear their words. Sailor Chibimoon and Sailor Moon were also throwing balls of fire attack over to the hoodlums and began to cast their own {Explosive Flames} as well.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City was shocked, "Rogue Bunny, didn't you said you'll torture him to death? Now that he's here already, why aren't you doing it?"

Rogue Bunny was frowning with cold sweat, he was only trying to butter the spoiled rich boy! Now that Zhang Yang and his Lone Desert Smoke were in their prime, who would dare to challenge them now? Anyone who does that would be committing suicide! It could have gone way much better if that filthy rich boy could just forget everything he had ever said to butter him and not bring it up again!

Zhang Yang shook his head, "You are cornering and harassing my guild members, and you dare to question why I, as their guild master would charge in and interrupt you hoodlums? Ha! I can see that your heads have been knocked dead by a donkey!"

"Knocked by donkeys so many times that they can't even think straight!"

"They have scrambled eggs for brains!"

"I would say these hoodlums did not have brains, to begin with!"

The three 'Sailor Moon' were speaking and giggling all at the same time.

Although Zhang Yang was still talking, his hands were still swinging his weapon around without any pause! He was currently equipped with almost a full set of Violet-Platinum equipment already, and the weapon within his hands was a Level 90 Violet-Platinum weapon. So, be it his attack or his defense, he was so powerful that these hoodlums should fear him to the point that they should flee on sight!

On the other hand, these hoodlums from Rogue Family had just reached Level 70, and they had just purchased some Level 70 Gray-Silver equipment. So, their attacks could not even inflict any physical damage on Zhang Yang, not even a little! Although their spell-type attacks could still pose a threat to him, but those 1,000 to 2,000 flashes damage would mean nothing on the 100,000+ health points of Zhang Yang! Even if Zhang Yang stood still and allowed them to hit him, it would take hours, or even longer to empty out his health bar!

Not to mention that Zhang Yang has assistance from the three 'Sailor Moon' girls. Although their levels weren't that high and

their equipment wasn't that good, the focus fire of three spellcasters was obviously very powerful. It served greatly as a support from the side. In just a brief moment, they had already sent every single one of the hoodlums, including Overlord Prince of Dragon City to the Graveyard.

"Humph! We just proved to them that girls are not to be bullied! Pile up their dead bodies! Make sure they get the message!" Sailor Chibimoon seemed to be making threatening gestures while saying it.

Zhang Yang took a glance at the faces of the three girls, and he understood why that Overlord Prince of Dragon City would be so interested in them.

The three girls had almost the exact same faces! And all three of them were pretty and young, and full of youthful energy!

Although players can customize their faces in the game, it would be extremely hard to customize their faces until they all looked the same! Only the natural born faces would look the same, and by scanning their facial features and making some adjustments, only can they make their faces so similar within the game!

So thinking about the obvious, these three girls must be sisters in the real world.

The sort of people like Overlord Prince of Dragon City would never be able to resist such delicate flowers, that was the main reason why he stuck around, putting in his best effort to keep them

from leaving.

"Guildmaster, you are amazing! You shooed away these hoodlums single-handedly!" Sailor Mars was looking at Zhang Yang with admiration in her eyes.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "That's because you girls helped me out!"

The three girls looked at each other and began to giggle with their hands up to their mouth, accentuating their round boobies.

"You three are sisters, aren't you?" Zhang Yang asked the girls while he picked up all the items and equipment that fell from the hoodlums after they died. Although he was not interested in the equipment, it would be better for him to pick them up than to leave them there, waiting for the hoodlums to come all the way back. This should teach them some manners!

"Yes, in fact, we are triplets!" Sailor Moon pointed at herself and said, "I'm the eldest, the first to be born. This is the second, only 3 minutes after me. Last but not least, she is the youngest, born 5 minutes after that!" She pointed at Sailor Chibimoon and Sailor Mars while explaining.

Zhang Yang nodded, as he took out two of the equipment, leather armor pieces, and passed them over to the girls, "Here you go, it's your share for our victory!"

"Hehe!" the girls took it without any hesitation and kept them into their backpack.

"So where are you from, sir?" Sailor Moon asked him out of her own curiosity.

"Zhou Su City." Zhang Yang told them.

"Oh, what a coincidence! We're attending classes in a university in Zhou Su City!" Sailor Chibimoon clapped her hands in excitement.

"You did us a great favor, so please, let us repay you with dinner! Please?"

"That's right, you must come, little Bin is good at making dishes!"

"So that concludes it, tomorrow night it is!"

The three girls were talking all at once again, and then giggled together.

Zhang Yang frowned at the way they invited him to dinner. The girls said it all, he had not even opened his mouth yet!

"Then, you girls wouldn't mind if I bring along two more people, right?" Zhang Yang smiled. Since they looked so sincere, he could not just reject them already.

"Boy or girl?"

"Girls!"

"Your girlfriends?" the three girls were filled with curiosity to find out.

"... you three are really talkative!"

# Chapter 390: The Needle That Fell Out Of The Haystack!

---

The next day, Zhang Yang went to meet the girls, along with Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er... and also Sun Xin Yu! They went straight to the address that the 'Sailor Moon' girls.. erm, no, the Zhao Bin sisters gave to Zhang Yang.

So, the three girls are Zhao Bin, Zhao Yu and Zhao Xue. All of them are 19 years old. They had just moved into the life of a university. Their hometown is located at Jinnan District. Although the three of them were going to the same university, but they were of different majors, so they could not stay in the same dorm. The bond of their sisterhood is strong, as they cannot live without each other in their lives. So they are renting a unit near their university, so that they can stay together.

Initially, Zhang Yang intended to bring only Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, but as they ran into Sun Xin Yu, the Icy Queen actually followed them without saying a word. Zhang Yang was actually shocked to see that she actually cared!

The four of them arrived at the doorstep of the address, and the three sisters welcomed them in afterward. They were obviously very curious about Zhang Yang's relationships with the three pretty girls that came with him. So, they kept on poking around with their 'interrogation' skills, hoping that they would get what they wanted to hear.

Han Ying Xue was acting like a queen, making herself look as if she was Zhang Yang's girlfriend, while speaking to them.

Meanwhile, the Ice Queen was burning in flames of jealousy beside them, which made the triplet sisters laugh silently.

Wei Yan Er was about their age as well, and she will be going for the National College Entrance Examination in 3 months time, before she becomes a freshman. So, the four of them had many topics that clicked, and had a blast chatting.

After having dinner and a little chat, the four of them got ready to leave.

But as they were just about to leave, Zhang Yang stepped out of the door and suddenly, he lunged back and squashed the front portion of Sun Xin Yu, who was right behind him.

The Ice Queen blushed in shame and in an angry tone, "Asshole, if you did that on purpose, I'll arrest you and take you back to the police station!" Her chest was the most sensitive part of her body, and ever since she had known Zhang Yang, she had already lost count of how many times that part of her had been felt up, squashed up, roughed up by him already!

"Shhh --- " Zhang Yang turned around and put his finger on his lips, telling her to shut up. He had a serious expression on his face. Then, he slowly closed the door until there was only a slight opening by the door panel and said in a very low voice, "Look!"

"What's so nice to look at!" Wei Yan Er shouted out loudly by the door, trying to take a peek as well.



The girls were peeking out from the slight opening by the door panel.

" --- Liu Shu Yan!" Sun Xin Yu and the two sibling sisters were shocked to see that woman.

"Who's Liu Shu Yan?" Zhao Yu asked them out of curiosity.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Well, what do you know? Can't believe that we tried so hard to find her, and now she pops up in front of us!"

Well, what a coincidence! A very juicy one too! It was supposed to be a simple dinner with the girls. Now it turned out to be a 'bingo'!

"Still, although she is an important suspect in a criminal case, there is no evidence to prove that she is the one who lit up your apartment. So, I'm afraid that even if I detain her now, we won't even hold her for 24 hours before she goes 'wild' again!" Sun Xin Yu told Zhang Yang.

"Not a problem, the main thing is that we know where she is now. So there's no worry over her being stubborn and not talking!" Zhang Yang put a sinister smile on his face.

"Why am I feeling like the three of us are invisible now? Hello?"

"We're in a different realm now, no one will mind us, or even see us."

"Pity us!"

The triplet sisters began to cry and sigh beside them.

Zhang Yang took out his phone and dialed his brother in arms, "Fatty, come over quick, we have spotted that b\*tch Liu Shu Yan!"

As of the current development of the game, players can make calls or receive calls when they are logged in {{God's Miracle}}. Players can choose to bind their phone numbers and their pager numbers with their account. That makes it possible to communicate from within the game, with the players, even if the caller is in the real world at the moment.

"Alright, I'm on my way!"

Sun Xin Yu stared at Zhang Yang and said, "You are not going to do something that I don't like at all, are you?"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "If you can get her to turn herself in, then I will gladly watch by the side!"

"I'm going back!" Sun Xin Yu saw that Liu Shu Yan had already gone into the house and closed the door shut, so she walked out of the door. Then she stopped and stood there for awhile and said, "If anything happens, call my number!"

Zhang Yang felt a glimpse of warmth in his heart, as that was how Sun Xin Yu usually express her affection towards him. That's just how she expresses herself.

After Sun Xin Yu was gone, Zhang Yang also had Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er scurry back to their house. Because what was about to happen was not going to be a pretty sight. Zhang Yang said goodbye to the Zhao Bin sisters. He did not want the triplets to be caught in his own affair. Better to be safe than sorry.

Soon after, Fatty Han arrived in a hurry.

Zhang Yang looked at him and nodded. It's show time! The two of them went up to the front door of Liu Shan Yu's house, and they were ready to do what must be done. They knocked the door.

After awhile, the door 'crack' opened, and the next thing they saw was the head of Liu Shu Yan peeking out by the panel of the door --- fortunately there was no peep hole in the door, as this design of door seemed to be very old, the houses in this area were considered old.

Zhang Yang smiled at her, specifically at her.

The facial expression of Liu Shu Yan changed in an instant, from heaven down to earth. There, she realized that it was Zhang Yang! She quickly pushed the door with the attempt to close the door shut, however, 'boop'! She could feel that something was stuck in between the door, preventing her from closing it.

"We have been looking for you for a long time, missy." Zhang Yang pushed the door open and took back his foot that had stopped the door from closing.

Well, this Liu Shu Yan was indeed worthy of being the 'Mastermind' behind the entire scheme. She was calm again after a very brief moment, then she walked steadily back into her house, "Well, you must be very tired!"

Zhang Yang looked at Fatty Han and nodded, and the two of them walked right into the house as well.

"Zhang Yang, you already own the entirety of Silky Soft Holdings, what more do you want!" as she pleaded, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han took a good look at her close up, finally. This Liu Shu Yan was indeed pretty and she had a great body as well, as a woman of course. The parts that should be big are big, and the parts that should be small are small, all at the right size to the point that men would drool by looking at her. And, she was wearing a pair of high heels, with long stockings that were almost transparent, up to her thighs. The way she positioned her feet as she sat down was definitely seducing.

Zhang Yang gave a soft smile and said, "Looks like you have forgotten about the fact that you burned by apartment down!"

"Natural disasters happen because of natural causes. That's just how nature works, kid! Why would you blame an act of nature on a weak helpless lady like me!" Liu Shu Yan was trying to make pity of herself.

Zhang Yang shook his head with an annoyed face and said, "There are only 3 of us here, you can just be honest with us, you know?"

Liu Shu Yan began to talk in an aggressive manner, "I really didn't do anything, so how honest would you want me to be?!"

This woman was being very careful, as she was probably worried that Zhang Yang and Fatty Han might have activated some recorders. Every word she used, every sentence she spoke, she picked her words carefully enough.

Zhang Yang revealed a smile with his teeth and said, "Well, we are not cops, we need no evidence."

Liu Shu Yan suddenly laughed out loud and said, "So what are you going to do to me? Rape me? Hmm --- that's good, because I have not had a man in bed for a long time, my p\*ssy needs a good scratch these days! You two can come at me at the same time, show me what you got underneath your trousers! Let me savor them!"

Right in front of Zhang Yang and Fatty Han, she took off her clothes one layer after another, then she lied down onto the sofa. Then, with one hand grabbing her own boobs, massaging them, like she was really excited, while the other hand was down in front of the bushy 'cushion', trying to dig her finger into the 'entrance' in between her 'cushions'. She was moaning like a cat, seducing the two men to 'stand up' and make their entrance.

"What the f\*ck! What a slut, man!" Fatty Han looked at her with scorn, but his eyes were already nailed onto the 'important' parts of Liu Shu Yan, and he just could not turn his eyes away from them! "I shall teach her a lesson for you, little Yang! I'll take it from here!"

"Fatty, she's a snake, a fiend! A pretty and sexy one of course. But you better not 'enter' her, because once you do that, there's no turning back! And God knows what kind of trap she has prepared for you, once you do it!" Zhang Yang warned Fatty Han straight up.

"Don't worry, didn't I just said I'll take it from here? Head back first, wait for my good news!"

Zhang Yang nodded, then he turned around and left the house. After that, he went straight back to Han Ying Xue's house.

Fatty Han did not let Zhang Yang down at all. In just a few hours, he had already contacted Zhang Yang and told him that Liu Shu Yan had been taken care of, and she that had already given herself up to the police station and had revealed every single truth about her own crimes.

Zhang Yang was amazed and yet confused, how did that fatty do it? So, he asked Fatty Han about it. As he knew, Liu Shu Yan was definitely very tough and extremely hard to break without using violence. So, how could she break so easily then?

"Haha, that slut loves men for a reason, right? So all I had to do was to call 20 of my brothers over, muscular and strong on the

upper body, and also 'strong' down there! I lined them up before her, not a single fabric covering their bodies. I also put a small little blue pill into each of their mouths before letting them do their 'work'! After that, she submitted to everything! And most importantly, she let everything out, I got it all recorded!" Fatty Han was laughing hard.

Wow, 20 men with viagra! The 'force' must have been strong!

Zhang Yang could only shake his head, "Fatty, you really are 'filthy', you know that? Filthy good, man!"

"Cheh, this is a tactic! To win the battle without having to fight! All famous generals used tactics!" Fatty Han said without any sense of shame.

But in the end, that Liu Shu Yan really did went to prison after that. At least 20 years of serving was waiting for her, ahead of her life, at least 20 years of prison life! So she will definitely not be a problem to Zhang Yang, well, at least for 20 years.

Now that the potential threat has been removed, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er no longer required protection anymore. So he decided to move out from their places. A man living under the same roof as two ladies, he would still feel a bit uncomfortable with it, no matter what.

But his old apartment and everything in it had been burned to crisp! So now, he could only think about buying a new house for him to stay.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er found out that he was trying to look for a new house, so they decided to aid him in his search. They tagged along with him to several locations, most of which were per their suggestions. The designs, the location, everything should follow their so-called 'guidelines'!

Zhang Yang tried to say no to their proposals, but according to some 'wise' people, [a woman is like 500 ducks](#). He only had one mouth, how could he win against 1000 ducks! So by the end of it, he let the girls decide everything for him.

A woman is like 500 ducks - it means a typical woman is very good in making arguments. The noises made during the argument suggest that the noises are like the sounds made by ducks.

Another few days had passed, the army of Mechanical Servants had finally reached the 1,000 maximum capacity of a Level 3 Castle Defense. So, to increase the limit capacity on the number of Mechanical Servants he can produce, he must elevate his current Castle Defense level up to Level 4. In order to do so, he needed [Mining ores] that are acquired from Level 90 Mining Profession skills. So, it was impossible for him to proceed at the moment!

Zhang Yang had reached Level 86, so he is just 4 levels away from reaching Level 90. He was also looking forward to getting the final piece of the [Fragment of Dimensional Key] and becoming eligible to enter the fallen palace of the Imperial Heaven's Empire. He intended to seek out the [Ancient Godly Weapon - Meteor Sword] and complete the main quest that was assigned to him by Princess Serena.



This linked quest is believed to be the longest main story linked quest that Zhang Yang had ever received. There were quests among quests, it was extremely annoying! Of course, the reward of this extremely long and annoying quest should have heavenly, or else, what was the point of all this?

‘Server Announcement: Player One Sword Stroke has successfully stopped the resurrection of the Witchking of the Undead - Yeekla, and contributed greatly to preserving the peace of the main land, this great deed will be published on the list of the glorious deed for the world to admire!’

‘Server Announcement: Player One Sword Stroke has acquired Level +2, Skill Point +1, Lucky Attribute +1 as rewards!’

Zhang Yang suddenly received a server notification which congratulated One Sword Stroke, while he was making potions!

Well, that was marvelous of him! That should be one of the main quests in the game. The rewards were handsome. Just by seeing the level increment, the skill point reward, lucky attribute increment, Zhang Yang knew that there must be more, such as a skill book, some powerful equipment that made the entire quest worth while, and also a powerful pet as additional rewards!

One Sword Stroke, a skillful player, formidable opponent that one must not forget!

After awhile, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were beginning to discuss about One Sword Stroke’s achievement on the

new quest that he had completed. They were making guesses which boss did Imperial Sky slay, and what kind of rewards did they get.

"At the best, it could only be a Violet-Platinum boss! The officials have introduced before, Mythical grade bosses will only start appearing in Level 110 dungeons. Now that Zhang Yang is only at Level 86, we're still far away from entering the Chaos Realm!" Lost Dream said.

Everyone nodded to express their agreement on this.

Zhang Yang then reminded them, "Well, they might have acquired some sort of skills like {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! So, the next time we engage with them, we must be ready to use our life-saving skills!"

"It's actually a fortunate thing that the arena forbids the use of such skills, or else every match or every competition like the Professional League Championship will mean nothing, as people would just activate powerful skills and see who dies first. No skills will be tested anymore!"

After the gang had their discussion and chit chatting, they soon forgot about the achievement of Imperial Sky. But this was actually a huge success for the Imperial Sky as they managed to reforge their image and name in the game. Although they would still not be as good as Lone Desert Smoke, at least they have stepped up to show their strength to the public!

# Chapter 391: Imperial Sky Assault (1)

---

However, just a few days after, Zhang Yang received an important news.

The news came from Luo Xin Yan. Just like 'history' unfolding itself into the present, she actually did meet Liu Wei when she joined the Model exhibition in her school. And just like history, Liu Wei fell for her and took her in as his mistress.

Luo Xin Yan was really greedy. It wasn't enough for her, even after Liu Wei provided her 50,000 dollars every month. So, she still continued to be the 'spy' and consistently contacted Zhang Yang. Only, she was not able to provide any important information, therefore she was not given any additional rewards. But this time, the news that she brought up to Zhang Yang, was definitely worth something!

--- One Sword Stroke had also acquired a piece of [Territory Conquest Order] when he completed the Main Story Linking Quest! Meanwhile, under the influence of Liu Wei with a substantial amount of gold, Imperial Sky, Rolling Rocks, and Storm Riders, three top-tier guilds were going to join forces as a temporary measure in order to launch their assault on Thunderstorm Castle! They were going to activate the [Territory Conquest Order]! They were going to start a war with the Lone Desert Smoke!

At first, Zhang Yang could not understand. Be it a Territory Conquest or a Territory Defense, the battle could only be led by one guild. So how can these three guilds join forces?

Luo Xin Yan then explained it clearly to Zhang Yang, that Rolling Rocks and Storm Riders would temporarily send their top players over to join Imperial Sky. In that way, they could gather all of their best players to form an ultimate force to win the Territory Conquest! So, what about the maximum capacity of the members in one guild? They wouldn't be able to fit so many top players in one guild! Of course, One Sword Stroke had already get his hands on one [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] when he had completed the previous quest! He hasn't used it because he wanted to keep it as an element of surprise! When he is ready and the time is right, he will use it and move forward with his plan. By then when Lone Desert Smoke sees it in the system notification, it will be too late to react!

Indeed, there weren't any guild strong enough to take on Lone Desert Smoke one on one. But these three guilds were three of the top guilds in the China server, and they have joined their elite forces together into one powerful force! This force might just overwhelm the best of Lone Desert Smoke!

Furthermore, the Imperial Sky still hasn't used their [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order]. If Luo Xin Yan did not give this news to Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang and the guild would only make preparations and planning according to their current Level 2 Guild. They would only make preparations to go up against the basic number of '20,000' players in Imperial Sky. But, Imperial Sky can simply use the [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] and increase their maximum capacity of players up to 30,000 and expand their force at the final moment before they begin the Territory Conquest, like an hour earlier or so. Then, they will have the element of surprise over Zhang Yang and the Lone Desert Smoke!

Over these few days, the Imperial Sky and the two other guilds have done preparing their forces, so that meant, that it's just a matter of time before they activate the [Territory Conquest Order] and launch their full-scale attack!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. He should have guessed it! Liu Wei had been in the dark, hiding for too long, and it's about time he made his move!

But, why aim at Thunderstorm Castle?

Well, Thunderstorm Castle is the first territory that appeared in China server, so the time and effort used to set up the territory were the longest, and the Castle Defense level must be the highest as well. And, not to mention that there is a top-tier guild called Lone Desert Smoke running the territory behind it! So this territory was definitely the hardest to fall among all three territories in the China server. So why would they want to aim at the most difficult one?

After thinking further through, Zhang Yang finally understood.

One Sword Stroke had an insatiable appetite, so large that he will not stop until he is bloated with it all! So after his latest achievement, if he takes down Thunderstorm Castle, then Imperial Sky will become a stronger guild than can replace Lone Desert Smoke at the top, becoming the best guild in the entire China region! But if he proceeded to conquer the other territories that will actually give him the same benefits in terms of economic growth for his guild, but they will never be able to shake off the shadow that had been cast upon them by Lone Desert Smoke!

The higher the risk, the higher the benefits!

There is only one question left. Can One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei secure their victory over this conquest? We shall see about that!

Without Luo Xin Yan's news, maybe Zhang Yang would have been beaten before he could react, but he had prepared the one thousand army of Mechanical Servants! That's his secret weapon that his enemies did not know of! That's his element of surprise! These 1000 Mechanical Servants can charge out to save the fight when they are in desperate times. This army of Mechanical Servants was the key to turn the tables!

When the time comes, let's see who surprises who!

Zhang Yang did not leak the news regarding Imperial Sky, Rolling Rocks, and Storm Riders. He only told Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and a few more core players of the guild about it, so that everyone is prepared for it.

But, only one day after he received the news. One Sword Stroke had launched the [Territory Conquest Order] on Thunderstorm Castle, igniting the countdown to a war!

'Ding! Player One Sword Stroke has launched [Territory Conquest Order], the Territory Conquest will begin tomorrow at 7 p.m. The Territory Conquest will last for 3 hours.

Participants limitation: All members of 'Imperial Sky' and 'Lone Desert Smoke' only.

During the Territory Conquest, all teleportation services or scrolls will be unavailable.

All players who are killed during the Territory Conquest will be teleported back to the main city and these players will not be able to rejoin the conquest!

After the 3-hour conquest, if Imperial Sky takes down the Territory Main Hall, then Imperial Sky will be deemed, victor! Player One Sword Stroke will take over and become the new Baron of Thunderstorm Castle."

Both sides of the guilds received the same notification message from the system.

"Haha! The Imperial Sky still hasn't had enough from us. Let us give them bastards some real firepower this time!" Lost Dream was crunching his fists already.

A battle maniac like Wei Yan Er would, of course, have sharpened her weapons and was prepared for battle at any time.

Everyone knew that the Imperial Sky had a 'Secret Weapon', but none of them knew how Zhang Yang got the news. Zhang Yang had also kept the fact that Luo Xin Yan told him the news from

everyone around him, not because he didn't trust them, it was just that, the more people know, the easier the news would leak. And most importantly, it wouldn't benefit anyone as not many even knew Luo Xin Yan.

One day had passed.

It was 6 in the evening, and all members of the Lone Desert Smoke were gathered at Thunderstorm Castle. From that moment on, the Teleportation Circle service had ceased functioning for all outsiders, except for the members of Lone Desert Smoke. Many players had no idea on what was about to happen, so there was an uproar on why the Teleportation Circle could not be accessed!

The members of the Imperial Sky were beginning to gather by the front of the Thunderstorm Castle outside the castle wall. Later, they were joined by the members of the Rolling Rocks and the Storm Riders.

"So they really are patient about this, it's almost time to begin, and they are showing no intention of using the [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] yet!" Hundred Shots laughed.

"The later they use it, the shorter time we will have for our preparation. Well, they've done great, all those efforts in trying to 'surprise' us! So unfortunate for them ---"

All members of the Lone Desert Smoke were standing on the castle wall while smiling and laughing, for they already knew the 'little surprise' that their opponents thought no one knew.



It was already 6:50 p.m.

‘Server Announcement: Congratulations to Imperial Sky for becoming the second Level 3 Guild in the entire China server! For the next 3 days, all Imperial Sky members will receive the reward of earning 100% additional experience points, and the cost of repairing equipment, inserting gemstones into sockets, and identifying equipment will be halved!’

Finally, One Sword Stroke had taken out his ‘Ultimate Game Card’!

7 p.m.!

‘Ding! The Territory Conquest has begun!’

In an instant, every single player that was not from Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky were teleported 2 kilometers away from the Thunderstorm Castle!

Gu loo loo! As sounds of heavy objects were heard, 5 catapults appeared at the front line of the battlefield. Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! 5 huge rocks were shot out from the catapults’ swings, and the stones were flying over like missiles, smashing onto the castle wall of Thunderstorm Castle.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

As the rocks were smashing onto the castle wall, the walls were blasted into pieces as countless bricks of the wall flew all around into the surroundings! Those who did not react fast enough, could not avoid the assault of the huge rocks and were the first to die. As for those who survived the impact of the huge rocks, also took great damage!

"So, now we're dealing with catapults, eh? We have our own catapults too!" Mountain Mover was the absolute commander in this battle against the large army of the Imperial Sky. He raised up his hand and made a commanding gesture. Then he shouted, "Aim at their catapults, fire back at will!"

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

The catapults within the Thunderstorm Castle premises were also beginning to fire huge rocks back to the formation of the Imperial Sky army.

However, although catapult attacks can bring a substantial amount of damage to the castle wall, but the damage inflicted on living targets weren't really that high. Even if the rocks landed on the targets, it would only be able to wound the targets badly. These targets can then take some [Snacks] or some [Potions] to recover their health points, and they will be as good as new. So, these kinds of attacks cannot be effective against living targets.

After all, catapults are meant to use for breaking down castle walls only. If catapults can also inflict great damages to players, then what use would be the [Magic Cannons]?

Boom! Boom!

The two guilds exchanged fire with catapults. But catapults were just like Magic Cannons as well, they had limited 'ammo', and every catapult can only fire 20 huge rocks in one battle.

In just about 10 minutes, the battle of catapults had finally ended as both sides were out of 'ammo'. Thunderstorm Castle had lost two Magic Cannons, while the Imperial Sky had lost 3 catapults, all blown to bits!

It was all money down the drain!

Be it the catapults or the Magic Cannons, money was required to purchase these kinds of weapons from the system, and the price of each weapon of this sort exceeded millions of gold! Besides, these kinds of weapon can only be used on certain occasions only. More importantly, once these sort of weapons are destroyed, there is no way to repair them, and the only way to replace them is to buy a new one!

So from this point of view, the officials are eager to see players triggering Territory Conquest, because they can earn more money if players are required to make additional purchases of the weapons to defend their own territory!

One Sword Stroke was riding on a [White-boned Sabretooth]. With a shoof, he pulled up his axe from his waist and said, "Brothers and sisters, charge now! Thunderstorm Castle should be

ours for the taking! We shall paint the flag of Imperial Sky with the blood of Lone Desert Smoke!"

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

The 30,000 plus troops charged in like a tidal wave towards the direction of the Thunderstorm Castle.

Mountain Mover raised up his left hand and said, "Aim the Magic Cannon at the most saturated point of the army, on my mark... Fire at will!"

Shoof!

Streams of white lights were shot right out into the saturated point o the army, followed by a burst of explosion! The white light expanded out by an area of 10 X 10 meters as they wiped out every single player within that perimeter! Everything melted, there was not even any sign of dead bodies!

Unfortunately, the area of the explosion was not large enough, it only managed to wipe out approximately 100 members of Imperial Sky!

"Ready, again! Fire at will!" Mountain Mover raised up his hand again and pointed at the most saturated point of the enemy army.

Shoof!

Shoof!

The Magic Cannons were serving their purpose, as they shot out streams of white lights that blinded and most importantly, destroyed! After ten shots, Imperial Sky had lost more than a thousand soldiers already! However, the Magic Cannon had reached it's firing capacity for the battle. After all, no matter how strong and valiant a weapon can be, it won't hold after being used for many times, which clearly exceeded its durability!

If all three Magic Cannons were intact, they could have taken out more 3,000 players! The main idea was that, even before the real battle begins, the enemy would have already lost 1/10th of their army! It could have been an advantage for the Lone Desert Smoke in that sense!

The Imperial Sky arrived at the front door of the castle and began to launch their assaults on the door itself. It's the only way in!

[Level 3 Territory Door] (Item)

Level: 1

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 3,000

Magic Resistance: 3,000

Standing right before a magnificent door, Imperial Sky should have trouble breaking through the super strong door of the castle! As the other two territories were just Level 1 territories, their castle doors only have 1,000,000 health points, 1,000 defense and magic resistance. So it would not be wise to compare the difference!

Furthermore, the information of the Territory Door will not be revealed to anyone, until players are in a Territory Conquest!

One Sword Stroke indeed had many 'secret cards' that were not revealed yet, so people may think that he shall be the one who triumphs over his enemy. But, how about Zhang Yang? How many 'secret cards' did Zhang Yang have up his sleeve for the moment?

So what should be done next?

Well, One Sword Stroke had no other choice at the moment but to make great sacrifices! Fight, by sacrificing the bulk of his army if necessary!

With a wave of his sword, One Sword Stroke commanded his

members to attack! Countless players were gushing up onto the door like a tidal wave and they began swinging away in an attempt to bring down the door, by force!

## Chapter 392: Imperial Sky Assault (2)

---

Right on top of the territory walls and door, the Lone Desert Smoke had arranged some surprises for them! Spellcasters, hunters of the Lone Desert Smokes were stationed at the top of the walls, showering their AOE attacks onto the members of the Imperial Sky all around the walls and door on the outside, trying to weaken their assaults on the castle door.

Rains of hailstones, flames, and arrows were descending onto the members of the Imperial Sky. It did not matter if they were the regular members or the elite members of the Imperial Sky, Rolling Rocks and Storm Riders, they could only take everything coming down on them and suffer great damage. The bloodshed was extreme, and many had fallen!

But, it seemed that One Sword Stroke had already predicted this situation. These players that he had sent up front were all mounted on Gray-Silver grade [Battle Mounts]. The purpose, was to boost the health points of the players on the front line. Plus, he had also arranged a large number of healers by the back of the front line to heal who constantly casted {Holy Shields} onto the players on the front line, no matter what the costs were!

This was indeed a good strategy. As their health points were boosted high enough to sustain high damage and survive, the healers can heal them in time and lower down the death rate!

After all, the number of players that can fit on the castle wall and on top of the Territory Door was limited, and the AOE skill attacks dealt lower damages. So if the attacks were not concentrated



enough, or the interval of the assault waves were not stacked quickly enough, then their enemies would not be instantly killed, and they will have the chance to heal again!

"They really came well prepared!" Zhang Yang smiled.

But Han Ying Xue began to show some worry on her face, "3 guilds joining together to challenge us. If we compare the combat power of the players, they might be even better than us now! And if they manage to break through our door, then the battle will become hell for us, right?"

Mountain Mover came up and explained, "But the main objective of a Territory Conquest is not to slay your enemies, it's to make sure the guild flag that is installed right in the Territory Hall remains standing! As long as the flag is still standing after 3 hours, even if we're all slain, we will still be victors! Buying time! That's the key!"

"So, we must be more focused on preventing their thieves from stealing our flag!" Zhang Yang nodded.

"Oh! So that's why you sent sister Sun over to the Territory Hall!" Wei Yan Er suddenly understood.

This was because Sun Xin Yu was unmatched in 'stealth'!

Zhang Yang laughed, "Wow, little girl, it's really a marvelous thing to see that you're actually becoming clever! Good for you!"

"Humph! I'm going to make you look bad one day for underestimating me all the time!" Wei Yan Er crunched her teeth together while speaking in a low voice.

The assault squad of the Imperial Sky did not give up on taking down the door even though they were bombarded heavily by Lone Desert Smoke. And under their selfless effort on attacking the door, the strong and sturdy Level 3 Territory Door was eventually taken down in about 10 minutes, blown to bits! For that, the Imperial Sky had sacrificed about 300 players as the cost of bringing the door down!

So the battle went on, and it was still 2 hours and 31 minutes away from the end of the conquest!

"Tankers to the front line, healers to the back, and heal the front lines! Assault teams, give it your best!" Mountain Mover commanded the Lone Desert Smoke members, while at the same time, he was waving his hands around, stationing all the members to places they should be.

Mountain Mover had made a decision, to station all the defensive forces at the front entrance of the castle, forming a shape of a bag. Tankers were lining up at the front-most positions, while right behind them, where the assault teams of the Lone Desert Smoke! When the enemies clashed into them, the tankers blocked them, while the assault teams unleashed hell on the enemies with their highest damage output! The situation was like Leonidas and his 300 Spartans going against the massive army! They easily took down all the enemy squads that were sent up to test out their

formation and defenses!

This was undoubtedly a very impressive tactic, and the effects were outstanding! It was that moment when the members of Imperial Sky that rushed in blindly, were welcomed with 'hell of fire', and the rate of death on Imperial Sky increased greatly!

"Zhan Yu, come and let's have a good 'chat'!" a loud cry came up, and it was One Sword Stroke, riding on his [White-Boned Sabretooth] coming in through the entrance of the castle. As the assault teams of the Lone Desert Smoke launched their assaults on him, he was inflicted with '-o!', and this value kept on popping up whenever an attack landed on him! That was a damage absorption effect going on!

Well, nothing could be done on that. Other than Berserker's {Tornado Cleave}, most of the AOE attacks were lower in damage, so when they are up against a tanker with good equipment, it's just tragic!

For example, the {Barrage} of the hunter can only inflict 200% range attack damage over 10 seconds. So at every second, it's just 20% of the range attack damage. Even if the player acquired a Level 80 Violet-Platinum range weapon with an interval attack of 3.8 seconds, and also a full set of Violet-Platinum armor equipped, the basic ranged attack of the player would only be approximately 9,500. So 20% of that amount of attack would only be about 2,000 or maybe less!

So, how do you break through his defense?

Seeing their guild master One Sword Stroke appeared right in front of them, the members of the Imperial Sky were agitated with excitement. They began to cheer and cry out loud! Everyone could see that One Sword Stroke is a favorable man in Imperial Sky, with high prestige!

Meanwhile, at beside of One Sword Stroke, there came Liu Wei - 'Heaven's Pride'. He was riding a gray-silver Gray Silver, looking like a Prince Charming.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "One Sword Stroke, we have crossed path many times in the Professional League Championship. So, you! Are! Unworthy! To! Be! My! Opponent!" He spelled out his words one by one to make it clear to One Sword Stroke.

As the Professional League Championship was held, the Silky Soft Battle Team and the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team had crossed blades for 14 times in total. The results of the battles were 12:2; Zhang Yang and his guild won the matches single-sided! And Zhang Yang had engaged in battle with One Sword Stroke 5 times in total. Zhang Yang had won over 5 times, totally being overpowering One Sword Stroke.

After hearing Zhang Yang's words, One Sword Stroke did not burst into anger, he laughed instead, "Well, that was the past, and the past shall remain in the past. The present is now! The tides in the ocean can change, and now it's about time we Imperial Sky sing the song of victory!"

Meanwhile, Liu Wei was feeling annoyed, "Why are we wasting time speaking to him! Time is slipping away and we have a time limit on this conquest! Take down Thunderstorm Castle now!"

One Sword Stroke glanced at Liu Wei with disdain --- this idiot doesn't get it at all, does he? Zhang Yang is a godly existence in the Lone Desert Smoke. So by defeating him, surely his defeat will crush the morale and the will of Lone Desert Smoke. And honestly speaking, Zhang Yang himself was already like almost half of the battle power of the entire Lone Desert Smoke!

The army should go into war with tactics and strategies. Those who only know how to shout and charge are idiots!

So by having such an idiot by his side, he could not help but to sigh quietly in his heart, "Come, let us unleash hell upon them with our {Starfall} and {Meteor Crash}!"

After saying it out loud, One Sword Stroke reached his hand towards Liu Wei. And before the eyes of Zhang Yang and the Lone Desert Smoke, including his own members of Imperial Sky, the two of them held hands like lovers, fingers crossed!

What the heck! That scene was so blinding that even dogs with sunglasses will be blinded as well! Nothing can be unseen!

Zhang Yang frowned at what he just witnessed, and then he quickly recovered and informed through the party channel, "Little girl, witchy snow, you two should stand back a little, this is definitely a Paired Skill!"

The best way to deal with Paired Skills is to stay out of the skill's effective area. Because the players who activate Paired Skills would have to stay in a spot and let the skill unleash its potential, so they cannot pursue anyone running away. But this situation was very different, Lone Desert Smoke had to stand their ground to make sure that their enemies do not pass through the entrance of their territory! Once they move out of the way, the members of Imperial Sky will gush into the castle like a strong current of wave, and what comes next would be a slaughterhouse!

"Tankers to the front! Assault teams and healers to the back!" Zhang Yang shouted as loudly as he could.

Boom!

A thunderous burst of sound followed by a vague burning sky appeared, everyone was looking up into the sky to see it.

Countless stars were falling from the sky and crashing down upon the location of Zhang Yang and his members of Lone Desert Smoke. Streams of falling stars, the size of houses came crashing down. When they entered the atmosphere of the earth, they flew through the air vigorously and ignited into balls of flames, gigantic balls of flames! They were like balls of flames bursting out from a volcano, it was a very daunting sight!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

As the meteors crashed onto them, the position of the entrance of

the castle was instantly turned into a land of flames. The members of Lone Desert Smoke were suffering intense waves of damage, and everyone was inflicted with damages ranging from 2,000 to 3,000 in every second! Every second!

It is just like the paired skill of {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, these paired skills of {Starfall} and {Meteor Crash} that One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei just unleashed could deal 5,000 damage in every second! But the damage value is a little lower because the {Starfall,} and {Meteor Crash} inflict fire type damages, so players who have fire resistance would be able to resist the fire damage and lower the damage values. On the other hand, the paired skill, {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} inflict chaos damage that ignores all defense and all resistance! Of course, the damage output would be higher!

The duration of this paired skills were also very long. Zhang Yang tried to launch a {Spear of Obliteration} at Liu Wei, and all he got was the word 'Immune'. Obviously, all the paired skills are alike, players that are activating paired skills will be come invincible until the skills end!

"Heal up! Everybody, hold on tight!" Zhang Yang shouted with his loudest voice, because they cannot afford to lose the defense line by this entrance! At the very least, they must not lose their defense line by the entrance at such early stage of the conquest!

However, Zhang Yang and his guild did not just encounter with the {Starfall} and {Meteor Crash}, they were also encountering the assaults from the Imperial Sky army, consisting of spellcasters and hunters that bombard waves of AOE attacks at them! As for Lone

Desert Smoke, all of their spellcasters and hunters had backed away to the back of the battle line, as they were attempting to avoid getting caught in the rain of the paired skills! So, the front line was left with only tankers and warriors, and they had no way of retaliating when under such heavy fire, not at the moment.

If it was just the paired skills, Zhang Yang and his guild members wouldn't have any problem standing their ground against it. But with the aid of hundreds of hunters and spellcasters from the Imperial Sky supporting from behind, with waves of AOE attacks, Lone Desert Smoke could not heal before the next wave came onto them!

As mentioned earlier, AOE attacks weren't really causing high damages to the targets. The damages inflicted on top tier tankers are even lower! Basically, normal tankers with average equipment were inflicted with about 100 damage in every wave of the AOE attack. But when there were about 100 of them bombarding over, that will become a total of 10,000 damages, which clearly exceeded the limit of the average healer!

The number of Tankers on the front line was decreasing rapidly as the battle continued!

"Should we use our paired skills as well?" Han Ying Xue asked Zhang Yang.

"Let's not be hasty, it's not the right time yet. Let's wait for more of them to gather at this spot first!" Zhang Yang began to laugh.



The skill {Starfall} and {Meteor Crash} was indeed impressive, especially when Zhang Yang and his guild members had no choice but to stand their ground and take on the full effect of their paired skills! The damage done on the Lone Desert Smoke was tremendous! But it was fortunate for the Lone Desert Smoke, that the paired skills only lasted for 30 seconds, and Lone Desert Smoke lost about 300 players as the cost of surviving that wave of attack!

"Hahaha! Aren't our paired skills marvelous, Zhan Yu? One Sword Stroke spoke with a sense of pride in his tone.

"Not really. Just like that. Meh." Zhang Yang spoke calmly. Well, it was actually true, because that wave only took out about 300 members of the Lone Desert Smoke, and Imperial Sky did not break the defensive line by the castle entrance as well. It wasn't much.

"Zhang Yang, did you really think that we have only one set of paired skills?" Liu Wei revealed a sinister smile on his face, "Come, let's continue!"

The two of them, Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke were still holding their hands like they were never going to let go. At first, Zhang Yang really thought that these two were burning in the flame of gayness, having the passion not to let go of each other, to the point where they did not give a sh\*t to how everyone would view them! But from Liu Wei's words, he sensed that they seemed to be having a second set of paired skills!

One Sword Stroke let out a breath of sigh, once again the loose-lipped had ruined another part of his plans. The element of

surprise! Elements of surprise should only be used at the most crucial moment for it to work their wonders! That is why there's a word 'surprise' there! So, what good is shouting out loud, telling the world you have a 'surprise' for your enemy! So much for keeping secrets!

"{Absolute Decade},{Frost Prison}!"

Liu Wei let out a loud roar, and immediately, layers of frost began to form on the ground surface that was already destroyed by the meteors, and countless ice blades shot right out from the ground, towards the players of Lone Desert Smoke!

As they had suffered a large hit from the previous assaults of the paired skills, the Lone Desert Smoke needed to heal themselves, and they needed a substantial amount of mana points to cast the healing skills. Although there were many healers on the scene and they could take turns and heal the wounded, it takes time for them to do so! And now, their opponents had already begun their next assault wave! So they had no time at all to take turns and switch to heal the wounded!

Zhang Yang made a defining decision, there he shouted, "Witchy Snow! Let's do it!"

"Alright!"

"Everyone stand back!" Zhang Yang said in the guild channel.

Seeing the Lone Desert Smoke were retreating back and the entrance of the castle was opened up, One Sword Stroke revealed a smile and said, "Charge! At all costs!"

He already knew that Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had the super paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, but they had to charge! Because they are the invaders, and to win, they must make some sacrifices!

{Blizzard Sky}, {Lunar's Dew} activated!

In an instant, the sky began to turn white, hail began to fall, followed by a large moon that appeared right in the sky, and there they began! Terrifying values of damages were inflicted upon the army of Imperial Sky!

It looked like the Imperial Sky was sending men to die in vain, but the fact was, it wasn't! They were actually using their advantage in numbers, sacrificing their guild members to open up a path!

From this point of view, One Sword Stroke is indeed, not a simple man, he is willing to make the necessary sacrifices to win when the time is right! And he will not hesitate at all when he needs to make such sacrifices! He indeed has what it takes to make resolute decisions!

30 seconds passed before they knew it, and the paired skills from both sides had ended. The member on two sides clashed on and began to understand the true meaning of 'cut and thrust'! It

means, melee combat!

Judging purely by the strength of the players, the combination of the three guilds is obviously much higher than the force of Lone Desert Smoke alone. However, the members of Lone Desert Smoke all had their very own Gray-Silver [Mounts], which greatly increase their attack and health points. The battle was more evenly fought than expected.

The battle progressed unusually intensely, as there would be players dying at every ticking second! Blood was shed at every single corner at the entrance of the castle! In the game, non-environmental objects such as blood and dead bodies would only exist in the surroundings for a short while, then everything of such sort will disappear.

But, the location of the entrance was filled with a river of blood, and everyone was stained with blood, splashing over in the air. The battle was really dramatic!

The Lone Desert Smoke only needed to stand their ground for 3 hours in order to win. So, they were willing to sacrifice themselves, buying as much time as they could!

Shoof!

A stream of {Flaming Tongue} suddenly shot right out at Zhang Yang. Although Zhang Yang was very focused in the intense battle, part of his focus was still on One Sword Stroke. And he witnessed it, that stream of {Flaming Tongue} came fresh out from the palm

## of One Sword Stroke!

At that instant, the members of Imperial Sky around Zhang Yang turned their focus onto Zhang Yang and began to launch their all-out attacks in him!

Zhang Yang was still left with about 40,000 health points at the moment. So, theoretically he was not at the danger level yet, he was still far from it! But he could feel a sense of danger that made him activated his {Shield Wall}!

That attack from One Sword Stroke was obviously a signal, a signal that triggered every single member of Imperial Sky around Zhang Yang to focus their assault fully on Zhang Yang!

Because the moment when they slay Zhang Yang, would be the moment they break the undefeatable record of Zhang Yang. That would give a fatal blow to the morale of Lone Desert Smoke and make them vulnerable!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Streams of {Flaming Tongue} were fired, one after another onto Zhang Yang. Even though Zhang Yang had already activated {Shield Wall}, he would still be inflicted with 170 damage! So, it seemed that this {Flaming Tongue} was a similar skill to {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, and its basic attack reached up to 10,000!

"So do you think you're the one with super skill?" Zhang Yang

said.

He then let out a gentle breath and activated his {Dance of Heaven and Earth} on One Sword Stroke!

One Sword Stroke too, came straight up and activated his {Shield Wall} to counter.

10 seconds later, One Sword Stroke's {Shield Wall} was down, but Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} was still active thanks to the special effect of [Titan Wall]. The skill went on for another 5 seconds before it ended! Zhang Yang laughed out loud and activated the special effect of the [Ring of Beastman's Ancestor]!

Since {Shield Wall} only had 7 minutes of cool down, even without adding the skill points, it could be activated multiple times in one large-scale battle! Since Zhang Yang had already activated his super skill, he had to make sure that his opponent dies by the end of the battle! Or else, it would be a humiliation towards his action in activating the skill - {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

The old beastman appeared, floating in the middle of the air, waving its staff at One Sword Stroke and launched multiple streams of an electrical surge right onto One Sword Stroke!

## Chapter 393: Imperial Sky Assault (3)

---

"F\*ck this sh\*t!" One Sword Stroke could only curse out loud and take a few steps back!

He could still hold his ground if there was only the {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} charging up on him, because with his defense capability and a few healers healing him, he could hold his ground! But when Zhang Yang launched his super skill onto One Sword Stroke, the members of the Lone Desert Smoke quickly noticed the flamboyant effects, and they also locked on to One Sword Stroke. Without the protection of his {Shield Wall}, he would definitely take heavy damage!

One Sword Stroke continued to back his steps. Although he could not dodge the attack of the {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, he could still let his guild members aid him by blocking the assaults from the members of Lone Desert Smoke so that he could be healed in peace!

The [Battle Mount] beneath his butt was a Yellow-Gold grade. So when he is mounted onto his [Battle Mount], his total health points would reach up to 70,000. Although it's still far from the maniacal Zhang Yang's health points, once he activates the [Ring of Endless Desire], he could still make it through a critical stage!

[Ring of Endless Desire] is the Violet-Platinum ring that One Sword Stroke got from the previous lucky draw during the Soaring Sword Competition. Activating it will turn every single damage inflicted on him into health points, and it lasts for 2 seconds! It's actually a strong and powerful life-saving effect of a ring!

"Haha, Zhan Yu! You have failed to kill me this time!" One Sword Stroke was running away like a coward, but he tried to provoke Zhang Yang by saying that it was Zhang Yang's failure for not being able to kill him. His tone was full of scorn.

Zhang Yang heard and he laughed, "If you're not happy about it, then let's just settle this one-on-one!"

That sent One Sword Stroke speechless. Although he already admitted that his skills as a player can match up with Zhang Yang, his equipment was vastly inferior! Of course, he could not say this out loud as it will only make him look bad. So the next question is why is his equipment still inferior to Zhang Yang's equipment?

The one thing that measures the strength of a guild is the capability of the guild in slaying bosses, seeing how many bosses can one guild slay. Equipment is basically the only absolute thing in the game that defines one's strength in an online game. By admitting that his equipment is not as good as Zhang Yang's, it would mean admitting that Imperial Sky is not as good as Lone Desert Smoke!

One Sword Stroke will never say it out loud, even when he knows it himself, deep down his heart!

Just when the battle was getting even more intense, Zhang Yang received a voice message from Fatty Han all of a sudden --- that guy is now the Guildmaster of the Sub-Guild, and he would normally just get rewards from events like he did in the previous Guild War



Competition. So basically, he would just sit tightly at the Sub-Guild. After all, he is the one person that Zhang Yang trusted the most, a true brother in arm.

And for that, Zhang Yang had not brought him over for this defense.

"Little Yang, the Dominators and the few other guilds have f\*cking joined together to attack our Mining Cave again!" Fatty Han was speaking out of rage.

Zhang Yang frowned, "They really grew ears that can hear thousands of miles away all around their bodies! One small movement of any grass in our guild, and they would eventually find out!"

The system will not spread the news on the server about Territory Conquest events, but right before the conquest is about to begin, the system will lock up the teleportation circle of the territory where the conquest is going to happen. That phenomenon was a very obvious hint that a conquest is about to begin! Furthermore, there are spies in every single guild. Guilds can still enclose top confidential secrets, but an event like a Territory Conquest, a conquest defense that involves the entire guild? It's not possible to hide such information from the other guilds.

"Little Yang, all members of the Sub-Guild are basically made up of the Servicing players, and today we have transferred many elites to the main guild for that stupid conquest! We're in trouble here!" Fatty Han was worried through the roof.

Well, it's true that Zhang Yang had been moving most of the Servicing players over to the Sub-Guild, ever since the Sub-Guild was founded. The main aim is to increase the strength of the Main Guild in battle. Other than that, Zhang Yang had also moved most of the elite players from the Sub-Guild as a temporary measure so that he can prepare the Main Guild to become strong enough to go up against the merged forces of 3 guilds! However, the drawback is that the Sub-Guild is weakened and left vulnerable.

Zhang Yang made a decision on the spot and said, "Just hold on first, Mountain Mover will go and help! I'll take it from here!"

"That's great!" Fatty Han laughed as if his problem had been solved, then he asked again, "Then how about the defense against the conquest? Are you going to be alright with it? If we lose the Mining Cave, we can get it back anytime we want. But a territory? It's just too important!"

"Calm down, my friend. We won't lose the territory because they don't have it in them!" Zhang Yang smiled gently and contacted Mountain Mover through the party channel, "Mountain Mover, the Dominators and a few more guilds have joined forces to attack our Mining Cave again. I need you to kill yourself and get back to the main city immediately. Then, use the teleportation circle of Radiance and get over there to help Fatty Han. Secure our Mining Cave!"

"Yes sir!" Mountain Mover nodded quickly and got moving.

Since the current battle had turned into an all out tug-of war, only strength mattered, there was no more room for tactics! So it's pointless for Mountain Mover to stay here as his forte was all about tactics. So, it would be more efficient and effective for him to aid Fatty Han.

He took out all of his equipment and charged in between the crossfire of the two sides of the guilds! Without any additional attributes from the equipment, a naked Level 80 Spellcaster only had about 3,000 health points! In an instance, he was bombarded by countless fire balls, ice blades, and arrows, and turned into a stream of white light that headed back to the main city.

Zhang Yang had been holding back before this. He wanted to let his fellow guild members experience the battle with Imperial Sky for a little longer so that his guild members can be trained to face this kind of battle in the future. But now that their Mining Cave was being attacked, and the resource point might be fallen into the hands of others at any time, he couldn't just sit on his \*ss peacefully anymore. "Brothers and sisters! It's time we show them our real strength! Let them have a taste of Lone Desert Smoke!"

"Rawgh!"

"Kill ---"

"Kill!"

With just one inspirational phrase, the morale of Lone Desert Smoke went through the roof! Everyone roared out their strong

will to crush their enemies! So this what the power of an idol could do, every single word and action can affect everyone around them!

One Sword Stroke frowned a little at the fact that Zhang Yang gave up on defense and instead, he decided to go all out at Imperial Sky. He couldn't understand why Zhang Yang would make such irrational decision. Lone Desert Smoke had an advantage over Imperial Sky, for which they were the defenders, while Imperial Sky has limited time to break through their defense! Even if there is only one player left on their side, Lone Desert Smoke would still claim the victory as long as they keep their flag in the Territory Hall safe! They could have just stood their ground, smile, and win by the end of all this, if they played their cards right!

But he suddenly smiled coldly, after he received news about the Dominators and the other guilds ganging up on the Mining Cave.

Everything made sense now!

"Brothers, charge! For the glory of Imperial Sky! Take down the Thunderstorm castle and our guild shall be flagged as the number one guild in the entire China server!" One Sword Stroke quickly raised his axe up in the air and roared.

"Kill them all!"

The situation at the entrance of the castle was already like a meat-grinding factory for god's sake, and now the situation got elevated up to another level! The situation became even more horrifying! Countless limbs that were detached from bodies flew

across the air, and the blood spilled like red rain! This scene of the endless massacre would give people with weak stomachs a hell of a time! Some might just faint the moment they see it!

"Hahaha, Zhan Yu! Looks like Lone Desert Smoke has many enemies! And now, have a taste of these wise words! 'A just cause enjoys abundant support, while an unjust cause finds little support'! Hahaha!" One Sword Stroke would never let go of such an opportunity to verbally assault Zhang Yang.

Instead of being provoked, Zhang Yang smiled, because he had already sent a private message to Snow Seeker to seek aid from Crimson Rage on defending his Mining Cave. They were allies for a reason, and allies would only do right to provide aid at times like these! And of course, Zhang Yang had always been deceived by that sexy little cunning woman, she had taken advantage of him many times already.

Liu Wei began to laugh, "Zhang Yang! You are now in the belly of the 'beast', your enemies! You're destined to fall this time!"

Wei Yan Er pointed her axe at Liu Wei and said, "Hey pretty little gigolo! Come and face me alone if you dare!"

Liu Wei turned to Wei Yan Er and looked at her with a perverted face, "Alright, I'll reserve one room on the Ya Tian Hotel, waiting for you!"

"Bastard!" Daffodil Daydream shrieked and shot out a {Fire Blast} at Liu Wei.

Basically, this little girl is the little sister figure that everyone adored in Lone Desert Smoke. So, everyone was provoked when Liu Wei said uttered that line.

Liu Wei quickly took a few steps back, as he knew that he was a 'fragile' spellcaster. It would be better to keep a distance. He also realized that he was way out of his head for a while back there.

Although both sides had 30,000 players on their own sides, but there is a special restriction set on the battle for Territory Conquest. Once a player is killed during a conquest event, the player will be forced to leave the battlefield and will not be able to rejoin the battle again. Unlike challenging open world bosses where players can just respawn and rush back to continue the boss battle within a time frame, every death counts in Territory Conquest, and one death means one less player on the battlefield!

In just an hour, the number of players on both sides has been reduced drastically, and both of them had less than one tenth (10%) of their forces!

That was the time where the effect of three guilds joining forces showed. There were at least 500 players more left on the Imperial Sky compared to the numbers on Lone Desert Smoke! That's actually a huge difference!

These 500 players were incomparable to the number of 30,000, but as the end-stage of the battle was approaching, this number could actually be the decisive factor in the battle!

It was about two hours until the conquest ended, so the Imperial Sky had the time to slowly weaken the Lone Desert Smoke until there were maybe 7 or 8 players left. Even after that, they would still have a lot of time to break into the main Territory Hall and destroy the flag, and take over the Thunderstorm Castle! As victory was within their grasp, Liu Wei could not hold himself anymore, he began to show his cocky face and laugh loudly, "Zhang Yang! Time to face your failure!"

Zhang Yang could not help but to reveal a sinister smile on his face, "Well, do you seriously think you have won?"

Liu Wei still couldn't sense the scheme Zhang Yang had under his sleeves, so he continued to laugh, "Are you implying that you can magically summon out an army? Hahaha!"

Standing right behind Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and the rest of the gang were trying to hold their laughs, but they failed. They chuckled and laughed. Then, Han Ying Xue said, "Silly Yu, this guy can really read your mind, he might be fated to be your blood brother!"

Seeing Zhang Yang and the gang were calm and smiling, One Sword Stroke knew that there was something wrong about all this! A chill crept up his spine!

And surely enough! Everyone heard Zhang Yang shouting, "Heaven Storm Tigers, move in!"

Almost immediately, a loud tremble was felt by everyone, followed by the rumbling of foot steps which everyone could hear clearly, coming from some corner of the castle. The rumbling was getting louder and louder, indicating that something was approaching their location at a high speed! So what is coming at them? The Imperial Sky members were uneasy and worried. In just a brief moment, the mystery was revealed. Countless Mechanical Servants were marching up from the streets towards the entrance of the castle. All of them are ten meters tall, Level 85 elites with black and shiny armors on them!

Holy sh\*t! F\*ck this!

Seeing this army of countless Mechanical Servants marching up, blotting the streets and roads before them, One Sword Stroke and the remaining members of the Imperial Sky turned their hateful sights towards Liu Wei and they voiced out in unity, "You and your big mouth!"

Liu Wei went silent in awkwardness, "..."

These Mechanical Servants were too huge to be true! Even though there was only 1,000 of them, they gave an impression of an army the size of tens of thousands! They were just plain intimidating!

Looking at how the faces of the Imperial Sky withered as if they were going to be poked in their \*sses, Zhang Yang could not help but to recall back a story long ago.



In previous years, the game 'Starcraft' was really popular, and there was a guy who went on TV to challenge an online player of the game. But, he ended up being slammed on his own face and defeated repeatedly. Later on, he finally met an opponent that was a little weaker than the average players on the server. So, he brought his troops and forces straight onto the home base of his opponent. Just when he was about to win, he also felt the itch to shout, "Well, what a hard-earned victory!"

And the opponent immediately replied, "Don't think you have won!"

In just an instant, that opponent of his activated a cheat and summoned countless troops, descended upon his troops. There he was, being bombarded until he lost everything...

Seeing One Sword Stroke and the remaining members of Imperial Sky looking like they had just tasted some dead flies in their mouth and were choking, he was most entertained!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Heaven Storm Tigers, attack!"

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The 1,000 Mechanical Servants charged at the enemies, or stomped over the enemies, or even double punched the enemies! They launched a full-scale attack onto Imperial Sky!

## Chapter 394: Imperial Sky Assault (4)

---

If the 500 men that Imperial Sky had just produced could turn the tide of war, then the 1,000 heads of Mechanical Servant that Zhang Yang had just summoned could easily send Imperial Sky packing home, with their tails tucked between their legs.

Just when they thought that victory was at hand, Zhang Yang had pulled something out from his pocket, using some sort of cheat code!

"Haha! Just look at their faces! It's funny as hell!"

"Haha! I'll tell ya, if this was a comedy movie, they could really be holding that little gold man in the Oscars!"

"Yo! Quit playing, guys! Might as well try acting for a change of profession!"

One by one, when the tables had turned against Lone Desert Smoke, players from Zhang Yang's side started to taunt the enemy.

Before the order of attack, the mechanical army had stood still, behind the castle wall, and after Zhang Yang had called for the attack, each mechanical soldier had mobilized and jumped across the frontlines - towards the back of Imperial Sky's defense line.

With the rain of hell being laid down to Imperial Sky, players of Lone Desert Smoke regained their vigor and joined the fray.

Statistically speaking, Lone Desert Smoke had caused quite a lot of trouble with just 1,000 elite tiered monsters at Imperial Sky's doorstep. However, no matter how strong they may be, the mechanical soldiers were not as strong, or rather, as smart as a player! They could be easily tricked. As long as the enemy tanks could draw their aggro towards them, other players could easily handle them. However, a player would not be too direct. Naturally, they would have to deal with those "tofu" class and have the mechanical servant knock on hard wood.

Now that Lone Desert Smoke had the mechanical servants at their command, the output strength was not as simple as  $1+1=2$ . It was rather like a chemical reaction that would produce a massive change. It would be like introducing sodium, or even potassium metal, to water! The reaction it gives would be literally explosive!

"Zhan Yu! Don't you think that you have won this yet!" said One Sword Stroke, as he saw how Imperial Sky's forces were being pushed back, like a Snow Plower on the street after a cold December snow storm.

Zhang Yang smirked. Unless One Sword Stroke could summon an army like he did, there was absolutely no reason to be scared of him! He then replied confidently. "Accept your loss. This is the end, One Sword Stroke!"

One Sword Stroke suddenly smiled knowingly, as if he had another trick up his sleeve. "Did you really think that I would be stupid enough to fight you, head on in the front lines? Knowing clearly that I would die?"

"OOhhhhh! I see what going on!" said Zhang Yang also with a smile. "You must be hiding some kind of "super-secret" strategy that you have already started? Like, did you have several Thieves sneaking pass the front line and trying a "backstab" strategy?"

One Sword Stroke dropped his smirk. He knew that something was odd from the way Zhang Yang had said it.

The method or means to win a Territory Conquest battle was not the kill count. If they could achieve a complete wipe, that would be great as well. The defender side would have the upper hand for they had the grounds to defend. On the contrary, the attacking side would not have to blindly attack with brute force. The method or means to win a Territory Conquest lay at the guild's final flag that stood in the main hall!

One Sword Stroke's main plan was to breach the main defense line. He did not care about wasting any resources. He was willing to sacrifice as many men as he wanted to get the main defense line broken. After that, he would order his team of Thieves to stealthily sneak through and destroy the flags in the main hall! Once the flag is taken, it would be Imperial Sky's victory.

"I applaud your brilliant effort of deploying such powerful forces. But, now that you had expended such forces in the front line, how is the defense in the Territorial Hall?" said One Sword Stroke.

Zhang Yang's smirk turned into a deafening laughter. "You said it yourself, that it would be stupid to fight in the front lines.

However, let's be clear at one thing. Even if we died right here and now, as long as the flag stills stand in the main hall, we will not lose! I feel that calling yourself stupid would be an understatement! Do you really think that I left the hall unprotected? Please do not associate your stupidity with anyone! It's truly degrading!"

One Sword Stroke nearly choked himself at such an insult. Not only did Zhang Yang have the upper hand in combat, he also had the most poisonous tongue that anyone would probably lose their nerve whilst be talking to him! That, and the mother\*\*\*\* army of mechanical servants!

Those Level 85 elite tier soldiers could deal devastating damage to those non-tank class players! How could Imperial Sky still stand toe to toe with such enmity?

At the same time, Zhang Yang had just received a notification from Sun Xin Yu, saying, "There were around 20 stealth Thieves entering the main hall, I have killed them all. There're no further threats here."

In the next moment after Zhang Yang had given his acknowledgment to Sun Xin Yu, One Sword Stroke was seen shouting madly at something. He had even thrown his sword down in a fit of anger. Zhang Yang could have easily guessed that when he had just received the good news, One Sword Stroke had received the news of his "backstab" attempt having failed remarkably.

Based on the recent feat, Zhang Yang could still confidently say that Lone Desert Smoke has won the Territorial Conquest.

Zhang Yang relayed the good news and boosted the morale of his own guildmates. It was the ripe time to engage the final counter attack! A full-scale counterattack!

Having the mechanical servants to be the meat shields and the main attackers at the same time, members of Lone Desert Smoke could not have it any better. With great vigor, everyone laid down the last attack.

At this time, before the attack reached them, there were many players instantly dropping out of the guild. Due to the system only allowing players from the two guilds involved in the Territorial Conquest battle to remain in the battlefield, players who left the guild were instantly removed from the map.

"Crap! They had actually resorted to that method to escape?"

Zhang Yang thought to himself. The players who had just left the guild should be the elite players from Rolling Rocks, and Storm Riders that were assigned to Imperial Sky. Now that the fate of them losing the battle had been sealed, there was no reason for them to remain in the fight, only to throw their life away, losing experience points and equipment durability!

In reality, all that Zhang Yang had thought was the truth to that was what One Sword Stroke was facing. If he could cry a river, he would have!

His greed was too large. He wanted to assimilate both Rolling

Rocks and Storm Riders. Little did he think that doing so would require him to win the Territorial Conquest. In this case, not only was he on the verge of losing his dream to create a mega-guild, he was being literally pressed down by none other than Zhang Yang!

One Sword Stroke had wanted to permanently keep the members that had entered his guild. Just like how the ancient philosopher, Liu Bei had "borrowed" the province of Jing! Borrowed but not returned! It was rather unfortunate for him that the players had already left on their own even before One Sword Stroke could persuade them to stay.

It was a legendary failure!

10 minutes after members of Imperial Sky had left, Lone Desert Smoke had gained an immense advantage, and had slaughtered the enemy clean, with no survivors!

‘Ding! Congratulations to guild Lone Desert Smoke for defeating all members of Imperial Sky! The Territorial Conquest has been won before the duration had ended!’

Zhang Yang laughed and announced in the guild channel. "Everyone, teleport to Thunderstorm Castle now and head towards the Mining Cave! There's still The Dominators for us to kill!"

"HURRAH!"

After the Territorial Conquest ended, the teleportation circle was reactivated. One by one, everyone used the [Teleportation Scroll] to "fly" to the main hall and proceed towards the mining cave with their mounts.

"Tell me something! What's going on there?" Zhang Yang contacted Fatty Han as he rode towards the battlefield.

"It's alright. Even though we were short in hand, we were still able to hold it up with Mountain Mover's leadership! How long will you take to reach here?"

"Roughly 30 more minutes!"

"Yes! That's perfect! Once you arrive, we can finally start our counterattack and kick that bastard so hard, his sh\*t will burst out from his mouth!"

"Please...Could you not be that disgusting?"

Since everyone in the guild had a mount of their own, the trip had only taken them 25 minutes to reach the Mining Cave.

Once they arrived at the site, Zhang Yang only saw a sea of players, far larger than the one that he had just fought in the Territorial Conquest. The battle was between the Lone Desert Smoke sub-guild vs the greedy The Dominators and other guilds that had set their sights on the Mining Cave for a long time. They had gathered more than 50,000 to 60,000 players to fight this war.



The location of the Mining Cave was rather a mountainous landscape, making it rather extremely wise to apply a well-thought strategy. Under the command of Mountain Mover, the sub-guild of Lone Desert Smoke was able to literally kite the entire guild left and right. They had never needed to have a frontal attack since it would only increase the loss of players in a fair fight. They had wanted to avoid that, thus the kiting. All for one sole purpose, to drag the battle longer, and to buy time until the main guild arrives.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, Crimson Rage has arrived to assist you!" Zhang Yang had received a notification from Snow Seeker just as he was about to charge into the fight.

"That's brilliant. Let's get started then, shall we?"

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and rode to the frontmost of his army. "Let's kill some bastards!"

Dust started to form, as thousands of Crimson Flaming Horse galloped towards The Dominators and three other guilds. At the other side, Crimson Rage and their female fighters had emerged from the other side of a hill, forming a pincer attack against the enemy.

"Hold on! Why is the main guild here?"

"Weren't they fighting in the Territorial Conquest war with Imperial Sky?"

"Crap! What is happening now!?"

The Dominators were unlike Imperial Sky, who had the guts and bravery to stand in battle, that much Zhang Yang would admit. The moment they saw the main guild came charging in, everyone started to lose their courage and started to panic.

Humbly Gentleman gritted his teeth. "D\*mn that Imperial Sky?! How dare they call themselves the second strongest guild in China!? Even after allying with Rolling Rocks and Storm Riders, they still couldn't hold off for f\*cking 3 hours! Tch! Useless! F\*cking useless!"

The moment Humbly Gentleman knew about the Territorial Conquest that was launched by Imperial Sky, he seized the chance to plan an attack to the Mining Cave. If everything had followed according to plan, Imperial Sky would have defeated Lone Desert Smoke and conquered Thunderstorm Castle, and he would have conquered the Mining Cave. After losing the war, Lone Desert Smoke would lose their soldier's morale and firepower. There was no way that they could seize back the Mining Cave after tasting defeat.

However, things have gone out of hand! Imperial Sky could not be hoped upon!

Mountain Mover laid down the command, mobilizing all the remaining players of the Lone Desert Smoke sub-guild to join the incoming reinforcements to form a perfect surrounding attack.

Truthfully speaking, the combined number of players of The Dominators and the other three guilds had outnumbered all of them. However, numbers do not win wars. On the contrary, they were lacking firepower. They could not be compared with Lone Desert Smoke main guild, and Crimson Rage! They could not even be on the same ground with the Lone Desert Smoke sub-guild! To make things worse, all of the players from the main guild had Gray-Silver mounts! Even all of the players from the sub-guild had Black-Steel mounts! It was a massive upgrade which the Dominators never had! It was not a battle anymore. It was just a slaughter fest!

Compared to the enmity they had for Imperial Sky, players of the Lone Desert Smoke guilds hated the Dominators more. Now that they had the chance to kill them, everyone pulled their strength from the very depths of their souls to release their frustration towards them.

Zhang Yang flew across the battlefield like an eagle searching for his prey. In this case, Zhang Yang was searching for Humbly Gentleman to maul. Among the crowd of players, Zhang Yang had to attack. He pulled his sword out and activated {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep} as many times as he can. With the special effect triggering repeatedly, the skills weeded down players like a scythe through a bush.

"Hypocrite...!" Zhang Yang cried his name when all the other players by his side were finally killed. "Why is it that every time I see your face, it would look like a poor, abused dog that would never stop barking!"

"Don't think too highly of yourself, Zhan Yu!" said Humbly Gentleman through his teeth. "Don't think that your luck will always be at your side!"

"Is that how you threaten me? Really? That's the best you could think of?" Zhang Yang laughed. With Sun Xin Yu and the rest of his personal elite party, they had surgically killed so many players to make their way towards Humbly Gentleman. With Zhang Yang's sword's special skill triggering endlessly, they had wiped the enemy from behind the enemy lines!

Once they had realized that they stood no chance, the expression they wore quickly changed from madness to blind fear. Zhan Yu the killing machine was just too overpowered. How could one stand a chance to fight him when his sword could repeat the same skill as many times as possible!

After half an hour into the battle, The Dominators and the rest of the guild were completely crushed beyond recognition. The remaining survivors had lost all hope and had left the battlefield, leaving a mountain full of dead bodies and dropped equipment. It's like being struck by lightning and tornado at the same time; a complete, thorough catastrophe.

Lone Desert Smoke's consecutive battles were recorded by the members and were posted on the official forum, creating a hot sensation for a brief period of time. Everyone was naturally surprised and amazed at Lone Desert Smoke's capability. But the most popular talk about the two wars was the appearance of the mechanical army!

Weren't they character from Transformers?!

Especially during the scene where Zhang Yang would shout: "Heaven Storm Tigers". Everyone laughed at how comical Zhang Yang's call was.

# Chapter 395: Silent Hail Town

---

The all-out-war between Lone Desert Smoke against The Dominators and Imperial Sky and the rest of the guild was just a menial war among other greater and bigger guild wars in the whole region of China. Statically speaking, wars between guilds were always present. It could be triggered for all sorts of reasons, such as the case of Mining Cave rights, a revenge war, a retribution war, and etcetera.

In the real world, there were many limitations to how people could have their way with each other. Here, they sought out a way to let out their frustration in the game. Many a thing that could not be done in real life, were free to be done in the game.

One of the most direct approach to solve one's conflict with one another, was a slaughter fest. Zhang Yang love picking fights, but he did not favor fights with no purpose behind them. That was why he had never thrown the first punch. That being said, if someone were to be bullying him, he would not give a f\*ck about popping a sword in that guy's head. Still, since Imperial Sky and The Dominator had been on his ss for a couple of times, Zhang Yang was finally going to give up the final fck that he had been saving up. He started a retaliation, and he was not going to pull his punches.

He let each of his friends (Hundred Shots, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and the gang), to lead a team of their own to search and kill both Imperial Sky and The Dominators. Targeting the grinding spot of the two guilds, they had hunted down and killed as many members as they could, until both guilds were crying for their moms. As for Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream, they teamed up and recruited seven to

eight talented and well-equipped Thief class players, and formed a small hit squad. Their main targets were the higher leveled players of the two super guilds. All of these kill attempts had left One Sword Stroke, Liu Wei, and even Humbly Gentleman cowering behind the castle wall, fearing that once they leave, they would be instantly killed.

Players like One Sword Stroke, loved to grind alone, just as Zhang Yang would. As a natural high defense Guardian, One Sword Stroke was able to tank a Thief to his death. But that was only applicable in a 1v1 fight. If a group of Thieves was to jump on him and chain-stun him, lest being One Sword Stroke, not even Zhang Yang could survive that!

Upon passing the Level 80 threshold, gaining a Level would be tough as hell. There were many occasions where One Sword Stroke had worked his \*ss off to amass 30% to 40% of his experience points, only to emptied down back to zero by Sun Xin Yu and her team of invisible creed of assassins. It was lucky for One Sword Stroke that the system had removed the Level penalty, or else, it would be a better revenge for Zhang Yang.

After being killed for so many occasions, One Sword Stroke had finally sortied a team to grind together with him. However, it was not of any use. Even a tiger would want to rest after hunting; the HP bar of a player would not always be full during a monster fight, and the healer would not want to overheal. Sun Xin Yu would carefully wait for the chance to strike One Sword Stroke at the moment where his HP was at its lowest and was vulnerable to attack.

In the previous life, One Sword Stroke and Sun Xin Yu were able to gain popularity due to their constant fights. In which case, most of their fights ended with Sun Xin Yu's loss. Without a strong guild supporting her back, she was at disadvantage, since she did not have strong equipment. In this life, however, Sun Xin Yu had been supported by Zhang Yang all the way. She was able to completely crush One Sword Stroke due to her skills, and partly because of possessing the utmost strongest equipment that she could have ever obtained. To put in comparison, Sun Xin Yu could not have a 100% rate of winning a match against One Sword Stroke. However, it is safe to say that Sun Xin Yu and One Sword Stroke would be on equal terms with each other. On the other hand, Sun Xin Yu had taken the chance where One Sword Stroke had lowered his guard, causing him to lose a competitive advantage, allowing Sun Xin Yu to completely overthrow him.

According to her report, in just one week, Sun Xin Yu had killed One Sword Stroke 11 times, and had also obtained one Level 80 Yellow-Gold tier Chest Plate from him!

Being attacked at such brutality, One Sword Stroke plotted his revenge. He had recruited his own band of assassins to kill Zhang Yang. Sadly, their plans to taking Zhang Yang's head would only be a pipe dream. Zhang Yang had the best of the best equipment, any Guardian could have. He had many skills, which included many life preserving skills that could save his \*ss wherever he was ambushed. The most OP fact was, if he was indeed being cornered to a point of death, he could easily use the [Lover's Charm] and escape unscathed. That, or he could use the [Party Summon Order] to instantly call in reinforcement to kick their sorry \*sses.

As the conclusion, the fight between Lone Desert Smoke and



Imperial Sky was won by Lone Desert Smoke, by a landslide!

Still, no war is without casualties. Lone Desert Smoke had a price to pay. There were many guild members who had been killed and lost their experience points, equipment, and gold (for equipment repairing). However, Zhang Yang had no need to burn a hole in his pocket to reimburse them for their losses, since he had a Territory income! On the contrary, Imperial Sky had nothing to reimburse their side.

Eventually, Imperial Sky finally raised the white flag. Most of their players had stopped playing for 3 days. When there are no players to kill, there is no war to fight. Thus, the war was called off. On the other hand, The Dominators had long since retired.

After the three-day cool off period, an armistice was called and everything returned to the way it should be, where players could return to the field to grind in peace.

Zhang Yang had reached Level 86 so far. To reach Level 90 was not all too far, but it was hard. For the next few days, Zhang Yang had dedicated his energy and time to fully focus only on ground.

He came to the Level 80 map, Grand Canyon of Eternal Night to train. The land was so large that there were too many other side quests to complete besides the Dimensional Key Fragment. There were still two other Level 80 maps with quests to complete, but since the canyon was the nearest to Thunderstorm Castle, Zhang Yang had prioritized the map first.

Along the path to a place called the Silent Hail Town, he remembered that there was a hidden quest available there. It had something to do with the Level 100 threshold update, which was said to be one of the valuable Inheritances, called the Vampire Inheritance.

There was one major flaw of the Inheritance, and that was that each player could only receive one.

Inheritances could not be forfeited and deleted. Once a player has accepted any kind of Inheritance, he or she could never accept a second one. That meant, that if they spot another kind of Inheritance that was better than the one that he or she had possessed, they had no other means than to give up on the newer one. That was why, it is of vital importance that during an Inheritance selection, one must think twice before accepting it. For this is the literal meaning of a once in a lifetime chance.

The Vampire Inheritance was indeed a good and most favorable Inheritance which could be accepted by any player or any class.

Inheritances were classified into two types. The first being, the rarest and strongest, that is the Unique tier Inheritance. The other was the common kind which was weaker and had a more standard enhancement, which was the General tier. Hence, a Unique Inheritance had been called the S class Inheritance. The General tier Inheritances were ranked at many levels. Some which were strong enough to reach roughly at the same level or approaching the level of S class Inheritance would be dubbed as the A class Inheritance. There were Inheritances that were so bad and useless that they had only provided a 10% in a certain attribute and would

be dubbed as the Trash Inheritances or the Z class.

Vampire Inheritance was classified as a General tier Inheritance with a B class rating. It was naturally strong for a good reason. However, Zhang Yang did not want it. His target was the S class God of War Inheritance! There was no reason for him to accept the quest for the Vampire Inheritance. Still, there was lose hope in completing the Vampire Inheritance in a Level 80 map. Even if he could trigger the quest and complete it, he would only be obtaining a piece of the Inheritance Shard and not the main piece. There's absolutely no way for him to complete the Inheritance quest without entering the Level 100 maps.

However, just because he did not want it, that would not mean that other players would not want them either. As mentioned before, A classes almost, or approach the ability of an S class Inheritance. Vampire Inheritance was B class rated and was still extremely strong.

Zhang Yang riding his Gold-Eared Bear King towards the night sky of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night. Just when he had seen the silhouette of Silent Hail Town, he heard a deafening shriek which caused Zhang Yang to pull the reins of the bear to a complete stop.

"What the f\*ck was that..."

From the far side, where the forests end, he saw a human figure jumping out of the bushes. She was tall and slender, having long hair that dangled in the winds as she ran at full speed away from the forest. In her hand, she held a short and shiny dagger that

reflected the stars in the night sky.

[Sherryl] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 83

HP: 32,467 / 83,000

Defense: 450

Just two seconds after she came out of the forest, two more shadowy figures jumped out to chase after her. Those two were vampires with razor-sharp fangs. However, unlike the Dracula, those two did not have bat wings. They were probably a lower-classed vampire. Only high-ranking vampires could have wings!

[Lower Vampire] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 84

HP: 84,000

Defense: 450

At this time, Sherryl did a reverse somersault. The blade in her hand glittered as she flew backward in the sky. With a quick strike, she pierced one of the vampires in the chest with sniper-like accuracy.

"GRAHH!" The vampire screamed in agony as the stab in his chest started to glow in a bright white light, consuming its entire body which turned him into a dead man. Sherryl had just one shot killed the vampire!

Zhang Yang figured that the dagger must be blessed with some sort of holy water or that sort of thing. Unless the dagger was coated with holy water, there was no way that an elite tier NPC could kill an elite tier monster in one single strike.

Zhang Yang rode as quickly as he could towards the NPC and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} towards the remaining vampire.

"You're nothing but food to us! How dare you rebel!" cried the last vampire on the scene. It then jumped towards Zhang Yang with his arms wide open, ready to stab Zhang Yang with 10 claws.

"Watch it!" said Sherryl as she hurled herself and kicked the vampire aside with a dropkick.

Zhang Yang laughed and readied his sword and shield. "Relax, I had it under control. It's just a vampire. It could not even put a scratch on me!"

"How insolent! You dared to look down on the vampires?!" bellowed the vampire.

Zhang Yang sighed and slaughtered the mere Level 84 elite vampire. With the help from an elite NPC, the vampire was quickly killed without even the need to use any long cooldown skill. The vampire dead body turned into a clump of fine ash, leaving Zhang Yang a few [Silk], and coins.

"Warrior! You're strong!" said Sherryl as she sheathed her tiny blade into her side.

"So are you! Where do you learn to fight like that?" said Zhang Yang with a smile.

"Hmm. Please, I must ask you to rest at my house. It's been a long time since I had met a strong warrior such as you!" said Sherryl with an invitation.

Even though the NPC had verbally invited Zhang Yang, he did not receive any quest notification. It seems like Zhang Yang had only helped the NPC with a small chore. Perhaps it had not reached to the point of triggering a quest. Zhang Yang nodded and followed Sherryl.

Since Sherryl was on her foot the whole time, Zhang Yang unsummoned the bear and walked side by side with the NPC for close to 20 minutes before reaching the town. Since the canyon was eternally dark, the town was even darker. With the cold draft blowing across the town, carrying the frozen flakes of snow. The

temperature of the entire place was close to subzero. Even though the time was supposed to be daytime, the place was only illuminated by lit torches around the town. There were close to 10 families around the town, though there were still a few kids playing in the snow in the streets. At least, that was the only source of laughter and vigor emanating from the entire town.

"Warrior, our town had always been under the threat of the vampire clan," said Sherryl as she sighed heavily. "This place...This canyon has never seen daylight. While I'm sure that other places in this land have seen day and night, this place, however, has only been blessed with endless snow and nights. We do have daylight, or as should I call it, a temporary shine. At most, we do have 3 hours of sunlight in this place every day. Those creatures hated the light, yet...they treat this place as their paradise!"

Zhang Yang nodded to acknowledge her statement. "I do have one question. Why didn't you guys leave?"

Sherryl laughed bitterly. "Is not that we don't want to. We couldn't. Vampires live on blood, and their favorite was always human blood. They had enclosed us like live stocks, waiting to be eaten when they are hungry. There is no way to leave this place without being killed! It's funny. Since it's always snowing, we had difficulty in farming crops and food. When the situation had escalated to a point where hunting for food was an impossible task, they would hand deliver us dried up animals that have had their blood sucked dry!"

Zhang Yang started to frown.

"Worst of all, a few townsmen had begun to appreciate these creatures for delivering food! Sloths had manifested themselves in the hearts of the townsmen! They had already given up on fighting back since they were powerless, to begin with. All they can do is wait and die," said Sherryl disappointingly.

Zhang Yang frowned even harder. "Don't those people know that, even though they could still live, but they would be under the constant fear of being the next meal for the vampire?"

"They had ways to cope with that. Although no one had ever said it out loud, everyone is always wishing and praying hard that the monthly sacrifice would not be them!" said Sherryl.

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "I understand. Let's go."

The two of them entered the town and headed straight to her house. The brick house was slightly larger than the normal houses in town. Once they had entered, Sherryl quickly prepared the fireplace and burned a few logs to warm the house.

Zhang Yang thanked Sherryl for her kind gesture but in truth, he had not felt anything. Zhang Yang had already tweaked the sensory settings and had made sure that he would not feel the change of temperature to the extreme. "Where are your parents?"

There was a short silence when Sherryl answered with a bitter sad tone. "My mother had been chosen to be a sacrifice. My father had charged into the castle of the vampire to save my mother and had never come back." There was a sudden glint in her eyes and



her voice was filled with rage. "Someday, I will drop the hammer of justice upon all these creatures!"

Sherryl excuse herself and went to prepare dinner for the both of them. After eating, Sherryl HP was recovered back to full health.

While cleaning up, Zhang Yang asked, "I understand that the vampire would only hunt humans for food. Why would they try to kill you?"

Sherryl scoffed. "I had inherited my father's will to become a Vampire Hunter! One month after I entered adulthood, I have already killed 13 vampires!"

"Wait. You're just 16 years old?" asked Zhang Yang, surprised.

In the game, 16 years old was considered to be adulthood. Sherryl nodded her head.

As expected of a westerner, they had the tendency to reach puberty faster than any Asian. Sherryl had a mature face and a slender, voluptuous body of a grown woman. If Wei Yan Er was present, she would definitely be jealous till kingdom come!

Zhang Yang snickered quietly and said, "If you want...I could escort you out from here."

From where Zhang Yang stood, he understood that the Vampire Inheritance quest should be located in Silent Hail Town, and the

NPC who was supposed to give out the quest was Sherryl. However, from where he stood right then, he did not know where his progress was. How or where the quest started was completely mysterious to him. Even though the Vampire Inheritance was considered to be a General tier Inheritance, but the means and paths of the quest taken by players who wish to receive the Vampire Inheritance were different!

Just like a maze with four entry points, players would start quests from a different point or story, only to reach the final point, which was the quest itself. Hence, this pathway was revealed secretly by a player that had discovered and had completed the Sherryl route. It was lucky that Zhang Yang had even remembered about the quest! Among all the other Inheritance quests, this was the only one available under Level 100.

# Chapter 396: Incoming Vampire Attack

---

Since Zhang Yang had no idea on how to trigger the Vampire Inheritance quest, he had to just follow what Sherryl tells him to do. However, he was not afraid of completing the quest, because he could always let other players to complete the main Inheritance quest. All Inheritance quests were the same. First, they had to complete a series of quest to obtain a piece of Inheritance Fragment. Secondly, to gather all the Fragments which varies in different type of Inheritance, and start the main Inheritance quest. Finally, complete the long and draggy chain quest to obtain the Inheritance skill.

Some Inheritances did not have the same first step, but the second and third steps were usually the same.

The shards obtained were not bound by account. Which meant, Zhang Yang could complete all the Inheritance quests and obtain all the shards only to give it to someone else to complete the main Inheritance quest.

Sherryl staggered and sulked. "I...I have friends here. I can not just abandon them..."

‘Ding! Sherryl’s relationship with you has dropped!’

What? Just one wrong suggestion would decrease a person’s liking?

Zhang Yang sighed but he understood something. If he wanted to

trigger the pre-requisite quest of the Vampire Inheritance quest, he would need to main a good Relationship with Sherryl the NPC. He nodded and said, "When you were fighting the vampires alone, don't you wish to have a partner with you?"

Sherryl turned her face to Zhang Yang. Her eyes widen with curiosity. "Warrior, do you meant to join my fight against the vampire?"

"Yes. I do."

Sherryl smiled but her smile faded away quickly. "I thank you. But I can only accept the thought of it. I cannot ask you to put your life on the line for a fight that has nothing to do with you!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Well, I did kill one of them. It's too late for me to pull out now, don't you think so? Killing one or a hundred would not make a difference! I'd say, Sherryl, we should cooperate together to chase the vamps away from the town of Silent Hail!"

Sherryl smiled. "You're one trustworthy warrior! I'll have you know, killing one vampire was easy, but do you know that there were at least 1,000 vampires in the castle! The ones that we had just killed were only the weakest among the vampires in the castle! Furthermore, a stronger ranking vampire has the power to dominate and control other lower ranked Spectres. They could easily drown us all with the sheer number of enemies!"

Zhang Yang smiled. Killing a sea of monsters was his specialty anyway, thanks to the sword's special skill that he had. Come one

hundred or one million, he could kill them all!

"We can't say that we can't defeat them if we haven't even tried!"

Just then, there was a loud commotion happening outside the house. Zhang Yang and Sherryl then exchanged a look and went outside. To what Zhang Yang had least expected, there were hundreds of winged vampires hovering across the town, forming a circle to prevent anyone from escaping. Each of them shrieked ever so deafeningly that their cries could easily perforate one's eardrum!

"It is time for the sacrifice of the month!" There was a woman's voice echoing through the town. Although it was not loud, it was very clear.

Sherryl face turned pale. She trembled in fear as she pointed at one of the vampires in the air. "T-That's... Desionia! She is the second wife of Madros, the Vampire King! Her powers are unmeasurable! Why would she come!? Why is she here? She's never been here before! Zhan Yu! There would normally be only more than 10 vampires around during the monthly sacrificial!"

Zhang Yang kept quiet. But he knew that it was all because of him! But, it was better to keep quiet about that sort of thing. "Let's see what does that Desionia wants to do."

Sherryl smiled bitterly and said, "I have no words left to describe you, warrior. Be it reckless or strong, you have to know that Desionia is incredibly strong as a vampire! You...\*sigh\* Please help

me! Chase those vampires away!"

‘Ding! Sherryl has a quest for you: Chase the Vampires. Will you accept it?’

Accept.

[Chase the Vampires] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description; Chase away all the vampire in Silent Hail Town. Once Sherryl dies or is taken away, the quest will be deemed as failure.

Progress: Chase the Vampires away: 0/1

The two of them moved closer to the town. The screams of the vampires were so loud that the townsmen had to cover their ears with their hands as they rushed out of their house and gathered at the town's plaza.

Shush!

A female vampire descended down with speed and grace. The female vampire had long hair that dropped down to her feet. Although the air was chilly and the floor was covered with snow, she wore only a thin white wedding dress. Unlike her dark, black hair, her eyes were bloody red, that glowed in contrast with the white background. As she walked slowly towards the plaza, she took out a long black leather whip and coiled it around her right

hand.

[Desionia, Vampire's Bride] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

No wonder Sherryl was scared, the enemies that she had fought were an elite tier. Now, walking towards the human crowd of Silent Hail Town was a Yellow-Gold tiered boss!

Silently and slowly, both Zhang Yang and Sherryl blended into the crowd and remained quiet.

Desionia walked towards the crowd and withheld her steps when she was roughly 3 meters away from the front. She then turned her head towards the furthest left and slowly glanced through all of the townsmen. When the townsmen felt the gaze of Disionia's cold dead eyes falling on them, they would lower their heads and close their eyes, hoping that the female vampire would not call out to them. She was like the god of death, hand picking anyone to deliver their last breath!

"Sherryl!" she cried. "Who is Sherryl! Stand out!"

By the time Zhang Yang wanted to cover Sherryl behind his massive armor, more than half of the townsmen turned their head around and had locked on to Sherryl! Zhang Yang gritted his teeth. These men must be the lazy sloths that Sherryl had mentioned earlier. These pigs were the ones who would do anything to stay alive!

"Ahh..." Desionia sighed as if she was appreciating Sherryl's beauty. "What a beautiful girl."

Desionia flapped her wings once and she hovered above the ground and landed right in front of Sherryl. Zhang Yang scoot aside, preparing to start a fight if she would to do something to Sherryl. The rest of the townsmen moved back a good distance.

Desionia reached her left arm out and caressed Sherryl face with her finger. She traced her cold, pale fingers down to her chin and slowly moved towards her neck.

"To hell with you! Creatures of hell!" Sherryl cried as she swiftly drew out the dagger that was hidden behind her. It was the same dagger that had killed the elite vampire with a single strike.

"How wild!" Desionia reached out her arm and caught Sherryl arms at her wrist. Desionia had only smiled when Sherryl was struggling hard to free her hands from Desionia's grasp. She then pulled Sherryl closer to herself and planted her face to Sherryl breast. She took a deep breath and let out a satisfied moan. "You smell so delicious! Where do you think I should start with you?"



said Desionia playfully.

The townsmen who were moving back had returned to their homes. Based on the tradition, every time the vampires had selected the town's sacrifice, the townsmen would gain another month of a carefree moment before they would face another round of fear. As to what would happen to the victim, the townsmen would not give a d\*mn about. To them, to see the light for another day was considered to be a blessing. There was no time to care for anyone else! Right then, Zhang Yang who was ready to strike the vampire was the only person left standing close to Sherryl.

Sherryl turned her eyes and met with Desionia with anger and contempt. "I'm not afraid of you, demon!"

"HAHAHAHA!" Desionia laughed. With her hand still grasping firmly to Sherryl, she said coldly, "Little girl. I'm afraid to tell you that you have used the wrong pronoun. We belong to the great race of Vampires. The greatest race that would live forever! And you, my beloved Sherryl, it is not me, it is we! You, my child, are one of us!"

"Horse sh\*t!" Sherryl cursed.

At this time, Zhang Yang stomped forward with haste and cried aloud. "Sherryl, loosen your grip!"

Sherryl was shocked at Zhang Yang's sudden bold move but understood what he wanted to do immediately. She then released the dagger in her hands and allow the silver dagger to drop to the

floor. At lightning speed, Zhang Yang lowered himself and skidded through the snow, grabbing the dagger in the air. As he was still sliding through the ground, he jumped upward and stabbed Desionia with a half-moon turn in the air.

[Sacred Silver Dagger] (Tool)

Use: Blessed with holy water from the church, this dagger is imbued with great power to damage Spectres. Due to its silver content, its power against vampires is increased further.

Uses left: 3/3

Level Requirement: 80

It was obvious to Zhang Yang that Desionia was all too confident that no one would defect. Little did she know that the weak little "food" would actually fight back! It was even a bigger surprise for her when there was another fearless one that would act against her! That surprise move had caused her to miss the dagger and was left with a deep bloody wound in her chest.

‘-100,000!’

Zhang Yang eyes nearly popped out when he saw just how much damage he had just dealt! Sadly, it was a shame that it was a tool and not an equipment. If it was, he could have use it against the

Vampire King and hack 1 million HP of the bugger's HO with just 100 slashes of this miracle blade.

"ARGH!" Desionia staggered and immediately flew up into the night sky. Panic, rage, regret, and most of all, the expression of shock was written all over her face as she cringed in pain. "Kill that man!"

Shush! Shush!

The vampires that filled the night sky obeyed Desionia and shot down from the sky towards Zhang Yang and Sherryl.

"Let's go!"

Zhang Yang pulled Sherryl up to her feet in one strong pull and ran behind her as the both of them ran towards the brick house.

Zhang Yang could summon his mount and fight the monsters with it, but he would have to endure the monsters' physical attacks. As the disadvantages outweighed the benefits, Zhang Yang had rather rely on the good old fashion brick house to protect them.

As fast as their feet could move, the two of them ran into the house, with Zhang Yang behind Sherryl. Only after seeing Sherryl entered the house, Zhang Yang stopped and stood guard at the entrance.

"Here. Take it," said Zhang Yang as he returned the silver dagger back to Sherryl. For him, the dagger could only be used three times. But perhaps, there was a chance that Sherryl could use it perpetually. She was, after all, an important NPC for the quest.

"KYAAA!!" With a loud shriek, a vampire had flown close to the entrance. It then slowed down by spreading its wings wide and thrust his sharp claws at Zhang Yang.

"Oh! F\*ck off!" Zhang Yang cried and slashed the vampire with the godly sword in his hand.

The situation got worse by the minute when many more vampires had descended down and formed a wave of enemy. They started to shriek together towards Zhang Yang.

‘-570!’

‘-570!’

...

The shriek had formed a visible wave in the air and had caused nearly 600 damage to Zhang Yang. The problem was the sound wave could not be blocked! If it was one or two monsters, Zhang Yang could handle it just fine. But when the number reached more than 10, it would cause a problem, even for a tank.

"Warrior! Put this on!" Sherryl cried out loud and took out a

silver pendant. Her eyes screamed of fear of losing him. Zhang Yang did not know what was the pendant for but since the NPC had given it to him at the moment of peril, it had to be something useful!

[Holy Silver Pendant] (Tool)

Item Description: Blessed by the holy water from the church. This pendant would negate all evil and their negative temptation on you. Duration: 1 hour.

"KYAA!!!" As he put the pendant on, the number of vampires had already reached to more than a hundred. With a loud unison shriek, the air literally tore apart forming visible waves that were traveling towards Zhang Yang.

Immune!

As the sound waves touched Zhang Yang's character, the word "Immune" ticked.

This is good stuff!

Zhang Yang was extremely pleased. "Don't think that you're the only one who can shout like that! Watch me! BRAAAAAAAA!!!" Zhang Yang shouted and activated {Blast Wave} at the same time.

# Chapter 397: Fallback

---

‘-952!’

‘-953!’

...

With just one {Blast Wave}, the vampires gathering outside the house were stunned. More than 30 vampires had received the direct hit from that skill which had caused a high proccing chance for Zhang Yang’s [Sword of Purging Devourer] sword effect. The skilled chained for 4 procs and stopped at the fifth.

Even though the skill had echoed four times, the monsters were all elite tier, with HP bars as high as 85,000! Four {Blast Wave} had only dealt close to 5% of their own HP. However, the accumulated damage had exceeded 120,000 damage! It was more than {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}. But {Blast Wave} had only a 20 second cooldown rate!

That entrance of the brick house was a gate that shaped like a valve, forming a natural one-person blockade. The entrance had forced the vampire to bottleneck themselves, allowing only one monster to enter at a time. Zhang Yang was troubled since he could not use {Horizontal Sweep} efficiently. In fact, the skill had no penetrative effect, which only allowed him to attack just one vampire per skill usage.

Obviously, the skill {Horizontal Sweep} that was obtained via a

hidden quest and was ranked as the highest skill, had the greatest damage output. However, the AoE splash effect of the skill was completely rendered useless in this situation. Without the ability to hit multiple targets, the sword would lose its ability to proc properly. Zhang Yang's DPS had been lowered drastically.

Even so, Zhang Yang blocked the entrance. The vampires that had taken damage from the back had no means of pushing forward. Angered by frustration, the vampires shrieked again, causing the walls to vibrate in resonating with the sound waves. Dust and smaller pebbles started to fall off the walls. There were many other vampires that had started to claw their way through the brick walls. However, despite their effects, Sherry's house was made from thick and solid bricks, and not fragile wood. The wall surrounding the house and the gates, stood still, while the vampires' claws were already torn apart.

Smiling at Zhang Yang, she said with pride. "During the construction of the house, father had factored in the possibility of a vampire attack. He chose the sturdiest materials to build the bricks which formed the wall of the houses and the gates. These vampires stand no chance at breaking it down. Not even Desionia could break it!"

Zhang Yang laughed at her proud statement and asked, "How about the upstairs windows?"

"Fear not, the window frames had been coated and blessed with holy water. If the vampires were to enter through the windows, they would immediately turn into ash!" said Sherryl.

As to prove her point, Zhang Yang heard a scream of agony and the sound of fine sand falling onto the floor, coming from upstairs.

Zhang Yang nodded with confidence that Sherryl would be safe, and only then did he turn back to the entrance and focused all his attention on killing the vampires. All skills were soon unleashed upon them.

"Warrior! Let me help you!" Zhang Yang heard her voice from behind and felt a pair of warm hands rest on his back. The warmth of her hands spread out and enveloped his entire character. He then gained a new buff.

[Sherry's Blessing]: Restore 3,000 HP every 3 seconds for 30 seconds.

It was obviously a priest {Regeneration} skill - on steroids. Not even the super healer, Han Ying Xue could reach that amount. At most, at her current level, her {Regeneration} could only heal less than 2,000 at every tick!

With the healing buff on him, Zhang Yang could relax a little. Even though healing 3,000 HP every 3 seconds could not heal him much, he had only been receiving damage from one monster at a time! Healing 1,000 HP every second could easily break even with the damage received, and still have much more left over!

Both Zhang Yang and the white bear stood guard at the entrance, turning each vampire that tried to enter into a pile of ash. Although there were a hundred or more enemies, Zhang Yang had



no problem reducing that number down with the help of his amazing sword.

"I've seriously underestimated you!" cried Sherryl after seeing what Zhang Yang was capable of.

Zhang Yang laughed and took out the [Laser Cannon] from his inventory. He aimed at one of the hottest spot among the vampire and fired the bazooka-like weapon. A bright light blasted away, the vampires around the area were damaged with 10,000 HP.

It was a pity that the bazooka had 1 hour long cool down time! Even though he still had the mechanical servant in his inventory, he was genuinely afraid that the giant Devastator might tear down the house as it appears in the battlefield. It's not like he was in need of its help for the moment, might as well be safe than sorry.

From 300 to 100, Zhang Yang had speedily killed the vampires outside the entrance. Sherryl was just standing at one corner, gaping at Zhang Yang's prowess. All she did was to heal Zhang Yang by a 30 seconds interval.

"Hold!" Desionia bellowed from behind. Her voice carried some kind of sort of authoritative aura, and even Zhang Yang could feel the dominating power from it.

"Capture all the townsmen!"

Shush!

One by one, the remaining vampires who were fighting Zhang Yang flapped their wings and shot into the sky. There was only a temporary silence before the screams and cries came echoing from the plaza. Zhang Yang asked Sherryl to get into the house.

"HAHAHAHAHA!" the eerie laughter of Desionia could be heard. "My sweet sweet Sherryl, you better come out or I'll kill the people in the town~"

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue and turned towards Sherryl. "Don't fall for her lies. She just wants us to surrender! If she wanted to kill the townsmen, she would have already done so!"

Sherryl kept quiet and nodded her head.

"O Sherryl~~" Desionia playful voice was heard as she descended down and landed in front of the house. Zhang Yang remained on guard. In her hands, she was holding an older man by the throat and said, "Tell Sherryl your name~"

"I-I-I. I'm Mogue—ACK!"

Just when the poor NPC had reported his name, Desionia had planted her fangs into the old man's neck.

"NO! UNCLE MOGUE!" cried Sherryl as she screamed. She opened the door to the house and started angrily at Desionia.

After consuming the NPC blood, a blood red hue glowed on Desionia's face, restoring the lost HP to its full status.

[Blood Sucking]: Consumes the blood of your target and heal 10% of your HP every second. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cool down time: 5 minutes.

Zhang Yang knows that the skill was only for Vampires to use. However, if he obtains the Vampire Inheritance, he would also inherit the skill!

Thud...

Desionia threw the now deceased Mogue to one side. There was still some blood stains on her hand. She then lifted her hand to her face and playfully lick the blood off her hands. There was an orgasmic expression on her face as she swallowed the blood.

"Now you see my dear~ I am done playing with you," said Desionia with a smile. With a quick movement, she grabbed one more townsmen that the vampire had already captured and said, "Come out now~ Or~ I will kill another one! And another, until everyone is dead!"

What kind of sick f\*ck would do that!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Based on the norm, Sherryl would surely surrender herself in order to save her friends. After that, she would be kidnapped by the vampires and he would have to be the

knight in shiny armor and kill the evil king in order to rescue the damsel in distress.

Sherryl followed her guts and succumbed to Desionia's threat. Just when she was about to walk out of the gates. Zhang Yang had a sudden idea. He then quickly grabbed Sherryl's arm and place his sword on her neck. The sudden gesture had suddenly shocked Sherryl, and even Desionia herself.

"Trust me." Zhang Yang whispered to Sherryl. He then turned to Desionia and said, "Leave now, or I will kill this woman!"

After Desionia obvious reaction, she laughed out loud and hold on her stomach as if she had just seen the most hilarious comedy ever. After a long laugh, Desionia finally calmed down and said, "You intend to threaten us with just a mere human? Are you daft? Kill her if you want. I shall find another human to replace her!"

"Any human you say, that means she means nothing to you then? Perhaps I should just rape her and feed her to my bear then." Zhang Yang gripped his sword tightly and made a small cut on her neck. As the blood started to ooze out from the wound, panic filled Desionia's face.

"Wait!" she cried out.

Zhang Yang knew it clearly that something was not right. If Sherryl was just "any human" as Desionia had just described, the vampires would not have chased after her so furiously. As an NPC that would trigger such a drastic event, how could not she be an

important character!

"Shall you take your leave now?" said Zhang Yang provokingly.

With great contempt, Desionia glared at Zhang Yang. After what seemed to be a long stare down between the two of them, Desionia screamed to the high heavens and bellowed angrily. "Return to the castle!"

One of the vampires come to her and kneeled down. "Mistress Desionia, Lord Madros had commanded us to bring Sherryl back to the castle. If we return empty-handed. I fear that the lord would be extremely displeased."

Desionia scoffed and said, "Leave. I will explain this matter to the lord myself!"

"Yes! We listen and obey!"

Every vampire present replied in unison. They spread out their wings and shot to the sky, disappearing towards the north.

Desionia was the last one present. Zhang Yang noticed and he had not removed the sword from Sherryl's neck because of it.

"Enjoy your temporary peace. I will return." Desionia spoke with such vile that Zhang Yang knew she meant her words. She spread her wings and flew towards the same direction as the other vampires.

Zhang Yang then removed the sword and cheered. "Looks like we won!"

"Yes, indeed. However, you nearly killed me there, warrior!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Chase the Vampire. Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!’

Just when Zhang Yang was expecting a follow-up quest, the system notification ended there with no other notification popping out.

"Sherryl! My dad died because of you!" cried someone. The captured townsmen from before had gathered at Sherryl's doorsteps with expressions that spoke of murder and vengeance.

Zhang Yang pulled Sherryl and stood in front of her. "Sherryl was willing to sacrifice herself just to protect you guys! What gives you the right to slander her!"

"It's her. It's all because of her! Those creatures wouldn't have attacked us if it wasn't for her! Why would the vampires spare our lives in place of hers? I'd say, she's one of them!" cried one of the townsmen.

"Yeah!"

"Burn the girl!"

Voices of angry townsmen filled the place, and Sherryl remained quiet. Zhang Yang turned back and saw Sherryl was in shock. Zhang Yang understood her feelings. She was about to give her life in order to save the very same people who were throwing insults and death threats to her. It was a massive physiological attack which Zhang Yang could never measure. The trust and love towards the town was shattered instantly.

Zhang Yang sighed and summoned his bear. "Let's go!" Zhang Yang pulled Sherryl up and sat behind her on the bear. With a loud roar, the bear then galloped away from the angry townsmen. There was no reason to argue further.

After a short moment, the townsmen began to chase after Zhang Yang with fire and pitchforks.

# Chapter 398: The Garden of Vampires

---

The townsmen had chased after Zhang Yang for about two kilometers before stopping to catch their breath. Although they had stopped, Zhang Yang could still see where they were, due to the light from their touch and the loud inaudible screaming.

Zhang Yang continued to ride until they reached to a thick forest before helping Sherryl down from the bear.

With wide, unfocused eyes, Sherryl finally broke. "Why...Why..."

Zhang Yang sighed. It was understandable that Sherryl would react that way. She was only 16 years old for god's sake. Zhang Yang tried to lighten her mood. "Those townspeople of yours are really scary."

Sherryl smiled weakly and turned towards the direction of the town. The glint in her eyes still suggested the shock from being treated harshly by the townsmen.

Zhang Yang crossed his arms and gave into his recklessness. "Wait here. I'll be back."

"Where are you going?" Sherryl asked. She seemed to regain some level of vigor.

"I'm going to kill that lord vampire king Madros or something." Zhang Yang replied with a warm smile. "If that bloody bugger is



dead, then no one will blame you for something as outrageous as you being one of the vampires!"

Sherryl expression softened greatly but quickly grabbed Zhang Yang by his arm. "Warrior! Don't do that! It's too dangerous! I cannot allow you to be in danger because of me!"

‘Ding! You have gained a good Relationship with Sherryl!’

Hoho...

Zhang Yang smirked. "You need not worry about me! You see, I have a bunch of very strong friends! Together, we can kill Madros!"

"Warrior..." Sherryl tried to talk Zhang Yang out of his reckless idea.

"Too late. I've already decided," said Zhang Yang, confirming his decision. "Sherryl, I don't know what the vampires want from you. But I do know this. You're extremely important to them. That is why I must ask you to remain hidden. Keep a low profile and wait for the good news!"

Sherryl hesitated but eventually succumbed to Zhang Yang's confidence.

Even so, after the entire wild commotion, Sherryl still had not given any follow-up quest! As hard as it sounds, a hidden quest was surely hard to trigger! Zhang Yang thought to himself, now that he

had already proceeded with the "event" so far, and he had confirmed that Sherryl was the NPC that would give out the Vampire Inheritance quest, he could just kill Madros some other day and not need to come back for Sherryl! Would not that be a waste of time since the girl would not trigger the quest?

Zhang Yang nodded confidently. "You take care of yourself. I'll be on my way now."

"Good luck." Sherryl wished Zhang Yang well and gripped the dagger hard, whilst nodding her head up and down.

Zhang Yang rode the bear and galloped as fast as he could towards the north, where the vampire had flown. After riding a few hundred kilometers for god knows how long, Zhang Yang had arrived at a desolate garden. The garden was huge and wide. In the middle of the garden was a flower circlet. In this godforsaken place which was devoid of any sunlight, there were many odd plantation and flowers that had grown beautifully. As Zhang Yang approached closer to the flora, he noticed that the stems of the flowers were transparent and what made the plants look red was the blood that was flowing in it!

Behind the garden was a three stories building. It was obvious that the building was extremely old. There were veins glowing all over the exterior of the building. The dark, black building was encased in coils of growing veins that had only made it look like it was a man-eating "beast" that could just swallow him as he enters it.

Separating the main building from the outside world was an iron

gate that measured two person's height. Inside the flower garden were vampires tending to the flowers, but it was not clear to what they were actually doing.

Zhang Yang pushed the iron gates, which gave out a loud rusty creak as it swung open. Riding the bear, Zhang Yang moved slowly. After the gates was a long, white pavement. In the middle of the route was a beautiful large water fountain. After that was the eerie looking building.

Zhang Yang rode slowly towards the building. The bear's paws were soft like a cat's, making no noise as it moved. However, the metal plates of his armor were constantly crashing into each other, as the bear wobbled up and down.

"H-Help...me..." A faint cry of help was heard coming from the flower garden.

Zhang Yang jumped from the sound of it. It was extremely scary being alone, in dark, creepy place. Surely anyone would be scared when they suddenly hear a cry for help in this situation. He quickly stopped his tracks and searched for the source of the sound. But no matter how hard he searches, there was nothing of a human to be found.

"Heellppp...Me...." The same faint cry was heard again.

This time, Zhang Yang heard is clearly. He got down from the bear and walked into the bunch of flowers. He then bent down and pulled the flowers. Once the flowers were broken off their roots, it

literally bled. Zhang Yang continued until he found a soft spot. Inside the area was a man, or half of what seems to be a man. The body had already decayed halfway through, roots growing from inside the man's organs. No wonder the flowers were able to grow so beautifully, their nutritions were coming directly from a human! The blood that flowed in the plants was human blood!

What a disgusting setting! Props to the designer!

The man opened his eyes. Although he was unable to move, he was still able to move his eyeballs and glared at Zhang Yang. "Please...kill me. End my life!"

[Half-dead Human] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 1

HP: 1/50

Defense: 1

Zhang Yang nearly vomited from the sight of the man still being alive after all that he had been through. Filled with pity and disgust, Zhang Yang granted the man's wish. He pulled his sword out and stabbed the man in his chest, ending his tortured life.

"T-thank...You..." As life seeped away from the man, Zhang Yang retrieved his sword but there was no bloodstain on his blade. The plants had already sucked the man's dry!

Just then, a shadow appeared on the ground and shot over him. Zhang Yang immediately hid himself. The shadowy figure landed gracefully on the ground and walked towards a flower. The person then pressed his lips to the tip of the flower and begun sucking the fluid in it. As the bloodily liquid flows out of the flower and into the man's, his pale face regained its color. The man continued sucking out the blood from the plant until the plant withered away. With obvious vigor regeneration, the man spread out his wings and flew back into the building through the roof.

Zhang Yang knew then, that was the more brutal method to draw and store blood from a human. Even if it was just a game, Zhang Yang had to applaud the designer and the director for coming up with such an amazing story lore. Because right then, Zhang Yang was filled with immense rage. He hopped on the bear and gently ruffled the bear's forehead. "It's time for a massacre."

The bear growled faintly and galloped towards the building.

"I smell the smell of a Human! A living human!"

Unlike the unguarded garden, the building had two elite vampires standing guard at the entrance. The system had the vampires react to Zhang Yang only when he had entered their aggro range, and not based on sight.

Zhang Yang started the battle with a {Spear of Obliteration} thrown at the left vampire.

"Ack!" the vampire winched in pain. The two targets then lunged themselves at Zhang Yang.

‘-1,172!’

‘-1,219!’

Having more than 100,000 HP, Zhang Yang had barely felt anything! Based on calculations, the two enemies had a basic attack of around 6,000. Even though it was rather average, it was made to look like a pea shooter, since Zhang Yang had a strong damage reduction ability, reducing close to 80% of their attacks!

Zhang Yang set his sights on the one that he had attacked before and launched a series of sword slices.

"What a strong warrior!"

"Such strength, the blood would most definitely be of quality!"

Like hungry men who had not eaten in days, the two vampires licked their lips, drooling at the sight of Zhang Yang. Their attacks were weak albeit being fast and swift.

"My blood? Please, you don't have enough qualifications to taste my blood!" Zhang Yang taunted.

The match was a 2v2 battle, with Zhang Yang and the Gold-Eared

Bear King against the two vampires. With over 6,000 DPS, they had easily killed the first enemy in just 15 seconds. Losing all 80,000 HP in the battle, the vampire fell to the ground and turned into fine ash, which was blown by the winds. The second one was also defeated in about the same time.

"Is that all?" Zhang Yang scoffed.

He then proceeds to push open the door. To his dismay, the door creaked loudly. Compared to the creep exterior, the inside of the creepy building was surprisingly pleasant. The entire hall was illuminated with the warm light coming from a candle chandelier hanging on the ceiling. The hall which Zhang Yang had just entered was the living room. Like what you could expect from a wealthy old western family; the hall was filled with cushioned chairs and a marvelous, grand wooden craved table, and a large fireplace. There were more than 10 well-dressed vampires, both male, and female who were sipping what seems to be red wine. There was even music playing in the background which made it look like a social party for the snobs.

Although they were classified as Spectres, the vampire considered themselves to be one of the noble creatures. They felt superior compared to the skeletal soldiers, or zombies, and the undead that would look and behave savagely. The vampires would never associate themselves with the rest and would live in the grandest and upscale castle. They would then consider themselves as the Blood Race and refuse to be classified as a part of the Spectres.

Everyone turned to Zhang Yang at the moment he pushed the

door open. All heads turned to him, which immediately made Zhang Yang think that he had just made the worst mistake ever. One of the beautiful ladies laughed and clapped her hands. "Welcome! Oh my! What strong, young man!" She emphasized the word "young".

Another lady joined the conversation and giggled behind a paper fan. "Ohohohoho...My dear Phoebe, control your lust!"

"Why should I, Lorraine? Imagine the both of us in bed, intertwined with each other! The pleasure of taking his blood while he breathes next to me! Who could resist that! Ahh! I must have him!" Phoebe screamed in a weird, pleasure-like moan. She stood immediately and spread her wings, tearing the dress on her back. With lightning speed, the vampire lunged towards Zhang Yang, with her hands bared and claws ready to stab Zhang Yang.

"I hope that you don't mind me joining you! Phoebe!" said the same female who had interjected her.

"Piss off! Why are you always trying to snatch my toys! It was the same as before and it is the same as now! I'd never want to share the same men with you! You always have it too rough! The men you play with always end up dying!" Phoebe growled angrily.

"Hohohoho! Whoever gets her hands on him first shall own the warrior!" cried the vampire named Lorraine.

Zhang Yang raised his eyebrows, along with his sword and shield. "Why don't I have a say in this?"



"Give up fighting and give in to me!" Bellowed Phoebe as she placed her attention on Zhang Yang. There was a certain aura to the vampires here. As if each of them were strong. Even though they were all elite tier, they had special names to them instead of the general noun. These elite monsters were strong. They had over 200,000 HP and could be called mini-bosses.

Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} towards Phoebe and withdrew slowly until he reached outside the building. Zhang Yang wanted to be able to ride on the battle mount, to allow himself to be stronger!

BOOM!

Zhang Yang kicked the door behind him and rolled backward, just in the nick of time to avoid the attacks of both Phoebe and Lorraine. Zhang Yang quickly jumped behind the bear and was ready to lay down attacks. It was a shame that he wasn't ready. If he had been, he would have swapped the battle mount to the Mythical Turtle and gained even more power!

"Surrender to me, human! Bow down, and I shall grant you the ultimate pleasure before your death!" Phoebe taunted Zhang Yang as she clawed her way to Zhang Yang.

After parrying a number of attacks, Zhang Yang laughed and replied, "Shame that you're completely not my type!"

"HAHAHA!" Lorraine laughed. "Looks like it's time for you to

change your appeal!"

"Imbecile!"

The two of the female vampires continued to have their war of words, yet the physical attacks on Zhang Yang had not slowed down! However, Zhang Yang did not mind. His main target now was only Phoebe. Dancing with his blade, Zhang Yang had delivered a series of attacks which drained the enemy's HP down rapidly.

Even though Phoebe had slightly more HP than the average elite monsters, she had only 200,000 HP! Zhang Yang had killed a 80,000 HP in just 15 seconds, so at most it would take 40 seconds or less to deal with 200,000 HP!

"Ack!" Phoebe finally winched in pain after her long HP was left with over 20,000 HP. Before Zhang Yang could deliver the final blow, she shot into the sky and flew to the flower garden.

"D\*mn!" Zhang Yang cursed. Somehow, he knew that she would do that.

"Don't try to escape!" Lorraine bellowed. Seeing her comrade being attacked to that state, she roared angrily as she clawed at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang had not want to deal with Lorraine just yet. Frantically, he left the place, only to see that Phoebe had landed in

the flower garden. There was a glint of panic in her eyes. With all the power left in her body, she quickly dashed around the garden. Her speed was so fast that Zhang Yang could only see flowers disappearing in a fraction of a second. After that, there was a sudden blow of strong gale that swept away most of the dust, revealing herself standing in the center of the garden. In her hands, there were blood dripping off, but it was not her blood. It was the blood that was oozing out from the flower. With great speed, she sucked in all the blood from each flower and gained a boon status.

Consuming fresh blood, recover 10% HP every second for 10 seconds.

Even though Zhang Yang was efficient in using {Destructive Smash}, leaving no gap in between the skill's cooldown, 3 seconds had passed since Phoebe had flown away. By the time she started consuming the blood, the debuff from {Destructive Smash} had already expired.

‘+20,000!’

‘+20,000!’

...

"Crap!" Zhang Yang cursed. Phoebe had started healing, and at great speed at that! Hoping that he could make it in time, Zhang Yang pulled the reins and made the bear leap 10 feet forward.

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-8,343!’

‘+5,000!’

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relieve when he had managed to delivered the skill, causing Phoebe recovery to receive a 75% reduction.

"You bastard!" Phoebe shouted from the top of her lungs. She then spread her wings and shot towards Zhang Yang, causing him to be pushed behind a great distance.

"Tch!" Zhang Yang cringed as he pulled the rein to prevent himself from falling over.

"Come get me!" Zhang Yang taunted and charged towards the two vampires. Zhang Yang still focused his fire on Phoebe instead of Lorraine. After receiving the {Destructive Smash} interruption during her blood sucking, she had only managed to heal over 40% of her HP.

"No...NO! NO! ACK! SAVE ME! NOO! KYAA!" cried Phoebe as she lost her mind when Zhang Yang had landed the last attack which completely depleted her HP. The wound at which Zhang Yang had sliced into Phoebe turned into a burning ember. The ember spread all over, causing Phoebe to panic. As much as she tried to claw the ember from spreading to her entire body, there was nothing that

she could do except to scream at the top of her lungs. As quickly as the time ticked away, Phoebe's entire body turned into a glowing amber before crumbling down into a pile of gray ash.

"Phoebe! My dear! Phoebe! No!!" Tears started to fall from Lorraine's bloodshot eyes. She lunged herself at Zhang Yang and pinned him down. "Bastard! You have killed my daughter! When I'm done with you, you'd wish that I would end your life right now! I will turn you into a vampire and torture you for all eternity!"

Threats aside, Zhang Yang was actually more surprised at the fact that both Lorraine and Phoebe were mother and daughter! What kind of game designer did Dream Tech hire!

"All your blood are belonged to me!" Lorraine flapped her wings with much power, granting her the ability to move around with better agility. Attacks came from all directions!

Zhang Yang laughed despite being attacked by a crazy mother who had just lost her daughter. When two monsters had attacked Zhang Yang, he was not troubled by it, now that Lorraine was the only one left, what sort of trouble could she do to him?

Zhang Yang picked himself up and retaliate even harder. Just as Phoebe, Zhang Yang took no time at all to kill Lorraine. Before he knew it, Lorraine had left with only 10%. As expected, she too, shot towards the garden to suck on the flowers.

"Crap!! Again!?" Zhang Yang scolded himself for being reckless.

Not only had she healed herself, she had chosen a place much further away from where Phoebe was. Zhang Yang cursed angrily and chased after her with {Destructive Smash} ready in hand.

This time, he was rather lucky, when Lorraine had shot off, the {Destructive Smash} debuff on her still had over 7 seconds of active duration. Zhang Yang had managed to reach her and deliver another {Destructive Smash} before the effect wore off. Thus, Lorraine had only healed by 25%. Easy peasy, lemon squeezy.

# Chapter 399: The Vampire's Touch

---

Both Lorraine and Phoebe had dropped a weird item called [Vampire's Fang].

[Vampire's Fang]

Use: Collect and combine 7 Vampire's Fangs to form a [Vampire's Touch].

"Huh." Said Zhang Yang as he read through the item description of the [Vampire's Fang]. [Vampire's Touch] was an Enhancing item similar to that of Rune Stone, and a Whetstone that is used on weapons to increase its power. Like the item name suggested, the [Vampire's Touch], would grant a Lifesteal effect on the weapon that was chosen to be enhanced. Since it was a rare effect, it was stronger than regular enhancement via other methods. The Lifesteal effect gained from this item cannot be stacked with Rune Stones nor Whetstones. Among the three enhancing items, only one can be applied at the same time.

Unlike the Rune Stones made from Rune Crafters, or Whetstones made from Smithers, [Vampire's Touch] can only be found by hunting the vampires and collecting their fangs. Furthermore, [Vampire's Fang] would only be dropped by special vampires and not the "nameless" normal monsters. The drop rate was so low that not even the boss might drop them.

All and all, the item was extremely rare.

After collecting all the battle loots, Zhang Yang sat down to heal himself. After killing two elite monsters with super long HPs who were capable of healing themselves, he had suffered quite the damage and was only left with less than 20,000 HP. Zhang Yang was rather relieved that the other vampires who were in the building did join the fight with Lorraine and Phoebe, providing enough time for Zhang Yang to heal.

After healing, Zhang Yang entered the living room again. Instead of fighting, the vampires inside were still enjoying themselves with glasses of wines and vibrant conversation between themselves. They were cheerful and happy as if someone from their party had just won a major battle of some sort.

During the battle initiation by Phoebe and Lorraine had broken the door earlier, Zhang Yang had no need to make a flashy appearance to enter the hall. None of the vampires inside were alerted by his entry. Zhang Yang had chosen to lure one monster at a time, and picked one of the vampires, and attacked with him {Spear of Obliteration}. The vampire that was lured was named Tolor, and he jumped from his seat and flew towards Zhang Yang.

"Eh!? You're the human from before! Where is Lorraine? Where is Phoebe!?" The vampire cried out in surprise.

Zhang Yang smirked and landed one attack. "You'll soon find out."

"Bastard!" Tolor bellowed and attacked with the same style as Lorraine and Phoebe; hands wide open, with sharp claws ready to dismember Zhang Yang's limbs. Even though the male vampire



looked very strong, he was beaten to a pulp by Zhang Yang. He had also flown to the garden to heal himself but had only prolonged his death by a minute or so. Tolor did not drop any [Vampire's Fang] which left Zhang Yang slightly disappointed.

Like changing the tea leaves of a pot, Zhang Yang defeated all the vampires in the hall one by one. Fortunately, he had collected all 7 pieces of the fangs and formed one complete [Vampire's Touch].

[Vampire's Touch (Beginner)] (Usable)

Use: Use it on a weapon, grants the ability to restore 5% HP on every hit.

Level Requirement: 80

The item description dictated that the Lifesteal effect would only be active on a successful hit. That would mean that skills like {Thunder Strike}, and {Shield Bash} that did not attack with the sword would not trigger the Lifesteal effect. However, if Zhang Yang were to use AoE multi-target skills like {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep}, coupled with the sword skill echoing effect, it would all be factored in!

Take {Blast Wave} for example. Even though the skill was based on the weapon's attack, 5% of 1,178 would be 60 HP. However, if the skill was used on a group of 30 monsters, and the sword would proc for four counts, the total amount healed would be over 7,000!

Without thinking twice, Zhang Yang used the item on the sword and replaced the Lifesteal effect with the original one. By far, the profession Rune Craft was not strong nor OP enough. Only until one was able to produce a Rune of +6 and +7, only then it would be considered to be a powerful profession that would burn gold on the side. At least, by then, it would be worth every penny spent.

Zhang Yang wrapped things up in the hall and proceeded forward. After the living room was a long empty corridor which led to a staircase to the second floor. The building was the nest of the vampires, the system would naturally make it harder for players to pass through it. Before Zhang Yang could reach the staircase, vampires from both ends of corridor attacked Zhang Yang in a large group. Even though they were elite tier, they were the "real" elite tier, unlike Phoebe and Lorraine who had far more HP and attack. Naturally, Zhang Yang had cleared the corridor with ease and went up to the second floor.

Before Zhang Yang could observe the environment of the second floor, a white figure came shooting towards him. There was a long black whip on her right hand which was all coiled up to her shoulder. Reflex kicked in and Zhang Yang raised his shield at lightning speed.

"Despicable insect!" A female voice came roaring from behind his shield. The voice belonged to Desionia, the second bride of the Vampire King, Madros.

At her height, she had looked down on Zhang Yang with fangs dripping regular saliva. With a loud hiss, she pushed Zhang Yang

away and uncoiled the whip in his right arm.

Again! Zhang Yang had no time to swap out the Mythical Turtle!

Zhang Yang cursed himself and leaped back towards Desionia.

‘-8,345!’

‘+417’

After five {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang’s {Destructive Smash} had dealt over 8,000 damage which in turn, healed him for over 400 HP. Zhang Yang curled his lips, feeling satisfied with the effects of the new sword’s passive ability. Even after deducting the possible heal from {Shield Bash} and damage reflect of {Block}, his DPS had surpassed 4,000. That meant, that at each second, he could recover at least 200 HP! It was similar to reducing 200 DPS directly from the boss!

It was a pity that the DPS of a Level 80 Yellow-Gold boss was around 2,000. Deducting 200 from that would equal to a 10% "discount"!

Being an Alchemist who concoct potions for himself, he had no qualms about using all his potions, even the powerful ones like the [Troll Recovery Potion]. Players would only have regular potions at their disposal, and the ones that Zhang Yang consumed all the time were at least Grade 5 Transmutation! For the past few days, Zhang Yang had been making potions till he had lost count of the number

of stacks he had made. Those potions that were produced normal, or had lower grade transmutation were all sold in the Little Merchandise Shop or thrown into the guild warehouse. Only potions that had over grade 5 transmutation were used by Zhang Yang himself!

With potions, [Fountain of Life], {Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall} and other means and methods to restore his health, Zhang Yang had no problem fighting a Yellow-Gold boss one-on-one! For now, Zhang Yang was most probably be the only player in China to be able to solo a Yellow-Gold boss!

"Succumb and bow to the power! Present yourself as a slave to me!" cried Desionia as she danced around with the coarse whip in her hand.

"Master has captured Sherryl! The ceremony of holy matrimony is about to happen and there's nothing you can do to stop it!"

Zhang Yang stopped breathing for a second. Sherryl was captured? That soon?

Zhang Yang sighed. He had hoped that this story would be a little different. However, contrary to his thoughts, he was expecting something like this to happen. Still, there was something odd. Who and what was Sherryl? Was she so important that the last boss would capture her himself?

'Ding! You have received a quest selection: Rescue Sherryl. Would you accept it?'

A sudden quest option window popped out. Zhang Yang not read the quest description and immediately accepted it. He still had the boss to defeat first.

"Feel the despair! Feel the power of darkness engulfing you!" Desionia bellowed and laughed as loudly as thunder itself.

Suddenly, Zhang Yang felt a little shaky, as his entire vision was distorted. His character moved itself and threw the shield and sword to the ground, covering his ears and starting to scream like a deranged maniac.

[Despair Shriek]: Causes the target to fall into a state of despair. Causes immobility and disarm. Lasts for 5 seconds.

What the hell!?

Zhang Yang raised his head to observe Desionia. All he could observe was the glint in Desionia's eyes. A similar rage of revenge burning in her eyes. High leveled NPC or monster would have higher A.I programming, granting them the ability to have memory. She bore great enmity towards Zhang Yang. Powerful enough that she would never find peace in her time if she did not shred Zhang Yang into pieces.

A shield is an ultimate weapon for a tank. Without the piece of equipment, Zhang Yang had received more than 9,000 damage in just one attack. Without the shield granting him the Defense and passive damage reduction skill, Zhang Yang had taken the full,

unrepressed damage from Desionia.

Zhang Yang immediately activated {Warrior's Will} and dispelled the state of despair that his character had fallen into. With a quick barrel roll, Zhang Yang picked up the shield and the sword and swiftly reequipped it.

Luckily, the boss was an NPC that would not be greedy to pick the equipment and kept it for herself. If that had really happened, Zhang Yang would have raged quit the game so hard that no amount of reincarnation would bring him back to play the game.

"Give up on your hopes and dreams and fall into the depths of the abyss!" Desionia shrieked again.

"Hmph! Fool me once, shame on you. Fool me twice, shame on me! Let's see how long you can keep this up!" Zhang Yang launched his attack.

Desionia's {Despair Shriek} had only a 1 minute cooldown. If it was any other tank, they would surely have to rely on other people to survive this boss. Their {Warrior's Will} would never have been enough to last the battle! Zhang Yang on the other hand, had already maximized the level of {Warrior's Will}. His skill had only 1 minute cooldown as well! Once the boss activates {Despair Shriek}, Zhang Yang would instantly activate {Warrior's Will} to dispel the debuff on him. Furthermore, the skill had granted a sure-Critical Strike hit for the next {Destructive Smash}! One strike of the skill would deal 15,000 damage to 17,000 damage! It would be a double edge sword for the boss to use her {Despair Shriek}!

She was a boss, but in this fight, Zhang Yang had too many life restoring skills that he had literally made the boss look like the player instead! Without meticulous effort, Zhang Yang had speedily brought down the boss' HP to 10%

"Despicable insect! I ought to squash you and remove your pitiful existence!" cried Desionia as the confidence in her expression faded away and was replaced with madness. She lunged towards Zhang Yang, carrying a flowery scent and soft embrace into Zhang Yang's arms.

"HISS!" Desionia grabbed Zhang Yang tight in her arms and buried her fangs deep into Zhang Yang's neck.

{Vampiric Paralysis}!

[Vampiric Paralysis]: Causes a target to be paralyzed, enabling the user to have a chance to suck on the target's blood. Lasts for 10 seconds.

As if Zhang Yang was going to enjoy the moment and feel her voluptuous breast pressing into his. Zhang Yang immediately activated {Warrior's Will} and dispel the immobility on him. In 10 seconds after, he had gained a buff which increases 50% of his attack!

Even though Desionia had restored her health, she had carried the effect of {Destructive Smash} on her, causing her to only restored 25% of the intended amount. With a quick strike, Zhang

Yang hit her with a {Destructive Smash} again, dealing a devastating attack! Her 43,500 HP was not at all enough to withstand his onslaught any longer!

"ACK!" The bride of the vampire king collapsed with a loud moan and turned into ash.



# Chapter 400: Constance

---

The boss fight had rewarded Zhang Yang with two Yellow-Gold equipment, and six Gray-Silver equipment. Among them was a rather strong dagger.

[Thorn of Desionia] (Yellow-Gold)

Weapon Attack: 402 – 602

Attack Interval: 1.4 seconds

DPS: 358

Equip Effect: Grants a 10% chance to restore 500 HP on every attack.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

Even though the dagger was not up to tier, it was still one of the strongest Yellow-Gold weapons out there. Surely there were people who would want the dagger since there were not many Violet-Platinums circling in the market at the moment.

Zhang Yang picked up the loot and moved forward. There were many other monsters along the way which were killed and turned into fine ash. Just as he felt happy that the monsters had granted a luxurious amount of experience points, he was reminded about the quest that he had just received right before the boss fight with Desionia.

[Rescue Sherryl] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: The King of Vampires, Madros, has kidnapped Sherryl. The ceremony to wed Sherryl to Madros, making her the third bride will happen shortly. Warrior, you have to pick up the pace in order to save her in time!

Duration remaining: 2 hours 47 minutes.

Progress: Rescued Sherryl 0/1

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He hated quests with time limits. Still, for a quest to be ranked at S-level, it was understandable. Furthermore, the time taken to finish the quest will be taken into consideration for the final quest score.

The monsters on the second floor were mostly just normal tiered. Zhang Yang had effortlessly turned their living flesh into grayish ash. In the battle of the normal monsters, Zhang Yang had picked up many pieces of [Silk]. Like a hot knife through butter, Zhang Yang had butchered his way through the entire floor. Right before

he arrived at the staircase to the third floor, he stopped and changed his battle mount to the Mythical Turtle. He would not make the same mistake as before.

After climbing the stairs and arriving at the third floor, he was immediately interrupted by a woman in a familiar white dress. Her hair color was different compared to Desionia. Unlike the deep, charcoal black, hers was blonde.

[Constance, Bride of the Vampire Lord] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: Intensely jealous. The manifestation of envy!

Just when Zhang Yang was ready to command the turtle to strike first, he was stunned at the sight of the green colored name tag.

"Warrior!" said Constance when she saw Zhang Yang had arrived at the floor. "Worry not. I come in peace."

An NPC with a green color name tag meant a friendly character.

Zhang Yang slid his sword back into its scabbard. There was no way Zhang Yang could attack a green color name tag NPC. "Why are you in my way?"

Constance clicked her tongue irritably. "Madros, the bastard! When he married me, he had vowed to love me, and only me! However, 30 years ago, against my will, he took another bride for himself! He married Desionia! Just when he swore to never take on another wife, he had turned back on his words and picked that human insect! I cannot allow this to happen again! Warrior, I will help you kill that bastard!"

Woah...So this was what jealousy would do to a woman. How many big shots had committed homicide just because they were dissatisfied about playing second fiddle? (In context to ancient China family)

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Alright."

With a Yellow-Gold boss helping him in battle, he would not need to summon Han Ying Xue or anyone else to assist him in killing the last boss.

Since the boss fight was not going to happen, Zhang Yang swapped the turtle for the bear. If he had waited for the turtle to follow him to the last boss, he would have already grown a beard as long as Rapunzel's hair!

"Follow me!" said Constance coldly. She gestured Zhang Yang to follow her and led the way. There were no monsters on the third

floor, allowing both of them to proceed quickly and arrive at a room at the end of the floor.

Creak...

The door was opened slowly, yet it still made a creepy creak. "Madros is inside. Be quick with it!" said Constance as she headed in.

The room was dark and quiet. It was so dark that Zhang Yang could not even see his own feet. It was as if a temporary blindness had robbed him of his vision. 20 to 30 steps forward, he heard the same creak, followed by a loud click. The door behind him was shut. The light started to appear from the sides. The torches on the side of the wall of the room had lit up one by one and quickly brightened up the room.

Just when Zhang Yang had gotten used to the darkness of the room, he was blinded by the sudden illumination, which forced him to shut his eyes. It took some effort but after he had readjusted back to the light, he opened his eyes to observe his surroundings. The room was too large to be called a room. It was roughly 300 to 400 meters square wide. The problem with this "hall" was that there were close to hundred elite-tiered vampires standing at every corner, with their fangs bared at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang frantically searched for Constance and found her standing at the furthest corner from him, laughing sinisterly. Her name tag had changed to red!

Zhang Yang was bamboozled! Of course, he would be, everyone with an average level of intellect would be tricked as well. Constance was a friendly NPC back then! A normal player would have already treated her as a comrade instead of being wary.

"My minions! Kill the human!" cried Constance as she lifted her pale fingers to point at Zhang Yang's general location. The vampires in the hall spread their wings in unison, creating sudden airwaves that sent the dust on the floor flying in all directions.

Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine. There is no way that he would survive the battle with a hundred elite tier monsters!

"Yo, b\*tch! Come now!" Zhang Yang speedily opened his Friend List and dialed up to Han Ying Xue.

"What? I'm busy grinding with Yan Er! Buzz off!" said Han Ying Xue lazily.

"No time to explain! Put on the charm now! My life is at stake here!"

"Oh! So you want the damsel to save the prince in distress now huh?"

Within seconds, Han Ying Xue had arrived at the scene.

At the moment she had appeared in the battlefield, she was

greeted with the cries of hundreds of vampires. The color drained from her face. "Dummy! No more surprises like this in the future! I'll bite your nose off the next time you rope me in like that!"

"Enough! Time for our skill!" Zhang Yang bellowed. He had activated {Shield Wall} and had only managed to survive the fight because of the skill's healing capability. Anyone and everyone would know that once the {Shield Wall} ended, Zhang Yang would be shredded into pieces, even if he had the thick defense of an elephant.

Zhang Yang reached out and grabbed Han Ying Xue's fair hand and activated {Blizzard Sky}, and {Lunar's Dew}.

Shush! Shush! Shush!

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

Since the vampires could fly, space was filled rather economically by them, thus increasing the efficiency of the skill.

"Kill them! Kill the humans!" cried Constance with a loud shriek.

"Hey Dummy, why are you always in trouble when it comes to women?" asked Han Ying Xue with a laugh.

"...Why? Jealous much?" said Zhang Yang.

"Please. I'm not talking about the people in the game. I'm talking about Zhao Bin, Zhao Xue, and Zhao Yu! Those three are exquisite! A rare beauty! How could you not drown in the triplet's beauty?" said Han Ying Xue. She was jealous.

Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. "Erhm...they...I mean the girls were just freshmen in university!"

"Hmph! Only God knows what kind of dirty thought dwelling in that filthy mind!"

As they were having their conversation, most of the vampire had already turned into piles of ash that had defiled the beautiful scenery of the skill.

"Woah, that's really a lot of experience points!" said Han Ying Xue.

After 30 seconds prior to the skill's activation, the hundreds of vampires were killed, leaving the hall barren and lifeless.

"Bastard!" bellowed Constance angrily. She spread her own wings



and shot towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed tauntingly and parried her claw. "Relax woman, you'll get to meet your friends real soon!"

Constance raised her head and stared into Zhang Yang's eyes with great contempt. She opened her mouth and shrieked loudly, causing Zhang Yang to feel a great pain in his eardrums, forcing him down to the floor, closing his eyes and ears, abandoning his weapons.

{Despair Shriek}, looks like it was a skill exclusive for a vampire's bride. Zhang Yang immediately dispelled the debuff with {Warrior's Will} and returned to the fight. With a quick dodge and turn, Zhang Yang was back in front of Constance.

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-24,890!’

A great damage text burst out with a slightly larger font since it was a critical strike. Both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were slightly surprised.

"Dummy, are you really using a hack? How could you deal such high damage?"

Zhang Yang immediately opened the battle log and said, "It was a Critical Strike and a Lucky Strike stacked together."

The passive bonus effect of using {Warrior's Will} was to grant a 100% chance to land a Critical Strike. If that attack had triggered a Lucky Strike, it would deal a massive 6x the original damage!

Now that the army of vampires were killed, Zhang Yang could easily settle the boss on his own. Now that a super healer had arrived to the scene, it was more of a concrete certainty that Zhang Yang would win the fight. Pairing his power with the bear, Zhang Yang had basically turned the fight into a one-sided brawl.

Not long after, Zhang Yang heard a loud "cling!" and realized that Constance's body had turned as hard as a rock! Zhang Yang turned his gaze to Constance's character and noticed a new status effect on her head.

[Petrifying Recovery]: Immune to all damage and status effect. Restores 5% HP every second. Last for 10 seconds. Channeling required.

Compared to the other vampire's recovery skill, Constance's recovery skill had even granted her a 10 seconds invincibility! She would have restored 50% of her HP without interruption! Not even the debuff of {Destructive Smash} would affect her!

After the 10 seconds skill duration ended, Constance spread her wings out, breaking the stone encasement, like a butterfly out of a cocoon.

She hovered a few meters into the air. Her wings were bigger

now and cast a shadow over Zhang Yang.

"This is the gift from the king when he had bestowed immortality upon me! Surprised?" Constance smiled wryly. She now had 60% HP left.

Zhang Yang scoffed. Unless the skill had a cool down time of only 2 minutes, Zhang Yang could have killed the boss before she could have a chance to activate {Petrifying Recovery} for the second time.

"Dummy. When a player gains the Vampire Inheritance, would he gain that skill as well?"

"More or less." Zhang Yang nodded. "That's actually the reason for me being here. To farm the Inheritance Fragments! The Inheritance is strong, but it doesn't suit you though."

"Please. It's not like I want it in the first place!"

With haste, Constance was killed before she could activate the {Petrifying Recovery} for the second time. As it was with any other vampire, Constance screamed and put up a scene before turning into ash.